

Proprietary  
The Constitution  
of the United States



•Ex Libris  
Duquesne University:



62293

307





Boethius;  
De Consolatione Philosophiae

---

Early English Text Society.

Original Series, No. 170.

1927 (for 1925).

Price 30s.





I han seide ye fift of helle tyme ar syng  
þe re me haþ quyt þe wile refresc  
This man haþ his eyf vns comen wiþ his song  
**G**ot with a ladel þis gife. Wile refrescyno  
þat man he thi londes hame seþþe  
If he be holden opon his eyf a gome  
His eyf fro hym est þone wile refresc  
þat eyf to londes may a ladel make  
Hie londes is rather to hym self a ladel  
þan he das neygh out of þe londes blake  
He turnyd hym e crudice he falle  
**H**ellas he loste & left his eyf he hynde  
This fable is to zow pteymeth right  
Hie ye pat dorste leisen op yowre mynd  
In to ye hysse bliffull concom light  
If ye oft sinnes tene sou yome sight  
In to þis faulys drecched orthels self  
Is all pat dorste yowre late þay yowre dight  
Ye lase it when ye leisen in to hell  
Explicat liber tristacis de consolacione psic -  
prefacio translatioz in libri q̄ntu & q̄ntu.

// conclusio

**H**yske e riche treasore of stiente  
And wisdom whiche god eternally  
concerned is so pat his ingemone  
He medde not he onserched certanly  
elichas ye clere he knouen certanly  
to which this eludeð eluides sondance  
he knouth in such acertayn aedenance  
**W**ho wile his doit/ when he purweld he gan  
To wher das he y' das his compillo  
When neyng das he das y' gaf hym pan  
To whom he is in danyng as dettione  
If hym is all fer heis creatone  
He hym it is pat all ymre is onsteyned  
In hym is all ymre knyght contayned  
I of þis amatter fer to trete  
As after yis myn auctor wile psic  
This doit of wile myn dittos ben mynato

**Boethius:**  
**De Consolatione Philosophiae**

TRANSLATED BY  
**JOHN WALTON**  
CANON OF OSENEY

EDITED WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND GLOSSARY BY  
**MARK SCIENCE, M.A., PH.D.**

LONDON:  
PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY  
BY HUMPHREY MILFORD, OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS  
AMEN CORNER, E.C. 4.  
1927.

PR 1119 820.8  
A2 E12  
no. 170

Original Series, No. 170.

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,  
BUNGAY, SUFFOLK.

## PREFACE

IN the present edition of John Walton's translation of Boethius based on the Lincoln Cathedral MS. A, 4, 11, an effort has been made to produce an accurate text. Lack of the original manuscript of the translator or even of a direct recension from it has made emendation necessary where scribal errors have crept in, but all emendations have been indicted, and, where possible, have the support of the Latin original, of Chaucer from whose prose translation Walton often borrowed slavishly, and of readings from other MSS. The collations, for the most part, give variant readings rather than variant spellings.

Some time after I had worked out the filiation of the MSS. my attention was drawn to K. Schümmer's similar work on Walton's Boethius, *Untersuchung des Handschriftenverhältnisses und Probe eines kritischen Textes* (Bonner Studien zur englischen Philologie, Heft VI). He based his investigations on extracts containing about one-third of the whole translation, and collated from 14 MSS. and the printed edition. That our conclusions do not differ widely helps to strengthen both.

I should like to express my warmest thanks to the Dean and Chapter of Lincoln Cathedral who permitted their manuscript to be kept at Sheffield while I transcribed it. To Canon R. M. Wocley, who drew my attention to this MS. I am very grateful. I am also indebted to the Librarians of Trinity College, Oxford (J. R. Weaver, M.A.), Balliol Coll. (A. W. Pickard-Cambridge, M.A.), and Christ Church (H. W. Blunt, M.A.), for their kindness in putting MSS. at my disposal, as well as to the Librarians of the Bodleian and Cambridge University, and the Curator of the Fitzwilliam Museum. For his courtesy in permitting me the use of the Library of St. John's College (Cambridge) while I examined the MS. I am grateful to Mr. C. W. Previté-Orton. My thanks are also due to the Trustees of the Bishop

MAR. 23 1955

Cosin's Library and to the Librarian, Mr. E. V. Stocks, for their loan of the Durham MS.

To my old teacher, Prof. G. C. Moore Smith, Litt.D., I cannot adequately express my acknowledgment of his kindly encouragement and helpful criticism throughout the course of my work. From the suggestions of Prof. A. Blyth Webster and the advice of Prof. Sir I. Gollancz and Dr. Mabel Day I have profited much. The vigilance of Messrs. Clays' readers has been most helpful.

M. S.

# INTRODUCTION

## LIST OF MANUSCRIPTS

1. MS. Royal 18, A xiii. British Museum. [R]
2. MS. Harleian 43. British Museum. [H]
3. MS. 21. Trinity Coll., Oxford. [T]
4. MS. Rawlinson poet. 151. Bodleian library. [Rl]
5. MS. 316 A. Balliol Coll., Oxford. [Ba]
6. MS. 196. St. John's Coll., Cambridge. [J]
7. MS. M<sup>c</sup>Lean 184. Fitzwilliam Museum, Cambridge. [F]
8. MS. 151. Christ Church, Oxford. [Ch]
9. MS. 319. New Coll., Oxford. [N]
10. MS. Gg., IV, 18. Cambridge Univ. Library. [C]
11. MS. e Museo 53. Bodleian Library. [M]
12. MS. Cosin V, ii, 15. Bishop Cosin's Library, Durham. [D]
13. MS. Douce 100 [21674]. Bodleian Library. [Dc]
14. MS. Harleian 44. British Museum. [h]
15. MS. 316 B. Balliol Coll., Oxford. [Bb]
16. MS. A, 4, 11. Lincoln Cathedral. [L]
- † 17. MS. Addit. 3573. Camb. Univ. Library. [A]
- † 18. MS. Phillipps 1099. Cheltenham (Thurlestone House). [P]
- † 19. MS. Thott. Royal Library, Copenhagen.

MSS. marked † have not been collated (but see description, later).

### *Printed edition :*

- (a) Rawl. 4<sup>o</sup> 530. Bodleian Library.
- (b) Rawl. 4<sup>o</sup> L 71, Art. 16. Bodleian Library.
- (c) Rylands Library, Manchester. (Catalogued under "Boethius.")

## DESCRIPTION OF MANUSCRIPTS

### *MS. Royal. 18, A xiii. British Museum. [R]*

Colophon reads "Explicit liber Boecij de consolacione Philosophie de Latino in anglicum translatus anno domini millesimo cccc<sup>mo</sup> X<sup>o</sup> per capellm Johem."

Vellum; ff. 114; 9 $\frac{3}{4}$  × 6 $\frac{1}{4}$ ; in gatherings of 8 leaves lettered with catchword. Dated in B.M. catalogue "First half of XV. cent." The beginning of each book has a beautifully illuminated initial and border, the first letter of each prose and metre is "flourished in red and blue," while the stanzas are provided with red and blue initials alternately. In the margin at the beginning of each prose and metre there are the first few words of the Latin text of the corresponding

passages, and throughout the work there are numerous marginalia, e.g. *nota, nota per exemplum*, drawing attention to particular passages.

On fol. 1a is the following inscription in a hand of the 15th–16th century. “This boke is his i wysse / whose name John Appelbe is / and for the knowledge of the same / here he doythe wryte his owne name. quod Johannes Appelbe.”

Fol. 113b has the following: “1560 Hic liber est meus / testes est deus / sy quis queretur / Stephana Brakenbury nominatur.” Then comes another inscription in a sort of numerical cipher, which the B.M. catalogue renders as “Be me Henri Langeforde organ maker of London duellinge bi the Minores.” The MS. afterwards belonged to John Theyer, whose monogram occurs on folio 2.

On the fly-leaf—f. 114—are scribbled verses :

(a) Distich—“Disce, puer, dum tempus habes euo iuuenili / ne doleas cum pauca scias estate cenili.”

(b) Single line—“Dum cor non horat [orat?] in vano lingua laborat.”

(c) Four lines beginning—“Let no man booste of cunnyng ne vertue.”

The manuscript is beautifully written in a clear hand, and, to judge from textual readings, is very closely allied to MSS. L, Bb, and to a less degree to h, M. I have taken the corresponding passage of R to supply the text where the folio is missing in L.

#### *MS. Harleian 43. British Museum. [H]*

Partly upon parchment, partly upon paper; quarto; ff. 86; containing :

(a) Boethius—“De consolatione philosophiae” translated into English verse.

(b) Latin text of Boethius in the hand of Thomas Chawndelere.

(c) The beginning of a sermon upon these words in Acts xvi.—“And God opened here hart, that she beleved.”

(d) “A treatise betweene enformacione and Musyke.”

According to the B.M. catalogue, “This is rather an imperfect ballade with a prologue which is mangled, and the author’s name cut out. He seems to have been a Lollard and not unskilful of Music as then practised. (By William Cornysshe al Nysshewhete, July, 19. Henry VII. [1504].)”

(e) “A Balade of Trouthe”—imperfect.

Thomas Warton, in his “History of English Poetry,” Vol. II. p. 344, refers to this manuscript in his account of Walton. “It appears probable,”<sup>1</sup> writes Warton, “that he [Walton] was patronised by Thomas Chaundler, among other preferments Dean of the King’s Chapel and of Hereford Cathedral, Chancellor of Wells, and successively Warden of Wykeham’s two colleges at Winchester and Oxford;

<sup>1</sup> It is hardly probable, as Thomas Chaundler was not born until 1410, when the translation had already been made,

characterised by Anthony Wood as an able critic in polite literature and by Leland as a rare example of a doctor of theology who graced scholastic disputation with the flowers of a pure Latinity. In the British Museum there is a *correct* MS. on parchment of Walton's translation of Boethius, and the margin is filled throughout with the Latin text written by Chaundler above mentioned."

The Latin text is certainly written by Chaundler, but the text of Walton's translation can hardly be described as "correct." It is written in a current and hardly legible hand, is spoiled by numerous omissions (which include the whole of the Translator's Prologue and Preface), lacks several leaves at the end, thus depriving us of the colophon, only occasionally denotes the beginning of each prose and metre by an illuminated letter, and is content that a paragraph mark should divide off each stanza. In Books IV and V, though the author has changed from the eight-lined stanza to the "Rime Royale," the scribe continues to mark off the lines in groups of eight.

Appended is a list of omissions:

<sup>1</sup> Bk. I : M. i, iii, 5 ; P. i, ix, 5 ; P. iv, xxviii, 7, 8 ; P. iv, xli, 4, 9 ; M. vi, ii, 1—P. vi, i, 4 ; P. vi, iii, 5—P. vi, v, 8. (Bottom half of fol. 5 torn away.) Bk. II : P. vi, iii, 3—P. vi, iv, 6 ; M. viii, v, 6—M. viii, ii, 6. (Fol. om. between ff. marked 32, 33.) Bk. III : At the end of P. ix, xxii, the following portion from Book IV, P. ii, xix—P. iii, v, is inserted without the scribe apparently being aware of the fact. Meanwhile Chaundler is unable to account for the sudden change and his Latin text breaks off. No doubt the error is due to this MS. having been copied from a previous one with faulty binding. As the insertion starts in the middle of a leaf in H it cannot be that our MS. is bound wrongly. The Latin text is resumed again at the end of the insertion.

P. x, v, 5–7 ; P. xi, xvii, 4, 5 in reverse order. Bk. IV : M. iii, vi, 3, 4 ; M. iii, vi, 7 (MS. torn) ; P. iv, v, 5—P. iv, xxxi, 2.

[This omission begins at the bottom of f. 64 b. As the next folio (65 a) begins with the catch-words at the foot of f. 64 b, there can be no error of binding in H, and the omission is probably due to a binding error in the MS. from which H was copied.]

P. vi, xix, 6 ; P. vi, xxii, 5, 7 ; P. vi, xxvii, 5 ; P. vi, lx, 5 ; M. vi, ii, 5. Bk. V : P. iii, ii, 2–7 ; P. iii, iii, 1 ; P. iii, iv, 4—P. iii, xxix, 7 [2 fols. om.] ; M. iv, vii, 4, 6 ; P. vi, xxxviii, 2—P. vi, xxxix, 1. The MS. ends at P. vi, xlvi, 2 ; the remaining leaves are torn away and the colophon is thus missing.

At the end of Bk. I, in addition to the author's *explicit*, we find that of the Latin text :—"Explicit primus liber . . . Quod Chawndelere." This name also appears in the margin on several folios.

This MS. is of interest in that the scribe seems to have paid a certain amount of attention to orthography. An attempt to indicate vowel shortness is shown in the frequent doubling of final consonants :

<sup>1</sup> References are to Prosa or Metrum, Stanza, and line.

—*bett, gett, hadd, sett, lett, mett, satt, fedd, radd*, etc. The final *-en* of the infinitive, of the past part. of strong verbs, and of the plur. pres. indic. is almost invariably written *-ēn* (i.e. *-enn*): *knowēn, stowēn, pledeñ, noyeñ, suffreñ*; and we find prepositions treated similarly: *vpoñ, ayeñ*. Difficulty with the consonant group *-ld* leads to *wordle* for *worlde*, and *wordly* for *worldly*. The p. part. and past tense of weak verbs end in *-yd*; *sh* appears for *sch*, *where* frequently for *were*, *hawe* for *hauwe*, *-aunce* for *-aunce*, and there are numerous substantive plurals in *-is* and *-ys*.

The test is closely allied to that of T and of P, and, while many of its readings are incorrect, it is often of great help in points where L has gone astray.

*Trinity Coll., Oxford. MS. 21. [T]*

Colophon gives “Explicit liber Boecij de consolacione philosophie de Latino in Anglicum translatus, anno domini millesimo cccc<sup>mo</sup> X<sup>mo</sup> per capellanum Johannem.”

Vellum; ff. 108; folio; 15th century. Stated in catalogue to have been the property of Thomas Bulkeley.

In fol. 1 b there is the following: “mem. that I Thomas Bulkeley dyd take Tunstall of Sir Roulland Hyll, knyght, ye xxij day of May in the yere of our Lorde God m.d.xliij; the rente ys fyve pounde syxtene shyllings and foure pence.”

Fol. 2 b has the names of William and Mary Grosvenor, and of Humfred Bulkeley. After the translation on fol. 107 b the following announcement occurs:

“Thomas Bulkeley et Elizabeth Vxor eius genuerunt has proles.  
Margeria 6 nata erat xv<sup>to</sup> die february A<sup>o</sup>m<sup>o</sup>d<sup>o</sup>xxxvj<sup>to</sup>.

Rolandus, Magareta, Edwardus, Richardus, Elizabeth, Maria, Alter Edwardus, Johannes, Anne, altera Elizabeth 1551, Maria Bulkely † 1552.”

Furthermore, we are told “In festo sancte Trinitatis A.D. m.d.li accidit sudor letalis Dratonie, ex quo nonnulli interierunt; et mense sequenti ingens plaga sequebatur.”

The same folio contains information as to the marriage of Sir Roland Bulkeley—“mem. that Sir Roland Bulkeley and Margaret hys wyff were maryed together the last day of September in the yere of our Lorde God 1561.”

The Bulkeley family cannot be identified with that of the Berkeleys, for one of whom (Elizabeth) Walton's *Boethius* was probably written.

The Trinity College MS. bears very close relationship to H, but unfortunately it is spoilt by many omissions, which include the whole of the translator's prologue and preface. Appended is a list of omissions:

Translator's prologue and preface. Bk. I: M. i, iii, 5; P. i, xi, 2; P. iii, iii, 7, 8; P. iii, ix, 5; P. iv, i, 7; P. iv, xxviii, 7, 8; P. iv, xli,

4; P. vi, ix, 5. Bk. II: P. i, iv, 3, 4; P. ii, ii, 3, 4, 5; P. iv, xxiv, 3, 4; P. v, viii, 6; P. vi, iii, 3—P. vi, iv, 6; P. vi, viii, 5; P. viii, i, 7, 8; M. viii, ii, 8. Bk. III: P. vi, iii, 7, 8; P. vii, iii, 7; P. viii, iv, 2, 3; P. ix, iii, 2, 3; P. x, v, 5, 6, 7; P. x, xv, 4; P. xi, viii, 1; P. xi, xviii, 5; P. xi, xx, 3—P. xi, xxix, 1 [fol. om.]; P. xii, viii, 3. Bk. IV: P. ii, viii, 3, 4, 5; P. iii, xv, 7; M. iii, vi, 3, 4; P. iv, ix, 7; P. iv, xxi, 3, 4, 5; P. iv, xxxiii, 2, 3; P. v, i, 2, 3; M. v, iv, 3, 4; P. vi, iv, 5; P. vi, xiv, 1-7; P. vi, xv, 1; P. vi, xix, 6; P. vi, xxiv, 4; P. vi, xxvii, 5; P. vi, lx, 5; P. vii, iii, 7. Bk. V: P. iii, ii, 2—P. iii, iii, 1; P. iii, vi, 3; P. iii, xxi, 5; P. iii, xxiv, 7; M. iv, vii, 4, 5, 6; P. v, I, 4; P. vi, xviii, 7; P. vi, xxxviii, 2—P. vi, xxxix, 1.

Furthermore, as in H, a portion from Bk. IV—[P. ii, xix—P. iii, v] is inserted in Bk. III [after P. ix, xxii] without the scribe being apparently aware of the error. This fact in itself points to a close relationship between T & H.

The Trinity MS. has: *shuch* for *such*; *securly* for *sikely*; *a state* for *estate* or *astate*; p.p. and p. tense of weak verbs in *-yd*; plural of substantives in *-ys*, *-is*; many infinitives in *-yn*; an occasional sing. pres. indic. in *-ys* (*whennes comys all good*, 100, 6).

*MS. Rawlinson poet. 151. Bodleian Library. [Rl]*

Colophon gives “Explicit liber Boecij de consolacione philosophie de Latino in Anglicum translatus Anno Domini millesimo cccc<sup>mo</sup> X<sup>o</sup> per capellanan Johannem.”

Parchment; ff. iii + 111; 10 $\frac{3}{4}$  × 7 $\frac{1}{2}$ ; 15th century.

On folio 111b there is the following inscription: “Iste liber constat Nicholo Tycheborne ex dono Johannis Bolle ciui & grocere London.” In different handwriting we are next informed that “iste liber constat Willelmo Tycheborne ex dono Nicholai Tycheborne patris mei.”

The MS. itself lacks several leaves and the text is interesting in that its readings bear a very close relationship to those of Ba and Ch which are the only MSS. to give the author's full name. The scribe has several peculiarities of orthography. *Can* is regularly written for *gan*, *eu<sup>v</sup>* [= *euur*] for *euer*, and *sh-* for *sch-*. Numerous insertions bear testimony to the carelessness of the copyist, though the initial letters of each stanza, written alternately in red and blue, indicate that the scribe took a certain amount of pride in his work. Unfortunately, a number of omissions help to mar the text. They occur as follows:

Preface: Stan. I—Stan. IX, l. 4 [fol. om.]. Prologue: Stan. XVII, 2—Bk. I, M. i, iii, 2 [fol. om.]. Bk. I: M. iv, i, 7; P. vi, xii, 2. Bk. II: M. viii, ii, 8—Bk. III, M. i, i, 1 [fol. om.]. Bk. III: P. ix, xix, 8; P. xi, xiv, 7; M. xii, ii, 3; M. xii, v, 4—Preface to Bks. IV & V: Stan. V, 2 [fol. om.].

*Balliol College (Oxon.). MS. 316 A. [Ba]*

Described by Coxe as "Codex membranaceus, 4to.; ff. 108. sec. XV ineuntis." The colophon is of particular interest, as it gives us the full name of the author and also informs us that he was, at one time (previous to 1410), a canon of Oseney Abbey. It is as follows: "Explicit liber Boicij de consolacione philosophie de Latino in Anglicum translatus per Johannem Waltoun, nuper canonicum de Oseneye, Anno Domini milesimo eccc<sup>mo</sup> decimo."

"Hoc opus est factum scriptor tenuit bene pactum  
Non petit inchaustum sed vini nobilis haustum."

Two hymns to the Saviour are added beginning:

- (a) "Jhesu for thi blode thou bleddest  
And in the firste tyme thou sheddest."
- (b) "I the honour with al might,  
In forme of brede I the ese" (?) [see].

The MS. is beautifully written; the beginning of each book is provided with a decorated floral border, the initial letter to each prose and metre is illuminated and gilt, while the stanzas have red and blue initials alternately.

Unfortunately there are several omissions to spoil the text, and the use of the final -e is more frequent than necessary. The omissions occur as follows:

Bk. I: M. iv, i, 7; P. iv, xxv, 8. Bk. II: P. viii, vii, 8—Bk. III, P. i, v, 3 [fol. om.]. Bk. III: P. ix, xix, 8; P. xi, xiv, 7; M. xii, ii, 3. Bk. V: P. v, xv, 5.

As in the case of Rl the scribe writes *can* for *gan* and *sh-* for *sch-*. *Angur* is frequently written for *anger*, *dude* for *dide*, and the infinite ending is often *-yn*.

*St. John's Coll. (Cambridge). MS. 196. [J]*

The leaf containing the colophon is missing. Paper;  $10\frac{7}{8} \times 8$ ; ff. 85; 15th century.

The text is clearly written in a cursive hand. The Latin of the poems and copious extracts from the prose text fill the margin.

On folio 80 b a Latin table begins, running from Accusare to Indigere. The names of George and John Walker are scribbled in the book, and on fol. 57 a is the following inscription in red: "Domine Jhesus Christe miserere animi f(amuli) tui W<sup>i</sup>. A. prioris. Am (en)."

Numerous omissions occur and the translation ends imperfectly at Bk. V, P. vi, xxviii, 6. Omissions occur:

Prologue: Stan. X, 6, 7, 8. Bk. I: M. ii, ii, 3—Bk. I, M. iv, 1 [2 fols. om.]; M. iv, i, 7. Bk. II: P. vi, xii, ll. 2, 3 confusedly combined; P. viii, i, 7. Bk. III: P. iii, iv, 7—P. iv, xiv, 4 [fol. om.]; P. ix, xix, 8; P. xi, xiv, 7. Bk. IV: M. i, vi, 5—P. ii, xii, 7 [fol. om.]. Bk. V: P. v, xv, 5.

The St. John's MS. bears some close relationship to Rl, Ba, and, moreover, the scribe shows the same tendency to write *can* for *gan* as shown in the two MSS. above mentioned.

*McLean MS. 184. Fitzwilliam Museum Camb. [F]*

Colophon is "Explicit liber Boicij de consolacione philosophie translatus de Latino in Anglicum. 1410° a°.

*Explysyth quod Wyll*" (in another hand).

Vellum; 8 × 5 $\frac{5}{8}$ ; ff. 119; 15th century.

Originally this MS. of the translation by Walton was bound with John Occleve's *Regement of Princes* to form one volume, which was divided in 1783. It is significant that the above-mentioned colophon, unlike those of the other MSS., does not mention the author as being even Johannes Capellanus. Probably the scribe, who copied both the MS. of Walton and that of Occleve, attributed them both to the same author.

Both volumes have these inscriptions :

- (1) Liber domini Joannis Chetwode de Oakleym comitatu Staffordensi Baronetti 1783.
- (2) Liber Augusti L Chetwode DD 1861.
- (3) Geo Chetwode.

Both have also a title-page with the Chetwode arms neatly painted : Motto—"corona mea Christus."

The text is written in a rather current hand, and gives some bad readings. It belongs to the same group as Rl, Ba, J, Ch, and often where an omission occurs and is common to each member of the group, the scribe of F has attempted to make good the omission by tags of his own composition. Furthermore, he preserves throughout the following peculiarities of orthography. The interrogative form of the second person sing. pres. indic. is always contracted : *trowestou* for *trowest þou*, *artou* for *art þou*, *maystou* for *mayst þou*, etc.; -v- between two vowels is often written as -f-; *hafē* for *have*, *abofē* for *above*, *opinatife* for *opinative*, etc.; *þus* frequently takes the form of *þis*; and *yef*, *yeuer*, *yesy* invariably stand for *if*, *euer*, and *esy*.

*Christ Church (Oxon.). MS. 151. [Ch]*

Vellum; ff. 126 × 1; first half of 15th century.

This MS. has the distinction along with Ba (to which it is very closely allied in many other respects) of giving us the full name and status of the translator. The colophon—"Explicit liber Boicij de consolacione philosophie de latino in Anglicum translatus per Johān Waltōn nuper canonicum de Oseneye Anno dñi millīmo cccc<sup>mo</sup> decimo"—is identical with that of Ba, while, to add to the close relationship, the same two hymns follow as in Ba :

- (1) beginning : "Jhu for the blode þou bleddest  
And in the furst tym þou scheddest,"

containing seven stanzas of six lines each, and one of five stanzas 1-7 rhyming aabccb; Stan. VIII—aabcc. The last line of Stan. VIII is :

“And bring vs to heuene aboue.  
Amen.”

(2) beginning : “ I the honour with all myght  
In forme of brede as I þe see,”

containing five stanzas rhyming abab.

On the last leaf in a much later hand the names “ William Bryante ” and “ Henery Sloper ” occur.

Bound in parchment, the Christ Church MS. has some beautifully illuminated floral borders to mark the beginnings of the different books of the translation, and equally delightful initial letters for the different prosæ and metra. The stanzas are given red and blue initials alternately. Several illuminated letters have been cut out and leave gaps in the text. The lower edges of the MS. have become damp and worm-eaten and in parts one finds great difficulty in reading.

Unfortunately, too, like Ba, several omissions and an undesirable frequency in the use of the final -e help to spoil what would otherwise be a very good text.

Omissions occur as follows :

Bk. I: M. iv, i, 7. Bk. II : P. vi, xii, 2. Bk. III : P. ix, xix, 8 ;  
P. xi, xiv, 7. Bk. V : M. iii, vii, 2 ; M. iv, vi, 5 ; P. v, vii, 5 ; P. v,  
xv, 5.

### *New College (Oxon.). MS. 319. [N]*

Described by Coxe as “ Membranaceus in folio minori ; ff. 104 ; sec. XV ; olim Henric Salisbury.” Unfortunately there is a folio omitted at the end and hence the colophon is missing. A similar omission at the beginning deprives us of almost the whole of the translator’s preface. The text itself is full of errors. A later scribe seems to have examined the manuscript and put a X against each of the corrupt lines, but he has not succeeded in marking all the mistakes.

The omissions occur as follows :

Translator’s preface—Stan. I—Stan. IX, 6. Bk. I : M. iv, i, 7 ;  
M. iv, ii, 5. Bk. II : P. v, vi, 5—P. v, xv, 2 [fol. missing]. [This is due to a fault in binding and the folio is inserted after Stan. XXIII.] Bk. II : P. v, xxviii, 3 ; M. viii, iii, 8—Bk. III, M. i, ii, 4 [fol. missing]. Bk. III : P. vi, iv, 2, 3 ; M. ix, v, 6—P. x, v, 2 [fol. missing]. Bk. IV : P. vi, liv, 1—M. vi, i, 1 [fol. missing] ; M. vi, ii, 5. Bk. V : P. I, Stan. X—Stan. XIV (inclusive) ; P. v, xv, 5.

In his orthography the scribe invariably employs the contracted form of the 2nd pers. sing. pres. or pret. ind. when used interrogatively : *seidestow*, *hastow*, *maystow*, etc. ; *ȝif* takes the place of *if*; *by* of *be* (prep.), and *sh-* is always written where L has *sch-*.

In many of its readings N is closely allied to C and in a less degree to T, H.

*Cambridge University. MS. Gg., IV, 18. [C]*

Small folio ; vellum ; ff. 112 ; early part of 15th century.

Colophon is "Liber Boecii de Consolatione philosophic de latino in anglicum translatus, Anno Domini, Mill. eccc<sup>mo</sup> X<sup>mo</sup> per capellm Johem."

This MS. is very neatly written and is provided with alternate red and blue initials for the stanzas. As an indication of the care the scribe took we find that he has bracketed together the rhyming lines of each stanza.

Though he thus managed to avoid omitting anything from his original, he was unable to remedy those omissions which had already found their way into the text which he was copying. They occur as follows :

Bk. I : M. iv, i, 7. Bk. III : P. vi, iv, 2, 3. Bk. IV : P. vi, iv, 3, 5 ; P. vi, xxii, 3, 4, 5, 7 *om.* ; M. vi, ii, 5 ; M. vii, vii, 7. Bk. V : P. iii, iii, 5 ; P. v, xv, 4.

Orthographical peculiarities of the scribe appear in the use of *y* for initial *p* ; *yus*, for *pus*, *yt* for *pat* ; and in the appearance of the prefix *e-* (O.E. *ge-*) in the past participle.

*MS. e Museo 53. Bodleian Library. [M]*

Parchment ; ff. 115 ; stated in catalogue to have been "ex dono domini Hen. ffoulis generosi, in agro Eboracensi oriundi et Coll. reginae commensalis. Anno dom. M.DC.LV. Oct. XVIII."

Several leaves have been cut away at the end and thus there is no colophon.

The MS. is very neatly written. A floral border decorates the first leaf ; coloured initial letters mark the beginnings of each prose or metre ; and rubrics (coloured alternately red and blue) separate the stanzas.

The text is very closely related to that of the Durham MS., and, in a less degree, to that of the group L, R, h, Bb.

Omissions occur as follows :

Prologue : Stan. XIV, 7 ; Stan. XIX, 5. Bk. I : P. iv, iii, 7 ; P. vi, viii, 5-8. Bk. II : P. vi, xii, 2. Bk. III : M. x, i, 7. Bk. IV : P. vi, xxv, 7. Bk. V : P. iii, ii, 5.

*MS. Cosin V, ii, 15. Bishop Cosin's Library, Durham. [D]*

Paper ; ff. 113.

There is no colophon, but on fol. 1*b* we find the following title in a hand much later than that of the text : "Boetius his 5 Books of Philosophical Comfort," and a still more recent writer adds, "Translated into English by John Lydgate." Fol. 2*a* contains the signature "Willus Browne 1612," stated by the writer of the catalogue to be the author of *Britannia's Pastorals*. There are several marginal notes to the text which appear to have been written by Browne himself.

The names "harry Morley," "Rychardson," and "Richard Burkley" are written on fol. 112 b, and the next folio gives us the adage :

"Pleasure peryshethe lyghtelye  
But honnor is immortell  
Quothe J. Chourchull."

The text is very carelessly written, is spoiled by numerous omissions, and by the fact that it is apparently copied from a MS. which was bound carelessly. The first folio is missing, depriving us of Stan. I to Stan. IX of the translator's preface. Then follows a strange confusion. At Bk. II, Met. II, Stan. iii, l. 3, in the middle of a page, and without any indication whatsoever, the scribe jumps to Bk. III, P. II, Stan. xviii and continues to Bk. III, P. III, Stan. xiii. Then, utterly unconscious of any error he returns to Bk. II, P. IV, Stan. iv and proceeds to Bk. III, P. II, xvii. He next returns to Bk. II, Met. II, Stan. iii, l. 4, and continues to Bk. II, P. IV, Stan. iv, after which he resumes at Bk. III, Met. III, Stan. i to continue without further mishap.

As each of these backslidings begins in the middle of a page and without any apparent knowledge on the part of the scribe, it is quite reasonable to assume that the scribe's original was faulty in its binding. In its readings, especially in Bk. I of the translation, D resembles M very closely.

*MS. Douce 100. Bodleian Library. [Formerly MS. 21674.] [Dc]*

Paper;  $8\frac{3}{4} \times 6$ ; 1 + 107 leaves; 15th century.

Several leaves cut away at end and thus no colophon.

This MS., though (to judge from its readings) it belongs to the same group as Rl, Ba, Ch, F and J, seems to be a very late recension, and its text in many cases shows extreme carelessness on the part of the scribe. Furthermore, a number of omitted folios make big gaps in the text and help to render the MS. still more corrupt.

Omissions occur as follows :

Bk. I : M. IV, i, 7 [space left in MS.]; P. VI, v—Bk. I, P. VI, S. XII [fol. om.]. Bk. II : P. V, viii—Bk. II, P. V, xv [fol. om.]; P. VI, xii, 2 [space left in MS.]. Bk. III : P. IV, xi—Bk. III, P. V, iii [fol. om.]; P. VI, iv, 5; P. VII, I—Bk. III, M. VIII, ii [2 fols. om.]; P. IX, xix, 8 [space left in MS.]; P. IX, ii, 7 [space left in MS.]; P. XI, xiv, 7 [space left in MS.]; P. XII, iv, 4 [space left in MS.]. Bk. V : P. II, iv, 5—Bk. V, P. III, iii, 4 [fol. om.]; P. III, xxvii, 5—Bk. V, M. III, v, 4 [fol. om.].

*MS. Harl. 44. British Museum. [h]*

Vellum; ff. 102; 15th century.

Colophon : "Explicit liber Boecij de consolacione philosophie de latino in anglicum translatus Anno domini m<sup>ill</sup>mocccc<sup>mo</sup> X<sup>mo</sup> per Capellm Johannem."

This MS. appears to have been taken from L, but a great number of minor differences suggest carelessness in copying. The word *eke* is almost invariably changed to *also*. It is difficult to believe that the word *eke* was becoming obsolete at this time, especially as in the printed edition of Walton's *Boethius* (1525) the editor, who has made many alterations to make the words intelligible to people of the 16th century, retains *eke*.

*Balliol Coll. MS. 316 B. [Bb]*

Vellum; ff. 116; 4<sup>to</sup>: first half of 15th century.

Colophon: "Explicit liber Boecij de consolatione philosophie de latino in anglicum translatus anno domini millimo ccccmo X<sup>o</sup> per capellum Johem."

This MS. (as will be shown later) I take to be the original from which L and R were taken. To begin with, it belonged to the group Rl, Ba, Dc, F, J, Ch, but another hand (certainly not that of the writer of the text) made numerous corrections from what he thought was a much better MS. These are written in paler ink, sometimes

m̄pe

above the corrected word—e.g. *wittes*, sometimes at the side, e.g. *helpe*  
*cedep*

welthe, and often, as in the case of *produçþ*, a few letters are altered only. All these corrections are embodied in L and R, and occasionally, as in R, Stan. 90, 6, the copyist has introduced both the altered word and its correction into the text. In this case Bb has altered *youthe* to *powȝ*, and in R we find *youthe powȝ*, whilst L gives *powȝ*.

As in both L and R, division into stanzas with alternately coloured initials of red and blue does not start until Stan. VI of the translator's preface. The beginning of each book is provided with a beautifully decorated floral border, and gilt initials begin each prose and metre.

Furthermore, in the margin the first few words of the Latin text (exactly as in L and R) are put near the corresponding passages of the English to denote the beginnings of each new prose and metre.

In the first ten folios the scribe adopted the measure of bracketing the rhyming lines to ensure greater accuracy.

*Lincoln Cathedral MS. A, 4, 11. [L]*

Vellum; ff. 100; 4<sup>to</sup>; early part of 15th century.

Colophon: "Explicit liber Boecij de consolatione philosophie de latino in anglicum translatus anno dñi millimo ccccmo X<sup>o</sup> per capellum Johem—."

This MS. is beautifully written; illuminated borders mark the beginnings of each book; gilt and decorated initials head the prosae and metra, and the stanzas begin with red and blue letters alternately. In the margin a few words of the Latin text are written near the corresponding English passages to denote the beginning of each prose

or metre. Furthermore, there are numerous injunctions in the margin, such as "nota," "nota bene," etc., drawing the attention of the reader to what the scribe thought particularly interesting passages, and where the text takes the form of dialogue the letters P (Philosophy) or B (Boethius) are put in red in the margin to denote the speaker.

This text, along with that of R, was taken directly from the specially corrected MS. Bb, and I have used it for the basis of the present edition. Unfortunately (and at the time I chose the Lincoln MS. as my base, I was unaware of this) there is a leaf missing between the folios numbered 17 and 18, and as a result the passage Bk. I : P. vi, iii, 5—P. v, xiii, 1, is omitted. However, as R is very closely allied to L (both being taken directly from Bb), I felt justified in filling the omission from the corresponding passage of R.

*The Printed Edition, 1525. [P]*

Of this printed edition there are three copies :

(a) Rawl. 4° 530 (Bodleian Library).

(b) Rawl. 4° L 71, Art. 16. (Bodleian Library.)

(c) Rylands Library, Manchester—described in the catalogue : "The Boke of comfort called in laten Boetius de Consolatione Philosophie. Translated in to englesse tonge by John Waltwnem.

4<sup>to</sup> Dan Thomas Rychard : Tavistock, 1525."

There is no copy in the British Museum.

Of Rawl. 4° 530 the leaves A 1, R VIII are missing and R II is torn. On the first page we find (probably in the handwriting of Thomas Hearne the antiquary) the following note : "This book once belonged to Mr. Humphrey Wanley, from whom it came to the Earl of Oxford, and from thence to Mr. Th. Hearne, who supplied its defects from another copy. Here are also the notes of Mr. Wanley." Wanley appears to have written the following : "The printing composer who sett the types for this book seems to have been either a Dutchman or a German, many words being printed to foreign pronunciation rather than according to our old English orthography, not to mention his frequent mistakes." Probably the frequent use of *v* for initial *w* led to this statement. Hearne in his edition of Robert of Gloucester, ii. p. 77, mentions this copy of the printed edition of Walton's *Boethius* in a "Letter concerning a book printed at Tavistock in Devonshire." He writes in 1708 : "I have several times thought of the old English translation of Boëtius de Consolatione Philosophiae. Tis pity that both the copy you sent me and that in our publick library want the beginning. We might perhaps from thence gather the occasion of the translation and the reason of its being printed at Tavistock. [The page at the beginning gives no such information]. I never saw but these two copies. . . . I have not had time to read over the book and to compare it with the original that I might therby guess at the skill of the Translator and see also whether in the comment adjoyned there may be anything

of his own or whether it be entirely taken from the commentators. I observe, however, that the author has added a preface in verse of his own to the IVth and Vth books ; by which we may guess that there was also a general preface. . . . I gather that the translation was procured by Elizabeth Berkeley and that the translator was Johannes Waltwnem. When I first saw this book I guessed it might have been Chaucer's ; but I presently recollect that his is in prose. Who this Elizabeth Berkeley was I cannot at all tell, much less can I imagine who Waltwnem should be, it being a name that I never heard of before ; nor do I remember to have met with this author either in Leland, Bale, Pitts or any others who have written of our English writers. He deserves a place in Mr. Tanner's excellent additions to Leland. . . ."

The names of the translator and of his patron are given in an acrostic formed by the initial letters of the lines of four eight-lined stanzas. [Vide paragraph on "Author."]

At the end of the book is a note by the editor, who was also the printer. It is as follows : "Here endeth the boke of comfort called in latyn Boecius de consolatione phīē Enprented in the exempt monastery of Tauestock in Denshyre by me Dan Thomas Rychard monke of the sayd monastery to the instant desyre of the right worshypful esquier Mayster Robert Langdon. Anno d. M.DXXV. Deo Gracias." Then follows an escutcheon bearing the arms of Robert Langdon.

Anthony Wood, in his *Athenae Oroniensae* (ed. Bliss, I. 48), referring to the printer, says : "Thomas Richard was from his youth traïnted up in religion and learning, and when in his manly years he took upon him the habit of a Benedictine Monk in the Abbey of Tavistock in Devonshire (in which county, I presume, he drew his first breath), and afterwards, passing a course of studies among his brethren of the same order in Gloucester College,<sup>1</sup> he was called home ; and being poetically inclined he translated into English verse, Sev. Boetius his 5 books entitled—De consolatione philosophiæ, which having done at the desire of Robert Langdon esq. an. 1525, they were printed in the said exempt monastery of Tavistock about that year. . . ." It is unfortunate that Wood should have ascribed the work to Richard, who was merely the editor and printer. However, the fact that Richard was well qualified after being at Gloucester College to prepare the long prose passages which occur, supports my views that they were his work as editor rather than that of the translator.

These prose insertions, which as a rule are placed either at the end of a prose or metre as a sort of commentary on what has gone before, or at the beginning of such passages to describe what is to follow, are peculiar to the printed text itself and can be found in no manuscripts. Since the readings of P are often closely allied to those of T and H, it seems reasonable to assume that, had the prose

<sup>1</sup> Now Worcester College.

insertions been in the MS. from which P was taken, some sign of them would have found its way into either T or H. But such is not the case.

Richard, it must be remembered, had to prepare the poem for people who lived more than a hundred years (and at a period when the language was rather unstable) after the original was written. Throughout the printed text (as will be shown later) the editor has changed words which were becoming obsolete for others more comprehensible at the time—often with utter disregard to the demands of the rhythm—and it is quite conceivable that in order to explain and comment, Thomas Richard wrote these prose insertions. He could very easily have compiled them from one of the numerous commentaries on Boethius which abounded in mediæval times, and his training at Gloucester College would most probably have brought him in contact with not a few of them.

An account of Richard's method of editing is given in the paragraph on the genealogy of the MSS.

*Cambridge Univ. Additional MS. 3573. [A]*

Several leaves are missing at the end and we are deprived of the colophon.

Vellum; ff. iii + 92 (ff. 93–96 omit.). The MS. also lacks ff. 55, 56, 60.

Originally it was Phillipps MS. 9472, and the Cambridge Univ. Library authorities regard it as having been transcribed about 1440. Fol. iiiia contains the signature: "Thomas Chapman," and this is followed by the remark, "Amen. god sau the quene of England 1562."

There seems to have been little care devoted to its transcription. There is no division into stanzas or even into prose or metre. Only the division into books seems to have concerned the scribe, and here again he makes a serious blunder, marking off Prosa X of Bk. III with the heading "Incipit liber quartus," and giving no indication whatever of the commencement of Bk. V on fol. 81a. This MS. resembles N and C in its variant readings and in its omissions. It has not been collated.

*MS. Phillipps 1099. [P]*

This MS. is in the possession of T. F. B. Fenwick, Esq., Thurstone House, Cheltenham, and is interesting in that its colophon runs: "Explicit liber Boecij de consolacione philosophie de latino in Anglicum translatus Anno Domini n.illesimo cccc<sup>mo</sup> X<sup>o</sup> per capellanum Johannem Tebaud alias Watyrbeche" (*vide* Todd's *Illustrations of Gower and Chaucer*, p. xxxi). It is not clear who this "Tebaud alias Watyrbeche" is, but that the Phillipps MS. is the only one giving this name—which in itself suggests uncertainty

—as against several good MSS. and the Printed Edition which acknowledge John Walton as the translator, lends little authority to the Cheltenham MS. I have not been able to examine this manuscript.

*MS. Thott. Royal Library, Copenhagen.*

The deputy keeper's 46th Annual Report (Append. ii. 64) refers to another MS. of Walton's *Boethius* in the Royal Library, Copenhagen. The report is as follows:

"15th cent. A very good vellum MS., but imperfect, of the early part of the 15th cent. trans., into verse of Boethius 'de Consolatione Philosophiae.' It belonged in 1737 to Wm. Borlase, the historian of Cornwall, and has a pencil mark of the price in some catalogue, '£1. 1.' The MS. was at some time examined by the late Mr. David Laing, of the Signet Library, Edinburgh, who inserted the following note in pencil: 'This appears to be the translation of Boethius by Johannes Capellanus (or John Walton) in the year 1410, of which several MSS. are preserved in England. D.L.'

Begins in Bk. I (Prose IV, Stan. XV):

"ȝit oþur two þat han me þus defiled  
Wer Gaudencius & opilioun."

Ends in Bk. IV (Prose VI, Stan. LVI):

"Riȝt so badde þeym self acordeth neuere  
And whi noȝt sith hit falleth eueri day."

Here and there copious marginal commentaries are inserted. It will be noticed that not only are parts of Bk. I and Bk. IV omitted, but the whole of Bk. V is lacking.

#### FILIATION OF THE MANUSCRIPTS

Though references to John Walton's verse translation of Boethius are totally lacking in Middle English literature, it is evident that his work was held in no small esteem by contemporaries, if we can judge by the large number of manuscripts known to be in existence. That the early sixteenth century, within fifty years after the first book was printed in England, should see a printed and specially prepared edition of Walton's work [*v. §§ 10–19 of this chapter*] shows at least that the verse translation of the Roman philosopher still had its attractions.

In addition to the MSS. already described, it is quite probable that there are others in private libraries, and one is faced with no small difficulty in selecting a base for a reliable text, as in no case have we a MS. which is a direct recension from the author's original, and in many cases the relationship to the original is so distant, and the scribal alterations are so devastating, that no reliance can be placed on the readings. Especially is this the case with MSS. T N F h Dc.

However, the variant readings are of help in the division of the MSS. into definite groups, and I have endeavoured to trace the relationship these bear to one another and to the original. In order to avoid inaccuracy which might ensue from generalisations based on examples taken from one part of the book only, I have drawn from the eight-lined stanzas of Book I and from a corresponding number of stanzas of Rhyme Royal in Book IV. This was necessary as, in the case of M and D, for example, these two have a great number of variants entirely peculiar to themselves in Bk. I, but in Bk. IV, while D maintains its original relationship to its source, M seems to have assumed a much closer relationship to R L and h.

The MSS. [I include P, the printed text here] of Walton described in the previous chapter can be divided into two main groups, the one containing T H P, the other embracing Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb L h M D N C. For convenience we shall call the former the A group, the latter the B group.

§ 1. In Bk. I (not including the Translator's Prologue and Preface) T H P have the following variant readings entirely peculiar to themselves : 33/5 ioyes] ioy, 37/3 worldly] wordely, 45/1 folkes] folis T H, foules P, 76/2 science] sciences, 76/3 with 3ow I stood] I stode with you, 81/5 peple] porayle, 89/3 schuld þei beren] schuld hem bren, 92/7 restreyñ] refreyne, 94/1 my] me by, 96/3 Be] Right by, 98/3 vnlhynde] vnkynde, 101/3 to] for to sle, 101/4 wol sesen] wold me lesen, 104/6 concorded] concorde, 111/4 peruersidnesse] wickednesse T H P, 115/8 axe] crye, 117/3 semeth] shyneth, 119/5 applie] vnaplie, 125/1 neuerþelatter] neuerþelesse, 129/1 asked] askest, 129/2 mcued] meueth T H P, 134/4 disturbed] distroblyd, 136/4 schulde] shal, 149/8 ese] lese, 151/4 þe] om., 151/5 mynde is] myndes.

§ 2. Similarly in Bk. IV : 586/4 peyne] þe peyne, 588/5 here we speketh] we speketh here, 589/4 welþe] welthys, 594/6 beholden] he beholdep, 598/7 ne] om., 608/4 might is them] myglites be hem, 608/5 fully preued] wele y previd, 612/5 whiche] þat, 621/1 whiche] þat, 622/5 as] om., 629/5 one] þou, 634/4 wicked] weke, 635/3 desireth] deliteth, 635/5 neuere] nat, 637/3 þise] þey, 647/5 þer] om.

§ 3. In addition the following readings occur : 130/2 þing] thynges T P, 138/4 fleen] fayle T P [Stan. om. from H], 141/1 seide] sayest T P, wyst H, 581/1 of] of the H P, 606/5 wilnþ] wynneth H P, 615/5 be forme] before me H P, 619/5 faileth] falleth H P.

In these cases where either T or H is not in agreement with P the error is no doubt often due to the scribe. Particularly is this scribal carelessness noticeable in the case of T, as will be shown later, v. § 9.

From these particular readings alone, where T H P are entirely in agreement among themselves and yet at variance with the other MSS., it seems fair to assume, not necessarily that they were each copied from the same MS., but that they descended from the same source—a source which was most certainly not the same as that from which the

members of group B were *directly* descended. Let us call this source A.

It remains to show the relationship of T H P to this source A.

§ 4. There is a very close resemblance indeed between T and H, both in variant readings and in omissions.

In Bk. I, T and H give the same readings as follows : 33/1 myschef] myselfe, 33/1 mete] bette, 33/5 allin] in all, 34/2 haue] om., 34/8 Thus murnyng for muses my mone I make T H, 35/2 þeym] payne T H, 35/2 in] and T H, 35/5 and] how, 36/4 hour of deth] deth of hym, 36/5 chaungyng] cheyngeth, 37/4 stabilite] felycite, 41/7 smoke] stokke, 44/1 þere] thre, 44/5 haþ] hath ben, 44/7 .malady] melody, 46/7 hath stonden] haue stond, þan I abood] That they abode, 50/7 worldly] wordly, 55/8 strong] grete, 60/2 myn herte] mynde, 64/5 wiche] om., 66/6 is] is foule, 68/3 Bot] And, 75/2 myght] myrthe, 76/1 Devine] Many, 82/6 of] of ther, 88/3 kynges juges] kyng, 89/8 admitted] purposyd, 94/5 however] how þat euer, 100/2 and skilfully] vnskillyfully, 119/3 when] om., 119/4 hem] than, 119/6 forlete] to lete, 119/7 oo] oughte ; rewlest] reuelest, 119/7 certanlie] om., 120/1 why] And why, 122/1 þeym þei drawen] drawes theyme, 122/7 knyttes] cuttiste, 124/3 stood as stylle as stone] satt stylle as a stone, 129/2 if] of T H, 130/1 schit] sett, 130/2 booke] om., 130/3 subtile] sothly, 132/8 þy] my, 136/5 wynter] vayne, 136/8 hym] be, 139/6 1 seide] om., 140/5 haþ] had, 140/6 trewly] newly, 141/3 neuerþelatter] neuerþeles, 146/2 it] om., 146/3 yea] om., 146/3 1(2)] ye, 148/4 waylest soo] wenest þou, 149/6 desese] distresse.

§ 5. Similarly in Bk. IV : 574/2 in god] om., 574/5 þe wey] thay, 574/6 wonder] om., 580/2 comprehendende] reprehende, 580/6 fer fro] suer to, 581/4 stye] ffle, 584/1 gidoresse] gaderers, 585/3 wickednesse] heuinesse, 585/4 now] om., 586/2 felons] feloweȝ, 586/6 onely] om., 589/3 rise] synne, 591/1 home] howse, 592/6 eyre] ffyre, 594/3 cercle] serche, 594/5 his] om., 596/5 þi self] myselfe, 596/6 so long haue so longe, 597/7 exiled] exclude, 599/7 evell] devyll, 599/7 neuer a] no, 600/7 first] fast, 601/2 in] in thise, 605/2 when] men, 606/3 good] goode wille, 606/6 is he not good] is noughe, 606/7 yis] this, 609/3 haue] and haue, 610/1 þe] þis, 610/3 here] om., 610/6 I coniecte it] ye consayve it, 611/6 walken] walkyng, 612/2 thise] om., 613/1 verrey souereyn] souerayne and verray, 614/5acheuen] enchevyn, 617/4 entenciouȝ] condyciouȝ, 624/1 be þaire wittyng] they her whetyng, 624/4 Noght] That, 624/4 tho] to, 624/6 forlete] forloryn, 625/7 And] And yit, 630/5 who] lo, 634/1 of] for, 634/3 wicked] myghty, 640/4 þe (2)] , om., 640/6 lyeth] om., 643/5 it wonne of withoute] wonyn it of wonte, 646/5 folkes] folke, 647/5 anentes] amenusen, 648/3 sith þat] shuche, 648/5 mede] om., 648/5 and] in, 650/1 seen] synne, 650/4 whan] whome, 652/5 see] saide, 655/3 skilfully] wilfully, 655/7 it] þer, 657/7 to] into, 658/6 dwelled] om., 658/6 clerkes] poetes, 660/1 clowes] cleis, 660/5 into] in, 661/1 noble] worthy, 661/1 Naryce] Nory, 662/4 acornes] acres.

§ 6. In addition to this agreement in readings, T and H bear a

similar relationship in the case of omissions. Those common to both T and H occur as follows : Translator's prologue and preface : Bk. I : 34/5, 68/5, 101/7, 8 ; Bk. II. : 182/5, 6 confusedly combined, 268/3-8, 269/1-6 ; Bk. III. : 369/4, 5 confusedly combined, 472/5-7, 523/4, 5 in reverse order ; Bk. IV. : 663/3, 4, 746/6, 750/5, 783/5 ; Bk. V. : 848/2-7, 849/1, 924/4, 924/6, 985/2-7, 986/1.

§ 7. Further proof of the close relationship between T and H is afforded by the fact that in both MSS., without the scribes being at all aware of the fact, a portion from Bk. IV [P. II, xix; P. III, v] is inserted in Bk. III after Stan. xxii of P. ix. As pointed out before (*vide Description of MSS.*), it cannot be that this is due to faulty binding in both T and H (a most unlikely coincidence), as the insertion starts in the middle of a page in each case. It is no doubt due to a mishap of this kind in the original from which both T and H were copied.

§ 8. It is impossible, too, that either H was copied from T or T from H, for each contains lines omitted from the other. (Cp. lists of omissions in T and H drawn up in *Description of MSS.*)

§ 9. Granted then that both T and H were copied directly from the same source [which we shall call A] by two different scribes, I append a series of variant readings, peculiar to T alone, showing what ravages the carelessness of a scribe can work in a MS.

Bk. I : 32/5 rendyng muses] rudyng musynges, 32/7 distroyed] distaynyd, 38/6 so faire] shuch, 38/7 hire noght] not her, 38/7 pogh] and, 53/1 oures] showers, 55/1 haue we nede] hath conceyvid, 56/2 but pou] withoute, 60/2 drerynesse] derkenesse T, 62/5 repreue] repent, 62/6 vpbraid] abraide T, at erst] at ardyst H ; at the hardest T, 64/4 a porcioun] approachyn, 68/8 willes to dispiese] that vs despice and dispiese, 86/2 enmyte] envyte, 110/4 mine offence] of my defence, 110/6 our] euery, 117/3 bright] lyghte, 119/5 noping] no man, 123/3 dryueth] deneeth H ; doughtith T, 129/7 of my] at myn awne, 138/7 meschaunce] myschefe.

Bk. IV : 575/1 wist his wit] will it wete, 581/1 mouynge] tellyn, 582/3 craft] caste, 582/4 my (1)] me with; my (2)] with, 586/2 defouled it and schent] hath devouryd and shedd, 586/6 seeth] settyth, 586/6 will] wys, 590/2 herd] saide, 590/2 seen] told, 591/2 pyche] put, 591/6 lede] lede yn, 595/2 heuen] om. T, 599/1 Lo] So, 599/5 sith] sothe, 599/6 euell] eruell, 601/5 is] vs, 602/2 werk] value, 602/5 effecte] fete, 606/5 wilneþ] vnnethe, 611/2 Will] Wolde, 624/3 sceme] wene, 624/7 failen] fallen, 626/6 wickedness] wretchednesse, 628/1 myght] ryght, 628/2 febulnesse] pevishenesse, 633/7 þe wicked] wickedhede, 637/7 þe] þys, 642/7 crown] gowne, 643/1 foreyn] souerayne.

§ 10. The case of P is rather more complex. While P certainly belongs to the same group as T and H, it is obvious that it cannot have come from the same *direct* source. The long series of omissions so frequent in T and H do not occur in P; the Prologue and Preface of the translator find a place in P; while there are no passages

straying unobserved from one book to another in Thomas Richard's edition.

§ 11. There is an extraordinary number of variant readings peculiar to P alone and not contained in any MS. whatsoever. Often they are of so drastic a nature that they cannot be due to any error, but are the result of deliberate emendations by Richard, who, as pointed out previously,<sup>1</sup> was well fitted to assume the rôle of editor.

In Bk. I they occur as follows: 32/1 allas I wrecche þat whilom was in welthe] alas that I vrechie whiles I was in welth, 32/2 songes] dyties, 32/5 lo rendyng] lamentable, 32/8 my bone cheefe] jolyte, 33/4 for to sew] to ensue, 34/3 eld] hestes, 34/5 toome] to me, 34/7 knowe] haue P, 34/7 scholde] I may, 34/8 But socourlese þus am I all forsake] Thus mornyng for mysese my mone I make, 35/8 waile] wele, 36/3 down] to grounde, 37/1 ye (2)] om., 41/6 dusk] duskey, 41/8 noght] oot, 46/4 sustened] boren, 46/7 hath stonden] hath ben, 47/8 heed] heddes P, 48/2 merveiled] Gau wonder, 48/3 I wondred] merveilynge, 49/1 Vnto] But to, 49/4 wiþ] then wiþ, 49/7 ffor cause] Because, 50/4 Myntyng] and mentynge, 50/8 merthe] reste, 51/1 whilom] sometyme, 53/8 vs] þem, 56/2 cast] caste away, 58/7 wepyng] teres, 58/8 i-went] all spent, 59/7 begynneth to schewe] will shew then, 60/1 Ryght] But, 62/7 arst] laste, 63/4 fool] ful, 65/3 wiþstood] rebelled, 65/6 wend] thought, 66/2 supposed] men trowed, 68/2 enformed] lerned, 69/2 noght-forthy] neuerþelesse, 79/8 wrong] vice, 81/5 mighti men] wicked folke, 85/4 rescued] receyued, 86/6 halle] courte, 86/8 withouten forth] withouten fayle, 87/8 stired] allas, 92/8 oght] ofte, 92/8 þat] his, 94/4 hide] denye, 94/4 trewth] soth, 94/5 But noght for that of pise howeuer it stent] But neuertheles at thys verament, 94/6 It spedeth noght my-seluen to excuse] excuseth not me in no maner wyse, 95/6 were traitorly] so falsely were, 96/7 Myn answere sothly scholde not be refused] of an answer I am fully aduyised, 97/6 a litel bet my lettres haue bestowen] Myn owne letters better can I bestowe, 105/8 and rightwisly pis might haue be redressid] Thus justly myght my dome haue ben dressed, 115/1 excited] styred, 116/6 þe sonne] her brothers, 116/2 perdurable] eternally, 119/7 Oo god þat all þing rewlest certainlie] Ow god that gouernest al certerly, 119/1 feeldes] seedes, 121/5 fforsworne] forshoren, 121/6 Lo false fraudes coloured as hem list] They colour ther deceytes as them lust, 122/8 Suntyme] Now somtyme, 126/2 cuntry] lande, 126/4 þow schuldest lere] I could the lere P, 129/4 place] prison, 130/1 schit] put, 130/6 good] welth, 132/8 wepest] welest, 133/8 now gouerned is] ys ruled thus, 134/3 noyse] desyre, 136/1 wolde] wyl, 139/3 grounde] kende, 141/8 haþe put] had sette hyt, 143/8 verray] comen, 143/7 or what entencioun] by inclination, 144/4 þise þinges wrought] thys world y wrought, 144/5 God] O God, 146/5 knowe wel] know and wyll, 146/8 haue I know] can I haue, 147/7 it may the] thou shalt it, 149/7 haue] fayle, 150/4 sikenesse] sorow,

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* account of printed edition in chapter describing MSS.

150/7 trowest þou] thou beleuest, 150/7 suppose] conceyue, 151/8  
wynde] clothe, 154/3 roche] stone, 154/4 clyf] rocke.

§ 12. Similarly in Bk. IV : 574/3 conceyued] conteyned, 574/5  
knowen] founden, 578/1 speken] speke now, 577/3 Supposyng]  
wenyng, 579/3 wilfully] willingly, 580/4 makeþ] shappeth, 580/5  
noght forþi] neuertheles, 580/7 or] and, 581/2 Beholde] Loke, 581/2  
it] hytself, 584/3 anon] al on, 584/5 angir] anguishe, 587/2 abomin-  
able and verray] ful horrible and ful, 592/2 into] and to, 592/2  
ariseth] ryseth, 592/3 And] Wich, 593/4 Thurgh out] By, 596/2  
of] of all, 598/5 þat] syth, 598/6 Begonne] Styred, 599/1 conceyue]  
perceyue, 599/6 conceyue] perceyue, 601/2 onely] holly, 603/2 ffull  
trew it is] hyt is the soth, 604/4 Excited] Styred, 605/1 also] yet P,  
605/2 þat we] we did, 605/4 so he] also, 607/4acheuen] to obteyn,  
608/1acheuen] atteynen, 608/3 are] ben, 609/2 þere] here, 612/6 þe]  
more, 614/5acheuen] atteynen, 617/1 febilte] debyltyte, 618/1 whiche]  
þat, 619/7 forlorn] y lost, 624/3 will it seme] hyt semeth, 628/4  
whiche if he wolde] That if he myght, 628/7 knowe and] om.,  
631/2 noght] neuer, 634/5 conceyued] perceyuid, 635/6 delice] delites,  
635/3 likeþ] semep, 635/5 ne] yet, 636/3 on hylle] om., 637/5  
twynne] wynne, 640/4 þe same] that, 640/4 þe (2)] þe very, 641/3  
þing] work, 645/3 No wight] None, 645/7 is (1)] is hyt, 646/3 and]  
in, 647/5 anentes] dymynuce, 647/7 purpose it of] hyt wold of her,  
649/6 is] ys he, 649/6 oghit] ofte, 650/2 supposen] trowen, 651/7  
cleped] om., 651/7 iwys] hyt ys no mysse, 655/3 clepe] callen,  
658/3 full] them, 660/1 clowes] nayles, 660/7 no þing] But not,  
663/1 They weyled] Weylyng, 665/4 noght forthly] yet verrely, 665/7  
To] Into, 670/5 lakken] Wanten, 671/6 gyves] engins, 672/6 twenty  
powsand fold] an hundred fold, 682/7 be cleped may] I dare wel sey,  
692/7 reward] regard, 694/7 Puttyng þi-self in þeynes alther-meste]  
And put the in peynes that euir shal lest.

From the above list it is obvious that the printer has been at no small pains to make his work acceptable. We must remember that he was preparing it for people living over a hundred years after it was originally written, a period whose language the introduction of printing was beginning to stabilise. Words quite current with the preceding century were to be marked out as obsolete or archaic, and the printer, with Caxton as his model, often assumed the rôle of judge. In our case then we shall not be surprised to find Thomas Richard doing likewise. Words and phrases in use in Walton's time were already becoming archaic, and the editor-printer, mindful of the demands of his readers, hastened their death.

The word *cleped* for example seems, very strangely, to have become archaic as early as 1525. Whenever Richard meets it he proceeds to cut it out, sometimes by a palpable omission as in 651/7, occasionally by altering a whole phrase as in 682/7, where *be cleped may* becomes *I dare wel say*, and most frequently by changing it to *called* as in 728/6, 733/3, 737/4. There are many more cases of this as will be seen in the lists of variant readings to each stanza.

The compound *noght-forþi* seems to have shared a similar fate. Most frequently it takes the form of *nevertheles*: 69/2, 94/5, 580/5, 712/5, 737/6, though on one occasion [665/4] it becomes *yet verrelly*, while in 576/5 it assumes the less pretentious form *yet for that*. *forthys* is even changed to *therfore* in 723/2.

*Reward* (O.F. "regarder") also undergoes change. It is always altered to *regard* [692/7, etc.], *rewardynge* becomes *regardynge* 765/7, and in 736/5 *rewarded* is changed to *comprehended*.

Strangely too, *conceyue* is invariably changed to *perceyue* [542/7, 599/1, 599/6, 725/5], though the sense of our Modern English "conceive" seems to be implied. In 150/7, however, *suppose* becomes *conceyue* in the printed edition.

Several pure Old English words seem to have had too much of an archaic flavour for Richard: *herne* becomes *thoght* 756/4, and the printer is thus left with the task of finding a new rhyme for the next line; *þewes* is ousted for *custumes* in 766/4 and 777/1, and *arst* makes way for *laste* 62/7.

The printer takes exception to *wilfully*, and in 694/1 and 710/4 *willingly* takes its place, though the sense of the Modern English *wilfully* is implied.

Finally we should expect such unusual words as: *delatours* [Chaucer has "acusours"; Lat. "accusatoribus"] to become *acusours* 704/5; *digest* [Lat. "digesta"; Ch. "dyvyded"] to appear as *dyuyded* 737/2; and *anentes* [cp. O.F. "anientiss"—extended stem of "anientir," Mod. Fr. "anéantir"] as *dymynuce* 647/5.

§ 13. In view of what has already been said, the long prose passages<sup>1</sup> which abound in the printed edition, which are not found in any of the MSS., and which take the form of commentaries on what has gone before—explaining allusions, drawing forth moral lessons from the incidents described in the different metra—are obviously the work of the editor-printer who, as a monk at Tavistock, and a graduate of Gloucester College,<sup>2</sup> Oxford, was fitted for his task. He found ample scope for making the work intelligible to his contemporaries.

§ 14. It is evident that the printer, as evinced by his alteration of the line "Pogh so þat I of makyng entirmete" of the Translator's Preface to "Though I hys makyng do conterfete," perceived the huge indebtedness of Walton to Chaucer. The latter's translation of *Boethius* was printed by Caxton about 1479, and it is quite probable that Richard, if a MS. copy was inaccessible, availed himself of Caxton's printed text. That Chaucer's text was certainly consulted during the preparation of the 1525 printed edition of Walton's translation is clearly shown by the number of emendations where the MS. readings are deliberately altered by Thomas Richard to make them agree with the corresponding ones of the prose translation. I here tabulate a few of them.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide Appendix.*

<sup>2</sup> Now Worcester College.

	MSS.	P.	CHAUCER. <sup>1</sup>
<i>Book I.</i>			
(1) 82/2	songes	dytes	delitable <i>ditees</i> (M. I, 2)
(2) 81/5	men	folk	of more myghty <i>folk</i> (P. IV, 38)
(3) 94/4	trewth	soth	to hide the <i>soth</i> (P. IV, 118)
(4) 95/6	were traitorly	falsly were	lettres <i>falsly</i> maked (P. IV, 123)
(5) 119/7	rewlest	gouernest	<i>gouernyng alle thynges</i> (M. V, 22)
(6) 150/7	trowest þou —	thou beleuest	thou <i>byleuest</i> (P. VI, 67)
(7) 151/8	wynde	clothe	they <i>clothen</i> hem (P. VI, 73)
(8) 154/3	roche	stone	encountrynge of a stoon (M. VII, 9)
(9) 154/4	clyf	roche	fallen fro some roche (M. VII, 9)
<i>Book IV.</i>			
(10) 587/2	abominable	horrible	more <i>horrible</i> than all monstres (P. I, 28)
(11) 680/1	clowes	nayles	his <i>nayles</i> and his <i>tepe</i> (M. III, 9)
<i>Book V.</i>			
(12) 918/7	minde	soule	enprented into <i>sowles</i> (M. IV, 6)
(13) 932/4	belongeþ	perteyneth	nat al ononly that <i>apertieneth</i> properly (P. V, 28)
(14) 936/2	leuen	give credence	we oughten rather <i>yeven</i> credence (P. V, 47)

§ 15. On the other hand, the printer has made alterations for no apparent reason. I cannot think that these readings were in the MSS. from which P was taken, as P is so closely allied to H and T that variant readings of such startling differences would most certainly have shown themselves in these two manuscripts. Many of them (I append a table) are quite opposed to Chaucer, where the MSS. are in agreement with the prose work. (See p. xxix.)

It will be seen that in several cases the metre is spoiled by the alteration, and one is led to think that Richard, on occasions, abused his duties as editor. He cannot successfully put forward the plea that his alterations were intended to make the original more comprehensible, for none of the cases just tabulated presents any difficulty of comprehension whatsoever.

§ 16. Occasionally the printer makes emendations after comparison with the original Latin. For example the MSS. in 116/6 give *þe sonne* as a translation of *Fratriis* (*Fratriis totis obuia flammis*, Bk. I., M. v, 6),<sup>2</sup> thus explaining the passage rather than translating it.

<sup>1</sup> The references are to Prose or Metre and line in Skeat's edition of *Chaucer*, Vol. II (Clarendon Press).

<sup>2</sup> The reference is to Prose, or Metre and line of the Loeb edition of *Boethius* edited by Rand and Stewart.

	MSS.	P.	CHAUCER.
<i>Book I.</i>			
(1) 58/7	wepyng	teres	wawes of my <i>wepynges</i> (P. II, 20)
(2) 63/4	fool-hardynesse	ful-hardinesse	<i>foolhardynesse</i> of folye (P. III, 19)
(3) 68/2	enformed	lerned	they were <i>enfourmed</i> of myne maneres (P. III, 43)
(4) 86/6	halle	courte	kynges <i>halle</i> (P. IV, 79)
(5) 115/1	excited	styred	And ben <i>excited</i> ther to (P. IV, 225)
(6) 116/2	perdurable	eternally	y fastned to thy <i>perdurable</i> chayer (M. v, 2)
(7) 121/6	fraudes	deceytes	ne the <i>fraude</i> couered . . . with a fal's colour (M. 5, 31)
(8) 126/2	cuntry	lande	of what <i>contree</i> thou art born (P. v, 12)
(9) 132/8	wepest	welest	thou hast wopen for the damage (P. v, 42)
<i>Book IV.</i>			
(10) 817/1	febilte	deblyte	þe <i>feblesse</i> . . . (P. 2, 102)
(11) 641/3	þing	work	þat alle <i>pinges</i> ben doon (P. III, 10)
(12) 670/5	lakken	wanten	to <i>lakken</i> mowynge to done yvel (P. IV, 29)

The printed edition alters *þe sonne* to the more literal reading *her brothers*.

Again *semina* (Bk. I., M. v, 21) becomes *feeldes* in the MSS. (119/1), but the printer has correctly emended it to *seedes*.

§ 17. On the other hand, some most unreasonable emendations, quite at variance with the Latin text, appear in the printed edition. In 81/5 of Book I. *potentiorum* is correctly translated by *myghti* in the MSS., but the printer gives *wicked*. Probably in this case the printer had the context in view, for the author is referring to mighty men who have abused their power. But there is no excuse for rendering *occuluisse* (Bk. I., P. iv, 83) by *denye* when the MSS. haue *hide* (94/4); neither does it seem reasonable to change the MSS. *noyse* 134/3 as a translation of *tumultus* (P. v, 38) to *desyre*.

It is evident, then, that while the printer had the Latin text before him, he did not follow it as closely as was desirable.

§ 18. Perhaps of more importance in showing how the printer compared his original with the Latin is the appearance in the printed edition of an extra stanza after Stan. XXXII, Prose iv, Book I. No doubt in his comparison Richard came across a gap in Walton's text as compared with the Latin. Not that there was any indication of such an omission in the MSS., for in no MS. whatsoever does this

stanza exist, not even in members of the B group. A desire to remedy this error led to the insertion of another stanza, which I take to be entirely the work of the editor-printer. It is as follows :

“ But then I beyng for that same while  
With al my labour and my diligence  
Fro my iugemente fyue hundred myle,  
Hauyng in court no aduocate ne defence,  
To deth I was a-iuged in absence,  
Me beyng in the senatoures nedes  
And they consentyng, geuen was the sentence ;  
Loo, how I am rewarded to my nedes.”

The corresponding Latin passage (Bk. I, P. iv, 30) runs : “ Nunc quingentis fere passuum milibus procul muti atque indefensi ob studium propensius in senatum morti proscriptionique damnamur.”

Chaucer translates this (P. iv, 172f.) : “ But now I am remewed fro the citee of Rome almost fyve hundred thousand pas, I am withoute defence dampedn to proscripcoun and to the deeth, for the studie and bountees that I haue doon to the senat.”

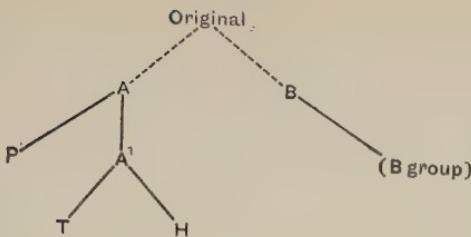
A comparison of the above stanza with Chaucer shows no very great similarity. Considering the great indebtedness of Walton to the earlier translator—the hand of Chaucer is evident in nearly every stanza of Walton—one is very reluctant to accept this additional stanza as the verse translator's own work. It could very well have resulted from Richard's endeavours to make Walton's translation complete.

§ 19. Richard's work, then, as editor and printer resulted in an almost entirely new exposition of the text. Taking a MS. closely allied to T and H, and not far removed from the translator's original as his base [I assume that Richard's MS. was very close to the original, for his text is the only one which mentions Elizabeth Berkeley as being Walton's patron], with the help of Chaucer's version, the Latin original and probably some<sup>1</sup> of the many medieval commentaries on *Boethius* so common at the time, he produced an edition which would be more suitable for his contemporaries than the bare text of the manuscript, and would, no doubt, also be more satisfactory to Robert Langdon for whom it was specially prepared.

§ 20. With regard to the genealogy [neglecting the editor's emendations], while P is certainly closely allied to T and H (v. §§ 1, 2), it cannot have come directly from A<sup>1</sup>, their direct source, which (v. § 7) was faulty in its binding, contained numerous omissions, lacked the translator's prologue, and preface to the whole work, but retained the preface to Books IV and V.

I therefore surmise the arrangement to be :

<sup>1</sup> Richard himself mentions Trivet (1258–1328) the medieval commentator on *Boethius*, in his long note to Prose I, Bk. I. (*vide* Appendix).



§ 21. Returning to the B group of MSS., these, by comparison of variant readings, can be divided into three definite subdivisions :

- (1) Group : N C (which we shall call the b group).
- (2) Group : Rl Ba Dc F J Ch Bb † (which we shall call the b<sup>1</sup> group).
- (3) Group : R L M h D (which we shall call the β<sup>1</sup> group).

§ 22. In Bk. I, N and C have the following variant readings entirely peculiar to themselves : 15/3 he wolde] wolde he, 32/4 merþe] myrthes, 39/7 worldly] worthy, 42/1 þe] om., 51/7 what] om., 102/2 I powht to done] I do, 109/5 outhier] owgh, 154/6 Bot] Be.

Similarly in the first part of Bk IV N and C have the following in common : 587/4 a so] also, 636/5 wordes] woodnesse, 650/7 effected] enfected, 664/2 Is] In.

§ 23. Unfortunately N has quite a number of variant readings peculiar to itself which are entirely due either to the carelessness of the scribe or to his desire to "correct," viz. 38/2 fynge] figures, 43/1 men] man, 43/7 of] in, 44/1 þere] here, 44/8 and diseise] than ese, 45/6 bryngen] brynginge, 47/2 hym bryngen at] brynge hym to, 48/2 þat] om., 70/7 wast] gret. . . . Bk. IV : 574/4 ne mowe not] ffor now nocht, 574/5 bel] ne, 577/7 wroght] brought, 595/5 light] knyght, 597/7 lond] place, 599/3 folk] folkes, 611/5 feet] effecte, 621/6 ffor there] ffurther, 626/1 careyn] certeyn, 627/5 defete] forfeit, 638/1 distressed] depressed, 653/6 transformed] transported, 654/6 stryues] stryf, 662/5 transformed] transported, 664/6 defaute] defence.

The MS. throughout does not seem to have had the same care as was taken with many of the other MSS.—there are numerous insertions, illuminated letters occur only occasionally, and there are no marginal headings to each prose and metre—so that one cannot help thinking that the above variant readings are the result of the carelessness or thoughtlessness of the scribe. A corrector seems to have noticed many of these numerous errors, and crosses in the margin in different ink denote some of the erroneous lines.

There is practically a negligible number of cases where C has variants entirely peculiar to itself. In Bk. I. I only find one [other than corrections by a later hand], 34/7 I scholde] shuld I, and the early part of Bk. IV is only marred with one—574/4 enscheded] enserged.

† Bb has a very close connection with the β<sup>1</sup> group v § 39.

§ 24. However from § 22 it is clear that N and C are from the same source—such a series of variants peculiar to two MSS. cannot be mere coincidence—while as further proof we find that both N and C, and no other MSS., lack lines 71/7 and 816/7.

§ 25. The question now arises as to what relation this b group bears to the other groups. This can best be determined by an examination of definite erroneous readings. Where one group of MSS. has correct readings with another group this similarity can only be due to the translator's original. On the other hand, any similarity among groups in the case of erroneous readings must point to a common source other than the original in which these readings have found a place.

§ 26. I have taken the following instances of incorrect readings from the chapter headed "Principal Corrections" (q.v.) and all of them can be definitely regarded as such.

N and C have incorrect readings in common with Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb L R M D h (*i.e.* the other members of the B group) as follows:

94/1 me by T H P] my—all other MSS., 101/3 for to sle T H P] to,  
 289/1 plenerlye T H P] priuely, 332/3 drynen T H P] drawen, 360/3  
 welþes T H P] helþe, 445/2 vile T H] well (*or will*), 449/1 wene T H  
 (trowe P]) þen, 522/3 most T H P] moyst and, 568/5 were T H] dere,  
 615/5 rennest T H P] remeuest, 668/5 a wrecche T H P] he worcheþ,  
 837/3 scheluyng T H] scheloying, 993/4 may do T H P] i do N, mys  
 ido.

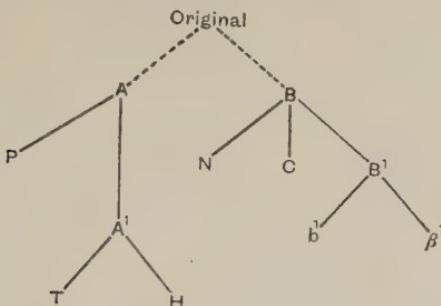
These errors at once confine N and C to the B group, for I can find no instance of N and C being connected to the A group by a common error. It is obvious that each of the above mistakes must have found its way into B (the source of the B group) and have been transmitted by copyists to each individual member of the group.

§ 27. Furthermore, with regard to the relationship between N and C (*i.e.* the b group) and the other MSS. of the B group (*i.e.* groups b<sup>1</sup> and β<sup>1</sup>), it will be clear, if it can be proved that N and C have correct readings where the b<sup>1</sup> and β<sup>1</sup> groups are incorrect, that N and C are nearer to the original than b<sup>1</sup> and β<sup>1</sup>, and that these errors have crept into b<sup>1</sup> and β<sup>1</sup> from a source which was further removed from the original than the direct source of N and C.

In the following instances (taken from the chapter on "Principal Corrections," q.v.), N and C agree with T H P in having correct readings, *i.e.* readings from the translator's original, while the b<sup>1</sup> and β<sup>1</sup> groups have erroneous readings—due, no doubt, to the scribe of their direct source (B<sup>1</sup>).

40/3 extent N C T H P] existent—b<sup>1</sup> and β<sup>1</sup> groups, 119/5 vnplie  
 N C T H P] applic, 203/1 þe forme N C T H] þat fortune, 338/2  
 renoun N C T H P] resoun, 423/5 schap or (your N) beaute N C T  
 H P] worship, 457/6 leste N C T H P] om. M D; firste F; last,  
 487/2 proposiciouns N C T H P] proportions, 506/2 gouerned N C H P]  
 grounded, 568/4 whiche N C T H] while, 804/5 incresen N C T H P]  
 hauen.

I therefore trace the genealogy as follows :



§ 28. The  $b^1$  group, to judge from variant readings, contains the following MSS.: Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb. Readings peculiar to these seven only occur as follows: 59/6 chaseth] causeth Rl Ba De F Ch Bb (*but altered to chaseth*) (the folio is omitted in J, but without doubt it gave the same reading), 61/1 Owh] o where Rl Ba De F Ch Bb (*alt.* Owh) [*Stan. om. J : fol. om.*], 64/3 cauȝten] causen Rl Ba De F Ch Bb (*alt.* cauȝten) [*Stan. om. J : fol. om.*], 72/8 fleischly] feythfully Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb (*alt.* fleischly) (N C have eythfully), 75/4 had] hold Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb (*alt.* had) (N C have hold), 106/1 Ow] of Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb (*alt.* ow), 128/8 in] of Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb (*alt.* in), 154/6 Bot] Be Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb . . . . 584/7 vnknownen] beknownen Rl Ba De F J Ch Bb (*alt.* vnknownen). In addition, all these MSS. lack 520/7, though in Bb the line is inserted later in the margin by a different hand.

§ 29. Further proof that Bb originally belonged to this group may be seen in the following variants: 84/1 þe] om. Rl Ba Bb (*but inserted later*) (N C om. þe), 32/4 morþe] wittes Ba De F J Ch Bb (*alt.* merþe) 49/8 al] om. Rl. Ba F Ch Bb (*inserted later*), 51/7 haueth] hath Rl Ba F Bb (*alt.* haueth) [N has hath], 51/8 in] om. Rl Ba F Bb (*inserted later*) [C R have same omission], 144/6 schold] myght Rl Ba F J Ch Bb (*alt.* schold), 145/1 suche] þis Rl Ba F J Ch Bb (*alt.* suche), 146/8 now] om. Rl Ba F J Ch Bb (*inserted later*).

§ 30. As will be noticed from the readings already quoted, Bb has been revised by a scribe who (as will be shown later) corrected this MS. from  $\beta^1$ . Bb corrected then became the direct source of R and L, and the original for the group D R L h M.

§ 31. Moreover, Bb seems to have been nearer the original  $b^1$  than the remaining six members of the group, for the number of variations confined to the whole seven members is very small indeed in comparison to the number peculiar to Rl Ba De F J Ch, and to combinations of several of these six.

§ 32. Variants confined to Rl Ba De F J Ch alone [many of them bad ones] occur as follows: 32/3 sorowes] sorowe, 42/6 þat] om., 48/1 I than that] Then I þut, 59/3 in] om., 71/8 his] oo, 80/1 [þe hate þat I haue had and heuynesse] Yif that I haue had any heuynesse [N has

*same], 89/3 front] fronte with, 93/5 vñwit] vñwitty, 99/2 vñþrifty-nesse] vñrightwysnesse, 102/2 I þoght to done] I do, 111/4 peruersite] peruersidnesse, 120/2 gouernement] gouernaunce, 127/8 ne] om., 130/3 sentence] science, 130/7 soþ] om., 131/4 þy] my, 137/8 in] a, 138/2] hath om., 142/1 Owh] O which, 142/6 þinges] þing, 151/1 shyn] skyn . . . 590/5 Lo] Now, 615/5 befor me] forme, 641/6 a] and, 627/3 hys] om. This list strengthens the conclusion that Rl Ba De F J Ch have a common source.*

§ 33. There appears to be a further subdivision possible. The MSS. Rl Ba J Ch unite in having a series of variants entirely peculiar to themselves. For example: 34/3 haþ] has, 38/6 soþe] feyþe, 40/1 of] of full, 41/5 full] om., 41/8 not] om. [N T P *hare same], 72/1 rekyth] recheth, 77/4 obysaunce] obseruance, 78/6 souereynte], souereyngnete, 84/2 selle] sulle, 125/1 wel þis] wyl I þis, 126/2 or] or of, 127/2 wight] þing, 129/3 þi] þis . . . 603/7 weyk] wyrk Rl Ba Ch [*Stan. om. J—probably gave same reading], 638/7 of] at a, 638/2 wreþþe] wrecche, 662/2 take] tane a.**

§ 34. F and De tear themselves further from Rl Ba J Ch by having a number of readings confined to themselves individually. F has the following: 34/8 al] om., 36/8 draw] tarye, tarieþ] draweth, 39/2 Hire colour eek so lively and so bright] and here coloure so loueli briȝte, 39/3 Hire eyen brend semyng as for clercl Here yen brennynge semyng ful elere, 39/4 were] was, 41/4 I trouwe it be no] withoute, 41/7 had stonden] stonding, 43/8 In certeyn] om., 49/3 forlet] forleting . . . 574/5 Neither] Noþer, 575/1 þis] þe, 575/4 as] or, 581/4 stye] stere, 588/7 goode] goddes, 591/7 land] londe bringe, 592/1 swifte] briȝte, 603/7 weyk] wirke feble, 604/2 here] eke, 605/6 record] recorded, 630/1 ne] and, 630/7 weineth] semeth, 644/1 sith] soþe, 644/3 is it] hit is, 648/7 moste] moste be, 653/3 who so] whos, 657/4 forlorn] hath forlorn F, 662/7 by laft] laft.

However, these readings are in most cases probably due to either the carelessness of the scribe or to his desire to alter what was not quite clear to him. For example in 603/7, where Rl Ba J Ch have *wyrk* for *weyk*, the scribe of F noticing the line made no sense as it stood, altered *wyrk* of his source to *wyrke feble*. He thus obtained sense at the sacrifice of metre. Keeping this in mind, and remembering the strong evidence in §§ 31 and 32 for the very close connexion between Rl Ba De F J Ch, I cannot think that F was anything but a direct descendant from the same original as the other members, and that any divergences in readings in F are entirely due to the copyist.

§ 35. De seems to have been treated similarly to F. Readings peculiar to De alone occur: 51, 5 þat] in (om. Rl Ba F Ch), 67/1 herd] herd telle me (herd telle Rl Ba F Ch—*Stan. om. J*) . . . 577/1 haþ] schap, 582/2 labour] mater, 603/7 weyk] myghty, 607/1 þat þei] ther, 607/4 verrailly] certeynly, 613/2 bothe] noon, 633/3 wrecched hede] wikked hede, 640/4 þe (2)] noo, 644/3 þan] þat, 645/7 disposed] despysid, 648/4 clere] right cleer, 649/7 enfecte] effect, 657/4 forlorn] forlorn he hath, 662/4 past] repast. All these variations can be

attributed to the copyist. In 603/7, where *weyk* becomes *wyrk* Rl Ba J Ch; *wyrke feble* F; Dc gives *myghty*, the very opposite sense to what is intended. The lines 603/6, 7 are :

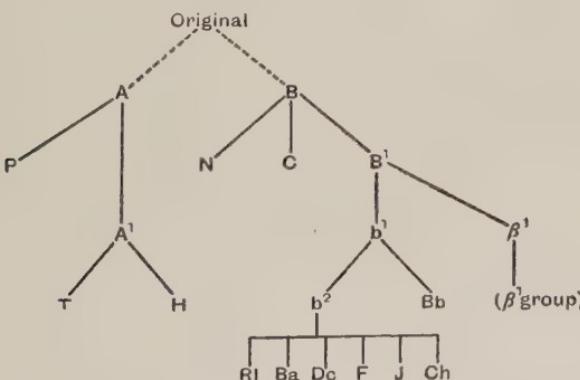
Than every man is myghti þere he may,  
And þere he may not, weyk it is no nay.

Probably the copyist of Dc in his carelessness wrote *myghti* as a result of seeing it just above the word he was copying. Nevertheless, like F, Dc is no doubt a direct descendant of b<sup>2</sup>, the source of Rl Ba Dc F J Ch.

§ 36. There is, however, a very important relationship between Ba and Ch. Of all the MSS. I have examined these two alone agree in their colophons in attributing the translation to "Johannem Waltoun, nuper canonicum de Oseneye." Moreover, in each case the colophon is followed by the same Latin verses of the scribe, the same hymn to Jesus, and the same hymn on the Eucharist (*vide Description of MSS.*).

The agreement of the other MSS. of the b<sup>1</sup> group in so many readings will not allow us to attribute a different source to Ba and Ch, despite the difference in colophons just mentioned. Both Ba and Ch, to judge from the beautifully illuminated initials, had a great amount of care bestowed on them. Probably the scribes in each case (the handwriting in both Ba and Ch is very similar indeed, and it is possible that they were each written by the same man), in their desire to produce as beautiful and as complete a piece of work as possible, decided that the ordinary colophon which gave Johannes Capellanus as the author was not sufficient to identify the man, and they therefore gave his full name and status.

The genealogical table now stands as follows :



§ 37. That L R M D h Bb are all intimately connected will be seen from the following :

(1) In Stan. 114 l. 4 is repeated again after l. 8 (thus giving the stanza nine lines in all) in L R M D Bb. In Bb the stanza originally

stood with l. 4 as l. 8 [*i.e.* 8 lines]. We find, however, the corrector has written l. 8 in the margin with a reference mark stating that it is to be inserted after l. 3. No doubt in his process of correction this corrector found that l. 4 of  $\beta^1$  (his source for correction) did not occur as l. 4 of the stanza in Bb. He therefore inserted it in the margin with the reference mark that his correction should be put after l. 3. Unfortunately, however, he forgot to cross out the original l. 8 of this stanza in Bb; when the copyists of R and L met this stanza they saw the line written in the margin of Bb with the intimation that it should be put after l. 3. They naturally made the correction and thus found themselves eventually with a nine-lined stanza, *i.e.* with lines 4 and 9 reading the same. M and D, being connected with R and L, also made the same mistake. The scribe of h seems to have perceived the error and omits the ninth line.

(2) In 492/z, 3, 4, the Rl Ba Dc F J Ch group give the following rendering :

2. 'Haue we not seid,' quod sche, 'þat blisfulnesse
3. Is good, Boecius ?' "3is," seyde I, "souereyn."
4. 'Adde we,' quod sche, 'þe remenant vnto þis . . .

Bb originally omits lines 3 and 4 and for l. 2 gives the reading, "Haue we not seid quod sche þe remenant vnto þis." It is obvious that the copyist has committed an error quite common to scribes : in copying he saw "quod sche" in both lines 2 and 4 and unconsciously he wrote in l. 2 the words following *quod sche* in l. 4, instead of those following *quod sche* in l. 2. He then continued with l. 5. As a result lines 2 and 4 were confusedly combined and l. 3 was omitted altogether. The corrector in comparing with  $\beta^1$  read the beginning of l. 2 of Bb as agreeing with the corresponding line of  $\beta^1$ . He then found that lines 3 and 4 of  $\beta^1$  did not follow as lines 3 and 4 in Bb. He therefore inserted them in the margin and made the necessary instructions that these should be put in Bb as corrections.

The inserted lines were as follows :

3. How that blisfulnesse is god and souerayn.
4. Adde we quod sche þe remenant vnto þis.

The scribes of R and L using Bb (corrected) as their original naturally copied l. 2 as written in Bb, and also made the correction indicated by the corrector.

L therefore gave :

- 1. 2. Haue we not seid quod sche þe remenant vnto þis.
1. 3. How that blisfulnesse is god and souerayn.
1. 4. Adde we quod sche þe remenant vnto þis.

M and h give exactly the same readings as L for 2, 3, 4. R gives the same for l. 2; adds *þis seide I* to l. 3; and omits *quod sche* from l. 4.

D has the same reading as Bb L R M h for l. 2, but does not

insert the missing lines as indicated in Bb. Obviously then, here again is convincing proof of the close connection between L R M D h Bb (corrected).

(3) In Stan. 848 l. 5 is omitted from L R h Bb M D; it is also wanting from N and C. Obviously it was omitted from B, the source of N and C, b<sup>1</sup>, the source of Bb—(Rl Ba Dc F J Ch must have found it in b<sup>2</sup>), and from β<sup>1</sup>. The corrector would no doubt have inserted it in Bb had it been contained in β<sup>1</sup>.

(4) Again Stan. 745 contains nine lines in D L and R. L. 3 and 4 in each MS. are marked with a + in the margin. Lines 3 and 4 of D L R are omitted in Rl Ba Dc F J Ch Bb (originally) and N C. In Bb, however, they are written by the correcting hand in the margin with instruction for insertion after l. 2. Naturally, then, the scribes of L and R, taking Bb (corrected) as their *direct* source would include these two lines in their versions. That they had some doubt about the inclusion is shown by the crosses put against the extra lines. D being closely connected retained the nine lines.

Apparently the direct source of M and h (which was not Bb) thought it wise to omit these lines.

(5) In Stan. 700, lines 5 and 6 are in reverse order in L R M h Bb (C has also the same fault).

§ 38. In Bk. I, M and D have a remarkably great number of variant readings entirely peculiar to themselves. So much so, that while it is certain that they are closely connected with the other members of the β<sup>1</sup> group (*v. § 37, (1)*), I cannot think that they are members of the group L R h Bb. Rather do I think that they are descended from a special recension of Bb, which, to judge by the number and the nature of the variant readings, was very badly treated by the scribe. This state of affairs, however, only applies to Book I.

Readings confined to M and D alone: 33/2 myschef] my thef, 33/5 þei] om., 34/4 to] so, 34/6 begynneth] genneth, 35/5 dull & deef] deef & dulle, 37/5 hys] lyfe, 39/3 for] fuyre, 39/4 fresche] clere, 41/2 mater] nature, 41/4 I trowe it to be no] I holde it no, 42/8 þere] lowe, 42/8 evire vpward] vpward evere, 43/6 right] om., 45/4 of þaire full] full of her, 48/1 I than that] I beyng, 48/5 smerthy] so smerthy, 49/4 wiþ] all wiþ, 50/4 myntyng] Menyng, 50/4 for] om., 52/3 whennes eke] whens eke were, 53/7 grete] om., 53/7 plesoun] dothe so plesen, 55/1 we] I, 55/2 compleyntes] my compleynt, 56/2 had] haue, 57/8 But smerthy for hym socoure shall I gete, 58/2 me] om., 62/6 suche] suche an, 62/7 game] grame, 64/5 mo] me, 66/7 peruerued] conuerted, 67/7, 8 confused, 72/4 he] om., 72/5 þat] as ye, 73/3 deseruen] disarne (also T H), 75/1 my] thi, 76/4 abit] lyknes, 81/6 conigast] comune gest, 83/1 Ther] om., 83/7 as] full, 85/1 eke] om., 90/1 myn art and] my gode ȝele or, 91/2 why] where, 94/2 þaire] myne, 100/4 fro whennes] where of, 107/6 worldly] maner, 112/5 þat] þise, 120/5 þat] whiche, 122/1 þeym] þat, 122/4 hede] dede, 123/5 What so euer pou be] when it liketh þe, 126/2 exul]

exclyd, 125/6 out] *om.*, 130/4 was] were, 132/1 rehersed] receyued, 133/5 song] foos, 133/8 gouerned] vngouerned, 136/2 cancer] cancro, 140/3 thow] *om.*, 142/1 Owh] Owhat, 146/5–8 *om.*

Such a formidable array of variants, so drastic in their nature, cannot but bind M and D together as being independent of R h Bb L in details, though, as has been pointed out § 37, some distant connexion is distinctly apparent.

§ 39. In Bk. IV, however, M and D are as widely separated as they are connected in the first book. In the first hundred stanzas of Bk. IV I can only find one case where a variant reading occurs peculiar to M and D alone, 642/2 *he*] *be*, and this is so insignificant that it might be a mere coincidence.

However, D persists in being as irregular as it was in Bk. I, and we find the following list of variants entirely confined to D alone : 574/5 vtterly] verily, 585/6 wel more encreseth] encresceth wel more, 585/7 wickednesse regnep] wikked men reigne, 586/6 defouled] defended, 591/1 *þi*] mine, 591/3 heighth] lyght, 592/1 my] theire, 592/2 stieng] stinghe, 593/2 hoot] grete, 596/2 thinges] kyngys, 597/1 hennes] whens, 599/7 myght] noughe, 600/6 þinke I] I thinke thus, 601/2 onely] allonly, 601/5 þat] *pe*, 602/6 wynnen] biluyng, 604/2 befor] to fore 605/1 remembre] gouerne, 605/2 when] what, 606/1 boþe] dothe, 610/6 coniecte] coniectet, 611/7 nay] maye not, 612/2 thise] thilke, 613/7 þat] whiche, 618/7 self] *om.*, 622/3 vnkonnyng] vnbuxom, 622/2 forleten] forletynge, 625/1 wonder will] wondreful, 625/6 it] *om.*, 631/1 mowe] wolde, 632/4 I schal after] after I shalle the, 632/6 oweth] oon, 632/5 Sith] Suyche, 633/7 nyght] wighte, 635/1 þat] as, 636/1 wrecched veyn] verry wrecched, 639/2 defiled] hem defouled, 639/7 there] that, 644/7 as] *om.*, 648/4 and pleyne] peyne, 653/1 goodnesse] gladnes 654/1 brennen] brym, 654/3 devise] a wyse, 654/4 fers] free, 658/1 boystously] soubdeynly, 660/1 waxen] worin, 660/2 y lyk] lyk, 661/1 þis] *pe*, 661/3 taght] thought, 661/5 saued] saue, 662/3 as] *om.*, 662/4 made] had, 663/2 Circes] Curys, 663/6 sche chaunge] be chaunged.

The same passage from Bk. IV contains only two cases where M has variants peculiar to itself—576/1 Lo] ffor, 642/5 folk] *om.* Both these could very well have been due to the carelessness of the copyist.

In addition there are a number of cases where M [but *not* D] is joined to L R Bb and h by variant readings peculiar to this group. In the early part of Book IV they occur as follows : 511/3 vnite] vanite R M h Bb L (*but altered to vnite*), 605/6 noght] y noght L M h Bb (R noght), 614/1 The] They L R M Bb (h The), 615/5 befor' me] be forme L R h M Bb, 630/4 denyen] devyne L R M h Bb, 632/1 it] *om.*, L R h M Bb, 632/6 coueited] coueit L R h M Bb (C *has coueit*), 635/5 þei] *om.* M L R h Bb, 657/2 of (2)] *om.* L R M h Bb [Rl Ba Ch *have same omission*], 659/7 marmoryk] in armoryk L R M Bb [h *has been corrected*].

§ 40. The question now arises as to why M and D should be so

closely connected in Bk. I, and so widely divergent in the other books. I can find no connexion between M and D after Bk. I. The answer is most probably this. In D [v. Description of MSS.] there begins after Metrum II of Bk. II a series of insertions where passages from later books find a place in earlier books. As has already been pointed out, the insertions occur in the middle of the page without the scribe of D being aware of the errors, and were probably due to errors of binding in the original. The scribe of M, however, perceived them and therefore sought another MS. from which to complete his work. Either by accident or by design he procured an MS. belonging to the same group, *i.e.* a descendant of Bb (corrected), and very closely related to L R h Bb as shown above, and used this as his source for the remainder of M. We thus have M and D very closely related to one another in Bk. I, and rather distantly connected with L R h Bb. After Bk. I, however, while D continues this distant relationship with L R h Bb, M breaks away from D and becomes very closely connected to these four.

§ 41. As shown in § 39, L R M h Bb are very closely connected (in the case of M, the close connexion occurs in the last four books), and it is now left to find the relationship they bear to one another. Apart from the question of textual resemblances, there is a very strong bond between L R and Bb, as evinced by the method of setting out the work—*i.e.* in resemblances in marginal notes, headings of prosae and metra, illuminated initials, etc. Points of this nature peculiar to L R Bb occur [in Bks. I and IV] as follows:

*Book I.* (1) In L R Bb division into stanzas with an illuminated initial letter for each stanza does not occur until Stan. VI of the Translator's Preface. I consider this of the utmost importance in proving that L and R were taken directly from Bb (corrected) and that Bb was not corrected from L or R. It is most unlikely that such similarity of arrangement is a mere coincidence. It is much more probable that the scribes of L and R copied the MS. Bb (corrected) as they saw it, embracing all the corrections made by Bb [v. § 37] and putting in coloured initials where they occurred in Bb, rather than that the corrector of Bb made his textual corrections from either L or R and erased all the illuminated initials which would most certainly have existed in the stanzas preceding the sixth stanza of the preface.

(2) In L R Bb Prose I is not separated from Met. I. There is no indication of the beginning of a new prose. Usually each new prose or metre is marked by a decorated initial, and in the margin in red ink we are given the heading to indicate the number of the prose or metre, and also the first few words of the Latin text.

(3) At the beginning of Prose II in each of these MSS., there is nothing to indicate the number of the prose. There is just the Latin *set me / dicine* in the margin.

(4) In each case Prose III has merely the first few words of the Latin in the margin.

(5) Met. IV is similarly treated.

(6) Prose IV in each of the three MSS. has neither the Latin in the margin, nor the heading "Prosa iiij<sup>a</sup>" that one would expect.

(7) In L R Bb Met. V is mistakenly headed Met<sup>m</sup>iiij<sup>m</sup>.

(8) In L R Bb Prose V is mistakenly headed Prosa iiij<sup>a</sup>.

(9) There is nothing to indicate the number of the metre in the case of Metrum VI.

(10) In the Latin at the beginning of Metre VII, L R Bb all give *aeris* for *atris*.

Bk. IV. (11) There is no Latin marginal at the beginning of Prose II in L R Bb.

(12) L R Bb have each *duas* for *ducis* at the beginning of Metre III.

(13) Each heads Prose IV as Prosa V<sup>a</sup>.

(14) Each brackets, 712/6, 7 together and writes *ecce* in the margin just near.

(15) Each gives *une* for *iura* in the Latin marginal to Metre VI.

(16) Each gives *qui vis* for *quinis* in the Latin marginal to Metre VII.

(17) Finally in L R Bb 361/1 is joined to the previous stanza and 361/2 is given the coloured initial.

§ 42. Neither M nor h have all the above characteristics which are, in themselves, sufficient to mark R and L as direct descendants of Bb (corrected). There are several cases to show how M and h, form a different group from L R Bb (corrected) : 554/7 portes L R Bb] portes M h, 557/8 laberynt L R Bb] labouryng M h, 588/1 Wot L R Bb] But M h.

Finally example four of § 37, where both M and h unlike R and L omit to make the correction indicated in Bb, is conclusive proof of the closer affinity of M and h as against the bond L R Bb M h.

§ 43. It should be pointed out how the scribes of L and R sometimes make the correction indicated in Bb (corrected) and sometimes copy the wrong reading of Bb. For example, in 73/3 Bb reads *disarme*, which has been altered from the original reading *deseruen*. R copies the correction *disarme*, but the scribe of L wrongly and no doubt inadvertently writes *deseruen*. (He had both "deseruen" and "disarme" in front of him in Bb.) Again in 111/8 R's scribe commits the error. Bb gives "wrecchis" [altered from wrecchid], and whereas L follows Bb (corrected) R gives the original text of Bb. Sometimes we get the copyist from Bb (corrected) giving both the original and the corrected readings of his source. For instance, in 90/6 Bb originally read *youthe*, but this was altered and corrected to *powz*. L made the correction indicated, but R gave *powz youthe* thus embodying both the bad reading and its correction. It will be seen, then, that a comparison of each of the three texts is often necessary to ensure accuracy of readings.

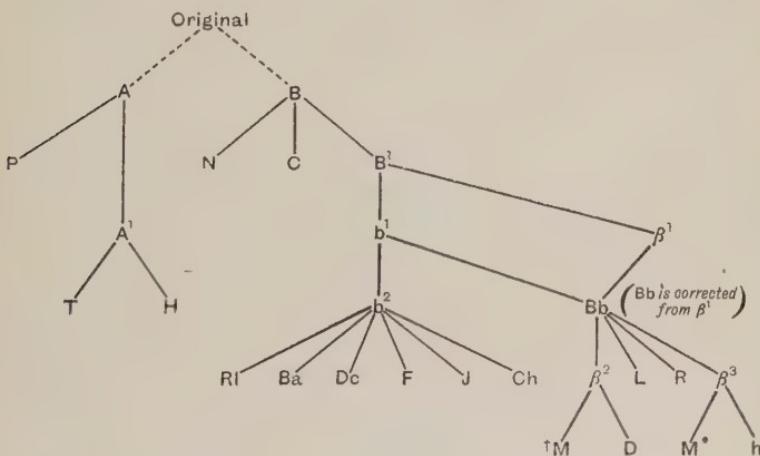
§ 44. Finally it should be shown how h just like T, F and Dc, suffered through the carelessness of the scribe. There are many

readings entirely confined to h alone, and undoubtedly due to the scribe's carelessness or his desire to "correct" what was not quite clear to him at first sight. They occur as follows: 33/1 now] may, 34/1 vnwarly] vnwar, 39/2 liuely] lonely, 48/8 held] I helde, 49/4 bewette] be-wepte, 50/5 als] alas, 53/3 Arayeng] arraigned, 62/8 not] now, 90/7 innocence] innocenceye, 94/1 But] put, 96/5 goodly] goode, 104/2 innocence] innocencey, 105/6 conuictel] committe, 108/6 vnsemely] vnsembly, 111/8 fleet] ferth, 113/6 torment] turmentes, 116/6 Beschyned] Best hyved, 118/3 lengþest] longest, 123/4 wawes] lawes, 128/7 noght] no, 133/8 is] vs, 142/6 yemeth] yeueth, 144/3 wit] wille, 147/7 forlete] foryete. . . . 575/4 dettour] doctour 591/3 heighth] the hight, 591/7 vnto] to h, 603/5 myghti] mighti than, 603/7 weyk] werk h, 604/7 preued] preue, 610/6 i now] nowe, 610/7 plenerly] playnly, 610/7 yit] om. h, 611/6 This] Than h, 611/6 on] vpon h, 620/7 so] om. h, 621/6 lo] then, 627/1 þis] his, 628/7 myght] may h, 629/7 now here] now ther, 630/5 weneth] wylneth, 636/2 purpure] purpull, 643/2 and] and so, 643/3 bereue] bere, 645/7 for þe wise] fro the vice, 648/7 sothe] sure, 651/1 vpon] oopen, 651/4 haue the] the haue, 655/3 clepe] calle hym.

To these variants must be added the constant changing of "eke" into "also."

However, none of these variants is sufficiently drastic to warrant a separate origin for h.

I now conclude the table to be as follows :



\* Refers to the last four books.

† Refers to Bk. I. only.

Broken lines indicate that the descent is not necessarily direct, but that I have been unable to ascertain the *definite* relationship.

§ 45. From § 28 and also from subsequent paragraphs, it will be seen that Bb (corrected) undoubtedly gives the best readings of either the b<sup>1</sup> or the β<sup>1</sup> group. As both L and R are directly taken

from this corrected text, and as both have embodied the corrections indicated in Bb, it is fair to assume that either L or R, or perhaps better still a text founded on a comparison of the two, would be quite suitable as a base for an edition of Walton's *Boethius*.

Of course it is probable that B, the ultimate source of the b, b<sup>1</sup> and β<sup>1</sup> groups, contained erroneous readings which would find their way into the MSS. of the b, b<sup>1</sup> and β<sup>1</sup> groups. It would be quite unwise, therefore, to neglect readings which are confined to the A group, especially if readings of the last-named group make for better sense. But one must treat these with caution. A comparison with Chaucer, to whom, as has been shown in another chapter, Walton was particularly indebted, is often of great help, while the Latin text should by no means be put aside. Furthermore, too much reliance should not be placed on readings peculiar to P, however suited they may be to the sense, as it is very difficult to decide how much of the printed edition is due to Walton and how much to the printer-editor.

In this edition of Walton I have used the text of L as my base. Where possible I have remedied its omissions from R. The passage omitted in Bk. I, due to a leaf which is lacking in L (and which I did not perceive when I selected the MS. as base), I have made good by taking the corresponding passage from R. As there is such a close connexion between L and R an insertion from R will hardly be out of place.

There has on several occasions been need for emendation, and where possible I have tried to make use of readings which, while they gave the necessary sense, were also common to as many members of different groups as possible.

#### DATE AND AUTHORSHIP

Concerning the date and authorship of the fifteenth-century English metrical version of Boethius' *Consolatio* there is little definite and trustworthy evidence other than what is furnished by the colophons of the manuscripts. Seven of these [R L Rl Ch Bb T] conclude as follows: "Explicit liber Boecij de Consolacione philosophie de Latino in anglicum translatus Anno domini millesimo cccc<sup>mo</sup> x<sup>o</sup> per cappellanum Johannem." MS. Phillipps 1099 has the foregoing, but instead of "Capellanum Johannem" gives the author as: "Capellanum Johannem Tebaud alias Watyrbeche" (v. Todd's *Illustrations of Gower and Chaucer*, p. xxxi). The most complete colophons are provided by Ba and Ch, two very good MSS. upon which, to judge by the beautiful illuminated letters and marginal borders, a great amount of care must have been taken. These MSS. end: "Explicit liber Boecij de consolacione philosophie de Latino in Anglicum translatus per Johannem Waltoun nuper canonicum de Oseneye anno domini millesimo cccc<sup>mo</sup> decimo." Written by a scribe who also copied John Hoccleve's *Regement of Princes*, and, originally bound with this work, the Fitzwilliam Museum MS. [F] has a very meagre

colophon : "Explicit liber Boicij de Consolacione Philosophie translatus de Latino in Anglicum 1410<sup>o</sup> a<sup>o</sup>." Perhaps the scribe attributed both pieces to the same author. While D lacks a colophon, a much later hand than that of the scribe (probably that of William Browne, the author of *Britannia's Pastorals* (v. Description of MSS.) has written on fol. 1<sup>b</sup>: "Boetius his 5 books of philosophical comfort," and still later the announcement, "Translated into English by John Lydgate," was added. Perhaps a translation of Boethius' *Consolatio* made by I. T. in 1609 (during Browne's lifetime) and entitled "Five Bookes of Philosophicall comfort, full of Christian Consolation . . ." suggested to William Browne the title which he wrote on the first leaf of the Durham manuscript.

The remaining MSS. (H J N M De A) all lack the last leaf, and we are thus deprived of their colophons, though, since H is closely allied to T; A and N to C; M to L; J and De to Rl, it is quite reasonable to assume that they each ended with the general colophon mentioned above as being common to R L Rl Ch Bb T.

The printed edition is very interesting in that, while it does not furnish the date of the translation, it gives the author's full name and is unique in giving the name of the lady for whom the work was translated. These names occur in the form of acrostics, the book ending thus :

"Explicit liber quintus Boecij de Consolacione Philosophie,  
Deo Gracias,

Collectis in sequentibus cuius libet linee primis litteris / non solum Translatoris  
sed & transferri procurantis / nomina cum cognominibus / inuestigare poteris

NOMEN Transferri procurantis.

Euer more exalted be thou lord on hy  
Lawly wyche of thy benygnyte  
In fleshe and blodde aperyng wyllyngly  
So pyteously were peyned on the tre  
And sufferest / that greuous was to the  
Be blodde wyth al thy blodde for mannes sake  
Euer more exalted be thy maieste  
Thyn hert blodde / oure raunson woldest þu make.

COGNOMEN.

¶ Blyseful lorde I pray the hertely  
Er I depart of thys mortalyte  
Reskewe me fro my perylous enemy  
Kepyng me fro hys cursed cruelle  
Eternally to set my thought in the  
Lust of synnes fully to forsake  
Endles god wyche art bothe one & iii  
Ynto thy cure for euer I me betake.

NOMEN Translatoris.

I yelde yow thankes lady Sapience  
Of that thys worke ys to an ende ybrought  
Haue ye the worshippe & the recompence  
And I no dele / I haue deserued nougnt

None other lust desyre I in my thought  
 Ne noughe coueyt I but your Influence  
 Eternally / so that I may be brought  
 Souereyn lady into your presence.

## COGNOMEN Translatoris.

Wyth al my hert to do your reuerence  
 And seruyse / suche as of me may be wrought  
 Lawly vnder youre obedycence  
 To plesen yow yf I suffysed ought  
 Wyth al my hert / as euer I haue besought  
 No thyng coueyt I of youre excellencie  
 Eternally but that I may be brought  
 My souereyn lady in to your presence.

Here endeth the boke of comfort called in latyn Boecius de Consolatione Phie /  
 Enprented in the exempt monastery of Tauestok in Denshyre. By me Dan  
 Thomas Rychard monke of the sayd monastery / To the instant desyre of the  
 ryght worshypful esquier Mayster Robert Langdon Anno d. M D XXV. Deo  
 Gracias."

It will be noticed that all the manuscript colophons agree in putting the date of the translation as 1410. The fact that Chaucer's translation of Boethius was constantly used by the verse translator places the date after 1380, and the homage to Gower in Stan. V of the translator's preface would doubtless have been paid after the *Confessio Amantis* (1390) had procured for its author the profound respect of his contemporaries. These facts lend support to the date, upon which the colophons are unanimous.

Though only the printed edition gives the name of the author's patron, it is evident from passages in the translator's preface that the work was prepared "to order," while the frequent resort to paraphrase in preference to literal translation and the numerous insertions of explanatory passages bear testimony to the author's attempts to simplify difficult passages and make the work more acceptable. At the very beginning (Stan. I, 3) the translator apologises for his "Insuffishauce of cunnyng and of wit," and remarks that this incompetence

"Pis work fro me schuld haue with-holden zit  
 But þat þoure heste haþ done me violence  
 Pat nedis most I do my diligence  
 In thyng þat passeth myn abilite."

The printed text reads rather differently and points more forcibly to a demand for the translation :

"Vnsuffisance of connyng & of whit,  
 Defaute of Langage and experiance,  
 Thys labour viche ye haue vpon me put  
 Muste fully excuse vnto your reuerence

Yf hyt be not with craft of eloquence  
Depaynted so as other bokes be.  
Yet must I nedes do my diligence  
With al my pouer to plesse your souerente."

Furthermore the preface in the manuscripts ends with a prayer to God that He "of hys benignite" should help "in þis occupacioun"

In honour of þat sofferayn blisfulnesse  
And eke in reverence of<sup>1</sup> *youre* worthiness,

and, addressing his patron, the translator announces

"This simple werk as for an obseruance  
I schal begynne after my simpelnesse  
In will to do *your* seruice and plesaunce."

As the aforementioned acrostic indicates, the translation was made for Elisabet Berkeley, and the printed edition to support this information ends its preface :

". . . in reuerence of your worthynesse  
*Madame thys work at your instance*  
I have begonne after my symplenesse  
In wyl to do yow seruyce and plesance."

Despite the fact that the differences between the printed text and that of the MSS. as shown in the preceding quotations are no doubt due to Thomas Richard's emendations as editor, it is quite certain [*v. Note on genealogy of MSS.*] that he had before him a manuscript which was nearer to the author's original than any of the other MSS. I have examined, and in the preparation of his edition he probably had direct manuscript evidence for his information as to the translator and his patron.

Further proof of obligation occurs in the preface which the translator wrote to Books IV and V where, after pointing out his inability<sup>2</sup>

"Of so hye a matter for to trete  
As after þis myn auctour doth pursue"

he salves his conscience by remarking,

"*Ye ben þe cause why I mote don thus*  
And schewe my-seluen here presumptuous."

This Elizabeth Berkeley who was, according to the printed edition, the translator's patron, I take to be the daughter of Thomas de Berkeley, Lord Berkeley (1352–1417) of Berkeley Castle, Gloucester, the tenure of which "did at that time constitute a right and confer a

<sup>1</sup> His patron's.

<sup>2</sup> The last two books deal with the difficult subjects of Fate, Providence, and Destiny.

dignity" (*v. D.N.B.*, Vol. IV, p. 341). He married Margaret, daughter and heiress of Warine, Lord D'Isle, and "Elizabeth his sole daughter and heir, aged 30 in 1416, married Richard de Beauchamp, 12<sup>th</sup> Earl of Warwick" (*v. Vicary Gibbs, Complete Peerage*, Vol. II, p. 131). No evidence as to the date of this marriage seems to be available, but it certainly took place before 1417, for "on the death of Lord Thomas Berkeley, the Earl and Countess of Warwick took possession of Berkeley Castle" by virtue of Elizabeth's claim as sole child and heir. However, the male heir to the Berkeley title was James, Lord Thomas' nephew who was "found the right heir on a writ of *diem clausit supremum*" (*D.N.B.*, Vol. IV, 341), and "succeeded after four years' controversy to the Berkeley estate" (Gibbs, Vol. II, 131).

Lord Thomas Berkeley, this Elizabeth's father, besides taking an active part in affairs of State,<sup>1</sup> showed his appreciation of the arts by becoming the patron of John of Trevisa. The latter, a diligent translator of Latin works, became Vicar of Berkeley and chaplain to his patron, for whom he composed English versions of Higden's "*Polychronicon*" 1387, Bartholomaeus' "*De Proprietatibus Rerum*" 1398, a sermon by Richard Fitzralph against the mendicant friars (St. John's Coll. Camb., MS. H. 1), and a spurious tract of Methodius, "*The begynnyng of the worlde and the Rewnes betwixe of Folkis and the ende of worldes*" (Harl. MS. 1900). A translation of Vegetius' "*De re militari*" made for Thomas Lord Berkeley in 1408 (*v. Digby MS. 223, Bodleian*) is also generally, though wrongly, ascribed to him.<sup>2</sup>

In view of the fact that her father, a wealthy and powerful nobleman, was also an ardent lover of English versions of Latin works, it seems likely that Elizabeth Berkeley, the only child and heir to the Berkeley estates, should have followed her father's practice and also have had Latin works translated. This seems to support the theory that she was the lady referred to in the printed edition as the patron of the translator of Boethius; the more is this likely when she appears to have been the only Elizabeth Berkeley at this period. Even if she had become Countess of Warwick before 1410 (the date of the translation), she continued to be heir to the Berkeley title, and as such would possibly be referred to as Elizabeth Berkeley, especially by one who was, perhaps, a devoted servant of the Berkeley family.

But John of Trevisa was dead in 1402, though most biographers (including the *D.N.B.*) place the date about ten years later.

Who was, then, the translator of the metrical version of Boethius?

<sup>1</sup> *v. Gibbs, Vol. II, p. 131.*

<sup>2</sup> Bishop Clifford's register 1401–1407 has entry under the year 1402 relating to John of Trevisa's death: "Berkelegh vicaria. Vicesimo primo die mensis Maii dictus vicarius in spiritualibus apud London ad vicariam ecclesie parochialis de Berkelegh Wygornensis diocesie per mortem Magistri Johannis Trevisa vltimi vicarii ejusdem vacantem; dominum Johannem Bonjon Presbyterum ad presentationem Religiosorum virorum Abbatis et Conuentus Sancti Augustini juxta Bristoll admisit ad vicarium perpetuum, etc." [Reg. Clifford, f. 14 d.]

Bale in his *Index Britanniae Scriptorum*, p. 231, ascribes it to John Lydgate, and folio 1b of the Durham MS. gives the same information. However, we have no other evidence whatever that the monk of Bury translated Boethius, nor does the Latin treatise appear to have influenced his works to any noticeable extent, and it seems safe to assume that both Bale and the Durham MS. are incorrect.

It is to the credit of the printed edition (itself taken from a MS. very closely related to the author's original) that it should be supported by two very good MSS. in giving the author's name as Johannes Waltoun (Waltwnem from the Acrostic in P).<sup>1</sup> Ba and Ch further amplify matters by saying that this John Waltoun had been a canon of Oseney Abbey, a religious house confined to Augustine Canons, the site of which is at present occupied by St. Frideswide's Church, Oxford. [I take "*nuper canonicum de Oseneye*" to imply that Waltoun was dead at the time these MSS. were written]. All records of the abbey have long disappeared, but there is in the *Calendar of Papal Letters*, Vol. V, p. 195, a dispensation which was probably made in favour of the above John Walton, and which, no doubt, was obtained in view of some anticipated benefaction from the hand of his patron. Dated "Id. April 1399," and sent from "St. Peter's Rome," it runs as follows :

"To John Walton, Augustinian Canon of Oseney. Dispensation to hold, together with his canonry, one other benefice, even if an elective dignity, major or principal or united or *personatus* or office, with or without cure, and if wont to be held by secular clerks, and to exchange it as often as he pleases for a similar or dissimilar benefice. Religionis zelus, vite ac morum."

There is difficulty in ascertaining any benefice to which this John Walton was instituted, but as his translation was probably made for Elizabeth Berkeley, daughter and heiress of a powerful and wealthy nobleman, it is reasonable to assume that some benefice under her patronage was expected.

An edict in the same volume of the *Papal Letters* (p. 213) dated 1398, Kal. April, contains under the title of *De capellanatu honoris* a list of persons on whom the dignity of papal chaplain was conferred. Among these the following announcement appears :

"John Walton, Augustinian Canon of Oseneye, the like" [i.e. "conferring on him the dignity of Papal Chaplain with the usual privileges"].

This reference to the papal chaplaincy conferred on "John Walton, Augustinian Canon of Oseney," while explaining those colophons which give the translator's name as "Johannes Capellanus" also tallies with MSS. Ba Ch in their descriptions of the author. It was

<sup>1</sup> These MSS. [v. Description of MSS.] seem to have had special attention in their preparation and the scribes (possibly both by same scribe) wishing to produce as complete a colophon as possible, gave the author's complete status instead of the Johannes Capellanus by which he was generally known.

probably under the name of Johannes Capellanus that Walton was generally known.

That this John Walton of Oseneye was the translator of the Metrical Version of Boethius' *Consolatio* there can be little doubt. The only evidence against this is the colophon of a single MS. [Phillipps, 1099] which ascribes the work to "Capellatum Johaunem Tebaud alias Watyrbeche," but it appears hardly likely in view of the corroboration of several very good MSS. and also of the printed edition (itself taken from a MS. very near the original) that a claim to authorship other than that of John Walton can be put forward with any degree of certainty.

In view of the fact that Trevisa was dead in 1402, the colophon of MS. *Digby* 233 (Bodleian Libr.), containing a translation of Vegetius' *De re militari*, seems to me to furnish evidence that Walton had assumed the rôle of translator to the Berkeley family. The MS. ends thus : "Explicit. Here endeth þe booke þat clerkes clepum in Latyne Vigesius de re militari, the booke of Vigesii of dedus of knyȝthod, þe whiche book was translated and turned fro Latin into Englishe at þe ordinaunce and byddynge of the worthi and worshipful lord sire Thomas of Berkeley to gret disport and dalyaunce of lordes and alle worthy werryours þat ben apassed by wey of age al labour and trauallyng, and to grete informacioun and lernyng of ȝonge lordes and knyȝtes þat ben lusty and loueþ to here and see and to vse dedus of armes and chualrye. þe turnyng of þis book into Englisch was wretoun and endud in vigil of al halwes, þe ȝeer of oure lord a þousand and four hundred and eighte, þe X<sup>e</sup> ȝeer of kyng Henry the ferþe. To him and to vs alle god graunt grace of our offendynde, space to our amendyng, and his face to seen at oure endyndg Amen.

This is his name þat turned þis book fro latyn into Englische.

worþeþul | \_\_\_\_\_ | toun."

The Bodleian Catalogue says "The name of the translator was evidently Clef- or Clifton." The compiler of the catalogue probably took the above sign to be a key (O.F. Clef) and thus got his Clef- or Clif-. Tanner supposed from the connexion of the translator with "Sir Thomas of Berkeley" that the version was made by John of Trevisa, who he says, "was vicar of Berkeley at the time and translated Barthol. Glanville's treatise 'De proprietatibus rerum,' and Higden's 'Polychronicon' at the request of the same Sir Thomas Berkeley." Many others, including the Dict. of Nat. Biog., support this theory. However, proof of Trevisa's death in 1402 makes us seek another translator for this version of Vegetius.

I have examined the colophon in the Digby MS. and I do not think that the upright stroke on the right of the enigmatical figure was intended to be produced downwards.<sup>1</sup> Rather do I think that a

<sup>1</sup> [It does not extend more than about a sixteenth of an inch below the lower horizontal line; certainly not low enough to permit of the figure bearing any resemblance to a key.]

rectangular figure was intended : [ ]. This rectangle could quite well be taken to represent a wall and I take it that *wal-toun* was the name implied.

Seeing that two years after this translation of Vegetius' *de re militari* was produced "at the ordinaunce and byddyng of Sir Thomas of Berkeley," a John Walton composed a translation of Boethius' *De Consolatione Philosophiae* for Elizabeth Berkeley, doubtless the daughter of this Thomas Berkeley, it seems feasible to assume that the Waltoun of the earlier work was the same person as the Walton who was entrusted with the second work. The metrical version of *Boethius* appears to be the work of one taking his first flights in the realm of verse translation, and it is quite possible that before attempting a verse translation from Latin, the author would first make preparations by taking an easier promenade in prose.

Further information as to John Walton's life and his work seems to be very scarce and I would conclude with a reference to Tanner who in his *Bibliotheca Britannico-Hibernica*, 1748, p. 753, gives a very mistaken and confused account of Walton. His statement is as follows : "Walton [Johaunes] canonicus Oseneensis. Temporalia abbatis de Osney restituta Johanni Walton canonico ibidem, Nov. 31. Henr. VI, Rot. Parl. Transtulit in carmen anglicum, rogatu Elizab. Berkeley A. MCCCCX, 'Boethium de consolatione philosophiae.' Pr. pr. tr. (praefacio prologo translatoris) 'Vnsuffysance of conning and of wit.' Pr. tr. 'The whyle that Rome was reigning in her flore.' Pr[osa] 1. (Should be Metrum 1.) 'Alas that I wretch, whiles I was in welthe,' MS. Balliol. Oxon B 5. Impres. apud Tavistock MDXXV 4to. Hic. Joh. Waltoun (qui Waltham vocatur ab A. Wood, MS. c 80) dicitur fuisse rector of strettton, quam rectoriam cum Tho. Brandon permutavit 26 Octob. MCCCLXXXI, pro subdecanatu Ebor. Testamentum ejus probatum 26 Nov MCCCLXXXIV. Quo legavit collegio Balliol. *Biblia sua, librum suum Concordantiarum Nottinghami in Evangelia et Psalmos, etc.* A. Wood. MS. c. 46."

It should first be pointed out that the initial lines of the preface, prologue, and first metrum which Tanner quotes and which he implies he has taken from the Balliol Coll. MS. B 5 (now 316 A), are really from the printed edition of 1525. The line "Alas that I wretch whiles I was in welthe" occurs as such in the printed text only. All the MSS. have "Allas I wrecche þat whilon was in welthe." Evidently Tanner knew of this MS. B 5 of Balliol and described it, taking his references from the printed edition, a copy of which he probably had before him.

However Mr. A. F. Pollard in the *Dict. of Nat. Biog.* (Vol. LIX. p. 278) shows how Tanner confused the translator of Boethius with : (a) John Walton *d.* 1490? regular Canon of Osney, who graduated B.A. Oxford in 1430, and D.D. in 1463, and who was made Abbot of Osney in 1452, the temporalities being restored to him on 1 Nov. that year; and (b) John Waltham, who

became Subdean of York in 1381 (and apparently died by 1384. *v. Tanner*).

Thomas Warton (*v. Hist. of Poetry*, p. 337), it seems, followed Tanner when he wrote with regard to the metrical translator of the *Consolatio*, "His name is John Walton. He was Canon of Oseney and died subdean of York."

It will be realised that much of the foregoing has necessarily been hypothetical and until the Elizabeth Berkeley mentioned in the printed edition is definitely identified and her relations with John Walton ascertained, the question of authorship of the metrical version of Boethius must rest to some extent in doubt. Perhaps the discovery of new MSS.<sup>1</sup> will add fresh light to the problem.

#### METHOD OF TRANSLATION

Sir Thomas North, quoting the French translator Amyot, said : "The office of a fit translator consisteth not only in the faithful expressing of his author's meaning, but also in a certain resembling and shadowing forth of the form of his style and manner of his speaking." Much, then, depends on the nature of the work translated.

In the case of a translation of the "Consolation" of Boethius, while the philosophical spirit must certainly be in great evidence, and while faithfulness of expression and lucidity of exposition should be a potent feature, yet a translation which neglects to bring out, for example, the purpose of the Metra in the original hardly accomplishes its true task. The broken-hearted statesman, formerly the father of the senate, now their accused ; once the adviser of the king, now his victim in prison ; lies racked and tortured, his mind gradually being awakened to the utter futility of this life, and slowly becoming convinced that good is not the fruit of goodness, but that evil reaps the reward it never deserves. Thus afflicted, Boethius takes comfort in Philosophy which, in the shape of a lady, makes known to him by many a dialectical thrust and many an abstruse argument that fame, honour, renown—all that he has lost—are not the real causes of happiness, that the fate of the wicked is evil, and that while man is allowed absolute free will he is yet subject to the will of the all-seeing God who ultimately "bringeth all þing to right." As periods of relief between the long proses of philosophical argument, the author has introduced metra which comment on the subject-matter of the proses, clinching the arguments as it were, and showing how comfort can be derived. Moreover they are written in changing rhythms and are specially intended as songs to give pleasure. These are essential to the spirit of the work, and a translator who neglects to bring out their music and their purpose must necessarily fail.

<sup>1</sup> We have neither the author's original or even a direct recension of it. The MS. used by the printer of the 1525 edition would be of immense value.

King Alfred, regarding Boethius' *Consolation of Philosophy* as suitable for the edification of his people, took so many liberties with his translation as almost to make it an original treatise. Nevertheless he realised the necessity for the musical metra and recast his prose translations of them into O.E. verse.<sup>1</sup>

Chaucer was probably attracted to the Latin work through the use made of it by Jean de Meung in *Le Roman de la Rose*. It is significant that Chaucer made great use of the French writer's translation of Boethius as well as of Nicholas Trivet's commentary; both to provide him with numerous glosses, and the former to furnish him with neologisms, to betray him into adopting peculiarities of style, and to beguile him into incorporating into his own work a number of mistakes and unhappy translations.<sup>2</sup> But there is something lacking in the spirit of Chaucer's translation, and one feels compelled to ask: "Why should a translator who is essentially a poet, and whose prose style is by no means developed, turn the beautiful metra of the original into comparatively unharmonious prose?" Indeed these flashes of poetry in the Latin, by their changing rhythm, their music and their imagery, were intended to be as much a source of pleasure as their subject-matter was of comfort, and to have rendered them in prose is a distinct loss to the harmony and spirit of the whole.

Nor did Walton entirely succeed in attaining perfection of both expression and spirit in his translation. Weighed down under the onus of having been prepared to order, and written within thirty years of Chaucer's translation, it lacks the personal touch of original work and embodies many of the faults of its predecessor.

<sup>3</sup> "Ye ben þe cause why Y mote don thus  
And schewe my-seluen here presumptuous—"

is Walton's plea for attempting the translation, and in his preface, before giving us a eulogy of Gower and Chaucer, he says he has seen several translations of Boethius in both prose and verse.<sup>4</sup>

Walton's homage to Chaucer is certainly deserved, for the prose translation has been of great help in the metrical rendering. Indeed, so great was Chaucer's influence that Thomas Richard, the Tavistock monk who edited and printed the verse translation, readily perceived it and altered the line

"þogh so þat I of makyn entirmete" (5/4)  
to  
"Though I hys [Chaucer's] makyn do conterfete."

<sup>1</sup> Critics are at variance on this point, though "it rests with those who deny the king's authorship to establish their case."

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Articles of Prof. Liddell: *Academy*, 1895, II, 227; Prof. Langlois: *Romania*, vol. 42, pp. 331-369; B. L. Jefferson: *Chaucer and the Consolation of Philosophy*, pp. 3-15; Miss Peterson; *Pub. of Mod. Lang. Assoc. of America*, 1903, vol. XVIII, pp. 173-193.

The work was translated for Walton's patron, Elizabeth Berkeley.

<sup>4</sup> *Prefacio Translatoris*, Stans. IV, and V.

What other translations, except that of Alfred's, Walton can have seen, is difficult to ascertain. No doubt he gleaned from an earlier writer the idea of providing a prologue like Alfred's which should contain a history of Boethius' life, and so explain to his readers the reason for the original Latin work. In neither the Latin nor in Chaucer's translation does any such prologue exist, and prone to plagiarism as Walton was, the meeting with such a prologue in an earlier translation would most likely lead to a similar one in his own work.

It is reasonable to expect where we find two men each translating the same very difficult work within thirty years of one another, especially if the work of the earlier was well known to the later translator, that, however eager the one may be to avoid the influence of the other, there will certainly be some peculiarities which have become common to both without the second writer being conscious of any deliberate plagiarism. However, in Chaucer and Walton we find many instances where it would be extremely difficult to allow our generosity to acquit the verse translator of any indebtedness to his predecessor.

A comparison of their translations of Bk. II, Metrum V, is particularly interesting, in that Chaucer afterwards put the passage into verse for his poem "The Former Age." Take lines 2 and 3 of Walton's first stanza, for example. It is more than mere coincidence when two translators render:

".... aetas  
Contenta fidelibus aruis"

by :

"They [men] helden hem apayed with the metes that the trewe feldes broughten forth" [Ch.], and :

"When mortal men couthe holde hemselfen payed  
Wiþ mete that trewe feedes broughten forth" [W.]

Queen Elizabeth, translating nearly two centuries later, translates the above quite differently and literally: "... age / with faithful fild content."

Clearer proof still of the influence of Chaucer is found in the last line of Stan. I [W.]. Here Walton takes his predecessor's gloss<sup>1</sup>, which is given as an explanation of the Latin text and does not occur in the original, in preference to a literal translation of the Latin.

Furthermore in Stan. II. of Walton, the translation of the Latin :

<sup>1</sup> Prof. Skeat's edition of Chaucer's *Bocce* (Chaucer's Works, Vol. II, Clar. Press) gives in italics the passages which are Chaucer's own glosses and do not occur in the Latin original.

The Latin text is that of Stewart and Rand (Loeb Class. Libr.).

"Nec lucida uellera Serum  
Tyrio miscere ueneno "

by :

"To deen purpure couthe þei not be-pynke  
The white flees with venom tyryen"

is by no means literal and is clearly taken from Chaucer's gloss where "Tyrio miscere ueneno" is explained as meaning to "deyen purpur." Added evidence of similarity is found in the translation of *ueneno* by *venym* in both Chaucer and Walton. A better translation would have been "dye." Virgil, G. 2. 465—"Alba nec Assyrio fucatur lana ueneno"—uses it in this sense.

In Stan. II. l. 4, Walton's "holsom sleep" tallies exactly with Chaucer's translation of "Somnos . . . salubres."

It was an easy task for the verse translator to change Chaucer's : "Tho weren the cruel clarions ful hust" to : "Tho was ful huscht þe cruel clarion" (Stan. III, l. 3), as a translation of: "Tunc classica saeva tacebant."

Again the next line: "for egre hate þer was no blood i-sched" cannot but reveal close affinity to Chaucer's "ne blood y-shad by egre hate." It is interesting to note, too, that the earliest example in English of *egre* in the sense of "sharp" [corresponding to the Latin "acerbus"] mentioned in the *N.E.D.* is taken from Chaucer's *Boece*.

A point of equally great interest in showing Walton's indebtedness to Chaucer lies in the fact that the former's translation of this metrum shows a closer agreement with the prose translation than does Chaucer's own poem "The Former Age," for which this metrum furnished the material.

While acquiescing in the great indebtedness of the versifier to the prose translator it must not be supposed that Walton had only Chaucer's translation in front of him without the Latin text, and that his task was merely to paraphrase Chaucer's prose and put it into verse. It will be shown later that in several instances Walton's translations are more correct than those of the prose rendering. However, there are a number of other instances where, not merely the words of Chaucer's text, but his very glosses have been embodied in the version of Walton.

In the following list of plagiarisms the references to Metre [M], Prose [P], and line where the passage begins [l.] are from : Skeat's edition of *Boece* (Chaucer's works, Vol. II.) and the *Loeb. Class. Libr.* edition of Boethius: *De Consolatione Philosophiae*. References in Walton are to stanza and line.

	LATIN.	CHAUCER.	WALTON.
BOOK I.			
1 M. I.	l. 18. tristis hora.	l. 18. sorrowful . . . deeth.	36/4. þe . . . deth.
2. P. I.	l. 40. eum . . . relin- quite.	l. 50. suffreth . . . sciences	47/3. I . . . science.

	LATIN.	CHAUCER.	WALTON.
BOOK I.			
3. M. III.	l. 8. Verberet.	l. 10. beteth . . . a-wey.	59/6. chaseth <sup>1</sup> . . . away.
4. P. III.	l. 21. cuius hereditatem . . .	l. 22. The heritage . . . welefulnesse.	64/2. His . . . wilfulnes.
5. P. IV.	l. 44. Cum . . . euici.	l. 58. TEXTUS and GLOSSA.	84/1-8.
6. P. IV.	l. 142. Pythagoricum illud $\epsilon\pi\alpha v \theta\epsilon\phi$ .	l. 186. comaunderement of . . . not to goddes.	108/2-4. wordes . . . allone . . .
7. P. IV.	l. 143. Nec conueniebat.	l. 188. Ne it . . . nede.	108/5.
8. P. IV.	l. 145. penetral . . . domus.	l. 191. The right . . . my wyf.	109/1.
9. P. IV.	l. 151. maleficio.	l. 196. to malefice or enchauntement.	109/8. en-chaunte-mence. <sup>2</sup>
10. P. IV.	l. 155. quod existimatio . . . commendauerit.	l. 202. that the gessinge . . . of some folk.	110/6-111/4.
11. M. V.	l. 13. Phoebi pallens . . . ortu.	l. 10. Andis . . . sonne.	117/5. þe su-nes . . . morne.
12. M. VI.	ll. 1-2.	l. 1. Whan that . . . Cancre.	136/2.
BOOK II.			
13. P. I.	l. 1. Post haec . . . exorsa est.	l. 1. As who . . . this wyse.	156/1-5.
14. P. I.	l. 47. in alterutro mutabilitas.	l. 64. Chaunginge . . . prosperitee.	167/4. þis . . . woo.
15. M. I.	l. 2.	l. 2. she fareth . . . floweth.	172/3.
16. P. II.	l. 41. In Iovis limine.	l. 54. in the entree . . . Jupiter.	183/5-6.
17. M. II.	l. 6. copia.	l. 1. Though plentee . . . richesses.	185/1. Though . . . goodes
18. P. III.	l. 34. Dedisti . . . fortunae.	l. 43. Tho yave . . . glosinge wordes.	196/1.
19. P. III.	l. 36. Munus . . . ab-stulisti.	l. 46. Thou bere . . . guerdoun.	196/3. <sup>3</sup>
20. P. IV.	l. 38. si te . . . piget.	l. 49. yf pat . . . for-tune.	212/5-6. <sup>4</sup>
21. P. IV.	l. 62. nihil . . . putes.	l. 79. nothing . . . cor-age.	218/3-5. <sup>5</sup>
22. P. V.	l. 15. vox . . . tota.	l. 19. a voys . . . amenusinge.	236/1.
23. M. V.	l. 6-7.	l. 5. They ne coude . . . claree.	262/7-8.
24. M. V.	l. 8-9.	l. 7. They coude . . . purpur.	263/1-2.
25. M. VI.	l. 1. quantas . . . ru-inas.	l. 1. how many . . . Nero.	284/1 how . . . did
26. M. VI.	l. 6. ora . . . lacrimis.	l. 7. no tere . . . hard-herted.	284/7.

<sup>1</sup> hem refers not to night but to the dark clouds.

<sup>2</sup> Doubtful case. Tacitus uses *maleficium* = sorcery. Walton may have made trans. from the Latin.

<sup>3</sup> Doubtful case.

<sup>4</sup> Chaucer's use of *tempest* (O.F. *tempester*), to disturb violently (a person or mind) is the earliest example given in *N.E.D.* Walton's indebtedness is evident.

<sup>5</sup> Walton has borrowed from Chaucer's gloss the idea of the transference of the general application of the saying to the person of Boethius himself.

	LATIN.	CHAUCER.	WALTON.
BOOK II.			
27. M. vi.	l. 8. sceptro . . . regebat.	l. 10. gouernede . . . imperial.	285/1. he . . . imperiall.
28. P. vii.	l. 2. Sed . . . consene- sceret.	l. 3. I haue wel . . . comune.	287/4-8.
29. P. vii.	l. 79. nam si . . . ho- mines.	l. 102. For yif . . . sowle.	307/4-6.
30. M. vii.	l. 25-26.	l. 20. Whan O cruel . . . fame.	313/4-8.
BOOK III.			
31. P. i.	l. 19. occupato ad ima- gines.	l. 27. occupied . . . ethely thinges.	329/5-6.
32. P. i.	l. 23. quæ . . . causa.	l. 34. thilke false . . . blisfulnesse.	330/3.
33. P. iv.	l. 7. Nonium . . . ap- pellat.	l. 7. cleped . . . cor- rupcioun.	372/7-8.
34. P. vi.	l. 26. si tuam . . . habes.	l. 32. yif thou . . . deserte.	409/1-2.
35. M. viii.	l. 12.	l. 10. knownen . . . dyen purple.	428/7-8.
36. P. ix.	l. 19. quod . . . sit.	l. 25. a thing . . . mighty.	436/2-3.
37. P. ix.	l. 26. obscurumne . . . esse.	l. 36. What demest . . . mighty.	438/1-4.
38. P. ix.	l. 91. Haec . . . uiden- tur.	l. 128. Thise thinges . . . verray good.	455/4-8.
39. P. x.	l. 81. solent . . . uocant.	l. 100. ben wont . . . forseide things.	487/3-6.
40. P. x.	l. 83. tibi . . . dabo.	l. 101. right so . . . coroune.	487/8.
41. P. x.	l. 98. quod . . . referan- tur.	l. 123. it accomplishe . . . cheef of hem.	491/4-8. <sup>1</sup>
42. P. xii.	l. 67. ut tandem . . . pudeat.	l. 91. So, at the laste . . . entremeteth nat of hem.	554/1-6.
43. P. xii.	l. 82. Ludisne.	l. 116. Scornest . . . playest thou.	557/7.
44. M. xii.	l. 6. Vates Threicius.	l. 3. the poet . . . Or- pheus.	565/5.
45. M. xii.	l. 22. deae . . . fonti- bus.	l. 16. welles . . . god- desse.	568/4. the welles . . . goddesse.
46. M. xii.	l. 29. tergeminus . . . ianitor.	l. 22. Cerberus . . . hevedes.	569/5-6.
47. M. xii.	l. 32. Vltrices . . . deae.	l. 23. Furies . . . fe- lonyes.	570/1.
48. M. xii.	l. 55-56.	l. 47. For who so . . . erthely thinges.	573/5-6.
BOOK IV.			
49. P. ii.	l. 71. lecte . . . naturae.	l. 96. Thou rennest . . . maladye.	615/5-616/1. <sup>2</sup>
50. M. ii.	l. 10. dominis . . . ini- quis.	l. 13. cast down . . . vyses.	638/6.

<sup>1</sup> It is an easy change from cheef (Chaucer) to principall (Walton).

<sup>2</sup> Walton has adopted Chaucer's explanation in his use of *erthely* for *Tartareum*.

<sup>3</sup> Both Chaucer and Walton have read *indictum* as *iudicium*, and as a result each has had to resort to glosses.

	LATIN.	CHAUCER.	WALTON.
BOOK IV.			
51. M. III.	1. 4.	1. 3. ther-as . . . dwel- leth.	658/5-6.
52. M. III.	1. 18.	1. 13. godhed of Mer- curie.	661/3. Mer- curie <sup>1</sup>
53. M. III.	1. 35. Haec venena.	1. 30. thilke venims of vycses.	664/1. pis . . . vice.
54. P. IV.	1. 83. licentiam.	1. 114. the licence . . yvel.	688/4.
55. P. V.	1. 9. in contingentes populos.	1. 10. neighebours and subgits.	714/3. folk . . . orde- naunce.
56. M. V.	1. 7. cornua.	1. 8. And yif . . . hornes.	721/3. Why . . . hornes.
57. P. VI.	1. 9. uelut . . . succe- scant.	1. 13. rightas . . . slowh.	726/6-7.
58. P. VI.	1. 76. rerum cardinem.	1. 94. centre . . . god.	746/5. This . . . god.
59. P. VI.	1. 104. Num . . . de- gunt.	1. 127. whether . . . wyse.	754/6.
60. P. VI.	1. 168. praeceps . . . inportuna.	1. 208. overthrowinge . . . vncovenable.	775/2. impor- tune . . . ouerþward. <sup>2</sup>
61. M. VI.	1. 1. celsi . . . tonan- tis.	1. 2 lawes . . . god.	787/3.
62. M. VI.	1. 14. Vcsper.	1. 11. And Hesperus sterre.	789/1. <sup>3</sup>
63. M. VI.	1. 48. causae . . . esse.	1. 40. to the cause . . . god	794/7.
64. M. VII.	1. 2. Atrides.	1. 1. Attrides . . . Agamenon.	810/1. Oame- non.
65. M. VII.	1. 3. Phrygiae . . . piauit.	1. 2. recovered . . . wyf his brother.	810/3-4.
66. M. VII.	1. 8. Ithacus.	1. 13. Itacus . . . Ulixes.	811/3. vlices.
67. M. VII.	1. 16.	1. 23. He smoot . . . arwes.	813/5.
68. M. VII.	1. 19. Cerberum.	1. 26. Cerberus . . . helle.	814/1.
69. M. VII.	1. 20-21.	1. 26. He, overcomer . . . freten him.	814/3-4.
70. M. VII.	1. 22. Hydra.	1. 29. Ydra, the ser- pent.	814/5. theser- pent Idra.
71. M. VII.	1. 24-25.	1. 30. Achelous . . . river.	815/1-6. <sup>4</sup>
72. M. VII.	1. 33. Cur . . . nudatis.	1. 46. O nyce men . . . hevene.	818/3-5. <sup>5</sup>
73. M. VII.	1. 34. Superata . . . donat.	1. 48. For the erthe . . . hevene.	818/6-7.

<sup>1</sup> Doubtful. Walton may have translated from Latin, but his small knowledge of classical lore is against this: e.g. 658/1, he translates *Eurus* as *south west wind*.

<sup>2</sup> Walton introduced Chaucer's gloss but attached it to *inportuna*, while Chaucer's is attached to *praeceps*.

<sup>3</sup> Doubtful. Walton may have translated directly from Latin.

<sup>4</sup> Walton's ignorance of classic myth may explain the confusion of *Achilles* and *Achelous*.

<sup>5</sup> Walton does not translate but merely paraphrases Chaucer's gloss.

BOOK V.	LATIN.	CHAUCER.	WALTON.
74. P. III.	l. 27. laboretur.	l. 30. y-travailed . . .	852/6. to en-
		enqueren.	quere.
75. M. III.	l. 3.	l. 4. this two . . . fre	877/3 and 6.
76. M. III.	l. 17. Aut . . . inueniat.	l. 23. Or who . . . finde	880/3-4.
77. P. IV.	l. 2. Marcoque . . . distribuit.	l. 3. Marcus . . . of divynaciouns.	884/3-4.
78. M. IV.	l. 1-2.	l. 1. The porche . . . Stoiciens.	918/1-3.
79. M. IV.	l. 30-32.	l. 32. Algates . . . goth biforn.	923/6-7.
80. M. IV.	l. 33.	l. 35. As whan . . . to seen.	924/3-4.
81. M. IV.	l. 34.	l. 36. as vois . . . herkne.	924/5-6.
82. P. V.	l. 32. illa . . . posse.	l. 43. thilke two . . . mowen nat.	936/1. For... not.
83. P. VI.	l. 83. manere . . . potuit.	l. 64. presence . . . dwelle.	964/2.
84. P. VI.	l. 102. liberum . . . absolutum.	l. 125. free . . . necesse.	979/4.
85. P. VI.	l. 119. ab . . . desinunt.	l. 145. they ben . . . nature.	984/5-7.
86. P. VI.	l. 182. sed . . . facientium.	l. 164. But sum . . . walkinge.	988/4-7.

To employ a predecessor's actual words occasionally in translation of the same difficult passage may be attributed to coincidence; to embody his explanations of obscure passages in the text, often in preference to a literal translation, is certainly plagiarism.

A further cause for indictment appears, for in several instances where Chaucer has made an unhappy translation or even a mistranslation, Walton has committed the same error.<sup>1</sup>

1. Each translates *Lacerae camenae* (B. I, M. 1, 3) by: Rendyng muses.

2. Each takes *maesti* (B. I, M. 1, 8) along with *futa* instead of *senis*: sorrowful werdes (Ch.); drery destine (W.).

3. Each translates *maestis* (B. I, M. 1, 14) as qualifying a personal noun instead of *annis*: wrecches (Ch.); pem pat been of heuy chere (W.).

4. Each translates *auras* (populares auras, B. II, P. vii, 63) as *aures*: audience of people (Ch.); folkes audience (W.).

5. Each translates *sera* (B. II, M. vii, 25) as *seva*: cruel (Ch., W.).<sup>2</sup>

6. Each reads: *afferre* (B. III, P. ii, 51) as *auferre*: birefte away (Ch.); be-reueth (W.).<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> I am indebted to Mr. B. L. Jefferson's *Chaucer and the Consolation of Philosophy*, pp. 16-24, for a list of bad renderings in Chaucer.

<sup>2</sup> The Latin manuscript (Camb. MS. II, 3, 21) which, according to Prof. Skeat, Chaucer used for his translation, gives the correct readings: *sera*, *afferre*. It is most improbable that in all of the errors both Chaucer and Walton used a manuscript (perhaps the same) which gave a bad text of the Latin.

7. Chaucer translates *fomes* (B. III, M. xi, 14) by : norysshinge ; Walton has : lyuely norysshinge.

8. Each reads *indictum* (B. IV, P. ii, 72) as *iudicium* : iugement (Ch., W.).

However, this indebtedness to Chaucer does not imply a total disregard for the original Latin on the part of the later translator. There are cases where Walton's rendering of the Latin is much better than that of his predecessor.

	LATIN.	CHAUCER.	WALTON.
BOOK I.			
1. P. i.	l. 33. hominumque . . . liberant.	1. 41. . . . they hold- en . . . maladye.	45/5-6 <sup>1</sup>
2. P. i.	l. 39. usque . . . dul- ces.	1. 49. which that . . . the laste.	47/2. <sup>2</sup>
BOOK II.			
3. P. v.	l. 8. effundendo . . . coaceruando.	1. 10. to hem . . . mo- keren it.	233/4.
4. P. v.	l. 71. in externis . . . rebus.	1. 90. in foreyne . . . thynges.	251/8. In . . . þyng <sup>3</sup> .
BOOK III.			
5. P. iv.	l. 30. multiplici . . . functus.	1. 42. had . . . con- sules.	379/2.
6. M. ix.	l. 22. augustam . . . sedem.	1. 28. to steyen . . . seete.	465/7. <sup>4</sup>
7. P. xii.	l. 15. breuiter expo- nam.	1. 22. I . . . answeren	542/6. <sup>5</sup>
8. P. xii.	l. 41. clauus.	1. 55. key.	548/6. rulere. <sup>6</sup>
9. P. xii.	l. 48. clauo.	1. 67. keye.	550/4. sterne.
10. P. xii.	l. 54. detrectantium iugum.	1. 74. yok . . . mis- drawinges.	551/3-4.
11. P. xii.	l. 98. ex . . . probationibus.	1. 136. whiche proeves . . . other.	562/2-3.
BOOK IV.			
12. P. i.	l. 15. virtus . . . luit.	1. 22. It . . . felounes.	586/3-4. <sup>7</sup>
13. P. vi.	l. 85. fetuum.	1. 105. sexes.	749/3. fruytes.
14. P. vi.	l. 178. exercitii.	1. 220. continuacioun and exercysinge.	778/4. exer- cise. <sup>8</sup>
BOOK V.			
15. P. i.	l. 48. fortuiti . . . com- pendii	1. 57. abregginge . . . hap.	831/5.

That the Latin text exerted no small influence on Walton's translation may be judged from his numerous "Latinisms." For example "pagina" of the text gives him (and not Chaucer) "pagyne"; "praescrita" likewise becomes "prescit," and "praesidere" in the sentence

<sup>1</sup> Chaucer takes *morro* with wrong verb, following the French : Tiennent les pensees des hommes en costume et ne les delivrent pas de maladie.

<sup>2</sup> Walton gives the idea of "bringing to destruction" better than Chaucer.

<sup>3</sup> Chaucer reads *sepositis* as *suppositis*.

<sup>4</sup> Chaucer reads *augustam* as *angustam*.

<sup>5</sup> Chaucer reads *responderat* for *espondrai* in French Trans.

<sup>6</sup> Chaucer reads *clavis* for *clauus*.

<sup>7</sup> *facinus* is the wicked deed not the doer of the deed.

<sup>8</sup> Chaucer influenced by reading French *coutumance* as *continuance*.

"Nonne consideratis quibus qui praesidere videamini," appears as "president" in Walton's

" . . . Why beholde þe noght  
To the wiche þinges þe been president?"

Latin constructions are by no means lacking. The ablative absolute *perturbatione depulsa* is translated as "All hevynesse laft and put behynde"; *rege cognoscente* becomes: "wityng the kyng," while the form of the question

"Wheþir for to willen þeire prosperite  
Schuld been arrett as synne and felonye?" (93/1-2)

is an obvious Latinism.

Unfortunately the Latin has not always been followed as closely as a good translation would demand. There are frequent mistakes: *decem milibus annis* appears as "thritty þousand yeres;" *Eurus* becomes the "south west wind;" and proper names often assume strange forms: Achelous is confused with Achilles, Ixion written "Aoun," and "Triguilla" becomes "Trangwile."

Walton has sometimes vied with Chaucer in introducing glosses into his text as explanations. He does not, however, as frequently does the earlier writer, announce them to the reader as such. For example:

"Sed licet uariis malis  
Numen arcadis alitis  
Obsitum miserans ducem  
Peste soluerit hospitis" (B. IV, M. III, 17)

is rendered:

"And when þis noble Naryce Vlices  
Thus was be-set wiþ meschief and dolour,  
Mercurie ȝit hym taghte neuerþeles  
How he schulde sauue hym-seluen with a flour,  
And so hym sauued fro þis parelouse schour.  
So rewed he þis duk in his distresse,  
He halp hym fro þis perilouse hostesse" (Stan. 661).

To Walton is due the mention of the "duk" by name, and also of the "flour" which was to counteract the enchantments of the "hostesse."

"Expertus sortis suae periculorum  
tyrannus regni metus pendens supra uerticem  
gladii terrore simulauit" (B. III, P. v, 15)

is expanded for the sake of clearness into:

"A kyng þer was þat had experiance  
Of gret perile and often was in drede.  
He made a man be sette in his presence,  
And made a swerd to hange abouen his hede

Be a full small vnmyghti sotel threde,  
 Pat euery man myght vndistonde and see :  
 So breke þis threed þan is þis man but dede ;  
 So stant alwey a kyng in ieuparte " (Stan. 392).

"Quae cum secta duos motum glomerauit  
 in orbes" (B. III, M. ix, 15)

is translated :

" And theym devidest into speres two :  
 Pe sterred firmament is one of tho,  
 That other is of the planetes seuene " (463/4-6)

for Walton to describe the "motum in duos" in order give a better understanding

The verse translator, bound with the relentless cords of his metre and fettered with the shackles of rhyme, can hardly be expected to be quite literal in his version. On the other hand, unlimited licence in translation cannot but produce at the best anything beyond a paraphrase, and Walton must, on several occasions, be rebuked for passing the limit. Let us take for example lines 7-13 of the first metrum of Book III :

"Gratius astra nitent ubi Notus  
 Desinit imbriferos dare sonos.  
 Lucifer ut tenebras pepulerit  
 Pulchra dies roseos agit equos.  
 Tu quoque falsa tuens bona prius  
 Incipe colla iugo retrahere.  
 Vera dehinc animum subierint."

How sublime is the language ! How beautiful are the thoughts ! To turn to Walton's version :

"The sterres also schynen more bright  
 When rayne blastes passed been paire waye ;  
 When Lucifer hath dryuen away the night  
 Then after þat pe clerrer is pe day.  
 Of pe also the same schal I say ;  
 When erthely lust is put out of þi þought  
 The verray light of trouþe, it is no nay,  
 May be ful sone into thy mynde i-brought."

How woefully weak the translation seems ! We merely get the drift of the subject-matter ; but where is the beauty of the verse ? What equivalent have we for the sonority of "imbriferos dare sonos" ? What has become of the imagery of "Pulchra dies roseos agit equos" ?

The very spirit of the metra—their rhythm and their melody, their aesthetic charm as well as consoling thoughts, that "resembling and shadowing forth of the form and style"—which was lacking in Chaucer's version should at least have claimed some

attention in a verse translation. Except for an occasional tinge of alliterative colouring Walton's metra are painted in the same drab tones as his renderings of the prosae, and the varying rhythms of the original are reduced to the monotonous beat of the iambus. The vehicle which conveys the swift measure of :

“ Si mare uoluens  
Turbidus Auster  
Misceat aestum  
Vitrea dudum . . . [B. I, M. vii]

is made to bear the heavy burden of :

“ Haec cum superba uerterit uices dextra  
Et aestuantis more fertur Euripi,  
Dudum tremendos saeuia proterit reges . . . [B. II, M. 1].

Indeed, to place the Latin of the Metra besides Walton's prosaic and tag-laden<sup>1</sup> translations is to reveal the vast difference between classical grandeur and medieval decadence, and to admit that the Muses had not left their haunts.

But does Walton, if he is unable to “ shadow forth the form and style,” fulfil the other part of the translator's duty—the “ faithful expression of the author's meaning”? Though it is very difficult to sever the one from the other, to separate the spirit of the whole from its various trends of thought, one must admit that the philosophical thoughts, the puzzling arguments and the subtle dialectics are often clearly expressed in the verse rendering. Especially is this the case in the last two books, where the author, freed from the restrictions which the demands of the eight-lined stanza imposed, was able to reveal the subtle differences between Fate, Destiny and Providence with much more effectiveness than is found in the long involved sentences of Chaucer's prose version.

Writing at the request of a lady, to whom no doubt the abstract and metaphysical qualities of the original proved a source of great difficulty, Walton probably realised what was expected of him. Anything which would illustrate or explain would be of service; simplicity would be helpful and paraphrase would often be preferable to literal rendering. With these points in view it is easy to realise how the glosses of Chaucer come to be incorporated in the later translation, why explanatory lines so often find a place, and why literal expression is so frequently sacrificed for simple exposition. To the reader who looks for a treatise where metaphysical and philosophical thought is expounded in language whose lucidity and loftiness are the embodi-

<sup>1</sup> In his search for rhymes Walton has frequently resorted to such tags as : it is no nay ; soth to seie ; it is no fayle ; it is no drede ; as semeth the ; if it be as I gesse ; it is no questioun, I am certeyn ; perde . . . etc. ; has even repeated rhyming words in the same stanza ; has rhymed simple words with their compounds ; and has given words strange forms to accommodate them to the rhyme.

ment of what is called classic, who seeks, in fact, another “golden volume not unworthy of the leisure of Plato or Tully,” Walton’s translation will be disappointing; to him who desires a knowledge of the *De Consolatione Philosophiae* in a form which a combination of the original and of Chaucer’s version has helped to produce, and which a skilful fashioning into verse has made more acceptable, the translation of 1410 will prove satisfactory.

#### LANGUAGE

Walton’s dialect is East Midland with a sprinkling of Southern forms. It is interesting, however, to observe his willingness to make use of other dialects when exigencies of rhyme demand it. In Stan. 317 he does not scruple to borrow the Northern forms *variande* and *vnkunnande* to rhyme with *understanle*, while in Stan. 719 the West Midland *trawe* [O.E. *trēowian*] is taken as a rhyme for *luwe*, though in Stan. 58 we find the E. Mid. form in the rhymes *trowe* : *overgrowe* : *befloue*. A rhyme for *i-put* [113] demands that *ȝit* should take its Southern or S.W. Midland form *ȝut*.

“Kentisms” are apparent in the following examples where *kynde*, *fynde*, *mynde*, *bynde* are made to rhyme with *ende* and *wende*:

- [222] *fynde* : *mynde* : *kynde* : *ende*
- [356] *kynde* : *wende* : *mynde* : *ende*
- [411] *kynde* : *ende*
- [456] *mynde* : *kynde* : *bynde* : *wende*
- [889] *mynde* : *ende*
- [992] *wende* : *mynde*

and the suffix *-nesse* [O.E. *-nys*] with *is*, *pis*, and *i-wys*.

Evidence of the narrowing of the French *ü* to *i* exists in the rhymes—*excuse* : *wise* [94]; *endure* : *ire* [134]; *suffice* : *wise* : *use* : *devise* [440]; and rhyming of the vowel *i(y)* with the diphthong *oy* occurs in—*denyeth* : *destroyeth* [443]; and *onside* : *abyde* : *destroyed* [513].

Nor is Walton bound by Chaucer’s reluctance to rhyme the final *-y* of the adverbial suffix *-ly* with the final *-ye* of romance words and infinitives, for we find such instances as—*wonderly* : *vnplye* (inf.) [558]; *denye* (inf.) : *spedily* [603]; *wilfully* : *felonye* [694]. Moreover he permits the rhyme of open and close *ə* : 39a,<sup>1</sup> 72b, 73b, 76b, 95a, 189b, 385b, etc.; of open and close *ɔ* : 25b, 116b, 270c, 393c, 410b, etc.; and shortens the romance ending *-ous* [Lat. *-ōsus*] to rhyme with (1) the *-uis* of Latin proper names—*Boecius* : *curious* [2]; *Tullius* : *glorious* [293]; *surfetous* : *Catullius* : *Nonius* : *venemous* [372]; and (2) with *pus* [220, 234, 256] and *vs* [293].

In the following instances the final unstressed syllables seem to have lost much of their quality—*sesen* (*seize*) : *displesen* : *enchesoun* [101]; *sesoun* : *plesen* [200]; moreover careful poets would not

<sup>1</sup> I indicate the rhyming arrangement as : *ababbebe* [Bks. I–III] and *ababbcc* [Bks. IV–V].

tolerate the rhymes—diffinicioun : one [335]; and done : none : confusiooun [871].

The vocabulary of Walton's translation proclaims him one of that band of pioneers who contributed neologisms to the English language when it gained in vigour as the fusion of native, Norman and Latin elements was being effected.

Unusual English expressions occur as follows :

(i) Repreve (*vb.*) = despise. Corresp. to Lat. *spernere*. [Not in *N.E.D.*.]

(a) And þowȝ þaire oost be huge in habundaunce

Yit nouȝt-forthy it is to be repreued

For-why þey be with-oute gouernance . . . [69/1-3.]

The Latin has : . . . *spernendus tamen est* . . . [B. I, P. III, 41.]

Chaucer : . . . it is to dispysē . . .

(b) And noble renoun schulde it be repreued . . . [347/3.]

Lat. : An claritudo nihili pendenda est, [B. III, P. II, 65.]

Ch. : And cleernesse of renoun, oughte that to ben despised ?

Further we find : repreuable = worthy to be despised.

For suche a þing may nouȝt be repreuable

þat to all mortall þolk is desirable. [346/4-5.]

Lat. : Neque enim . . . contemnendum est. [B. III, P. II, 60.]

Ch. : . . . for that þing nys . . . worþi to be despised.

(ii) I am þefore = I am of the opinion.

But þat I schal þe schewe forthermore

As in þe tastynge byteþ egerly,

But ȝit resayue it, and I am þefore

Thow shalt it fynde ful deliciouse . . . [327/6-328/1.]

Lat. : [B. III, P. I, 13; 14.]

All the MSS. agree, but the printed edition has : I am fer for.

(iii) Remembrable = worthy to be mentioned. [*N.E.D.* has remembrable = worthy to be remembered; earliest example dated 1611.]

Forwhy I holde it be nouȝt remembrable, [407/5.]

Lat. : Ne commemoratione quidem dignam puto. [B. III, P. VI, 18.]

Ch. : . . . worthi to ben remembred . . .

(iv) Forlynen = to degenerate (particularly from the virtues of one's ancestors). [Not in *N.E.D.*.]

If any good in gentilesse be

It is þat nature gentil men enclyneþ

As fro þe vertues and þe honeste

Of þaire auncetres þat þei nouȝt forleyneth.<sup>1</sup> [409/5-8]

<sup>1</sup> Spelt: forlyne in 412/6.

Lat. : . . . ne a maiorum uirtute degeneret. [B. III, P. vi, 29.]  
 Ch. : . . . þat they ne sholden nat outrayen or forliuen<sup>1</sup> from  
 the virtues of hir noble kynrede.

I take : forlynen (forlinen) to come from O.F. *forlignier*, *forligner*  
 Cf. Godefroi : *forlignier* = *dégénérer de la vertu de ses ancêtres*. Lat.  
*degenerare* = *forligner* [Gloss de Conches]. As an example G. quotes :  
 “S'il faisait autrement il forlignerait de l'ancienne vertu de ses  
 ancêtres.” [Larivey, *Le laquais* III, 3. Anc. Th. Fr.]

Forlynen occurs again in the following metrum :

Sith youre begynnyng, if ye couthen se,  
 Youre alther makere wiche is god an hye ;  
 Fro him lo ye proceden principallye,  
 Whos gentilnesse þer may no wight forlyne  
 But if he norische vices wickedlye,  
 And fro his kyndly birthe þat he declyne. [412/3-8.]

Lat. : . . . Si primordia uestra  
 Auctoremque deum spectes, nulla degener est  
 Ni ultiis þeiora fouens proprium deserat ortum. [B. III,  
 M. vi, 7.]

Ch. : . . . thanne nis ther no forliued wight, but yif he  
 norisse his corage unto vyces, and forlete his propre  
 burthe.

It would seem that there were two words existing side by side :

- (1) forlynen (forlinen), O.F. *forlignier*. Lat. *degenerare* = to  
 degenerate from the virtues of one's ancestors.
- (2) forliuen = to live to be very old ; to outlive one's strength.  
 v. *Cursor Mundi* [E.E.T.S. 1. 5347]; *Floris and Blauncheflur* [E.E.T.S. 1. 299]; and Trevisa, *De proprietatibus rerum*, where he translates : “Decrepitus etiam gallus ovat in ultima senectute” as : A forlyued cok leyeþ eggs in his laste elde ;  
 and (v. my article in *Times Lit. Sup.*) editors have read  
 Chaucer as *forliuen* instead of *forlinen*.

(v) *Mysbeware* (*vb.*) = to make unaware of the truth ; to deceive.  
 [Not in *N.E.D.*]

þe forme also of verray blisfulnesse,  
 But-if deceit my wittes mysbeware,  
 It is to me ful open and expresse : . . . [452/6-8.]

Lat. : Nam nisi fallor ea uera est et perfecta felicitas quae . . .  
 [B. III, P. ix, 80.]

Ch. : . . . for but-yif I be bigyled, thanne is thilke the verray  
 blisfulnesse parfit . . .

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* the editor's art. in *Times Lit. Sup.*, March 22, 1923, where he has attempted to prove from Chaucer's use of De Meung's French translation of Boethius and from Walton's frequent borrowings from Chaucer that the *forliuen* in the texts of Chaucer is a misreading of *forlinen*.

Line 2 above = unless deceit makes my mind unaware of the real truth (deceives my mind).

(vi) Assemble = (*vb.*) to conclude (after gathering arguments together). [Not in *N.E.D.*]

And as we han a litell whiles go

Assembled here þat wickednesse is noght . . . [629/1-2.]

Lat. : Nam si, uti paulo ante collegimus, malum nihil est [B. IV, P. II, 118.]

Ch. : . . . for so as I haue gadered and proeved a litel her-biforn . . .

*Colligo* in the sense of *conclude, deduce* is common in Latin.

(vii) Unhight. Unhite = (*sb.*) dishonour, defilement.

Ye do ȝow-seluen schame and gret vnhite

So foule þing[es] sith ȝe demen ȝoures,

Submittinge yow, as in ȝoure awne sight

To þing wherof ȝe ben þe possessoures. [255/5-8.]

Lat. : cum uilissima . . . submittis. [B. II, P. v, 82.]

Walton does not translate literally in this case. He has examples of vnhight, *adj.* [L. *sordida*] = squalid, foul 153/7; and vnhight *pp.* = impaired, deprived of beauty 118/7, made foul 639/2.

Sometimes Walton follows his original Latin so closely that his translations become slavish and unidiomatic, while several of his words are mere coinings from the Latin :

(i) president, *adj.* : superior.

Why beholde ȝe noght

To þe wieche þinges ȝe ben president

As where-upon ȝoure power is extent. [270/3-5.]

Lat. : nonne . . . consideratis quibus qui praesidere uidea mini. [B. II, P. vi, 14.]

(ii) digest *pp.* : divided.

Bot for to haue consideracioun

How þei digest in dyuerse tymes be. [737/1-2.]

Lat. : eadem uero adiunatio digesta . . . temporibus. [B. IV, P. vi, 41.]

(iii) dissown (*vb.*) : contradict.

It semeth the þat þis dissowneth clene. [901/5.]

Lat. : dissonare etenim videntur. [B. V, P. iv, 64.]

We also find: pagyne [L. *paginae*], *page* [919/2] and conchous [L. *conchae*], *shell-fish* [930/6]; and it seems strange that, despite his fondness for Latinisms based on his original text, Walton should translate: accusatoribus by “*delatoires*” [704/5] when even Chaucer has: “*accusours or advocats.*” The earliest example of: “*delator*” in the *N.E.D.* is dated 1572.

Latin forms also appear in translations of

(i) Direct questions :

Wheþer myn art and occupacioun  
Haue þus deserued falsly to be blamed,  
Oþer elles so þat my dampnacioun  
Hath righted hem þat traytores were proclaimed ? [90/1-4.]

Lat. : Nostraene artes ita meruerunt ? An illos accusatores iustos  
fecit praemissa damnatio ? [B. I, P. iv, 68.]

and again in 240/1-2, 371/1-4, 614/6.

(ii) Absolute constructions :

" Allas ! " sche saide, " how þat this mannys mynde  
Is casten doun now into depe derknesse,  
Forlet the clerenesse of his proper kynde." [50/3.]

Lat. : . . . propria luce relicta. [B. I, M. ii, 2.]

and again in 84/8, 583/6, 591/4.

Finally, Walton seems to have used the Latin construction of "the verb 'to be' with the infinitive" to mean : to be possible to.<sup>1</sup>

And at þe laste, whan it will not be  
To voyden alle þese greuances sore . . . [447/5-6.]

The Latin has : . . . cumque haec depellere nequeat . . .

Thus he apparently avoided a literal translation in favour of another Latin form.

### VERSIFICATION

To put into his native tongue a piece of work of the nature of the *Consolatio* and yet be constrained within the limits of metre and rhythm, of stanza and rhyme was no mean achievement. That Walton realised the difficulty of his undertaking is evident. Referring to his subject he says in his preface :

This subtile matere of Boecius  
Heere in þis book of consolacioun  
So hye it is, so hard and curious  
Ful fair abouen myn estimacioun,

and he prays that he may be able to frame it in his stanzas without any impairing of the sense :

to god I praye

As fro þe text þat I ne vary noght  
But kepe þe sentence in his trewe entent,  
And wordes eke als neigh as may be broght  
Where lawe of meter is noght resistent.

<sup>1</sup> Cp. neque est te fallere quicquam. Verg. *Georg.* 4, 477  
quod versi dicere non est. Hor. *Sat.* 1, 5, 87.  
quod tangere non est. Ov. *Met.* 3, 478.

The tribute to Chaucer which follows is a fitting acknowledgment as much of Walton's inferiority as of his indebtedness. The earlier writer had already discovered to him the eight-lined stanza with its five beats (*ababbebc*), and Walton began his metrical translation as an ardent disciple. However, he soon found his limitations. The subject-matter refused to be remoulded without loss. The stanza remained inexorable in its demands for rhyme. To effect a reconciliation was to affect the unity of the whole. As a result, in the first three books of the translation, where the eight-lined stanza has been used, we find a preponderance of tags<sup>1</sup> and a tiring prolixity quite out of keeping with the classical severity of the original.

Soon, however, there was to be a change. The first three books had barely brought the translator beyond the entrance to the maze. Dark winding paths had now to be traversed; the labyrinthine channels of Fate and Providence, of Destiny and Free Will, had now to be explored. All the translator's care and ingenuity would be required for his subject-matter, and a less restraining form of stanza would be necessary. Walton deems it meet to account for the change he is about to effect. He writes a special preface to the last two books, and tells us :

Lo of so hye a mater for to trete  
As after þis myn auctour doth pursue,  
This wote I well, my wittes ben vnmete  
The sentence for to saue in metre trewe.

We get then a complete change in the stanza form. Again the translator in verse finds that Chaucer has provided him with a model. The "Troilus" stanza (*ababbebc*), with one *b* rhyme less, affords him more freedom to enter into the intricacies of his subject. That *Troilus and Criseyde* contains numerous passages from Boethius may have had some influence in bringing about this change, though a comparison of the two gives no tangible results.

Such a change in a single work is of rare occurrence. Lydgate, in his *Last Testament* and in a few of his minor poems, found it necessary to change his stanza form in the course of the work, but was aware of the imperfections of his verse.<sup>2</sup> That Walton should have had to resort to such a change stamps him as taking his first flights in the realm of prosody.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* footnote, p. lxi.

<sup>2</sup> In the *Troy Book* he confessedly "sette asyde" accuracy of metre and took "none hede nouther of shorte nor longe."



# Liber Boecij de Consolacione Philosophie

## [PREFACIO TRANSLATORIS]

(1)

1. Insuffishaunce of cunnyng and of wit  
Defaut of langage and of eloquence  
þis work from me schuld haue withholdyn ȝit  
Bot þat ȝoure heste haþ done me violence,  
þat nedes most I do my diligence  
In thyng ȝat passeth myn abilit  
Besekyng to ȝoure noble excellencie  
þat be ȝoure help it may amended be.

(2)

2. This subtile matere of boecius  
Heere in þis book of consolacioun  
So hye it is, so hard and curious  
Ful fair abouen myn estimacioun,  
þat it be noght be my translacioun  
Defouled ne corrupt to god I praye.  
So help me wiþ hys inspiracioun  
þat is of wisdom boþe lok and keye,

(3)

3. As fro þe text þat I ne vary noght  
But kepe þe sentence in hys trewe entent,  
And wordes eke als neigh as may be broght  
Where lawe of metir is noght resistent;

STAN. 1.—1. Insuffishaunce] insufficiens M ; vn suffysance P : of (2)] om.  
Ba F Ch : wit] witte M F J Ch ; wytte Ba h ; whit P. 2. of (2)] om.  
F P : eloquence] experiance P. 3. schuld haue] had F : withholdyn]  
behold Ba J Ch ; halden F : ȝit] ȝitte Ba Ch ; yitte M F J ; yette h : Thys  
labour viche ye haue vpon me put P. 4. done] do Ba F Ch ; doon h :  
Muste fully excuse vnto your reuerence P. 5. If hyt be not with craft of  
eloquence P. 6. Depaynted so as other bokes be P. 7. Besekyng]  
Beseching R h Bb F Dc J Ch : Yet muste I nedes do my diligence P.  
8. be ȝoure help it] hit bi ȝoure helpe F : With al my pouer to plesse your  
souerente P. STAN. 2.—1. matire] matier M F : boecius] Boicius Ba h F.  
2. Heere in þis] In hys P. 4. fair] fer Ba ; ferre M P ; farre h. 7. hys]  
om. h ; thy P. 8. is] art P. STAN. 3.—1. ne] om. M F Dc P.  
3. wordes eke] worde also h : eke] om. F : als] as Ba M Dc Ch P : as may]  
as hit may F. 4. is noght resistant] wyl therto consente P.

This mater wiche þat is so excellent  
 And passeth boþe my cunnyng and my myght  
 So sauē it lord in þy gouernement  
 þat kannest reformen alle þing to right.

(4)

4. I haue herd speke and sumwhat haue i-seyne  
 Of diuerse men þat wondir subtillye,  
 In metir sum and sum in prose pleyne,  
 This book translated haue † suffyshauntlye  
 Into Englisshe tonge, word for word, wel neye ;  
 Bot I most use þe wittes þat I haue ;  
 þogh I may noght do so, yit noght-for-thye,  
 With help of god þe sentence schal I sauē.

(5)

5. To Chaucer þat is floure of rethoryk  
 In Englisshe tong and excellent poete,  
 This wot I wel, no þing may I do like,  
 þogh so þat I of makyng entirmete ;  
 And Gower þat so craftily doþ trete  
 As in hys book[es] of moralite ;  
 þogh I to þeym in makyng am vnmete,  
 ȝit must I schewe it forth þat is in me.

(6)

6. Noght liketh me to labour ne to muse  
 Upon þese olde poysees derk,  
 For Cristes feith suche þing[es] schulde refuse ;  
 Witnes upon Ierom þe holy clerk.

STAN. 3.—5. wiche þat] all which F. 6. my (2)] om. F. 7. sauē]  
 haue M h F Ch P. 8. to] vnto Ba; into Dc Ch; vnto þe J; alle þing] all  
 manere þinge M. STAN. 4.—2. þat] om. M : subtillye] sotelly M ; craftely P.  
 4. translated haue] hafe translated F : suffyshauntlye F] full suffyshauntlye  
 all other MSS.: Haueth thys boke translated dyuersly P. 5. for] bi F :  
 wel] ful Dc. 7. do so] so do M: yit noght-for-thye] wel yet truly P.  
 8. With help] Wyth the helpe Dc P: With help of god] Wij goddes grace  
 F: sentence] om. J: schal] wol F; wyl P. STAN. 5.—1. Chaucer] Chaucers  
 F: is] was Ba F Dc J Ch P. 3. I wote wel I may not do like F: I wote  
 ful wel I am no thyng leke P. 4. so þat] om. F: Though I hys makyng  
 do conterfete P. 5. so] is so M: Gower] Gover P. 6. As] And Ba J  
 Ch: bokes P] book other MSS. 7. in makyng] om. F: am] be F: þeym]  
 hym P. 8. it forth] om. F: must I schewe it forth] wyl I sheworthe P.  
 STAN. 6.—1. Noght liketh me] Hit likeþ me not F: ne to] and F: Hyt  
 leketh not me to labour nor muse P. 2. þese] þe F. 3. suche]  
 om. J: þing] om. F; thynges P: Cristes] cristen P: schulde] muste P.  
 4. Witnes vpon] Witnessinge F: vpon] of on Dc: As witnesseth Jerom the  
 noble clerke P.

Hit schulde not ben a Cristen mannes werk  
 Tho false goddes names to renewe,  
 For he þat hath resayued Cristes merk,  
 If he do so to Crist he is vntrewe.

(7)

7. Of þo þat Crist in heuene blisse schal  
 Suche manere werkys scholde ben set on side ;  
 For certaynly it nedeþ noȝt at all  
 To whette now þe darteres of cupide,  
 Ne for to bidde þat venus be oure gyde  
 So þat we may oure foule lustes wynne,  
 Onaunter lest þe same on us betide  
 As dede þe same venus for hire synne.

(8)

8. And certayn I haue tasted wonder lyte  
 As of the welles of calliope  
 No wonder þough I sympilly endite,  
 Yit will I not vnto Tessiphone  
 Ne to Allecto ne to Megare  
 Besechyn after craft of eloquence,  
 But pray þat god of hys benignite  
 My spirit enspire wiþ hys influence ;

(9)

9. So þat in schenschip *and confusioun*  
 Of all þis foule worldly wrecchydnesse,  
 He helpe me in þis occupacioun.  
 In honour of þat sofferayn blisfulnessse

STAN. 6.—5. not ben a] be no P. 6. Tho] To J: fals] false P.  
 8. he] om. F: do so] so do h M. STAN. 7.—1. Of þo] fro them P: blisse] blis R; blisse se h. 2. manere] maner of Dc: werkys] werke M h: scholde] om. F; muste P: set] put P: on side] a side M h P. 3. certaynly] certen F. 4. whette] wete R; y wette J. 5. þat] om. Ba F J. 6. mowe] may F. 7. On aunter] On auenture Ba F Dc J: on] om. F: Onaunter lest] Leste here after P. 8. dede] tyd M: þe] on þe Ba F: As dede þe same] as dyd to the sayd P. STAN. 8.—1. tasted] wasted Bb.  
 2. Calliope h F Dc; calyope P. 3. þough] yef F: sympilly] symple Ch. 4. Tessiphone] tessiphole h; Ysope F; Thessiphone Dc; tesiphone J. 5. Ne to her susters that in hel be P. 6. Besechyn] Besechyn g h; Beseke F; Besekynege P. 7. þat] om. Ch; to P: benignite] benynghnyte h. 8. enspire] to enspyre P. STAN. 9.—1. So] Lo Ba J: in schenschip] fro blame P: and] and in Dc. 2. worldly] wordly Dc P. 4. of þat] and Dc: To the honour of hys blysfulnessse P.

And eke in reuerence of youre worthinesse  
 This simple werk as for an obseruance  
 I schal begynne after my simpelnesse  
 In wil to do *your* seruice and plesance.

Explicit prefacio Translatoris.

INCIPIT PROLOGUS EIUSDEM  
 SUPER LIBRUM BOECIJ

(10)

1. The while þat Rome was reignyng in hir floures  
 And [of] þe worlde held all þe monarchie,  
 Sche was gouerned þenne be emperoures  
 And was renouned wondir nobelye  
 Till pride had set þaire hertes vpon hye.  
 Þenne gan thei for to vsen cruelte  
 And regne by rigour *and* by tyrannyne  
 In sore oppressioun of þe comynalte.

(11)

2. For right as pouert causeth sobirnesse,  
 & febilnesse enforceth continence,  
 Right so prosperite *and* sekirnesse  
 þe moder is of vice and negligencie.  
 And pouer also causeþ insolence,  
 And often honour chaungeþ goode þewes ;  
 þere is none more parelouse pestilence  
 þan hyhe estates gyffen vnto schrewes.

STAN. 9.—5. eke] also h ; om. P. 6. Madame thys worke at your instance P. 7. I schal begynne] I haue begonne P. 8. *your*] *zow*  
 N M D h F Dc Ch P.

PROLOGUE, STAN. 1.—1. The] om. F: was reignyng] regned M D. 2. of] om. L h D; of all F: held allj helde F: all] om. N: þe (2)] om. D Dc ; in h. 3. Sche] It D. 4. renouned] renomed h ; renouned þen F: wondir nobelye] of wondre high nobleye M D. 6. gan] beganne F P: for to] to R F P: cruelte] crudelyte P. 7. rigour] rygurnesse P: by (2)] om. P. 8. oppressioun] oppressing J: And oppressed sore the comynalte P. STAN. 2.—1. right] leke P: pouert] pouerte Ba D F Ch P. 2. febilnesse] feblesse C ; feblesse M ; febles D ; feblesse Bb. 4. is] om. R : þe moder is] Is the moder P. 5. also causeþ] causeth also F. 6. good] gode Rl Ba J Ch ; goode N R M D: þewes] towes J ; maners P. 7. none] no Rl Ba N M F Ch ; more] mo C R ; so P. 8. hyhe] bee D: estates] estate N ; statis D: gyffen] yoven M D: vnto] to F: As ys hye astate geven to srewes P.

(12)

3. Of wiche was Nero oon þe principall  
 þat suche manere of tyranny began ;  
 þough he bare dyademe imperiall  
 Yit was hym-self<sup>t</sup> a verry cursed man,  
 So cruelly he gan to regne þan.  
 He slowh hys moder *and* hys maister bothe,  
 And myche he dide þat tellen I ne can  
 Who so haþ it red, he knoweþ wel þe sothe.

(13)

4. The cheef of holy chirche he slowh also  
 Seynt Paule *and* Peter boþe vpon a day  
 And after þeym full many other mo ;  
 And of hym-self it is, I dar wel say,  
 þat Paule writeth þus, it is no nay,  
 And seith, now [is] þe forme of wickednesse  
*And* figure right of antecristes lay  
 In whom schal ben all manere cursednesse.

(14)

5. For þey þat trewly teche Cristes lore  
 To maken men forletten of þeire vice,  
 Antecrist will pursue þeym þerfore  
 And all þis prechyngh setten at no pryse.  
 So was he gifen to lustes and delice,  
 In what desire þat come to hys þoght  
 He wolde it done wiþouten more avise  
 For noþing þere-of spare wolde he noght.

PROLOGUE, STAN. 3.—1. wiche] þe whiche Rl Ba J P : oon þe] vnnethe D ; one and P. 2. of] om. Rl Ba N J P. 3. dyademe] a diadem Rl Ba F J ; the dyademe P. 4. verry] om. F: hym self] he P. 5. gan] began R h F. 6. moder & hys maister] master & hys moder P. 7. nej] om. N : tellen I ne] I ne telle M D. 8. who so] whos F ; who N : red] radde Rl Ba Ch ; yredde F : wel] om. F. STAN. 4.—2. Seynt] om. F: Paule] Poule Rl Ba N M D h Ch ; Powle Dc: Petir] petur Ba ; Petre M M Dc ; Paule & Petir] Petir & Poule F P. 4. hymself] the same P. 5. Paule] Poule N D h J ; Powle Dc : þus] þis F ; it] om. F. 6. is] om. Ba L h Ch. 7. And] A F: antecristus] antecristes N M D F Dc. 8. manere cursednesse] manere of cursednesse. STAN. 5.—1. trewly teche] techeþ trewely Rl Ba F J Ch. 2. To] Tho Ch: forletten] to forleten N D: of] om. M D Rl Ba P. 3. pursue] punyssh. 6. In] That N F J: þat] om. Dc: to] vnto Rl Ba N F. 7. it] hem N: avise] aduyse h P. 8. þere of] om. F: For noþynghe then wold he spare hyt nought P.

(15)

6. And he þat wolde ageyn hys vices speke,  
 Conseilynge hym hys lustes to refreyne,  
 Wiþ-outen more anon he wolde be wreke ;  
 He wolde hym put in torment *and* in peyne.  
 And he þat wolde hys lustes ouȝt wiþ-seyne  
 He was but deed if þat he wolde appere :  
 For suche acause Boecius was sleyn  
 Of whom þis processe after techeþ here.

(16)

7. The yere of Crist fyve hondred *and* fiftene  
 Whan Anastasius was Emperour,  
 Boecius, þis same of whom I mene,  
 In Rome he was a noble senatour.  
 But þo, in manere of a conquerour  
 Theodoricus regned in Ytalie  
 And Rome he helde as heed*and* gouernour ;  
 He hadde it wonne by conquest *and* bataile.

(17)

8. For Anastasius was noght ilyke  
 Ne noght so strong of meyne atte leste ;  
 He was consentant þat Theodorik  
 Schulde regne in Rome *and* holde hit at hys heste  
 And he wolde holde hym-seluen in þe este.  
 Hé seyde it was accordant to his hele,

**PROLOGUE, STAN. 6.—1.** vices] vice N J.    2. Conseilynge] And counsel P: to] om. N: refreyne] restreyn Rl Ra N F J Ch.    3. he] hym J: he wolde be wreke] wold he be werek C: he wolde] wolde be N: anon] om. F.    4. He wolde] And F: in (2)] om. F: And he wolde hys lustys owght withseyne Dc.    5. ouȝt] out C R Bb; om. F; ofte P: He was but deed ȝif þat he woold atteyne Dc.    6. þat] om. F: Them to geyn sey in any manere Dc.    7. cause] cas Rl Ba: Boecius Rl Ba F Ch.    8. after techeþ] techeþ after R F: techeþ] treteth P.    **STAN. 7.—1.** Crist] oure lord F: hondred] hundreth Rl C.    **2.** Anastasius] Anastacius D.    3. þis] þe Ba M D F J: of] om. M D.    4. he] om. F.    5. þo in] in þe J: conquerour] conqueour R; quycke conquerour F.    6. Theodoricus] Theodoricus h: Ytalie] Ytaile Rl Ba F Dc Ch; Ytaile N Bb; Ytale R; Itayle M, Itallye h.    7. he] om. Rl Ba N M D F Dc Ch: heed] kynge P: and] an M J.    8. wonne] ywonne F.    **STAN. 8.—1.** ilyke] hym lyke D; like F, leke P.    2. Ne] And F: meyne] meane h; men J; maney P: atte] at Ba J; atte þe D; at the Dc.    3. was] om. P: consentant] consentand Rl Ba N D J Ch; consentid F; consented P: Theodorik] Theodorike Rl Ba N F Ch.    4. at hys] atte R: at hys heste] as hym leſt M D.    5. holde] om. Rl Ba M F: este] yeste F.    6. accordant] accordyng P: to] for N.

And for his ese in sothe he chese it meste,  
For romeyns ben ful perelous wiþ to dele.

(18)

9. This kyng of Rome þan Theodorik  
Was full of malice *and* of cursidnesse,  
And eek for cause he was an heretyk  
þe Christen peple gan he sore oppresse.  
Boecius with his besynesse  
Wiþstode hym evire, sparynge none offence,  
And hym presente ful often tyme expresse  
Reuersed [h]is vnlawefull iuggementis.

(19)

10. He spared noȝt þe helpe of hys estate,  
But euer he spak aȝeyn his tyrannyne.  
Wherfore þe kyng hym hadde sore in hate  
And hym exciled in-to Lumbardye  
To prisone in þe citee of Pavie  
Where ynne † as for a recreacioun  
B[erwyng] hym-self in † philosophie  
He wrot þis book of consolacioun

(20)

11. In prose *and* metre enterchaungyngly  
Wiþ wordes set in colour wonder wele  
Of rethoryk endited craftily ;  
And schewyng þat þis welþ is temporele

PROLOGUE, STAN. 8.—7. ese] yese F: chese] dide N: it meste] his neste  
h: chese it meste] thought yt beste P. 8. romeyns] romaynes Rl F Ch;  
romeyns N; romayns R. STAN. 9.—1. Theodorik Theodorike Rl Ba N  
F Ch. 2. of (2)] om. F. 3. eek] om. R; also h: for cause] bee cause]  
D: heretyk] erratike Rl Ba N Ch; arratike J. 4. gan] can Rl J Ch: gan  
he sore] he ganne right sore M D; he gan sore F: oppresse] to oppresse  
C R Bb. 5. Boetius Boicius h F: with] with all P. 6. wiþstode] with  
stoste D: wiþstode hym] him wiþstode F: evire] alway P: offence] offences  
Rl Ba J; offensis M D. 7. ful] om. F P: often] oft N M. 8. is] his  
*all others except R.* STAN. 10.—1. spared] ne spared P: þe helpe]  
theight D; þe helie J; þe hight P: his] om. J. 3. hym hadde] hadde  
hym N F. 4. exciled] exilend J: Lumbardye] lumbardy Rl Ba Ch;  
lumbardie N; lumbardie R Bb. 5. in] into F: Pavie] Pavie Rl Ba J Ch;  
Pavye C F; Pavoye h; Pappy P. 6. as F P] he was C (he *inserted later*)  
R D Bb (he *inserted later in another ink*); when he was M; was L Rl Ba  
M h F Ch. 7. Berwyng O (*in margin in other hand*) betwyne R h F Ch  
P; to bryngre M D; briuen *other MSS.*: in] into D; of M; and *all other*  
*MSS.* [In J. ll. 6-8 om.] STAN. 11.—1. and] in M D: enterchaungyngly]  
Rl Ba h F J. 2. wiþ] whiche Ba Ch. 4. schewyng þat] schewed wele  
M D: om. J: þis welþ is] pese welthes Rl Ba h F Dc J P; þis welthe N;  
pi welthys C; þis wel this R Bb.

And noght to be desired n[euer] a dele ;  
 Ne worldly meschier noþyng for to drede,  
 Enforsyng vs be resoun naturele  
 To vertu fully for to taken hede.

(21)

12. When Anastasius had made hys fyne,  
 As tyme of age into his deth hym drewe,  
 Pan after hym was Emperour Justyne,  
 A noble knyght a feithful and a trewe ;  
 For Cristes lawes wonder wel he knewe  
 And keped hem as a verry Cristen man,  
 And heretikes faste he gan pursewe  
 Pat Arrian[e]s were clepid than.

(22)

13. His lettres in-to Rome þan he sent  
 For to destroyen al þat heresye,  
 And fully gaf h[e]m in comandement  
 þat þey schulde putte hem out of companye.  
 Theodoricus took þis wonder lyhe  
 For he hym-self was only on of þo.  
 Thys message he repeled vtterlye  
 And made a now it schulde not stonde so,

(23)

14. And swore but if þe Arrian[e]s moste  
 Haue fully pees & graunted hem ageyn,  
 He nold not leuen oon in all þe coste  
 Of Cristen feith þat he ne scholde be slayn.

PROLOGUE, STAN. 11.—5. And] Ar C ; as R ; Areen h ; arn De : And  
 noght] peim ought Ba J Ch ; ar not Bb (*in later hand after erasure*) P ;  
 owed F : noght] never Rl Ba N F J Ch P ; om. D. 6. Ne] No Rl  
 De Ch : worldly] wordly De J. 7. naturel] naturale R ; naturall h.  
 STAN. 12.—1. When] Then P. 2. into] vnto N P D. 4. a (1)] om. F : a (2)]  
 om. F. 6. verry] om. Ba Ch. 7. heretikes] erretikes Rl Ba : faste he gan]  
 hee gan faste D : gan] gan to h ; cau J. 8. Arrianes C P] arryans De ; arrians  
*all other MSS.* : clepid] ycleped Rl Ba M D F. [ll. 5 and 6 h at first in  
 reverse order but corrected.] STAN. 13.—1. His] Ys C : þis Ch ; into Rome  
 þan] then into Rome P. 2. destroyen] distreyen Ch : al] om. F : heresye]  
 erresy Rl Ba ; eroosie N. 3. fully] full F : hem] hym R L M D Bb F Ch :  
 in] om. N. 4. That þey schulde] to F. 5. þis] om. M D. 6. only]  
 holly N C P ; om. F De. 7. repealed] replied D. 8. made a now]  
 avowed F : a] om. Rl Ba J : it] that it M D h : stonde] be M D P.  
 STAN. 14.—1. Arrianes C P] arriens N ; arrians *all other MSS.* 2. fully]  
 full M D ; ther P : and] om. M D F P. 3. nold] woll N ; wolde M D h F.  
 4. þat] but P : ne] om. P : he ne scholde] shold not F.

And þus he bad þe messanger[e]s sayn  
 þat if he wolde wiþ Arrian[e]s stryve,  
 Seie to þe Emperour in wordes playn,  
 Of Cristen wil I leue non on-lyue.

(24)

15. To Constantinopill he sent anone  
 Of senatoures wiche þat hym-selue leste,  
 And so among[es] other pope Jone  
 And bad þaim laboren for þaire avne beste.  
*And rufulliche þey maden þaire requeste*  
 þat Justyne schulde þis maundement relees ;  
 For þe Cristen myght noght be in reste  
 But if he graunted Arrian[e]s pees.

(25)

16. The empour his malice understood ;  
 Beny[gne]ly he graunted haþ hire bone,  
 And wel he þoghte þat it was as good  
 þat mater for to cessen til eft sone ;  
 And better mighte it afterward be done  
 Be good avise of wyser ordinaunce.  
 þe arrian[e]s so he lette alone  
 To vsen forth þaire olde gouernaunce.

(26)

17. These messager[e]s to þe kynges pay  
 Retourned noght so hastely ageyne

PROLOGUE, STAN. 14.—5. þus] pis F : messangeres] messanger Rl Ba ; messagers N M h ; messingere F J ; messangers other MSS. 6. Arrianes C P] arriens N ; arians D ; arrians all other MSS. 7. Seie] So F ; Sap Ch : wordes] word N : I will that he haue goode knowleche certeyne D. 8. wil] wold J : non] not one D : on lyue alyue Rl Ba N M h F Ch ; of lyue J. [l. 7. M om.] STAN. 15.—1. Constantinopill] Constantynople Ba J Ch ; Constantinople N M Dc P ; Constantinoble D h ; Constantine noble F. 2. selue] om. F P. 3. so] om. P : amonges Rl Ba Dc J Ch] among all other MSS. : Jone] John Rl Ba N M D h F J P. 4. And] om. D : þaim] hym N F J : þaire] his N : avne] om. F. 5. rufullliche] rightfully M D ; ruthfully P : þey] om. Dc: 6. maundement] commaundement D F. 7. þe] om. F : noght be] be in no h. 8. if] om. Ba F J Ch : arrianes C] arians L Rl Ba N R Bb h M F J Ch ; arians D ; arryanys Dc ; þe arrianes P. STAN. 16.—2. Benygnely] Benyngly L R M h Bb: haþ] om. D F ; them P. 3. it] is Rl ; om. R : as] om. N : þat] om. F. 4. for] om. F P. 5. mighte it afterward be done] hit miȝte after be done F. 6. avise] aduyse h. 7. arrianes C P] arians L h M Rl Ba Dc F J Ch ; arryanys Dc ; arriens R Bb N. STAN. 17.—1. messageres [messangers D ; messingers F. 2. retourned] torned P.

As he desired at assigned day.

Wherfore in hert he had[de] gret disdeyne,  
And Boece þat lay in prisoun *and* in peyne  
Exiled in þe citee of Pavye  
In myleyn þan he made hym to [be] sleyne ;  
In Pavie been his boones sikerlye.

(27)

18. And whan thise messager[e]s at þe last<sup>t</sup>  
Retourned were, in hert he gan to brenne,  
And pope Joone in prisoun þan he cast<sup>t</sup>  
All fer in-to þe citee of Ravenne,  
And made hym closid in a narow denne  
Where he ne myghte torne hym-self ne wende,  
And sothe to seyn he went[e] neuer þenne  
Bot of his lyf right þere he made an ende.

(28)

19. Also þe worthy noble Symachus  
þat was a man full grounded al in grace  
þat as in vertu was heroycus,—  
Þere lefte not suche an oþer as he wace—  
Wip-outen cause, surfet or trespass  
At Rauenne eke he slow hym cruellye.  
And afterward in þat same place  
þe nexte yere he deide sodeynlye.

PROLOGUE, STAN. 17.—3. at] at an D: assigned day] a certen day P;  
a signed day h: day] a day R. 4. hadde] had L: gret] om. F.  
5. Boece] boice Ba D h; boyce F P; boce Dc: lay] om. F: in (2)] om.  
M D F. 6. Pavye] Pauye Ba F: Pavie N; Pavoie h; Pavye Ch;  
Papey P. 7. Myleyne] Mileyn Ba C; Melan D; Meleyne h De; Meloyn J;  
Melyn P: þan] om. N; þan to F: be] om. L Rl Ba N De Ch J Bb (*but inserted later*) P. 8. Pavie] Pauy Ba; Pavoieh; Pauye F; Pauy Ch; Papey P.  
STAN. 18.—1. messagers] messingers F: these] the N: at the] atte  
N M F; at D. 2. were] where D: to] om. F. 3. And] om. P: pope  
crossed out and byschop in margin in other handwriting Dc: Joone] John  
Ba N D h J: in prisoun þan] pen in prison Ba F J: þan] om. Ch. 4. to]  
om. P: Ravenne] Rauen J. 5. closid] cloose D. 6. ne myght] myȝt  
ne Ba; myght ne J: hymself] om. F. 7. sothe] soht Dc: wente] went  
L R h; wende F: neuer] no ferre. 8. Bot] Tyl P: right] om. D F: right  
þere] om. P. STAN. 19.—1. Symachus] semachus R; simachus M;  
Simeracus D; synmacus P: Also that man callyd Symachus Dc. 2. full]  
om. Ba M D F P J Ch: al in] in al Ba F Dc J. 3. þat as] The whyche  
P: was heroycus] he was heroicus F: heroycus] heroicus D J. 4. not]  
none Ba Ch; not suche an oþer] non other svych Dc: an oþer] a noþere J.  
5. surfet] furfete Ba. 6. Ravenne] Raven Ba J; Ravynn D. 7. afterward]  
after F; afterwards P þat] þe F 8. nexte] next L. [l. 5 D om.

(29)

20. And as seynt Gregor doth hym-selfe write,  
 As his diologe makiþ merciouñ,  
 þere was þat tyme an holy heremyte ;  
 As he was in his contemplacioun  
 He sawe Theodoryk in visioun  
 Bytwene Symachus *and* pope John,  
 Right as a þeef to his dampnacioun  
 How he was led, *and* after þat anon,

(30)

21. In þe yle of vlcane was he casten þenne  
 þat full is of a fury flaumbe of hell,  
 þer inne alwey in peynes for to brenne,  
 And wiþ þe foule fendys for to dwell.  
 For tyrantes þat so fiers been *and* fell  
 Suche rewardl is arraied for þaire mede.  
 I saye ȝow but as olde bokes telle,  
 Now to my purpos tyme is þat I spede.

(31)

22. And euery lordl or lady what ȝe be  
 Or clerk þat likeþ for to rede þis,  
 Besekyng lawly wiþ humylite  
 Supporte where I haue [seyde] amys ;

PROLOGUE, STAN. 20.—1. As] *om.* N : Gregor] gregore N ; gregorie h ; gregory F P ; gregori Dc. 2. As] And as Ba F : as his diologe] as yet hys bokes P : diologe] dialoge M D ; diologie h. 4. as] And as F : his] hooly Dc. 5. sawe] dyd se P : Thedoryk] Theodorike Ba N Ch. 6. and] an R : pope] crossed out in Dc. 7. a] *om.* h. STAN. 21.—1. vlcane] vulcane N P ; vlcane Ba D F Ch ; vulcan M Dc J. 2. a] thee D ; *om.* N F : fury] fyre P ; fury Ba J ; fury F ; fery Dc. 3. for] *om.* F. 4. And with] And thus with h : þe] *om.* F : foule] *om.* h. 5. fiers] fers R ; ferse J Ch : and] and so h. 6. Suche rewardl is arraied] Suche rewardis arayed be MD ; Ben arayed suche rewardes P. 7. I] As F : ȝow] *om.* M D : olde] holde Ch : telle] do telle P. 8. is þat] it is M D. STAN. 22.—1. or] and h : ȝe] he R D. 2. þat likeþ] þat ȝe likeht Dc ; for] *om.* F. 3. Besekyng] Besechyng Ba N C R D h Bb Dc J Ch ; Biseche I M ; I besek F : wiþ] wych Ch. 4. Supporte] supporteth F P : haue seyde R Bb (seyde inserted later by other hand) haue ofte seyde P ; haue L Rl ; haue gone Ba F Dc J Ch ; haue doon N M D h : amys] mys Ch,

Correcte[P] only þere þat nedful is,  
If word or sentence be noght as it scholde.  
My-self I am vnsuffishaunt I-wys  
For if I couthe have bettre done I wolde.

Explicit Prologus.

PROLOGUE, STAN. 22.—5. Correcte] Correcteth P: þere þat nedful is]  
Where nede is F: þat] om. N. 6. or] and R. 7. vnsuffishaunt] insufficient.  
8. haue bettre done] doo better doo M D.

# INCIPIT LIBER BOECIJ DE CONSOLACIONE PHILOSOPHIE

## METRUM PRIMUM

Carmina qui quondam studio florente peregri  
flebiles heu mestos cogor inire modos.

(32)

1. Allas I wrecche þat whilom was in welthe  
And lusty songes vsed for to write  
Now am I set in sorowes *and* vnselthe.  
Wiþ mournyng now my merþe I most respite ;  
Lo re[n]dyng muses techiþ me to endite,  
Of wo wiþ wepyng weteþ þay my face.  
Thus hath diseise distroyed al my delyte  
And broght my blisse *and* my bone cheefe all bace.

(33)

2. And þogh þat I wiþ myschef now be mete  
þat false fortune lourith þus on me,  
No drede fro me ne myghte þe muses lete  
Me for to sewe in myn aduersite.  
My ioyes þei were all in my iolyte  
Of youthe þat was so gladsom *and* so grene ;  
Now þei solacen my drery destine  
And in myn age my confort now þei bene.

METRUM I, STAN. 1.—1. whilom] whilon R: alas that I wreche vholes I was in welth P. 2. songes] dytes P. 3. I] om. F: in] om. R: sorowes] sorowe Rl Ba F J Ch; sorwe Dc; soroes C: vnselthe] vnelthe M Dc Ch P; in sleuth h; onselthe F. 4. merþe] wittes Rl Ba Dc J Ch; (Bb wittes altered to merþe); witte F; myrthes NC: how my merþe] om. T H: most] may P. 5. Lo rendyng] Lamentable P: rendyng H Bb (n inserted later)] redyng J (redyng all other MSS.): rendyng muses] rudyng musynges T: to endite] tendyte M. 6. wo] who Ch: weteþ] wypen M D: þay my] thye D. 7. Thus hath diseise] This diseise hap F: distroyed] stroyed Dc: distaynyd T: delyte] myght N. 8. blisse] lyf N: my bone cheefe] jolyte P: all] in N. STAN. 2.—1. þogh] þoght L H: þat I] om. F: I wiþ] I now wiþ] D: myschef] my thef MD: myselfe H T: now] may h: be] I be F: mete] bette H T. 2. þat] And þat N: þus] om. N; this F: on] yppon h. 3. No] for Ba F: fro] for M: þe] þes M D F Dc. J P; þys H. 4. sew] shewe J: for to sew] to ensue P. 5. ioyes] ioy P T H: þei] om. M D: all in] and all Dc; in all H T. 6. so (2)] om F. 8. now] om F

(34)

3. Vnwarly age comyth on me hastely  
 Hyeng<sup>t</sup> on me for harme þat I haue had<sup>t</sup>  
 And sorow his eld<sup>t</sup> hap hoten to be ney.  
 Hoore herys on my hede to rathe ben sprad<sup>t</sup>;  
 All toome of blood my body waxeþ bad,  
 Myn ampty skyn begynnyth to tremble *and* quake.  
 I knowe no cause wherof I scholde be glad<sup>t</sup>  
 But socurlese þus am I al forsake.

(35)

4. A deth of men a blissfull þing it were  
 If he wolde spare þeym in þaire lustynesse,  
 And come to þem þat been of heuy chere  
 Whan þei hym call to slaken þaire distresse.  
 But owt! allas! how dull & deef þe [esse]  
 Wrieng<sup>t</sup> awey fro wrechys when þei clepe,  
 And werneth þenne wiþ wonder cruelnesse  
 Pe eyen for to close þat waile *and* wepe.

(36)

5. Bot while fortune, vnfeithfull *and* vntrewe,  
 Of lusty lyf was to me fauorabill,  
 Ful sodanly myn hede down he drewe  
 Pe careful houre of deth vnmerciabill.  
 But now þat sche so chaungyng *and* vnstable  
 Hath turned vnto me here cloudy face,

METRUM I, STAN. 3.—1. Vnwarly] Vnwar h. 2. haue] *om.* T H.  
 3. sorow hys] sorwys T H Dc: eld] hestes P: hap<sup>t</sup>] has Rl Ba J Ch: hap  
 hoten] hoteþ F: be] my J: ney] me ny N. 4. to] so M D: ben] *om.*  
 N: sprad] y spred Dc. 5. toome] teme Dc: come Ch Rl; to me P:  
 toome of blood] comen of bolde J. 6. begynmeth] genueth M D: tremble]  
 tremel P. 7. knowe] haue P: I scholde] shuld I C; I may P: wherof  
 I scholde be glad] to be gladde F. 8. þus] pis F: am I] I am Ba F: al]  
*om.* F: Thus mornyng for myse my mone I make P: Thus murnyng for  
 muses my mone I make T H. [l. 5 *om.* in T H.] STAN. 4.—1. A (1)]  
 O F; *om.* Dc. 2. spare þeym] þeym spare F: þeym] payne T H: in  
 þaire] and hire T H: þaire] *om.* Dc. 3. come] cometh R: þat been]  
*om.* F: chere] chiere Rl Ba Ch. 5. owt] o M: dull & deef] deef & dulle  
 M D: he esse Rl Ba Dc J Ch: he is T H F M D: is he L R Bb h: and] how  
 T H. 6. wrieng] wryng R: wryngyng T; wryng H: wrynge D: clepe]  
 wepe Dc. 7. þenne] hem N T H M D F; þanne Dc. 8. even] yen  
 H F; yes P: for] *om.* J: waile] wallys J; wele P. STAN. 5.—1. while]  
 wyly T. 3. myn hede down] douny myn hed F: down] adown H; to  
 grounde P. 4. houre of deth] deth of hym T H: houre] oure R: owre h:  
 vnmerciabill] vnuuersable N. 5. so] *om.* M: chaungyng] cheyngeth T H:  
 vnstable] instabill C Bb. 6. vnto] to Ba N M D F: me] *om.* T.

Thys wrecchid lyf þat is vnconfortable  
Wyll draw a-long *and* tarieth now allas.

(37)

6. Wher-to [y]e frendes made ye ȝour awaunt  
So often tymes of my felicite?  
This worldly welthe is nouth perseueraunt  
Ne neuere abidyng in stabilitē.  
For he þat fallip out of hys degré  
ȝe knownen wel þat stable was he noght,  
Ne he stoodē neuere in ful prosperite  
þat in-to meschief is so lowe ibroght.

(38)

[PROSA ja.]

1. In mornynge þus I made my compleynt  
And for to write my fyngres gan I folde;  
For drerynesse I wax al febill *and* feynt;  
þat of my lyf almost no thyng I tolde.  
But vpward attē laste I gan beholde;  
In sothe I seye so faire a creature  
I coude hire noght discryuen þogh I wolde  
So semely was here schap & hire fature.

(39)

2. Sche was so wonder reuerent of hire chere;  
Hire colour eek so liuely and so bright;

METRUM I, STAN. 5.—7. is] is so F: vnconfortable] vnconfortabill C Bb.  
8. Wyll draw] Draeth P: draw] tarye F: along] on longe D: tarieth]  
draweth F: allace Ra Ba N Ch. STAN. 6.—1. Wherto þe] Therto  
my h: ye (1)] N H M D J, om. F; þe all other MSS.: made] make F Dc:  
ye (2)] om. P. 2. often] oft M: tymes] tyme H F. 3. worldly] wordely  
T H P. 4. Ne neuere] Noþer F: stabilitē] felycite T H. 5. out] ought  
H: hys] hye M D: degré] dignite Rl Ba F Dc J Ch. 6. was] is F.  
8. into] in Rl Ch: is] was N: i-broght] brought D. PROSA I, STAN. 1.—  
1. þus] þis F: made] make H. 2. for] om. F: fyngres] figures N: gan I]  
can I not Rl Ba J Ch; can I T F: I] om. N. 3. al] boþe F. 4. my]  
om. T H. 5. vpward] vpard F: atte] at the C De; attē pe H; atte pe D;  
at Ch: gan] can El Ba J. 6. sothe] feyþe Rl Ba J Ch; soþly T: seye]  
saw N T H M h F P: so faire] shuch T; faire] om. H. 7. coude] couth  
Rl Ba N H R F: hire noght] not her T; hit not F: noght] om. D: þogh]  
and T. 8. hire (2)] om. F. STAN. 2.—1. wonder] om. F: hire] om.  
T; hiera R. 2. eek] also h: liuely] semely N; lyfly H; louely h P:  
And here coloure so loueli briȝte F.

Hire eyen bren[ne]d semyng as for-clere,  
 Passyng full fer abouen mannys sight;  
 As, þogh sche were ful fresche & clene of myght  
 As sche had ben full yongly of corage,  
 3it semed sche to euery worldly wight  
 þat sche was ouerpassid mannys aage.

(40)

3. Hire stature was of doutfull Jugement:  
 Sumtyme þus of comune mannys meet,  
 And somtyme was hire stature so þ extent  
 þat wiþ hire heed sche semed heuenes beet;  
 And other while so hyhe hire heed sche geet  
 Sche persed heuene and myght no more be seyne,  
 So þat we muste þe sight of hire forlete  
 And alle oure lokyng after was in veyne.

(41)

4. Hire clothes wroghte were of þredes smale  
 Be þ subtile craft of matir perdurable,  
 And wiþ hire hondes by hire awne tale  
 Sche had hem wroght, I trowe it be no fable.  
 þe beaute of hem was full comendable;  
 Bot dusk þei were, forleton as for elde,  
 As ymages þat in smoke had stonden stable,  
 þat ben noght wasche ne wyped not but selde.

PROSA I, STAN. 2.—3. eyen] yen H; yene P: brend] brenned Rl; brennes Ba J Ch; brennynge N; brynnyd T; brent h: semyng] om. T J: for] fuyre M D; farre J: Here yen brennynge semyng ful clere F. 4. full] om. F: fer] om. N. 5. As] And Rl: were] was F: ful] om. F: fresche] clere M D. 6. ben] y be F: full] om. T F: yongly of] zong of N T; of yongly Dc. 7. 3it] It T: sche] he R: euery] any Dc: worldly] worthy N; wordly T H Dc. 8. was] om. Dc: ouerpassid] passid F; onneþe passyd Dc. STAN. 3.—1. of] of full Rl Ba J Ch; om. Dc. 2. þus] þis F; om. Ch: of] om. T; as M D; a Dc. 3. so] om. Ba T H F Dc J Ch: existent] extent N C T H P. 4. heuenes] heuen M; hevyn D. 5. And] Ane C: so hyhe hire heed] here hede so hy M D F: heed] had Dc: sche geet] geþ F: geet] geeth Rl Ba; greth Ch. 7. sight] synth H: þe sight of hire forlete] nede here siȝte forlete F. 8. alle] om. H: our] my N. STAN. 4.—1. wroght were] wer wroght T F; where y wrought H: of] wiþ F. 2. By N T H Dc] with M; But all other MSS.: subtile] om. T: craft] mater N: matir] nature M D. 3. tale] entale J. 4. hem] it N: I trowe it be no] I holde it no M D; wiþoute F; I trowe for no P: be] for N. 5. beaute] beaut H: hem] hire M D J; full] om. Rl Ba J Ch. 6. dusk] duskey P. 7. smoke] stokkeȝ T; stocke H: had] pat had M: had stonden] stonding F. 8. noȝht] oot P: wyped] keped J: not] om. Rl Ba N T J Ch P: not but] but ful D.

## (42)

5. And in þe hemme byneþen made sche had  
 So as I couthe it knowe, a grekisshe P ;  
 And in þe bordure al abouen I rad  
 And þere also sche had[de] made a T,  
 And so bitwene þe lettres myght I see  
 like a laddire, what þat euere it mende,  
 Wheron men myght al-wey fro gre to gre,  
 Fro þere bynethen vpward evire ascende.

## (43)

6. Neuerþeles sum men be violence  
 Had kyt this cloth *and* pecis born away,  
 Suche as þey myghte withouten reuerence  
 And dide þere-wiþ as was vnto þare pay.  
 This creature of whom I gan ȝow say  
 In hire right hond[e] smale booke were.  
 A septir also of ful riche aray  
 In certeyn in hire other hond sche bere.

## (44)

7. And when þis womman sawh þise muses þere  
 Vnto my beddes side approchen neye  
 Endytyng wordes to my wepyng chere,  
 Sche gan to loke vpon hem feruentlye ;  
 “Who haþ,” sche seide, “let in þis compayne  
 Pus with hire song þis seek[e] man to plese,  
 Pat no-þing helpeþ him of his maladie  
 But rather doth hym greuance & disese ?”

PROSA I, STAN. 5.—1. þe] om. N C R (*inserted later in Bb*): made] om. F. 2. I] om. Dc: couthe] coude D: it] om. T D: grekisshe] grislych T; gregish F. 3. al] om. T F: abouen] aboue H h. 4. had] hadde N h: made] y-made N. 5. And so] Also Rl Ba: þe] pese H. 6. þat] om. Rl Ba F Dc J Ch: mende] ment T H h. 7. men myght] om. T: men] me F: al wey] om. F Dc. 8. þere] þe H; lowe M D; om. F: vpward evire] evere vpward M D: evire om. F. STAN. 6.—1. men] man N. 2. born] boren Rl Ba; bor N. 3. suchel] shuche T. 4. dide] dude Rl Ba Ch: þare] hure Rl Ba; his N; theier R: as was] om. F. 5. gan] can Rl Ba F; om. J. 6. right] om. M D: honde] hond L R Bb. 7. of] in N. 8. In certeyn] om. F. STAN. 7.—1. þis] þese R: sawh] sye T; say H: þere] here N; thre T H D. 2. beddes side] bed T; bed side D: approchen] approached Ba F J Ch; she approchid T; approchyng Dc. 3. Endytyng] Entendynge Rl Ba C F Dc J Ch; etending N: chere] chiere Rl. 4. vpon] on J: hem] me F. 5. haþ] hath ben T H; om. P. 6. hire] hure Rl: song] songys Dc: seeke] seke Rl Ba T; sike N H; syke M h; seek L R Bb. 7. him] om. D: malady] melody T H. 8. rather doth hym greuance] doth hym greuance rather F: and disese] than ese N; or disease Dc.

(45)

8. "Lo þese it ben," sche seide, "þat folkes feden  
 Wiþ swete venym of corrupcioun  
 And tendre hertes maken for to bleden ;  
 Wiþ thornes of þaire f[o]ul[e] affecioun  
 þey sleen þe worþy fruytes of resoun  
 And only bryngen siknesse in vsage ;  
 This is þe kynde of their condiciooun  
 And noght at all þe seknesse to aswage."

(46)

9. 'Yif ȝe,' sche seide, 'wiþ youre daliaunce  
 Had from me drawe sum foole vnpfrofitable  
 Ful lesse it wolde haue done me displesaunce.  
 I myght haue sustened þat as sufferable,  
 For-why in suche a foole þat is vnable,  
 May not be harmed of my besynesse.  
 Bot this þat euer in studie hath stonden stable  
 Schulde noght be founden wiþ ȝoure folynessee.'

(47)

10. But go, ye filthes, out of my presence  
 Youre swetnesse wolde hym bryngen at an ende.  
 I schal hym saue wiþ salue of my science  
 þat schal be more confort vnto hys kynde.'  
 And þus þis companye away gan wende  
 And bitterly abasched of þaire blame,  
 Schewyng in sothe þe Abyt of þaire mynde  
 Hangynge doun to grunde þaire heed for schame.

PROSA I, STAN. 8.—1. it] they N T: folkes] folis T H; foules P.  
 4. þaire] her N: foule N T F Dc P] full *other MSS.* of þaire foule] full of  
 her M D: affecioun] effecioun Rl Ba Ch. 6. bryngen] bryngynge N:  
 into] in F J. 7. theire] hure Rl Ba; her N. 8. þe] om. M D F.  
 STAN. 9.—2. from me drawel] drawn fro me P: foole foly Dc; foile J.  
 3. Hit had to me be lesse displesaunce F. 4. haue] a T D Dc: sustened]  
 boren P: þat] om. Dc: as] is N. 5. For-why] For wiþ h: in] om. Rl Ba  
 N C F Dc Ch (*inserted later in Bb*); and R: foole] foule P: vnable] on  
 abyalle Dc. 7. this] thise L; these h: euer in studie] in study euere Dc:  
 hath stonden] haue stond T H; hath ben P. 8. founded] foundid M  
 Dc; founded D: ȝoure] oure T: folynessee] folesnesse. STAN. 10.—1. go]  
 goeth T H. 2. hym bryngen at] brynge hym to N; bryng hym at T.  
 4. confort] comfort Rl Ba. 5. þis] þat Rl N J; þus Bb (*inserted later*);  
 om. C: wende] wynde M. 6. and] om. F: bitterly] sikrely M D; vttirly  
 Dc. 7. þaire] þe T H. 8. Hangynge] Hauynge Rl Ba; Henge F: doun]  
 adown H: doun to grunde þaire heed] adoune the heed to þe ground T;  
 doun here heede to grunde M D: heed] heddes P.

(48)

11. I than þat neigh for teres sawh right nowȝt,  
 Merveiled mych what myght þat womman be.  
 I wondred also gretly in my þoght,  
 þat so imperial of a[u]ctorite,  
 Sche made þat meigne smertly for to fle.  
 I was abasched<sup>d</sup> and heng<sup>i</sup> myn hede to grounde.  
 What sche wolde done or aftir seie to me,  
 þat I abood & held me still, astounde.

(49)

12. Vnto my bed þan gan sche me neghe nere  
 And on þe corner doun here-self sche sette,  
 And sadly gan by-holde vpon my chere  
 þat so was wiþ teres al be-wette ;  
 And right þus sche began wiþoute lette  
 Compleynyng<sup>j</sup> on my perturbacioun ;  
 For cause of mescheef<sup>k</sup> wherwith I was mette,  
 Of me sche made þis lamentacioun :

(50)

METRUM ij<sup>m</sup>

heu quam precipiti.

1. 'Allas !' sche seyde, 'how þat þis mannys mynde  
 Is casten doun now in-to depe derknesse,  
 For-let þe clerenesse of his propur kynde,  
 Myntyng for to goo to strange derknesse,

PROSA I, STAN. 11.—1. I than þat Then I þat Rl Ba F Dc J Ch ; I  
 beyng M D : þat] om. N : neigh for teres sawh] for teres nyȝ sawe F.  
 2. Merveiled] Mervelyng Dc ; Gan wonder P: mych] om. F: þat] þis Ba  
 C M D h F J: what myght þat woman be] what woman myght þis be Dc.  
 3. I wondred] Merveilynge P: also] (*inserted later R*). 4. auctorite] auctorite L R. 5. meigne] mayny T; maney P: smertly] so smertly M D.  
 6. heng] hanged N ; hyng<sup>i</sup> D ; caste F. 7. done or aftir seie] after dou  
 or sey H ; done after or sey T: after] om. F. 8. þan I a hood] That they a  
 bode T H : abood] bode F: held] I helde h. [l. 2 of T om.] STAN. 12.—  
 1. Vnto] But to P: my bed] me MD : gan] can Rl Ba Ch : me] om. Rl Ba  
 N T D : me neghe] nygh me Dc : þan gan sche me neghe nere] þen wende  
 she nere F. 2. doun] pere doun F: hire self] om. F. 3. gan] can Rl J Ch ;  
 began F. 4. wiþ] all wiþ M D ; then wiþ P: þat soore with terys wepyng  
 was be wepte T: þat so with terys wepyng was be wette H : al be wette] al  
 be wepte h; al y wette F; bewette M D. 5. sche] om. Ba T F Dc.  
 6. on] vpon M. 7. For cause of mescheef wherwith] Because wiþ mischefe  
 þat F: For cause] Because P. METRUM II, STAN. 1.—Precipiti] precipisti  
 L. 2. Is casten] I castyn Dc : now] om. F: depe] þe depe F. 3. For-let]  
 Forleting F. 4. Myntyng] Mutynge T; menyng M D; and mentynge P:  
 for] om. T M : strange] strong H : to strange derknesse] om. Dc.

Als ofte-tyme as noyous besynesse  
 Wiþouten mesure begynneþ to en[c]resse,  
 When worldly wynþ wiþ meschief *and* distresse  
 Haþ hym byraft al out of merthe *and* pesse.

(51)

2. This is þe man þat whilom was so free  
 To whom be craft was gifen for to kunne,  
 Vp in-to heuenes to be-holde *and* see,  
 And to mesure þe mevyng of þe sonne ;  
 By wyt also þat konnyng had he wonne  
 How þat þe mone chaungeþ for to preue ;  
*And* what recorse þe sterres haueþ i ronne  
 And in þaire speres how diuersly þei meue,

(52)

3. As victour haþ he subtelty conquered,  
 And all þis craft þat noumber comprehendip ;  
 Fro whennes eke þese wyndys ben arerid  
 The smothe see þat turneþ so *and* wendip ;  
 And why þe sterre þat is in þe est ascendeth  
 Eft in þe west a-downe aȝeyn to lowte ;  
 And what spirit so besily entendith  
 þe rounde world to wenden all aboute ;

(53)

4. And what attempreþ so þe lusty oures  
 Of þilke faire firste somer sesoun,

METRUM II, STAN. 1.—5. Als] Allas h : Als ofte tyme] And oft tymes J: as] om. N : noyous] noycous H ; noyes F. 6. encresse Rl Ba C R Bb (-c- *written over erased letter*) F J Ch] encrees N ; encrece M h ; entret H ; entreeete D ; entir T ; endresse L. 7. worldly] wordly T H. 8. berafft] beraught H : al] om. Rl Ba T F Ch (*inserted later* Bb) : merthe] myste T ; reste P : pesse] mete D. STAN. 2.—1. This] Thus H : whilom] some tyme D P. 2. gifen] y yeue F. 3. into] in pe Ba ; into pe T. 4. mevyng] mevynges T. 5. By] But Rl Ba N ; wiþ H : þat] om. Rl Ba F Ch ; in Dc : he] bee D : had he wonne] he had y wonne F. 6. þat] om. F: preue] prymen P. 7. What] pe Rl Ba F ; (*inserted later* Bb) ; om.] N C Dc : recourse] recourse R (-u- *inserted later*) : þe] of þe F: haueþ] hath Rl Ba N F ; hawe H ; (hath altered to haueþ Bb) ; i ronne] i wonn D ; ronne P. 8. in] om. Rl Ba C R F Bb (*inserted later*). [ll. 3-8 om. J.] STAN. 3.—1. haþ he] he haþ F ; haþ N. 2. þis craft þat noumber] þe crafts of noumbe F: þe craft by nomber al he comprehendeth P. 3. whennes eke] whens also T h ; whens eke where M D ; hennys eke F: þese] þe T F. 4. þat] he T : so] om. N T: wendith] wyndeth D. 5. why] om. Rl F ; wiþ Dc: is] om. H F: in þe] om. M: why esperus at euen so ascendeth P. 6. in] pe] in too D ; adowne] down. 7. what] with T. 8. to wenden] to compas T ; that wyndeth D ; to wyne Dc: all] om. Dc. [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 4.—1. oures] hours Rl Ba H h Ch ; showers T. 2. þilke] þat ilke D: first] furste Rl Ba ; om. N.

Arayeng<sup>i</sup> it wiþ rede rose floures  
 þe wiche in wynter skarse ben [and] [g]esoun ;  
 Alle þise lo kouþe he schewe be verray resoun,  
 In fulle yeres who is þat vs fedeth  
 Wiþ grete grapes þat þe peple plesoun  
 And oþer fruytes þat vs all[e] nedeth.

(54)

5. Wont he was also to seke & knawe  
 þe priue causes for to telle of kynde.  
 Allas witles now lith þis man full lawe  
 Vnder full heuy bondes þat hym bynde,  
 And now can he none oþer comfort fynde,  
 But heuely his chere he haþ dounfolde ;  
 So is he all desmayed in hys mynde  
 þat nedes wrecched erth he † must be-holde.'

(55)

[PROSA ij<sup>a</sup>]

Set medicine.

1. 'But now of medecyne,' quod sche, 'haue we nede,  
 For in compleyntyng lyth no remedie ;  
 Vnto þat purpos let oure werkes spedē.'  
 Sche sette hire eyen on me ententyfly :  
 'Art þow noght he,' sche seide, 'wiche þat I  
 Haue fed wiþ melk while þow were ȝonge of aage,

METRUM II, STAN. 4.—3. Arayeng] Araye D ; Arraied h : it] om. N.  
 4. þe wiche] þat M : in (1)] in þe T : and gesoun T R M D h Bb (<sup>in other hand</sup>) F] in sesoun L ; and chesoun Rl Ba C Dc Ch ; a gesoun H ; and the chesoun N : Of þe wiche in wynter ben very fewe or none P. 5. Alle] And alle P : þese] þus H : lo] so h ; om. F : schewe] shewed Ba Ch. 6. ful] fewe N T H : who] shee D ; whoso F. 7. Wip] And wiþ F : grete] om. M D : plesoun] dothe so plesen M D. 8. vs] we M ; them P : alle] all L. [Stan. om. J fol. om.] STAN. 5.—1. Wont] Wonede H F ; I wonte P : to] for to M D : seke] seche F : and] om. N ; and to Dc Ch P. 2. þe] And Ch : priue] prime h : causes] cause N : for] om. F. 3. lith] lyeth Rl Ba H. 4. full] om. F : bynde] byndeth T H. 5. now] no R. 6. he] om. Dc : hath] doth : doun] done C ; adown Dc. 7. all] om. h Dc : dismayed] dismaydis T ; dismayed h : all dismayed] dismayed all F. 8. wrecched] þe wrecched M : erth] om. T H : he] hym Rl Ba N C ; hem L R Bb : he must] must he M D ; moste hym F Dc ; he mot P. [Stan. om. J.] PROSA II, STAN. 1.—1. medecyne quod sche haue we nede] medisyne she hath conceyvid T : we] I M D.2. compleyntyng] compleinte N ; my compleynt M D : lyth] he hath D C. 3. werkes] mater T. 4. Schel] þat N : sette hire eyen on me ententyfly] sett hyer on me ententyfly ; sette on me her eye ful tendrely M ; sette on me her eye ful tentifly D : eyen] ye Rl : eye Ba N ; eigh R Bb ; ey F ; yee P ; om. H. 5. Art þow] Artou F : noght] om. T : þow noght] not pou H : he] om. Rl Ba F Ch : sche seide] saide she M D. 6. Haue] om. F : while þow were ȝonge of aage] in þi yonge age F.

And sijpe wiþ strenger metes tenderly  
Til ȝow were woxe a man of strong corage ?

(56)

2. And sith I yaf þe armour good *and* stronge  
Wiche, bot þou þi-self had cast fro the,  
Thow schuldest haue be disesed wiþ no wronge  
But haue ben sure fro all aduersitee.  
Why art þou stille,' sche seide, ' knowest þou noght me ?  
Is it for schame, [o]r þou art astonyed sore ?  
The ne schamest noght, trow I, because of me ;  
Thow art astonyed þerof drede I more.'

(57)

3. " And whan sche sawe me sitten doumbe † *and* stille  
Sche sette hire hond ful softe vpon my breste :  
' As here,' sche seide, ' no perill is of ille ;  
This man is wiþ a litargie arest,  
A comyn syknesse þat men haþ oppressid  
Wiche out of mynde hauen hem-self forlete ;  
Full esely þis evil schal be redressed.  
A litel what he haþ hym-self forȝete,

(58)

4. He schal remembre wel and esily  
Yif Y may ferst me make hym for to knowe.

PROSA II, STAN. 1.—7. wiþ] om. N: strenger metes] metis strenger.  
8. ȝow] pou Rl Ba N T F; were woxe] wexe F; were waxen P: strong] grete T H; strenger Dc. [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 2.—1. yaf] gave D  
(haue at first; altered by other hand): armour] armes F. 2. bot þou] withoute T; yf þou H; but yf þou P: þi self] om. P: had] haue M D: cast] caste awey P. 3. schuldest] myghtest P: haue] a D Dc: be] om. T H. 5. art þou] artou F: sche seide] om. T. 6. or] er L Rl Ba M R h Bb J Ch: þou art] arte þou T M D F: astonyed] stoneyed Rl Ba T H; stoned N Dc. 7. The ne] Thow D F; ne] om. Rl Ba Dc Ch; noght] om. T; now Dc: trow I] I trou P: because] for be cawse T. 8. perof] om. T H; of þat me P: drede I] dredeth me M; dredeth I me D. [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 3.—1. me] om. Rl Ba Ch: doumbe] downe T Dc: doumbe] doumbe be L. 2. hire hond ful softe] full softe hire hond R; myn hond softe F; hire hond Dc: softe] ofte Rl Ba Ch; stille N: vpon] on T. 4. This man] This man she saide T: a] om. Ch. 6. Wiche out] Withoute N M D: of] om. M D: hauen] hape Ba; hath M; haue N: hauen hem self] hath thyself T; haueth theyself H; hath hymself D F Dc. 7. þat shall hym nowe penke I no (more M) molesto M D. 8. haþ] hat N: But smertly for hym socoure shall I gete M D. [l. 6 repeated in D to make l. 9. ll. 7, 8 om. at first and inserted later at bottom of leaf in same handwriting in both R, Bb.] [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 4—1. He] We T. 2. me] om. M D: ferst me] me fyrist H: Yif I may make hym me firste knowe F: If I make hym fyrist me to knowe Dc.

I schal his eighen wipen tenderly  
 Of clowdes derk þat haueþ hem ouergrowe,  
 And þan he schal amenden as I trowe.'  
 A plyt sche lapped on hire garnement;  
 Myn eighen þat wiþ wepyng were beflowe  
 Sche dried till all þe derknesse were iwent.

(59)

METRUM iij<sup>m</sup>

Tunc me di[s]euiss[a].

1. And when þis cloude was clensid fro myn eye  
 I was anon restored to my sight ;  
 Right as when cloudes clippynge in þe skye  
 The sonne is let to lem adoun hys light,  
 And reyne cloudes maken a maner nyght,  
 But when a north wynd chaseth hem away  
 þe sonne begynneth to schewe his bemes bright  
 And as it were bringeþ aȝen þe day.

(60)

[PROSA iiij<sup>a</sup>]

haud aliter tristicie.

1. Ryght euen so *and* in non other wise  
 This drerynesse out of myn herte gan reche.  
 I loked vp and [gan] me bet avise  
 If I myght knowe þe visage of my leche.

PROSA II, STAN. 4.—3. eighen] eyn Rl; yen Ba H D; eyen N T R h ;  
 yeen P: wipen] open Rl Ba F Ch. 4. haueþ] haþ M: hem] hym H Dc :  
 ouergrowe] vndyrgrowe Dc. 5. amenden] a mend T H: as] in as N; beu  
 M D. 6. sche] þan she M: on] of Rl Ba N C R Ch: garnement] garment  
 T; garlement R. 7. eighen] eyen Rl Ba N h; yhen H: eighen þat wiþ  
 wepyng were beflowe] eyen that were be were with wepyng beflowe T;  
 eighen with wepyng þat were flowe M; yeen þen þat teres had beflowe P.  
 8. dried] wyped P: all] om. T: þe] om. F: were] was N T P: i-went] went  
 M D F; all spent P. [Stan. om. J.] METRUM III, discussa] discusso L.  
 STAN. 1.—1. þis] þe M D: þis cloude was clensid] thise cloudeȝ were put.  
 3. when] om. Dc: clippynge] clippen Rl Ba N Ch; beclippen F Dc;  
 clippeth P: in] om. Rl Ba F Dc Ch. 4. lem] len D: lem adoun] leme  
 doun T. 5. reyne] reyny T H; reyne cloudes] reynblowdys Dc.  
 6. chaseth] causeth Rl Ba N C F Dc Ch; dryveth D; closeth R; Bb has  
 causeth altered to chaseth by later hand. 7. begynneth to schewe] will  
 shew then P. 8. bringeþ] bryngynge N. [Stan. om. J.] PROSA III,  
 STAN. 1.—1. Ryght] But P: even so] evynne Dc: in] om. Rl Ba F Dc:  
 non other] no nōpere Ba Ch. 2. drerynesse] derkenesse T; om. F: myn  
 herte] mynde T H: gan] can F. 3. loked] loked me Rl Ba F: gan] om.  
 L h Dc J Ch P; and can F: me bet] better T F D Ch; bett H.

Pan k[n]ewe I wel be visage and by speche  
 Myn owne gentil norys philosophie  
 þat me was wont to wissen *and* to teche  
 And fro my ȝouth had me in compayne.

(61)

2. "Owh," quod I, "my worshipful maistresse  
 Of alle vertues and of honeste,  
 What doo ȝe here now in þis wildernesse  
 Come þus adoun out of þat souereyn see  
 Into þis exile? Wheþir be-cause of me  
 As gilty made also of my trespace?  
 Hit ne besemeþ nouth youre souereynte  
 For to be seen in þis vnworþy place."

(62)

3. 'Owh, nory,' quod sche, 'schulde I the forsake  
 Sith þou for me art falsly put in blame,  
 And noght þe charge also vpon me take  
 þe wiche þow berest for envye of my name?  
 To philosophie it were repreue *and* schame  
 To leue an innocent in suche vpbraide;  
 And now at arst redoute me of þat game  
 Pat is not newe to me ne vnassaid.

PROSA III, STAN. 1.—5. knewel kewe L: be] the h: by] om. T. 6.  
 norys] noresh F; norysche P: philosophie] fylosofy T; of philosophye M D.  
 7. wont] went D; woned F: wissen] wysshen Rl Ba Ch; wyse T H; viset  
 P: to (2)] om. T F: teche] toche Bb. [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 2.—1. Owh]  
 O where Rl Ba F Dc Ch (O where altered to Owh by later hand Bb);  
 ougħ N; ough H; O T; How M D; O why h; Oo P. 2. Of] Moder  
 of F: all] alle Rl h: of (2) om. R F Ch. 3. ȝe] I T H: here now] here  
 F; om. P. 4. þus] ye T; ye þus H; þis F: out] om. D F; þat] þis  
 T; ȝour F: souereyn] suffereyn C. 5. exile] yle F. 6. made] y  
 made F. 7. ne] om. Rl D F Dc Ch: nouth] not Rl Ba H M D F Ch;  
 nouȝt N C h; natt T; noȝt R: souereynte] Bb has suffereynte first, but  
 altered to souereynte. 8. For] om. F: seen] sene Rl Ba; seyn H. [Stan.  
 om. J.] STAN. 3.—1. Owh] O where Rl Ba Dc Ch; Owhere altered to  
 Owh by late hand Bb; ough H; O N T D; ogh M: nory] nurry N: owh  
 nory] O wherfore F. 2. pou for me art] þou art for me h: falsly] om. T;  
 art falsly] falsi art F. 3. þe] pi F: þe charge also] also þe charge N H:  
 noȝt þe charge also vpon me take] natt on me also the charge to take T:  
 vpon] on F. 4. þe wiche] þat F. 5. repreue] repent T. 6. suchel  
 suchel an M D: vpbraide] a braide T; a breyd H: in suche vpbraide] so thus  
 a rayed P. 7. arst] ardyst H; laste P: redoute] redewce Dc: þat] my  
 D: game] grame M D. 8. not] now h: not newe to me] nouȝt to newe  
 N. [ll. 7, 8 om. T. Stan. om. J.]

(63)

4. Trowest þou þat I be now at erst assayled  
 Of wicked folk wiþ peril *and* damage?  
 How haue I be tormented *and* trauayled  
 With fool-hardynesse *and* foule outrage  
 Beforne Plato in tyme of elder age?  
 And while þat Plato lyued presently  
 Lo Socrates was slain *and* had to wage  
 In my presence a crowne of victory.

(64)

5. The epicurus *and* þe stoycienus  
 his heritage of his opinioum  
 Þai cauȝten to them as for verrey menus  
 To wilfulnes, eueriche a porcioun,  
 And mo of wiche I make no mencioun,  
 Peym self enforced wiþ þaire subtilite  
 And drew his wordes to þaire entencioun  
 Of þeire opinatiue felicite.

(65)

6. This same folk in partie of þaire pray  
 This cloth þei caught þat I my-self had weven,  
 And þogh þat I wiþstood *and* seide nay  
 To rende *and* kyt it wolde þei not bileuen.

PROSA III, STAN. 4.—1. Trowest þou] Trowestou N F: be now at]  
 haue ben not P: at erst] at arst Rl Ba; at ardyst H; at the hardest T;  
 firste F: at erst assayled] þe herdest a sayed T. 2. and] of T: damage]  
 damade N. 3. be tormented & trauayled] turnyd be craft & travayle  
 Dc. 4. fool] foul N; foli T H; foole h; fooul Dc; ful P. 5. Beforne]  
 Byforen Rl Ba. 6. lyued] lewyd H. 7. Lo] Lo so H: Socrates]  
 socrates T: to] no h. 8. crowne] coroune N. [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 5.  
 —1. epicurus] epicuriens N; epicuryous T; epycurys H; epicures M F;  
 epicours D: stoycienus] stoycions Rl Ba Ch; stoycienes N; stoycous T;  
 stoycious H; stoicens M; stociens D; stocienus h; stocynes F; stoicenes  
 P. 2. his (2) ther P. 3. cauȝten] causen Rl Ba N C F De Ch (causen  
*altered to cauȝten by later hand Bb*); cawte T: to] vnto T; om. R: for] for  
 a Dc: menus] menes N M F P; menys H. 4. eueriche] muche Rl Ba F  
 Ch; euÿ M D; in echē Dc: a porcioun] approchyn T; porcioun D. 5.  
 mo] me M D: wiche] om. T H. 6. Peym] Thy T: peym self enforced]  
 Haueth enforced them P: þaire] om. P: subtilite] subtilte Rl Ba; sotilltie  
 T; sotilte H; solicite F; subtile Ch. 7. And drew] Drawenge P: drew]  
 drew Rl Ba C; drowen F: drew his] broughte hygh T; brought her H;  
 þaire] her N H. 8. þeire] her N H: opinatiue] opinature N. [Stan. om. J.]  
 STAN. 6.—1. This] These F; partie] part T; parte H: þaire] her N H. 2.  
 This cloth þei caught] Caught thys clothe P: caught] caute T; chauht H: I]  
 om. P: had] haue M: weven] wovyn T; woenen H; woven M D. 3. pogh]  
 pougħt Rl Ba; tauht H: þat] om. h F: wiþstood] rebelled P. 4. rende]  
 rent Rl Ba Ch; rente N: To rende & kyt it] To rente thys cloth P: bileuen]  
 bleuen N; levyn T; it wolde þei not bileuen] yet wold not they levyn F.

And wiþ þo cloutes þat þei had me by-reuen  
 Thei went þaire way *and* wend all had ben wele.  
 As foles right þai dode h[e]m-selfe deceyuen  
 And wend I had go wiþ hem euery-dele;

(66)

7. And so for cause þat þei þise pecys beere  
 Lo sum supposed, as fooles utterlye,  
 þat þise had ben wiþ me famuliere  
 And in myn houshold ben abiddynghye,  
 And so þorw errours of þis companye  
 Many a foole is [foule] out of þe weye.  
 By hem þ[ey] ben peruerterd parelouslye  
 And wene þat all be wisdom þat þei seie.

(67)

8. Hast þou not herd of Anaxagoras  
 þat was exiled lo be-cause of me ;  
 Of Socrates þat eke empoysoned was ;  
 How Zeno was torment with cruelte ?  
 And þogh þat þis bestrange þing to þe,  
 Yit Canio and Senek, as I trowe,  
 And Soran also in þy mynde be,  
 For þis is late þyng and wel i-knowe.

PROSA III, STAN. 6.—5. þo] þe Rl Ba N Ch; om. F: me] om. T H.  
 6. went] wend T F Dc; þire] her N H; wend] wend þat Ch; though P.  
 7. As] And as T: dode] dode Rl Ba Ch; dide NH; dyd C; dede H R Bb F;  
 did M: As foles right þai dode] And folysly they did P: hemself] hymself L R.  
 8. wend] wende þat T; wonde D: I] hit F: go] y go F: euery] yeueri F.  
 [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 7.—1. for cause] bicause F: þat] om. T: þis] þees  
 Rl; pese Ba; her N. 2. supposed] supposeth F; men trowed P: as] om.  
 H: utterlye] witterly Rl Ba Ch. 3. þise] they T H P. 4. ben] a bene  
 T D; y be F. 5. þorw] purgh R Bb; errours] errourres Rl Ba N Ch;  
 errour T P. 6. Many] Ful many P: is foule H T] is other MSS. 7.  
 By] And by P: hem] than T: pey Rl Ba C T H R Dc Ch] om. P: þat other  
 MSS.: peruerterd] conuerted M D. 8. þat] (1) om. D F: be] om. F. [Stan.  
 om. J.] STAN. 8.—1. Hast þou] Hastou N: not] om. R: herd] herd telle  
 Rl Ba Ch; herd telle me Dc: Hast þou not herd] Herdestou not telle F:  
 Anaxagoras] Anoxagoras N; Avaxagoras T. 2. was] om. D: lo] om. N F:  
 because] for cause T. 3. Zeno] Seno T P; Ze M; he F; torment]  
 tormented N H h F; coryed T: with] by P. 5. þogh] þoght H R Ch:  
 þat] om. F: And Soran also let in þy mynde be M D. 6. Yit] ȝut Rl Ba:  
 Canoe] Cano T; kanio Dc: Senek] Senekke T; Senec H; Senek P: iffor þis  
 is late þyng (late thus D) & wele y knowe M D. 7. Soran] Soram Rl Ba  
 Ch; Sorane H P: How Canoe & Senek as I telle pe M D. 8. þogh this be  
 straunge to thee I trowe M D. [Stan. om. J.]

(68)

9. Noght elles thise broght in-to distresse  
 Bot for þey were enformed in my lore,  
 Bot al vnlike, as in þaire besynesse,  
 To wicked folk þat hated hem þefore.  
 It is nobyng þat is to wonder sore,  
 Though we be steryd wiþ stormes of dysese,  
 Sith þat oure purpose haþ ben euirmore  
 To wicked folkes willes to dispiese.

(69)

10. And þowȝ þaire oost be huge in habundance  
 Yit nought-forthy, it is to be repreued  
 For-why þey be with-oute gouernance,  
 And noght bot flood of errour haþ hem meved.  
 And if þat þay be errour thus contreued  
 Arayse an ost wiþ strengþe and vs assetteth,  
 Oure gouern[ou]r be them may noght be greued,  
 His tresour all in-to his toure he settith.

(70)

11. Thise fooles traueil þan ententyfly  
 On veyn[e] þinges þat may þeym not availe ;  
 And we þat sitten in þis toure on hye,  
 All sure i-nogh fro hem þat vs assayle,

PROSA III, STAN. 9.—1. elles] þell H: ell h: into] in N. 2. were]  
 om. H: enformed] lerned P. 3. But] And T H: vnlike] enlykely T.  
 4. hated] hateth H. 5. sore] fore R: þat is to wonder sore] to withstande  
 more N; to wonder sore F; þat þou shulde wonder sore P. 6. we] he  
 N: we be] were T: of] and Ba F Ch: Sith þat youre purpos hatthe be  
 ever sett D. 7. Sith þat] Soþen F: oure] youre M: euirmore] ouercome  
 Rl Ba Ch; yore F: To wicked folkes willes to dispiese D. 8. To] These  
 P: willes] will us H; for P: To wicked folke that vs despice & dispiese T:  
 Yett bee proses siche men maye doo thee bett D. [l. 5 om. T H. Stan.  
 om. J.] STAN. 10.—1. þowȝ] ȝif N (ȝif changed by later hand to pow  
 Bb); þof C: þaire oost] her heste N; therof P: huge in] hugy P: Thowgh  
 þey be hungry & habundance T: þow þat þay ofte be huge & habundance  
 H. 2. nought] om. T H: nought forthy] neuertheles P: to be repreued]  
 not to be preued D. 3. be] om. M D. 4. meved] y meuyd F. 5.  
 þat] om. Ch P: be errour thus] be thus by errour T; be by errour thus H;  
 by this errour thus P. 6. Arayse an ost] Aryse and ofte H; Too reyse an  
 oost D: wiþ strengþe and vs assetteth] with vs to be assesseyd T: assetteth]  
 assetteth H, bisetteth D. 7. gouerner] gouernour Rl Ba N H M h: be  
 them may noght be greued] by thys is noght a greued P. 8. settith]  
 fecchith T H. [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 11.—1. fooles traueil þan] folis  
 them trowelyn T; folis traualyn than H; þan] þeym. 2. veyn] vayne  
 T M F: may þeym not] may not theyme T H F. 3. pis] þe T. 4. I  
 nogh] y nowe Rl Ba; ynough N; I now T; ynought H; ynoght h; om.  
 F: fro] for T H.

In suche a paleys strong<sup>i</sup> of apparaile  
 Where þat þese fooles may not vp attayne ;  
 We skornen hem *and* all hire wast trauayle ;  
 Paire besynesse is euerydel in vayne.

(71)

[METRUM iiijm<sup>m</sup>]

Quis composito.

1. For he þat stondeth clere *and* ordinate  
 And proud[e] happes suffrep vnderslide,  
 In alle fortunes he stondeth streyt algate,  
 In wele *and* wo kan euenliche abide.  
 Pe wood[e] see þat floweþ to euery side  
 Hym drediþ noþing<sup>i</sup> of his cruelte,  
 Bot what desese þat be to hym betyde  
 Hym greuyth noght but stondeþ in oo † degre.

(72)

2. That foule fuyre þat out of helle rekyth  
 In þe mounteyne þat clepid is V[e]sene,  
 Ne thondere leight þat hi[he] toures brekeþ  
 He ne drediþ noght, what is it þat ȝe mene.  
 Why drede ȝe þan, wrecches þat ȝe bene,  
 Fiers tyrantes þat ben wiþ-oute might ?

PROSA III, STAN. 11.—5. paleys] palice H ; place F : of apparaile] vpon  
 an yle Rl Ba F Ch: Which is a place of stronge apparell T. 6. þese]  
 om. N : may] mow H. 7. and] of Rl Ba N C T F: hire] om. Rl Ba F  
 Ch: wast] gret N : best M ; ofte D: trauayle] travell T. 8. euerydel]  
 euerē ydell M ; euer Idill D. [Stan. om. J.] METRUM IV, STAN. 1.—  
 1. For] om. P: þat] om. J. 2. proude] proud L R Bb. 3. fortunes]  
 vertues D; fortune F: he] om. D: he stondeth] standyng P: streyt]  
 sure h. 4. evenliche] avynly T. 5. wood] wood L R Bb: wood  
 see] wordes J: þat L N T H M D P] yea C; ye h Bb; it Dc; om. R F:  
 ȝa Rl Ba J Ch: to] on M D. 7. be] so T; may P: to] om. R: þat be  
 to hym] þat hym so M; so that hym D; þat hym Bb: Sterying vp so  
 doune wawes in pe tyde F. 8. greuyth] grewyth H: noght[ nothing F:  
 oo Rl Ba N C H F Dc J Ch] on T; one P; his L R Bb h M D. [1. 7 om.  
 Rl Ba N C Dc J Ch. Inserted later in marg. in Bb by other hand.] STAN.  
 2.—1. That] The D P: fuyre] furie N ; furye h ; rekyth] recheth Rl Ba J  
 Ch. 2. cleped is] is callyd T D: Vlsene L] Veseyn] Rl Ba J Ch; Vesene  
 N C R M D Bb Dc P; Veason T; resene H; Veseine F. 3. Ne] pe Rl Ba  
 D F Dc; No H: leight] light Ba H M Ch; leite N; lyght R h J; lyth Dc:  
 thondere leight] thunders light T: highe T H] hi R; hy D; his *all other*  
*MSS.* 4. He] om. M D: ne] om. N R F: drediþ] tredeþ H: it] þat M;  
 om. D Dc: þat] om. N: ȝe] I T H Dc: mene] menyne J. 5. þan] now T:  
 þat ȝe] the T; as ye M D. 6. Fiers] fferse Rl; Fierse Ba N ; Fyrce T H:  
 Fiers tyrantȝ] Tyrantes fyers P.

Putteth false hope out of youre hertes clene  
And fleischly drede putteþ fro youre sight.

(73)

3. For if þou noȝting of a man desire,  
Ne what he may þe doo þow hast no drede,  
Thow schalt dis[a]r[m]e þe wrecchid mannys ire  
And in no wise he may þe noght mysbede.  
Who so hopeth oȝt or dredeþ ouer-nede  
He casteth awey hys scheld *and* his constable,  
And knytteth a cheyne wiþ wiche he may hym lede  
Where þat [h]ym lust, to hym vaprofitable.

(74)

[PROSA iiij<sup>a</sup>]

1. ‘Felis þow noght wher my word be soft or sharpe,’  
Quod sche, ‘ wiþ-ynne thyne herte ententyfly,  
Or art þow lyk an asse to þe harpe  
þat is noght meued wiþ no melody ?  
If þou coueitest help or remedy  
þat must[en] þe woundes þat þe greuen,  
Be than aknowen to me openly  
And hyd it noght *and* I the wil releuen.’

(75)

2. I drow to me þe myght of my corage.  
“Yee been,” quod I, “þat brought me in estate ;

METRUM IV, STAN. 2.—7. Putteth] Put P: false hope] *om.* T H: out of] from T H F. 8. fleischly] feyfully Rl Ba C Dc J Ch (Bb feithfully altered to fleischly by later hand); feithful N; fleich R. [l. 5 *om.* N.] STAN. 3.—1. man] mannys T: noȝting of a man] of a man no thyng h F. 2. þe] *om.* Rl Ba C T F Dc: pow hast] have pou T. 3. disarme T H R M D (deseruen altered by later hand to disarme Bb)] deseruen all other MSS. and P: þe] thy T H. 4. noght] *om.* Th F: mysbede] mylydd T; myskede H. 5. Who so] Who so euer T: hopeth] heþeth J: ouer] out of P. 6. & his constable] & is vnstable T P; & his vnstable H. 7. knytteth] kit D: a cheyne] *om.* D: wiþ wiþ þe Rl Ba T H F J Ch: hym lede] he led T: wiþ wiche he may hym lede] hemselfen with to lede P. 8. hym (1) H M] he D; peym other MSS.: hym] *om.* D: Wher he lysteth vnto hym vaprofitable T. PROSA IV, STAN. 1.—1. Felis þow] ffelestow F: noght] *om.* T: wher] whether N T H. 2. ententyfly] intentissedly T. 3. to] vnto M D: þe] a T. 4. noght] nouȝt N: That is merry with melodye T H. 6. þat (1)] Thou N H h P: musten heele C] must heele D; must vnhelie all other MSS.: þe] thy N: wonderes] woundes Rl R T. 7. aknowen] a know H: aknowen to me] a know & shew me P. 8. hyd] hyde Rl Ba N R: wil] wol Rl Ba h Dc Ch; wole N: the wil] will the T M D; wol the F. [l. 7 *om.* T.] STAN. 2.—1. drowe] trowe D: myght] myrthe T H: my] thi M D. 2. estate] a state T; astate H h: in estate] to myn estate F.

Nedeth it now to telle yow my damage  
 þat hath me had in ȝoure presence algate ?  
 Ye woot in what degree I stood but late ;  
 Ne meueth nou[ght] ȝow þe maner of þis place ?  
 Is þis þe librarie where ȝe wiþ me sate  
 When ȝe were all my ioye *and* my solace,

(76)

3. Devine thinges disputynge þere wiþ me,  
 And oþere science[s] þat ful lusty were,  
 When þat with ȝow I stood in þis degree ?  
 Was þan þis þe [h]abit of my cheere  
 When I of ȝow was woned to seek *and* lere  
 þe pruye poyntes longyng to nature ?  
 How þat þe sterres meved fer or nere  
 Discryvyng it be noumbres in figure ;

(77)

4. Formyng in me þe maner of my lyf  
 Lykly vnto þe heuenly gouernaunce,  
 Techyng me to be contemplatyf ;  
 I yelde yow thank wiþ lowly obysaunce.  
 This was a sentence of ȝoure ordinaunce  
 Wiche Plato wrot if I it vndirstonde :

PROSA IV, STAN. 2.—3. to all J: yow my] me ȝoure Bb (*but altered by later hand to you my*) ; me F. 4. hath] haueth H: me had] me holde Rl Ba N C J Dc Ch (Bb had me holde first, but altered by later hand to me had) ; me lad R; be lorde M D: hath me had] hadde me F: presence] plesaunce Rl (*but marked for erasure and presence in marg. in other hand*). 5. but] riȝt F. 6. Ne] om. D: nought] nou L: nought yow] ye nat T: ye nought H; yow nought P. 8. When] Wher T: all] om. Dc. STAN. 3.—1. Devine] Many T H: Devine thinges] Deven sciens h: disputynge þere there disputyng H F; disputynge ye J: wiþ] om. F: me] þe P. 2. science] sciences T H P; sciens h; pinges F: ful lusty] worthy T. 3. ȝow] om. N: with ȝow I stood] I stode with you T H P. 4. Was þan þis] What þis is F: abit] lyknes M D: þe abit of my] myne habyte & my P. 5. of] with P: woned] wond Rl; wonte D; wont: of ȝow was woned] was wonyd of you T. 6. þe] Ful P: longyng] longen N; belonging J. 7. þat] om. F: meved] mevynge N: or] and N F: And oother thyngys dyuers that were there D. 8. noumbres] noumbré M D: in] and F J: figure] figures P. [l. 7 om. M.] STAN. 4.—1. Formyng] Reformyng T. 2. Lykly] I leke P: vnto] yn H: þe] myn N F Dc; me C Bb (*but altered to be by later hand*); my Ch. 3. Techyng] And techyng P: to] for to T. 4. thank] þang Ba J Ch: lowly] all myn F: obysaunce] obseruaunce Rl Ba J Ch; obeschauunce C. 6. if I it] as I F.

A blissfull þing<sup>i</sup> were comyn gouern[ounce]  
If only wyse men schulde it haue in honde,

(78)

5. O[r] if þat thise þat vsen gouernement  
In wisdom wolde dispende þaire besynesse.  
And Plato also to þe same entent  
hath taght vs þus, þyne owne lore it es :  
To wise men a nedful cause is this  
For to desire estate of souereynte,  
Lest wykked folk þat wolde gouerne amys  
Rescyeue estate *and* harme a comynalte.

(79)

6. For if þat wise men *and* vertuouse  
Schulde þis estate *and* souereynte forsake,  
þan oþere wicked men and viciouse  
Wolde be ful fayne þe same estate to take,  
And suche as þey ben suffreynes wil þei make,  
And wise persones schulde be set at noght.  
Thus schulde wrong<sup>i</sup> *and* wickednesse awake,  
And trewthe *and* vertu be to grounde i-brought.

(80)

7. But þ sewyng<sup>i</sup> þere-for youre auctorite  
I had desire to this entencioun,

PROSA IV, STAN. 4.—7. blissfull] blyssyd T: were] was N: gouernaunce]  
gouernement L: Ful blesful were thatstate of gouernance P. 8. men] om.  
P: schulde] myght P: in] vndy: T; on J: If wyse men shold oneli hafe hit  
vnder honde F. STAN. 5.—1. Or N C T R M D P] O L h; For Rl Ba F  
J Dc Ch: þat (1)] om. F J: thise þat vsen] þey wch haue P: gouernement]  
gouernaunce M. 2. In wisdom wolde dispende] wold vpon wysedom  
spend P: þaire besynesse] om. N. 3. to þe] to þis Rl J; in þis Dc. 4.  
Hath] He hath F: vs] om. M: Hath taght vs þus] Techeth ous thus P:  
þyne] his F: ouna] lordly T: es] is N H R. 5. a] om. N: nedful]  
skyleful P: is this] hit is F. 6. For] om. F: estate] a state T; astate  
H D h: of] and Ba F J Ch: souereynte] souereyngnete Rl Ba J Ch;  
souerainte N; soueraunce H. 7. folk] om. F: amys] o myss C. 8.  
estate] a state T; astat H D h: a] þe Rl C D Dc Bb (þe at first, changed to a by  
later hand); all a T: comynalte] comounalte N; comynte F. STAN. 6.—  
2. Schulde þis estate] Sholde thatstate of P: þis] om. F: estate & souereynte]  
souerynge & estate Rl F; estate & souereyngnate Ba J Ch; a state of suffer-  
aunce T; astate of soueraunce H. 3. oþere] odyd T: wicked] om. N:  
and] þat ben N. 4. ful] om. F: same estate] gre F; same state Ch.  
5. as] om. Rl Dc Ch: suffreynes] souereynes Rl Ba D Ch; suffreyous C;  
souerens T; souereinys H; souereyns M; souerayns h: And like to þeym  
souereines wold þei make F. 6. shulde be set] will þei sette J. 7.  
Thus] And thus M: wrong] om. T H; vyce P: &] om. C T H Dc. 8.  
i-brought] broght D; be brogte F. STAN. 7.—1. But] As P: sewyng  
C H F] suyng N T; schewyng other MSS. 2. desire] desired R.

þat I had lered of þoure benignyte,  
 To put it forth in execucion.  
 Witnesse vpon þoure owne discrecion  
 And god þat þou haþ set in manrys mynde,  
 I couete[d] neuere admynistracioun  
 Bot comune profite was boþe cause *and* ende.

(81)

8. þe hate þat I haue had and heuynesse  
 Of wicked folk *is* open evidence ;  
 In mayntenance of trewþe *and* rightwisnesse  
 Be verray fredom of my conscience,  
 Of mighti men I spared none offence.  
 When Conigast þe peple wolde oppresse,  
 I met hym euer with mighti recistence  
 And often let hym of his wickednesse.

(82)

9. And Trangwyle prouost of þe kynges hous,  
 How often I cast hym doun of his malice ;  
 And many a pore man *and* anguyschous  
 þat were a-sette be cursed couetise  
 Of men þat full of venym were *and* vice,  
 I halp hem ofte out of aduersitee ;  
 For to defende hem oute of suche folies  
 Lo myn estat I putte in iupartie.

(83)

10. Ther was neuer man þat me fro right wipdrowe  
 To wronge, be fauour, be frendschepe, *and* be wage.

**PROSA IV, STAN. 7.—3.** þat I] And T; þat þer J: lered] lerned F. 5. Witnesse] To witnes T; Wyttenesse H h : owne] oon T; om. h. 6. ȝow haþ set] sette ȝow Rl Ba F J Ch; hath sett you T H; hath yowe set D. 7. covetyd T H F P] couete all other MSS.: admynistracioun] mynestracioun. STAN. 8.—Yif þat I haue had any heuynesse Rl Ba N F J Dc Ch: and] in T. 3. mayntenance] mayntenunge F. 5. mighti men] wicked folke P: spared] spare Ch. 6. Conigast] Conjugaste T; comune gest M D: peple] puple N R Bb; porell T; porayl H; porayl P; pope h. 7. wip] wip my J. 8. often] of D; ofte I P. STAN. 9.—1. Trangwyle] trangewile J. 2. often] ofte Rl Ba N T H: doun] om. h. 3. pore] pouer Rl Ba h P. 4. a sette] ouersetie F: be] of N: cursed] false T. 5. of (1) and F: venym] venom Rl Ba C; venom H h: were] om. R: vice] wise T H. 6. halp] helpid T: hem] hym J: ofte] of T; om. F: of] of ther T H: aduersitee] aduersitee; T. 7. oute] om. T F: folies] folye Rl Ba Ch; folice D. 8. estat] astate T H h: iupartie] partye Ba J Ch; ȝuberty T; jeoparte h; jeparde F. STAN. 10.—1. Ther] om. M D: neuer] no P: me fro] froome D: man þat me fro right wipdrowe] man frome ryght þat me drough T. 2. be (2) om. F P: frendschepe] lordshipe N; frenschid Dc: &] or Rl Ba H M F Ch P.

But when I sawe þe contres now and nowe  
 Be put in þraldom *and* in foule seruage,  
 What be tribut *and* what be cariage,  
 And what by raveyn & extorsioun,  
 As sore me greued þe harm of þat damage  
 As theym þat suffred tribulacioun.

(84)

11. And when þe prouince þat highte Campanye  
 Was sore oppressed in a dere ȝere,  
 þat no man muste selle corne *and* bye  
 Til þat þe kyng had solde vp his garnere  
 At suche a prys so greuous *and* so dere  
 þat pore men were harmed *and* anoyed,  
 þan I wiþstood þe kynges officere ;  
 Wityng þe kyng, þat statut I destroyed.

(85)

12. And Paulyn eke a conseillour of Rome  
 Wich pales hondes had oppressed so  
 þat þay his go[o]des falsly hym bynome,  
 I rescued hym wher þat þey wolde or no.  
 Albyn þat was conseillour also  
 þat was aiuged to a greuous peyne,  
 Myself allone to sauuen hym þer-fro,  
 Of Cypriane I suffred gret disdeyne.

PROSA IV, STAN. 10.—3. þe] om. T H : contres] contrey F: nowe  
 (2) newe H. 4. in (2)] om. F: foule] fole T. 5. &] om. F: what  
 (2)] om. T: cariage] tallage F. 6. And (1)] om. F: and (2)] and bi F.  
 7. As] Au R ; and Bb (*altered by later hand to As*) ; full M D : me greued]  
 om. T ; me grew H. 8. theym] they T: þat suffred] sufferyd that  
 T; þat suffred the F. STAN. 11.—1. þe] om. Rl Ba N C Bb (*but*  
*inserted later by other hand*): þat highte] hoten P: Campanye] Campany  
 Rl Ba ; Compeny T ; Companye J. 2. dere ȝere] yere dere D. 3. must]  
 muste N T ; most H: selle] sulle Rl Ba J Ch: cornc] his corne D ; om. P:  
 and] ne Rl Ba T H F J Ch ; nor D: bye] hey M D. 4. þat] att H ; om.  
 F. 5. grevous] greviously Rl Ba J ; gracious D. 6. pore] pouere N H  
 h: anoyed] noyed T J. 7. þe] þis J. 8. Wityng] Wittynge Rl  
 Ba T Ch ; wetyng h Dc. þat] þe T H M D F: destroyed] discryvyd T.  
 STAN. 12.—1. Paulyn] Paulyne Rl N T J ; Paulen h ; Paulin Ba H:  
 eke] om. M D ; also h ; eke þe J. 2. pales] pakes ; paleys Dc ; hondes]  
 houndes] H ; handes M h ; hand D: had] om. D F. 3. goodes] goddes  
 L h R Bb ; hym] had T: þat wrongfully llys goodes hym benome P. 4.  
 rescued] resceyned N P: wher þat] wheþer N T H h F ; whedre M D.  
 5. Albyn] Albyne Rl T F ; albine Ba H Ch ; Alkyn N: was] was a N R.  
 6. aiuged] inged D. 7. sauuen] saue T H. 8. Cypriane] Cipriane N h  
 J ; Sypprian T ; Cipryane H: gret] verry grete T.

(86)

13. That had accused hym ; how semel yow ?  
 In paleys haue I hate *and* enmyte  
 For loue of right ; *and* were not þis ynow  
 For to be favored of þe comynalte ?  
 Sith I no frendship haue as toward me,  
 In kynges halle I haue no loue reserued,  
 Me semeth þan I schulde þe surere be  
 Withouten-forth where I haue loue deserued.

(87)

14. But now be whom was I accused þus ?  
 For sothe of noon þat was of honest fame.  
 But on þer was þat hight Basileus  
 þe wiche be-fore had be found in blame  
 And out of office was he put wiþ schame ;  
 And sith he fel at meschief *and* at nede  
 He was accept accuser of my name,  
 Stired þerto be giftes *and* be mede.

(88)

15. Yit other two þat han me þus defiled  
 Were Gaudencius and Opilioun  
 Wiche þat þe kynges juges had exiled  
 For certayn surfet þat þei hadden don ;  
 But in-to seintuarie þan ben þei gon  
 þeym to defende ageyn þe kynges lawe.

PROSA IV, STAN. 13.—1. semel] say T ; semel hit F. 2. In] I N : haue I] om. T: I] om. N H : I hate] chate C: enmyte] envyte T. 3. were] was T; not] om. M. 4. comynalte] comunyalte H ; comynte F. 5. Sith] Seþen F: no frendship haue] haue no frenship T: toward] towardes h. 6. halle] all H ; courte P: I haue no loue] no loue haue I T: reserved] deserued Rl Ba N Dc F J Ch. 7. þan] þat M D: I schulde] om. J: Me semeth thanne þe sewrer than shuld I be T. 8. Withouten] Withought H: forth] fayle P: where] wher þat T: loue] om. F: deserued] disserued Rl Ba Ch. STAN. 14.—1. was] am T: was I] I was F. 2. was of honest] honest was of P. 3. on þer was] there was one D: Basileus] basilius N H b F; basyleus C; basylous T. 4. þe wiche] That F; founden] founden F: Wych þat beforhand founden was with shame P. 5. he] so Rl Ba J; om. F. 6. he] om. F: fel] fill N: at (1)] atte D: at (2)] om. F. 7. accept] accepete T. 8. Stired] Ystered F; Allas P: be (2)] om. F. STAN. 15.—1. two] too R: þat] om. H: han] haue h: defuldyd H. 2. Gaudencius] gaudensius Rl Ba ; gadesius N ; gaudencyus T; caudencius F: Opilioun] opilion Rl Ba ; opilione N M ; opilyon T; oplyvun H ; opylation Ch. 3. Wiche þat] þe wiche Rl Ba Ch : kyngesjuges] kyng T H. 4. hadden] had T F P ; hadden done] had y done M. 5. into] into þe P ; þan ben] then gan P. 6. ageyn] ayenste T.

And knowyng þis † þe kyng comaunded sone  
þat out of seintuarie þei schulde be drawe.

(89)

16. Bot-if they voidedl þe citee of Raven  
Be tyme assignedl at [a] certen day,  
In þaire front an yren schulde þei † bren,  
And be compelled for to gon þaire way.  
Vnto þis fals attaynt what schal I say,  
Or to þe kynges cursed cruelte ?  
Vpon þat same day, it is no nay,  
Thei were admitted to accusen me.

(90)

17. Wheþer myn art and occupacioun  
Haue þus deserued falsly to be blamedl,  
Oþer elles so þat my dampnacioun  
Haþ righted hem þat traytores were proclaimed ?  
And was noght fortune here-of half aschamedl  
þat þowȝ sche rewardl noght myn innocence,  
Vnworþines of hem þat me defamedl  
Schulde none apele haue made in myn absence ?

(91)

18. Bot perauenture ȝe wolde wite þe groundl  
In-to this exile why I am remeved ?  
I wolde þe senat had be hool and soundl  
And in nowise hyndred ne repreudl ;

PROSA IV, STAN. 15.—7. þis Rl N H] these h ; þise other MSS. 8. þat  
out of] Withoute F: out] om. T: seintuarie] senewarie H. STAN. 16.—  
1. Raven] Raveyne N H M F; Ravene T. 2. at a Rl N C R D Ch] at  
all other MSS. 3. fronte with Rl Ba Dc F J Ch: "bren] beren  
L R Bb; baren h: schulde þei bren] shulde hem brynde T H P; þei shold  
brenne F: In her frount with yren me shulde hem brenne N. 4. for to] to  
T: gon] om. H. 5. þis] his F: attaynt] accent Rl Ba Ch; assente F;  
atteyned T: schal I] shuld T F; I schal Dc. 7. no] none M. 8. ad-  
mittedl purposyd T H: to] for to D: accusen] a cusid T. STAN. 17.—  
1. Wheþer] Whether þat P: myn art &] myn harde N; my gode ȝele  
or M D: &] myn T F. 2. Haue þus deserued] Deserued had thus P:  
þus] pis M D h. 3. Oþer] Or T F: elles] els C: so] þus P. 4. hem]  
thanne T; om. M D: traytores] traytours Ba N h: Had made them tru that  
false were proclaimed P. 5. half] foule N C T H D. 6. þat þowȝ sche  
rewardl noȝht] That I oughte not to rewarde T; þat she rewarded not P:  
þowȝ] pouȝt H; þowȝ youthe R; youthe Bb (but altered to þowȝ by later  
hand): sche rewardl noȝht] not she reward H; she rewarded not F:  
innocence] innocencye h. 8. none] om. T H: haue made] a made T.  
STAN. 18.—2. why] where M D: am] haue T H. 3. wolde] wold R:  
senat] synett T. 4. hyndred] hym drede J: ne] and Dc; oþer F.

Pis is þe cause þat I am þus agreued.  
 But ye wolde wite þe maner euerydele :  
 Be-cause of lettres wiche I had be-reued  
 Fro hem þat wolde þe senatores apele.

(92)

19. Maystresse what will þe demen now ?  
 Schal I þis blame forsake or kall ageyn  
 Lest þat it schulde be schamefull vnto ȝow ?  
 Nay, sikerliche, I schal it neuer wiþ-seyn ;  
 I haue it wilned, and euer schal certeyn,  
 þat senatoires stood in reste & † pees.  
 But þe accusere here after to restreyn,  
 Or let hym oght of þat entent, I sees.

(93)

20. Wheþir for to willen þeire prosperite  
 Schuld been arett as synne and felonye ?  
 And certanly hem-self in þaire de[c]re  
 Han put on me þat poynt of treccherie.  
 But foole vnwit þat to h[y]m-self doth lye  
 Ne may noght chaunge þe merit of my dede ;  
 Though þat þe fooles wolde hem-self distroye  
 My good[e] will is worth[i] þank and mede.

PROSA IV, STAN. 18.—5. þis] þat T: þat] why N; om. F: þus] so N;  
 pis F: agreued] greued N; repreynd F. 6. wolde] wold H wite] wete h;  
 wite þe maner] þe maner wite F: euerydele] & þe wyse P. 7. had] hafe  
 F. 8. Fro] off T: wolde] wold R: senatores] senatoirs N h: apele] accuse  
 P. STAN. 19.—1. Maystresse] Mastres T; Yowe masteres P: will] wol Ba  
 N T h F Ch. 3. schulde] om. T: vnto] in to Dc. 4. sikerliche] securely  
 T H; sikrely M. 5. wilned] euer willyd T; willed H D P. 6. þat  
 senatoires stood] þat the senate were P: senatoires] senatoirs Ba N: and]  
 and in L R Bb Rl Dc P. 7. accusere] accusers D: here] om. N: to] they  
 to De: restreyn] refrayne] N C T H D P. 8. oght] out N T; ofte  
 P: þat] his P: I] om. T H D. STAN. 20.—1. Wheþir for to] But  
 vether to P; forto] to T: willen] wilne N; will h: paire] her N H. 2.  
 Schuld] Shuldyn T: arett] at reste T; arrest H; arent h; arrested F;  
 disputed P: as] to N; for P: &] or M D P. 3. in] and F: hem] they P:  
 decree P] degree other MSS. 4. Han] Haue Rl Ba N D h: þat] þe Ba  
 N F J Ch. 5. foole] foule T J; fooles F; vnwit] vnwitty Rl Ba N Dc  
 F J Ch: hymself] himself L h M D: lye] hy M; high D: doth lye] om.  
 Dc: But vnwyse be they that to themselfe doth lye P. 6. Ne] om. F;  
 They P: dede] mede N. 7. fooles] folis H; foulies P: wolde himself]  
 theyme selfe wolde T; themself wil P: self] om. M. 8. goode] good  
 L R h Bb: worthi H F Ch; worthe D; worthy De P; worth all other  
 MSS.

(94)

21. But vnto m[e], b[y] dome of Socrates,  
 How so-þat-euer it stonde in þaire entent,  
 I trowe it be noght leeful, neuerþeles,  
 To hyde a trewth or to a fals assent.  
 And noght-for-that, of þis † howeuer it stent,  
 It spedeth noght my-seluen to excuse ;  
 I put it holy in þe iuggement  
 Now of ȝoure selfe and of other wise.

(95)

22. The processe of þis mater euerydele  
 I haue it write and put in remembrance,  
 þat men here after mowe conceyue and fele  
 How wrongfully I suffred þis greuance.  
 But pi[l]ke lettres of þaire ordinance  
 þat in my name were traytournly contreyd,  
 If I hadde had þat liberte perchaunce,  
 Theire fals[e] fraudes schulde haue ben i-preued.

(96)

23. Or had I at excaminacioun  
 My-self ben present whan I was accused,  
 [Right] be þaire owne apert confessioun  
 I trowe þei schulde me fully haue excused.  
 This liberte were goodly to ben vsed.  
 But now what liberte schal I abide ?

PROSA IV, STAN. 21.—1. But] Put h: me by T H P] my *all others MSS.*  
 2. so] om. T H : so þat euer] om. F ; so euer P: it stonde] stonde hit :  
 þaire] thyu N ; her H ; myne M D. 3. leeful] leeful Rl ; leuefull Ba D  
 Ch ; louefull J : neuerþeles] nere the lees D ; netheles h. 4. a (1)] þe  
 Dc : a (2)] om. Ba : To hyde a trewth] To denye a sothe P. 5. þis Rl Ba  
 T] þise other MSS.: how euer] how þat euer T H : But neuertheles at thys  
 verament P. 6. seluen] self M F ; selfe D : Excuseth not me in no maner  
 wyse P. 7. it holy] holy it F. 8. Now] om. P: self] selfe Ba :  
 of (2) om. T ; noon Dc : other] your other F. STAN. 22.—3. mowe]  
 may Rl Ba H Dc F Ch P: conceyue] perceyue. 4. wrongfully] wrongly  
 C: suffred] suffre F. 5. pilke Rl Ba N T H D h F J Ch] thyk C ; pikke  
 L; thykke Bb ; pilk R M Dc ; þat ylke P. 6. were traytournly] so falsly  
 were P: contreyd] conceyvyd T H. 7. hadde] om. T; þat] thee D.  
 8. false] fals L R Bb M : fraudes] fautes T ; fraude P: haue] a D ; playnly  
 haue P: i preued] preuyd H F P ; proved D ; I reprevyd Dc ; reprehend  
 J. STAN. 23.—1. I at] I be att the T H ; þat J : excaminacioun]  
 theexamynacioun h ; examinacioun *all other MSS.* 3. Right by T H P] Be  
*other MSS.* ; owne Rl : apart] aparty T. 4. trowe] trow þat P :  
 schulde] shalle T : me fully haue] fully haue me T ; haue me clene P. 5.  
 were goodly to ben] was good to haue ben T : goodly] goode h.

Myn answere sothly scholde not be refused  
If euere I schulde þat liberte betide.

(97)

24. As Kanyus vnto þe kyng<sup>t</sup> answerd  
þat was accused<sup>d</sup> of conspiracie :  
“ Had I,” [he] sayed, “ þerof ogh knowe or herd<sup>d</sup>  
Thow schuldest [haue] noþyng<sup>t</sup> knowe sikerly ; ”  
And sothe to seyn þe same wise wolde I  
A litel bet my lettres haue bestowen,  
And also procured hem so preuely  
þat þerof noþyng schuld þe kyng haue knownen.

(98)

25. Yit haþ noght mournyng dulled so my mynde  
That þis is all þe cause þat I compleyne,  
þat wicked folk ben alway so vnyhynde  
Ageyn vertu suche malice for to leyne ;  
But þis it is wheroft I haue disdeyne :  
Noght for þei þat purpos wickedly in wille,  
Bot þat þai may þaire malice so maynteyne  
Paire wicked<sup>d</sup> cursed purpos to fulfille.

(99)

26. As for to willen malice and vnright,  
þat may ben of her awne vnþriftynesse ;

PROSA IV, STAN. 23.—7. Of an answer I am fully aduyised P. 8. euere]  
every H : betide] abyde P. STAN. 24.—1. As kanyus] As Canys N H;  
A canyous T ; Ascanyus h ; And Cayus F ; As kaneus J ; As Canio P: vnto]  
om. T ; to F. 3. he sayed C T H] assayed N h F ; seide R Rl ; quod he  
P ; y sayed other MSS. : þerof ogh knowe] ther know ought T ; knowe F ;  
therof knownen P. 4. noþyng] haue noþyng T H : knowe] knowe it  
N C H : noþyng knowe] haue knownen hyt not P : sikerly] securlye H.  
5. wise] om. T M D. 6. bet] om. Ba J Ch ; better T H ; be Dc : lettres]  
letter T : Myn owne letters better can I bestowe P. 8. þerof noþyng]  
noþyng therof P : þat þerof þe kyng shulde noþyng a knownen (haue know  
H) T H : no þing schuld þe kyng] þe kyng noþing schuld R ; no thying thee  
kyng shulde D ; þe kinge shold not F : haue] be N ; a D Dc ; om. P.  
STAN. 25.—1. noght] no T H J ; om. Dc : dulled so] so dulled R D. 2.  
þis] om. N D : is all] should be P. 3. folk] om. T H : alway] all they T :  
vnyhynde] vnykynd T H D Dc P. 4. vertu] malice : leyne] sayne M D.  
5. þis] þus N : wheroft wherfore Rl Ba Dc D J Ch ; where so T : haue] hadde  
N. 6. for thei C T H R D] for the D Bb (*altered by later hand* to for  
thei) ; for thi all other MSS. : purpos] I purpos L R h Bb F T H : Not only  
for the purpose of ther wyl P. 7. may] make H : þaire] her N H ; om. J :  
malice] purpose P. 8. þaire] her N T : wicked<sup>d</sup> cursed] cursyd wickyd<sup>d</sup>  
T H : fulfille] full fyll H : I meruyl moche how they y<sup>t</sup> may fulfylle P.  
[ll. 7 and 8 in reverse order Rl Ch. 1. 8 om. Ba.] STAN. 26.—1. As for]  
For as P : willen] worche F. 2. may] they T : vnþriftynesse] vnrightwys-  
nesse Rl Ba F J Ch ; vnytryftynesse H.

But þat þai haue þat power or þat myght  
 To execute þat so purposed is  
 As innocence *and* vertu to distresse,  
 Only of þat I merueil in my mynde ;  
 In his presence þat seeþ all þing<sup>i</sup> expresse  
 This semeth me a monstre out of kynde.

(100)

27. Wherfore þer was wiþ yow familiere  
 One þat compleyned thus *and* skilfully :  
 ‘Sith god is present heere *and* euerywhere,  
 Fro whennes comeþ all euyl, this meruaile I ?  
 And if þat god ne were noght verrailly,  
 Fro whennes scholde all goode þinges be ?  
 But he þat all þing<sup>i</sup> knoweþ perfity  
 May demen þis *and* noon I trowe but he.

(101)

28. All were it lefull to þise surfetoures  
 þat alle goode men noyen *and* disesen  
 Purposyng [for] to [sle] þe senatoures,  
 No wonder were þogh þat þei wol[de] [me] sesen ;  
 For euer my purpos was hem to displesen  
 And letten hem fro þeire entenciou[n] ;  
 To senatoures ȝit gaf I non enchesoun  
 For to conspire my dampnacioun.

PROSA IV, STAN. 26.—3. or þat] and T. 4. so] þat T H. 6. of] on M. 7. In] As in P: presence] sight P: all] a Ba F Ch: seeþ all thing<sup>i</sup>] all thyng seeth P. 8. This] Hyt P: a monstre] a mounstre R; amister Bb (*but altered by other hand to a monstre*). STAN. 27.—1. was] was one F: wiþ yow] om. h. 2. One] om. F: and] ful N: and skilfully] vnskillyfullly T H. 3. present] presend Ba Ch; om. F. 4. Fro whennes] Where of MD: all euyl this] all this ylle T: euyl] ywell H. 5. þat] om. M D: ne] om. F. 6. whennes] whenne Ba J Ch; whens h: Fro whennes comys all goode mervell I T H. 7. þing<sup>i</sup>] þinges N: all þing<sup>i</sup> knoweþ] knoweth T; knoweth all thyng T Dc F: But he that causeth þynges perfectly P. 8. and noon I trowe but he] and not non but he trow I T; and noon but he trowe I H: May knowe all and none in sothe but he P. STAN. 28.—1. lefull] levefull D J: were] whether T: to] to all T: surfetoures] surfetours N h; forfeittourys T. 2. all good] alle goode Rl Ba D h: men] om. h. 3. for to sle T H P] vnto M D; to all other MSS.: senatoures] senatours N h. 4. were] om. M D: þat] om. Rl Ba M F J Ch: wolde me sesen] wol sesen L R Bb h F J Ch, wolde cesen Rl Ba M D Dc, wolde me lesen H P, wolde N C. 5. euer] neuer h: hem] om. D. 6. fro F J Ch] of N T H; for other MSS. 7. senatoures] senatours N: gaf] haue D: enchesoun] enchesyn J. 8. conspire] enspyre De: my] myne Ch. [ll. 7, 8 om. T H.]

(102)

29. And maistresse  $\exists e$  rem[em]bre wele  
 Dat what-so-euer I þowht to done or say,  
 Boþe word and werk  $\exists e$  rewled euerydele,  
 And be yow I gouerned me all-way;  
 And eke þe senatoures, it is no nay,  
 For þaire defence þay knownen euerychone  
 In what perile I put me at oo day  
 Ayeyn þe kyng<sup>t</sup> my-seluen at Verone.

(103)

30. Ye know al this þat I ne seie but soþ  
 Though I my-self had kept it in þ silence,  
 For sikerly all-way haue I be lothe  
 To be commended<sup>k</sup> of myn excellence.  
 For he þat will be fayne of reuerence  
 And so resayueth réward<sup>k</sup> of renoun,  
 þe þriue secre of his conscience  
 Apereþ myche be þat condicioun.

(104)

31. But heere  $\exists e$  may ȝourc-seluen taken hede,  
 For innocence what worschip now haue I?  
 For vertu I rescayue to my mede  
 þe peynes pertinent to felonye.  
 Who had euer for any treacherye  
 his iugges so concorded<sup>k</sup> in cruelte

PROSA IV, STAN. 29.—1. maistresse] maistre M:  $\exists e$ ] I M D: rembre L] remembreth Rl Ba H F Ch P; membreth J; rembre Bb; remembre *all other MSS.* 2. euer] euer þat M D: I þowht to done] I do Rl Ba N C M D Dc F J Ch Bb (*but þowht to inserted later*). 3. word and werk] werke & worde F: rewle Rl Ba R Dc J Ch; rewleth H F. 4. gouerne] gourne Rl Ba T H Dc F J: all way] all day R. 5. senatoures] senatours Ba N. 6. þaire] her N H: þay] haue M D: knownen] knew T; know H: euerychone] everyone P. 7. at oo] in euery T; yn a H; in one M D. 8. my seluen] hymse selfe T; myself H Dc: at] atte D; and Dc: Verone] Veroune T; Veryone M; Verioun D. STAN. 30.—1. Ye] I T: know al this] knoweth wel P. 2. it in] om. T; yn H; it N: silence] scilence L R Bb D. 3. sikerly] securly H: haue I be] I haue ben T P; haue ben H; I haſe be F. 5. will be] wolbe T h F; wole be W; wull be H. 7. secre] sterre N; secret T H F; secrete R (*te inserted by other hand*). 8. myche] moche N h P; lyke muche T. STAN. 31.—1. ȝourc] ȝow Rl Ba H; you F: seluen] self h M F P. 2. innocence] om. T; innocence h P: now] om. F. 3. I rescayue] I reserve T H; I rescayued R; loo recue I P. 4. pertinent] perteyneth T H; perteynyng F: felonye] folie h: Peynes that proper be for felony P. 5. Who] And ho P. 6. concorded] accorded Rl Ba F Ch; concorde T H P; accorde D.

For gilt þat w[as] confessed& openlie  
þat some of hem ne were moued& wiþ pite?

(105)

32. All had it ben so þat I had desired  
þe prestes deth or holy chirche i-brent,  
Or cruell deth to good[e] men conspired,  
Or what malice so þat I had euer i-ment,  
ȝit schulde I haue be demed me present,  
Of my surfet or conuicte or confessed,  
And after þis haue þ had my iugement;  
And rightwisly þis might haue be redressed.

(106)

33. Ow worthi men of worschip *and* of mede!  
For noon of hem come neuir at þat degré  
To be conuict of such a manere dede  
As to wiþ-stonde a kynges cruelte  
As I haue done for þaire commodite.  
þ Perfore þey weren of my gilt aschamed  
For-why in filyng<sup>t</sup> of my dignite,  
Of sorcerye þey haue me now defamed.

(107)

34. They seye for couetise of hyhe estate  
þat I had vsed craft of sorcerie.

PROSA IV, STAN. 31.—7. gilt] gult Rl Ba ; alle D ; gilte; T : was] where M ; were other MSS. : confessid] confessith T. 8. þat] þan Ch: ne] no T; om. D : were] where T H: ne were] were not F; ner P: moued] meued Rl Ba N J Ch : wiþ] bi F : pite] pete T H. STAN. 32.—1. þat] om. T : desired] denised N. 2. i brent] ebrent C; brent M D Dc. 3. goode N H h] gode Rl Ba F Ch; good all other MSS.; conspired] had conspired J. 4. þat] om. N H: so þat I had euer i ment] so euer þat I hadde ment Rl Ba Dc J Ch; so euer I had i ment T F: euer] om. P: i ment] ment M. 5. ȝit] ȝut Rl Ba: be] om. J. 6. surfet] surfyd T: or] of Dc: conuicte] committe Rl Ba h Ch Bb (*altered by later hand to conuicte*); convictis T; conuict H; convict M Dc; convicte D: So conuycte of my surfet or confessed P. 7. haue had] an haue Dc: haue] haue I L R h Bb De F Ch. 8. þis] þus T: haue] a D: be] om. J: Thus justly myght my dome haue ben dressed P. [ll. 4, 5 in reverse order Rl Ba F J Ch.] STAN. 33.—1. Ow] Of Rl Ba Dc J Ch Bb (*but altered by later hand to Ow*); O N; How T H D: worthy vnworthy T. 2. at] in Dc. 3. conniuct] committe Rl Ba J Ch; comit C R h Bb; convicte T D; convict M; convyct Dc P; convicted F: a] om. h. 5. commodity] commedite h. 6. ffor L R Bb h] om. Rl Ba N T H M D Dc F J; and P: they weren] were they P. 7. For why; Forthy P: filyng] felynge Rl Ba D J Ch; fulyng T H; foilyng P: my] om. F. 8. Of] With P: þey haue me now] now have they me T; now they haue me P; þey haue now me Rl H Ch. STAN. 34.—1. They seye] Therfore F: of] for R : estat] astate H. 2. had] haue T; hafe F; of] or N M,

But þe þat were my gouernour algate  
 Full well þe wetyn falsly þat þei lye ;  
 For fro my herte þe hadden vtterlye  
 Avoyded clene all worldly coueytise,  
 And in þour' presence myght not skilfullye  
 Suche sacrilege been vsed in no wise.

(108)

35. For euery day þe putten in my þoght  
 Thise sothfast wordes of Pictagoras ;  
 þat many goddes seruen schulde we noght  
 But oon allone þat makeþ corne *and* gras.  
 It neded noght, ne none accorde it was,  
 But wonderfully vnsemely in youre sight  
 þe help of foule gostes to purchace,  
 Sith þe had made me lik to god allmicht.

(109)

36. Also my wyf þat is ful innocent  
 And oþere frendes of my cumpayne,  
 My wifes fader also reuerent  
 Fro suche defautes mowe defenden me.  
 But owh þ malice *and* cursed cruelte !  
 This blame þay put on ȝow be evidence,  
 Be-cause I am gouerned all be þe,  
 þat I haue vsed suche enchaunt[e]mence.

PROSA IV, STAN. 34.—4. Full well þe wetyn] Ye knoweth wel P : wetyn] witen Rl N Bb ; witten Ba Ch ; know T D ; weten R ; om. T : þat] om. T: Wel ye knowe þat falsly þei lye F. 5. my] me N : herte] om. N : vtterlye] vtwardly h. 6. Avoyded] avoyden Rl Ba Ch ; a vodeyn J : wordly] wordly T H Dc Ch ; maner M D. STAN. 35.—2. This sothfast] þese sothfaste Rl ; þe sothfaste T H : wordes] sentence P : Pictagoras] Pittagoras Ba ; Putagoras R ; Pictigoras D. 3. þan] That T M D Dc Ch : schulde] shalle ; shull M : seruen schulde we noght] to serue hit shold be noȝte F ; shulde we serue noght P. 4. But oon allone] But allone hym F. 5. It] Yit D: neded] neddyth Rl N : ne] nor D: accorde] accorded D: it] om. D. 6. But wonderfully] ffor wonderfully N ; But wonderful Ch J ; But wonder foule H : vnsemely] vnsembly h : To me but ful vnsembly in your syght P. 7. gostes] gestes T M D ; goddes Ch : to] in Dc. 8. ȝe] he Rl Ba J Ch : made me] me made h : me lik] mekely D ; me leke P. STAN. 36.—1. is] was J. 2. wifes] wyues N. 3. also] all so H. 4. defautes] flawtes T : mowe] may T P ; now Dc: defenden] defend Ba ; defend T. 5. owh C] owgh N ; how T H ; other Rl Ba h F J Ch ; outhier all other MSS. : cursed] om. F: cruelty] crudelyte P. 6. þay put on] put they in T ; they put in H ; they bereth on P: on] to M D ; vppon h : be] myn D. 7. gonerned all] all gouernyd T: þe] ȝe Ba J. 8. þat I haue vsed] They say that I vse P: enchauntemence Rl Ba N Dc Ch] ; enchauntmence L R Bb h ; inchauntelement T ; enchauntelemente H ; enchauncelemente M ; enchaunsemence D ; enchaunte F ; enchauntelementes P.

(110)

37. And vnto hem hit semeth not i-nogh  
 þat ȝoure reuerence me noȝing profiteth,  
 Bot eke my gilt þei putten vpon ȝow  
 And myn offence fully ȝow þei witeþ.  
 And other þing<sup>t</sup> my sorowes ȝit exciteth ;  
 þat men see noght þe merite of oure dede,  
 But seyn alwey when þat fortune vs smyteth,  
 Of oure surfet it was deserued<sup>t</sup> nede.

(111)

38. And seyn þat welthis *and* prosperite  
 Comyth vnto vs for oure rightwisnesse,  
 And also when þere comyth aduersitee,  
 It comyþ only of þoure peruersi[dnesse].  
 With fortune goth oure fame of worthinessse ;  
 A noble þing<sup>t</sup>, so light it is to lese,  
 And certaynly þe firste þing<sup>t</sup> it esse  
 þat fleeþ away fro wrecches in mysesse.

(112)

39. What rumours thise folk will of me fynde,  
 How dyuerse sentence *and* how varient,  
 It lothes me to thenkyn in my mynde,  
 For euery man on me seith his entent<sup>t</sup> ;

PROSA IV, STAN. 37.—1. vnto] to T H; thys to P. 2. þat ȝoure reuerence me noȝing] That reuerence of yow me nouȝt P: me noȝing] noȝinge me M D; me noȝt F. 3. eke] also h: my] om. N: gilt] gult Rl Ba: putten vpon] putte it right on D: put vppon h. 4. myn] om. N: myn offence] of myn defece T: ȝow] om. h: witeþ] witteþ H. 5. And other] A nother H: other þing<sup>t</sup>] oþere þynges Ba J Ch: sorowes] sorewes Rl: sores N; sorwes M: ȝit] ȝut Rl; it T: And other þinges yet my sorow exciteþ F. 6. see] seeth H: merite] meryth Dc: oure] ȝoure N H M D P; euery T. 7. when] om. Rl: þat] om. H: when þat] that when D. 8. oure] ȝoure N T H: surfet] meret P. [ll. 4, 5, in reverse order Dc J.] STAN. 38.—1. seyn] seith N; syn h; saeth P; om. Dc. 2. vnto] to H: rightwisnesse] right wisynesse H; riȝtfulnes F. 4. comyþ] falleth P: of] for F: oure Rl Ba N C H Dc F P] ȝoure other MSS.: peruersidnesse Rl Ba Dc F J Ch] peruersite L R h M Bb N C; wyckydnesse T H P; peruersenes D. 5. goþ] goith Rl Ba: of] and our T; oure H: worthinessse] wickednesse Rl Ba. 6. it] om. T. 8. fleeþ] ferth h: fro] om. T: wrecchis] wrecchyd C R M D Bb (but altered by later hand to wrecchis): in] om. M; and J. STAN. 39.—1. rumours] rumoures Ba; thise folk] the folkes Dc; thise folkes F; now thys folk P: will] wole N M: of] om. N; on Dc. 2. How (1)] om. T; her H: how (2)] her H: varient] varience T H. 3. to] om. F: thenkyn] þynken] Rl Ba; thenke H; thenke it M D; thyncke h. 4. on] of Rl Ba M D J Ch P: seith] seeth Rl Ba: on me seith] saythe of me T H; seith on me h.

And this þ it is þat most myn herte schent:  
 þere is no fortune greueþ me so sore  
 As when þat meschief is to wrecches sent,  
 Men seyn it was deserued þer before.

(113)

40. Fro all my good I am awey i-put<sup>t</sup>  
 Also despoyled of my dignyte,  
 And to my herte it greueþ more yut  
 My name is fouled in þe comynalte,  
 And for þe be[ne]fetes of my bounte  
 Lo now I suffre torment *and* distresse;  
 And in myn herte me semeth þat I see  
 How felonus folk been in þeire lustynesse;

(114)

41. And euery lorell redy now *and* bown  
 Som newe coniectet fraudes to devise;  
 And good[e] folk þaire hedes hongeþ down  
 Lest þey be seruyd in þe same wyse;  
 And euery surfeture now dar accuse,  
 Be-cause of fauour *and* vnpunschement,  
 Good[e] men to defoulen *and* despise,  
 And proudly to performe þeir entent,

PROSA IV, STAN. 41.—5. this] thise L R h M Bb: þat] þise M D.  
 6. greueþ] þat greueth N F. 7. As] And F þat] om. H F; meschief] myscheues h. 8. seyn] say T h: þer] om. F. STAN. 40.—1. Fro] for T: I am awey iput<sup>t</sup>] is awaye fro me putte J: I am away from al my good y put P: i put<sup>t</sup>] y putte Rl Ba N; put H F. 3. greueþ] brenneth M D; noyeth P: þut] zutte Rl Ba; zitte N. 4. fouled] defouled F; defoyled P: comynalte] comynte F. 5. benefetes Rl Ba H M D h Dc F J Ch] benfetes N C; benefettes T; benfet P; beenfetes L R: bounte] bonyte T. 6. torment] turmentes h. 7. þat] om. F. 8. felonus] felonies Rl Ba J Ch; felonys D; felownes Dc; feloun N; folish F; felons P; felowes T. STAN. 41.—1. redy now] now redy T; redy ynow F; redy is P. 2. newe] now N: coniectet] conieecteth Rl Bi D J Ch; coniecte T; committed N; come Dc. 3. goode] gode Rl Ba C H D F; good *all other MSS.*: folk] folkes T: hongeþ down] hang a downe M D: þaire hedes hongeþ down] hangeth the hed a downe P. 4. 1. 4 repeated after 1. 8 L R M D (but crossed out later) Bb. (*In Bb 1. 4 omitted at first after 1. 3, but put later in margin for insertion after 1. 3.*) 5. surfeture] forfeitour H: dar] derre I D. 6. vnpunschement] vnpunyshment Rl Ba M H. 7. Goode] Gode Rl Ba N H D h F Ch; good *all other MSS.*: despise] to despise Ba F J Ch. 8. to] om. M D: proudly] proudde h: þeir entent] thentent h. [1. 4 repeated after 1. 8 L R M D (but crossed out). In Bb 1. 4 om. first, but put in marg.]. [1. 4 maæ 1. 8 of C.] [1l. 4, 5 in reverse order Rl Ba F J Ch.] [1. 4 om. T H.]

(115)

42. Therto excited<sup>t</sup> be giftes *and* be mede ;  
 And rightwisnesse may haue no reuerence,  
 So innocentes lyuen now in drede ;  
 Noght only þat, but lakkeþ paire defense.  
 Agayn malice is made no resistance  
 Bot sothfastnesse is had in all desdeyne.  
 þat god will suffre this in his presence,  
 A cause I haue to axe and me compleyne.

(116)

METRUM [v]<sup>m</sup>

o Stelli-feri Conditor orbis.

1. Now makere of þe sterred heuen on hyhe  
 þat perdurable sittest in thy trone,  
 Thou turnest heuene wiþ a wonder swye  
 Constreynnge sterres in thi lawe allone,  
 So þat in tyme of fulnesse of þe mone,  
 Beschyned wiþ þe sonne bemes bright,  
 þe smale sterres hyd þeym-seluen sone ;  
 In hire presence to schyne þei haue no myght.

(117)

2. And when sche to þe sonne neigheþ nere  
 Right sone sche most hire bright[e] hornes hide ;  
 And Esperus þat semeth bright *and* clere  
*And* schewiþ hym in þe colde euentide,

PROSA IV, STAN. 42.—1. Therto excited] Styred therto P. 3. lyuen  
 now] now lyve T; leve now h; leþ now F; leueth now P. 4. only þat  
 but lakkeþ] only for they lack T H: þat] om. F: paire] youre F. 5. Agayn]  
 Agaynst T: is made no] to make her T: to make no H. 6. sothfast-  
 ness] sith fastnesse H: in all] all in N H. 7. will] wole N h; wull  
 H; wolde M D; om. Dc. 8. axe] crye T H M D P; aske Dc: me] to T H.  
 METRUM V. Met. v] Met. iiij<sup>m</sup> L. STAN. 1.—1. Now] O thou T H Dc;  
 O P: þe] om. T R Dc. 2. þat perdurable sittest] Eternally that syttest  
 P: sittest] settest R h; sitteþ J. 3. turnest] turnes Rl Ba Ch; turneþ  
 R Bb: wiþ] in D: wonder] wonde N: swye] whye T; swyth h. 4. in] to  
 C T H P. 5. in tyme of] now in P. 6. Beschyned] Be shewyd T;  
 Beth shend H; be shewde M; be shee hidde D; Best hyved h: sonne]  
 sonne; T J; sonnys H; sonnes Dc: þe sonne] her brothers P. 7. hyd]  
 had T; hidde h; þey hydde Dc; hideþ F. 8. hire] theire D: haue] had  
 T: myght] liȝte F. STAN. 2.—1. to the sonne neigheþ nere] Soon to the  
 son nyghe were T; to the sonne nyhe were H: neigheþ] neyght Ba Ch;  
 nyght J. 2. most] om. T: bright] brighte N D F. 3. Esperus]  
 Hesperous T; hesperus H: semeth bright] shyneth lyghte T; shynyth  
 bryght H P.

Anoþer, [þ]ere he is þe sunes gide  
 Arisyng vp ful pale by þe morne,  
 And in þat course he nedis moste abide  
 For so þou hast commaunded hym beforne.

## (118)

3. In wynter when þe leues goon away,  
 Thow schortest þan þe faire daies light;  
 In hoot[e] somer lengþest þou þe day  
 And makest schort þe derknesse of þe nyght.  
 And þou attemperest tymes be þy myght,  
 þat bare branches waxen faire *and* grene  
 Wiche þat were despoyled *and* vnheight  
 Be styffe stormes of þe wynter kene.

## (119)

4. The þeedes þat in wynter ben i-sowen  
 Thow makest hem to waxen feyre *and* hye  
 And when þey ben to cornes full i-growen  
 Thow makest hem to ripen *and* to drye.  
 Thyne olde lawe þere may noþing [vn]plie  
 Ne be no way þaire kyndly course forlete.  
 Oo god, þat all þing rewlest certanlie,  
 Now onely mannes werk thow hast forȝete.

METRUM V, STAN. 2.—5. Anoþer] a noþer Dc; and other F: there N] per Rl Ba F J Ch; yere other MSS.: þe] no T H. 6. by] in P: morne] mornynge T H. 7. þat] þe F: he nedis] nedes he R: Loo nedes in that cours he must a byde P. 8. commaunded] commawnd H: hym] them T. STAN. 3.—1. þe] þi F: goon away] gan spryng T. 2. þe] þy N Ch: daies] day T. 3. hoote] hoot L R Bb; hote Rl Ba N T H: lengþest] lengest T H; lengyst R; longest h. 4. derknesse] derkenesse Rl Ba: þe (2)] pi F. 5. þou] per T: attemperest] attempereth T: tymes] tyme Ba T J: þy myght] the nyght h. 6. waxen] wax h. 7. wiche] The whiche T H: þat] om. F: were] om. T H: despoyled] defouled P. 8. stiffe Ba N D h Dc F J Ch] steue T H; styf L R Bb: wynter] wyntres Dc. STAN. 4.—1. seedes D (*altered from feedles by other hand*) feedles other MSS.; sedes P; þat in wynter] in wynter þat P: in wynter ben i sowen] be in the wynter seen T; ben yn wynter sowen H: i sowen] esawen C; sowen F P. 2. waxen] weke T; wex H; wexen R Bb: hye] highe D (*but altered by other hand to hye*). 3. when] om. T H; when þat P: to cornes full] ful to cornes P: i growen] egrowen C; y grow H; growen F P. 4. hem] than T H: drye] dye h. 5. þere] om. T: noþing] no man T: vnaplie N C T H P] applie other MSS. 6. no way] nowther T; no where H: þaire kyndly] her kynde N: forlete] to lete T H. 7. Oo] Oughte T H: rewlest] reuelest T H: certanlie] om. T H: all þing rewlest] rewlest all þing R: Ow god that gouernest al certenly P. 8. Now] No J: onely] only Rl Ba N R Bb; oonly h: werk] werkes T.

(120)

5. Why schall fortune turnen vp-so-doun  
 Thing wiche þat is in thy gourernement,  
 Thise wicked folk to set in hy renoun,  
 And dryuen doun þe good [and] innocent  
 Wiþ paynes þat by rightwys iugement  
 Been dewe to caytifs for þaire cursednesse ?  
 Lo feithfull folk ben schamed now and schent  
 And wicked folk ben set in worthiness.

(121)

6. Thus fals[e] folk þe faþfull haue oppressed,  
 And vertu þat so worþy is of name  
 Now lyth in derknesse til hit be redressed.  
 þe rightwis berith þe wicked mannes blame ;  
 Forsworn[e] men þat [ben] wiþouten schame  
 Lo fals[e] fraudes, coloured as hem list,  
 They vsen now as for a comune game  
 Disceyuyng hem þat most vpon hem trist.

(122)

7. And after þeym þei drawen to consent  
 Gret kynges þat many a man must drede,  
 And maken hem performe þaire entent,  
 And þaym a-combreth wiþ þaire cursed-hede,

METRUM V, STAN. 5.—1. Why] And why T H : turnen] turne N H.  
 2. Thing] This thyng D (This *in other hand*): wiche] om. h: þat] om. H F: gourernement] gouernaunce Rl Ba F J Ch. 3. wicked folk to set] lyke folke that sytteth T: to] so Dc: hy] om. h. 4. dryuen] dryvyng T; dreuyng H: dryuen doun] dryue a downe M: gode and N C T H D P (*in D & inserted later by other hand*) good L R Bb Dc; gode Rl Ba h F Ch: innocent] innocence F. 5. Wiþ] The T: þat] whiche M D: by] be by T H; ben Dc: rightwys] rightuous P. 6. dewe] doo T: caytifs] caytyues Ba N; cartefes H; caytyses R; caytnesse J. 7. Lo] Loo now T: feithfull] feyfull H: folk] men P: now] om. T: now & schent] & now yshente F; & yshent P. STAN. 6.—1. Thus] Thise N T F: false Rl Ba Ch] om. h: fals *other MSS.*: faþfull] trew T: haue] hatthe D Ch. 2. so] om. T H: so worthy is] so is worthy T; is so worthy h. 3. Now] No H: lyth] lieth Rl H D: Now lyth] To put P: derknesse] derkenesse Rl Ba. 4. mannes] monnes Rl Ba; mennes F. 5. Forsworne] Forsworen Ba h Ch; For forsworyn T; Forsworon F; Forshoren P; Forsworn L R Bb: þat ben Rl Ba N C H J Ch] þat beþ F; þat es D (*es in other hand*) þat *other MSS.* 6. false Ba Ch] fals *other MSS.*; fraudes] deceytes P: as hem list] as hase hem loste T; as hym list J They colour ther deceytes as them lust P. 7. They] And P; now] they P: as] a M. 8. Deceyuyng] Dis-sayuyng T; deceyuen H; To deceyue D: þat most] most that M: hem (2)] hest H. STAN. 7.—1. þeym] þat M D: þeym þei drawen] drawes theyme T H; þeym draweth thei F: draweth] draeth P. 2. Gret] Grete Rl Ba N H h: Gret kynges] Kynges grete P: a man] man R: must] doth T. 3. performe] to performe P. 4. a combreth] encombreth P: hede] dede M D.

And as þaym lust right so þei wil þaym lede.  
 But now be-holde þis wrecchid ethely place,  
 Thy-self þat knyttes[t] all in lengþe *and* brede,  
 Sum tyme sende vs socour of þy grace.

(123)

8. For of þy werk we ben a porcioun,  
 Noght foule bot faire after þe forme of þe,  
 We men þat fortune dryueþ vp *and* doun  
 Among þe wawes of þis worldy see.  
 Represse þis flood, lord, what-so-euer þou be,  
 þat knyttest all in certeyn ordenaunce.  
 þou rewlest heuenes in tranquillite,  
 Now sette vs sumwhat in þat gouernaunce.

(124)

PROSA [v]<sup>a</sup>

hec vbi continuato.

1. When I wiþ mornyng þus had made my mone  
 Sche was noþing of my compleynt ameved;  
 With plesant chere sche stood as stille as stone.  
 'Sothely,' sche seide, 'while ere this I conseuyed  
 þat þow were exul *and* þy good be-reued.  
 Right be þy wepyng chere I wiste it wele,  
 But ȝit þus fer hadde I not perceyued  
 Bot þow þy-self had tolde me eueydele.

METRUM V, STAN. 7.—5. þaym (1)] þei Rl Ba N C T H R Bb Dc F J P: lust] wole lust N: þaym (2)] *om.* Rl Ba C J Ch: so þei wil þaym lede] so they wole lede N; so wyll they be lede T: so wolle they lede F. 6. beholdeþ beholdeþ F. 7. knyttes] knowest N; knittest þi selfe F; cuttiste T H; knettest P: lengþe] lenthe R. 8. Sumtyme] Now somtyme P: Sumtyme sende vs] Send vs sumtyme T. STAN. 8.—1. of] after N: we] the N: a porcioun] apporcoun J. 3. men] be h: dryueth] dowgħteth T: denceth H. 4. wawes] wawes C; lawes h: þis] the T: worldy] woordly Dc P. 5. þis] þus T: þou] it N: what so euer þou be] whatever t be T: when it liketh þee M D. 7. heuenes] heuyn F. 8. þat] þi J. PROSA V. Prosa V<sup>a</sup>] Prosa iiiij<sup>a</sup> L. STAN. 1.—1. wiþ mornyng þus] thus wiþ mournyng R: mornyng] moornys D C: had] *om.* T F. 2. of] in Rl Ba C F J Ch. 3. as (1) als C: plesant] pleasaunce H: sche stood] *om.* J: stood as styll as stone] satt styll as a stone T H: as (2)] a Rl; as a J. 4. Sothely] wheler Dc: while ere] ere N; soþly Dc: this I] I this N Dc; thus I D. 5. exul] exilid D F. 6. wist] knew. 7. ȝit] zut Rl Ba: fer] ferre Rl Ba: hadde I] I hadde H: Yet how fer ne had yet I not perceyued P. 8. þyself] *om.* D: had] haste F: me] it me D.

(125)

2. Bot neuerþelatter vndirstonde wel þis,  
 þou art not exul out of þy citee,  
 But þou þy-self hast take þy way amys,  
 Astrayed out in a straunge cuntry.  
 And ȝif þou trowe þat þow exciled be,  
 þan hast þou putte þy-self out sikerly,  
 For þat power no þ wyht haþ ouer the  
 But þou þy-self wilt done it wilfully.

(126)

3. For if þou k[n]ewe or couthe hauie in þy mynde  
 Of what cuntry or what citee þou were  
 Of wieche þow took þe beyng of þy kynde,  
 The lawes of þat lond þow schuldest lere,  
 For al þe worlde ne may it noght conquere.  
 Noght lyk Athenes þat many lordes had,  
 O lord, o lawe, þere is none oþer yere,  
 þat of his multitude is blithe *and* glad.

(127)

4. He is full fayn þat folk will to hym drawe,  
 Ne wilfully he will no wight for-lete.  
 For to obeie vnder his lusty lawe  
 Is liberte þe grettest þat may be gete.

PROSA V, STAN. 2.—1. Bot] *om.* P : neuerþelatter] Neuerþelesse T H P ;  
 neþerlatter R h ; natholes D : wel þis] wyl I þis Rl Ba J Ch ; nowe þis P.  
 2. exul] excilyd T D : out] ought H : þy] *om.* T H : citee] sete T ; syte H ;  
 witte M ; witte thynke me D. 3. selfe] way T : þy] þe F. 4. Astrayed]  
 Afrayed N : Astraye D : in] into Rl Ba Dc. 5. trowe] wene P. 6. hast  
 þou] hastow N : pyself out] oute þyself F : out] ought H ; *om.* M D : sikerly]  
 securly T. 7. For] Fro M : no Rl Ba N C (*but noght at first, -ght erased*)  
 H M D h Dc F J] noght L R Bb : wyht] wyt C ; *om.* R ; (Bb *had* whiche  
*first, but altered by later hand*) : noght wyht hap] hath none P ; has wight  
 T : ouer] of N. 8. þou] if T : wilt] wolt F ; will D ; wyl P : done] do  
 N : wilfully] willyngly P. STAN. 3.—1. knewe] knowe N F ; kewe L :  
 couthe] koude D P ; in] it in D : þy] *om.* T H. 2. Of] As of P : or] or of  
 Rl Ba J Ch : cuntry] lande P : what (2) *om.* N : þou] þat þou N. 3. þe]  
 þy H : þe beyng of þy kynde] thy nature & thy kende P. 4. pow schuldest  
 lere] I could the lere P. 5. worlde] word Dc : ne] *om.* Rl Ba H F J Ch.  
 6. lyk] leke P : Athenus] Athenus C ; Athenesse T ; Atthenes R. 7. But one  
 lord ; one lawe & none other there P : yere] þere Rl Ba N T H M D De F J  
 Ch. 8. his] þis F : is] is ryght Dc ; is boþe F. STAN. 4.—1. will]  
 wole N F ; *om.* h : will to hym] to hym will T H. 2. wilfully] willyngly  
 P : will] wole N h F ; is with T : wight] þing Rl Ba J Ch. 3. For] *om.*  
 F : vnder] in Dc. 4. þat] *om.* M D.

Ne knowest þou noȝt or elles þow hast forȝete  
 þe lawe þat alwey þere is had *and vseð*:  
 Who so þat lust þereynne to beld̄ his sete,  
 þe lord ne wil not þat he be refused.

(128)

5. And in þat place who so will abiden stille  
 He ne may deserue none aduersite,  
 Bot also sone as he forlettiþ þat will  
 He may no lenger in þat paleys be ;  
 For he forfeteþ þanne his liberte  
 And fleeþ his cuntre of his owne assent,  
 When þat he scheweþ sensualite  
 For-letyng resoun in his iugement.

(129)

6. Thow asked wher þe maner of þis place  
 Wiþ the to mourne if it me meued oȝht.  
 Me meueþ [more] þe maner of þi face  
 For why þis place meveþ me right noȝht.  
 þe library wiþ glas *and* yuer wroȝt  
 Ne alle þi bokes sette I at no pris ;  
 I seke wel more þe habyt of þy þoght  
 Where I had made a sete of my devise.

(130)

7. For in þy herte I hade no bokes schit  
 But þing þat makeþ bookeſ precious,

PROSA V. STAN. 4.—5. knowest þou] knowestow] N F: elles] ell H:  
 þow hast] hastow F. 6. alwey þere is] ther ys all wey T H: and  
 vseð] in vse h. 7. Who] ho H: þat] om. M D: beld̄] bylde Rl Ba;  
 bolde h: to beld̄ his sete] to be yset N: sete] cyte H. 8. ne] om.  
 Rl Ba T Dc F J Ch; he P: wil] wol N F. STAN. 5.—1. so] om. F Ch:  
 will] wol h: And in þat place who so will] And ho so wyl in that place P.  
 2. ne] om. D F P: deserue] deserke H. 4. paleys] place N; pales  
 P: be] a be R. 6. owne] om. N. 7. scheweþ] suyth T P; sewith  
 H F. 8. Forletyng] Forvetynge T: in] of Rl Ba Bb (*but altered by other*  
*hand to in*) F J Ch; and T H M D: iugement] iugementes T. STAN.  
 6.—1. asked] askys T; askest H P. 2. Wiþ the to mourne] Me with þe  
 for to morne P: to] om. N T H: if] of T H: me] om. M D: meued] meveth  
 T H P: if it me meued oȝht] where yt mevdyd me ought Dc; mevid me ouȝte  
 F. 3. more] om. L: þi] þis Rl Ba J Ch. 4. For why þis place] For  
 thys prison P: place] pace D: meveþ] meued Ch. 5. þe] Thy P: yuer]  
 yvery Rl Ba N T H M D h F J; youry Dc; yuer C R Bb Ch. 6. alle]  
 all Rl R h: þi] þe N F. 7. I] om. Rl Ba F J Ch: wel more] om. P; wel  
 F: of my] at myn owne T. 8. had] haue P: sete] cyte H: of] at H P:  
 devise] avyse D. STAN. 7.—1. hadde] haue Rl Ba F: schit] i sett T; sett  
 H: y shitte F; put P. 2. þing] thynges T P: bookeſ om. T H.

Subtile sentence of cunnynge *and* of wit,  
 Wiche vnto þe was more delicious.  
 Of thi merite þow hast remembred vs  
 Wiche þat pou hast in comen good be-stowe ;  
 Ful soth it is *and* noght suspessious,  
 Som hast þou seid *and* ȝit wel more I knowe.

(131)

8. Thow hast also remembred forþermore  
 The maner of þyn accusacioun  
 And eke þe gilt þat þou art greued fore ;  
 Ful honest in þy estimacioun  
 None harme deserued ne dampnacioun  
 But rāþer rēward for þy besynesse,  
 And now *for* þy remuneracioun  
 Thow hast noþing but harme *and* heuynesse.

(132)

9. And schortly hast rehersed euery-dele  
 The false fraudes of þyne accusoures  
 Wiche þat þe comune peple knoweþ wele ;  
 þe wrongful dome eke of þe senatoures  
 þat rāþer schulde haue ben þy sustenoures ;  
 Thow sorwest also gretly for my blame  
 þe wiche I bere for þe of surfetoures ;  
 Thow wepest eek þe foulyng of þy fame ;

PROSA V, STAN. 7.—3. subtile] sothly T H : sentence] science] Rl Ba F J Ch : of (1)] om. F : cunnynge] comynyng H : of (2)] om. F. 4. þe] me P : was] were M D : delicious] delitysious H. 5. merite] mery T : vs] vse Rl Ba. 6. Wiche þat] þe wyche P : þat] om. T D : in] of T H : on P : comen] cunnynge N : good] welth P : bestowe] bestowyd De F. 7. Ful] Foule F : soth] om. Rl Ba F J Ch : suspessious] specious D F Bb (*but altered by other hand to suspessious*). 8. hast þou] hastow N F : ȝit] ȝut Rl Ba : wel] om. T. STAN. 8.—1. remembred] rehersed P. 3. eke] om. P : greued] agreuyd T H : fore] sore T H F. 4. þy] my Rl Ba Ch ; myn N T H Dc F J. 5. ne] nor D ; ne no Dc. 6. rāþer] rayþer R. 7. now] om. H. 8. Thow] and H. STAN. 9.—1. hast] haste thow T : rehersed] receyued M D ; reherhed J. 2. accusoures] accusatours Rl Ba J Ch ; accusours N H. 3. wele] fulle well D. 4. eke] also h ; om. Dc ; þe (2)] om. H : senatoures] senatours Rl Ba N H. 5. haue] om. N ; a Dc : ben] om. H : sustenoures] susteynours Rl Ba N H ; defensours P. 6. sorwest] sorowest Rl Ba M h F ; soroest C J : my] the N. 7. þe wiche which that T ; which H : þe of] om. T H ; þe D : surfetoures] surfetours Rl Ba N H h ; fforfetourys T ; furfetours D. 8. wepest] welest P : eke] also h : foulyng] lesyng P : þy] my T H : fame] name T H D.

(133)

10. And at þe laste to fortune ganstow chide  
 þat mede wiþ meryt is noght euene i-weie ;  
 Why surfetours ben suffred in hire pride  
 And good folk greued, þus herde I þe seie ;  
 And in þy song to god þus gan þou preie,  
 þat þilke pees þat is in heuene on hye,  
 This wrecchid world schulde kepe vnder hys keye  
 þat now gouerned is vncertainlye.

(134)

11. I vndirstonde al thyn entencioun,  
 But est sone in þat other side I see  
 þat moche noyse of thyne affeccioun  
 Hath sore distracteþ and distourbed þee  
 And put thy mynde out of tranquillite,  
 As sorwe, mournynge, heuynesse and ire ;  
 And while þat þou art ȝit in þis degree  
 Thow myght no myghti medicyne endure.

(135)

12. Wherfore we schal attempten and assay,  
 Now wiþ a litel lightere remedye,  
 þat swollen sorwe for to put away  
 þat in þy herte is woxen hard and drye,

PROSA V, STAN. 10.—1. And] But P: at þe] atte Rl Ba N D F J Ch; at P: ganstow] canst þou Rl Ba Ch; ganne thow T H; gan they M D; canstou F: ganstow chide] gavesthow theise h; canst thou clyde J. 2. euene] euen Rl Ba N T H R Bb: i weie] way T H; weie Dc F P. 3. sur-fetours] fforfetourys T; forfetours D. 4. folk] folkys T: þe] om. N. 5. song] foos M D: þus gan þou preie] þou gan to prey M; þou gan þis prey F: þus] om. D: gan] con Rl; can Ba J: þou] þus Dc. 6. þilke] ylke T Dc: heuene] heuyn is F. 7. wordl] wordle H: vnder] and vnder Rl Ba F. 8. now] om. Rl Ba F J: now gouerned is] þus vngouerned is M D; ys ruled thus P: is] vs h. STAN. 11.—1. vndirstonde] vnderstod Rl Ba C H R M D Bb F J. 2. some] om. T: see] saye T: sey H. 3. noyse] desyne P. 4. distracteþ] distractyted Rl Ba Ch; distract M D; distourbed] dystourbled Ba M J; distractyld T H P; troubled D: þee] me D. 5. out] om. T H: of] of thy D F. 6. As] And T H: sorwe] sorow Rl Ba F P; sorowe M Bb; sore N T H; soro C. 7. þat] om. T M D h: ȝit] ȝete Rl; here Ba Ch: And when þou art here in þis degree P. 8. myght] maist N H; mayste T: no] not H: endure] endire R; indure Ch. STAN. 12.—1. schal] shull N: attempten] tempere Dc; tempte F. 2. Now] No Ch: litel] om. F: lightere] lighte D. 3. swollen sorwe] shall sorowis T; shullen sowres H; doleful sorow P: sorwe] sorwe Rl Ba Ch; sore N; soro C; sorow h: for] om. F. 4. woxen] waxen Rl Ba J; wexen P.

Wiþ softealue achaufe it *and* diffye.  
 A medecyne þanne þat more myghti [i]s  
 Amenden schal þat malice esilye,  
 þat sorwfull swellyng lightly schal [relisse].

(136)

[METRUM vj<sup>m</sup>]

Cum febi radiis.

1. For who so wolde in hote somer sesoun,  
 Whenne þat þe sonne in cancer is i-set,  
 Sowen his corne, he wroght all out of resoun  
 And of his trist no doute he schulde be let;  
 Be þat he haþ wiþ wynter dayes met,  
 He schall of other purueance haue nede,  
 And but he kan gouerne hym-self þe bet,  
 With acorneȝ his hunger must hym fede.

(137)

2. When þat þe northwynd bloweþ kene *and* cold  
 In wynter tyme a verray foole he were  
 In wylde woode þat gader floures wold,  
 Or rype grapes in þe tyme of vere.  
 It falleþ not þat sesoun of þe ȝere  
 þe floures fresche ne rype fruyt to fynde,  
 For god hath set al þing in erthe here  
 To kepe hem-self in certayn course of kynde.

PROSA V, STAN. 12.—5. softe] esy P: diffye] defy Rl Ba; defye N H h; esye Dc. 6. þat more myghti es] more myghty is malice D: es] is Rl Ba N. 7. malice] metsyn T: medycyne H: om. D. 8. sorwfull] sorowefull Rl Ba; sorwful N; sorowfull C; sorowful T H h J Ch: relisse H] wele isse M D; we lis Rl Ba Ch; we lisso N; we lese L R Bb Dc T C. METRUM VI, STAN. 1.—1. For who so wolde] Ho so þat wyl P: wolde] wole: somer] someres N. 2. þe] om. Ba: in cancer is i set'] is in cancer sett T: cancer] cancro M D; cancre F: i set'] set Rl Ba J Ch; sette H: eset C. 3. wroght] worcheth P: all] om. T P: all out of] ayeyn F: resoun] seeson D. 4. trist] trost D: schulde] shal T H P. 5. Be] But Ch: hap] haue Ba: wynter] wayne T H: wintres F: met] y mett H F. 6. Of other purueaunce he shall haue nede P. 7. but] but þat Rl Ba Ch; om. R: hym] hem H. 8. acorneȝ] attourneȝ N; acrys T; acrees H: must] moste R Bb: hym] he N M D; be T H. STAN. 2.—1. When þat] And when P; when T. 2. he were] were hee T. 3. In] In the T: gader] geder Rl Ba; gedre N; gedir R Bb. 4. þe] om. Ch. 5. þat] for þat M: for thee D: to þat F: þe] þere Ch. 6. þe] þen F: fruyt] fruytes J: to] om. F. 7. in] in þe J. 8. in] a Rl Ba F J Ch: To kepen euer one certen course of kynde P. [Stan. om. H, folio torn.]

(138)

3. He ne suffreþ noȝht þe stoundes for to melle  
 Wiche he hath set in certayn gouernance,  
 But in theire office euery þyng to dwelle ;  
 They mowe noȝht fleen wiþ no variance.  
 What þing þat falleþ f[ro] certayn ordenaunce  
 And keþþ hym noȝht wiþ-ynne þe course of kynde,  
 He ne cheueþ noȝht bot fa[1]leþ in meschance ;  
 He ne may noȝht failen of a febil ende.

(139)

PROSA vj<sup>a</sup>

primum igitur pateris.

1. ‘Bot firste,’ sche seide, ‘wolde þou suffre me  
 Now with a fewe demaundes for to fele  
 þe verrey grounde of thyn infirmitie,  
 And all þe ground to gropen euery dele  
 þat I may wite how þou myg ht haue þyn hele ?  
 “Seith on,” I seide, “what þat euer ȝow lest.  
 þat ȝe enserche my sore I will it wele,  
 And I schal answere as me þinkeþ best.”

(140)

2. ‘Say me,’ sche sayde, ‘how is þis world demened,  
 As whether be fortunes variaunce,  
 Or elles thou trowest þat it is sustened  
 Be any resoun of certayn ordinaunce ?’

METRUM VI, STAN. 3.—1. ne] om. T F: þe] in D: stoundes] stounes J: mell] medle Dc. 2. hath] om. Rl Ba F J Ch. 4. fleen] fayle T; faylen P. 5. þing] om. T: falleþ] leueþ P: fro C T F] for other MSS.; om P. 6. And keþþ hym noȝht] abidyngne not P: wiþ ynne] in M; om. F: course] certe T. 7. ne cheueþ] sheweth T; prospereþ P; ne accheveth h; fayleþ] fallas T; falleþ M D J: in] with Dc: meschaunce] myschefe T: But falleþ liȝthli to yeueri chaunse F. 8. febil] fell T. [Stan. om. H, folio torn.] PROSA VI, STAN. 1.—1. Wolde þou] Wilton N; woltoü F; wilte þou T M D. 2. feele] fle T. 3. grounde] kende P. 5. myght] maist N; may H; then myght h: þyn] om. T. 6. Seith] Say T H: I seide] om. T H: þat] om. F: ȝow] þou Rl Ba T M: þy H: þe F: Now seyth on quod I what ye luste P. 7. will] wole N M h: it] om. T. 8. þinkeþ] thinkest C; þenkith H R; thyncketh h; semyht Dc. [ll. 1-4 om. H, folio torn.] STAN. 2.—1. me] on N: sche sayde] quod she Dc: þis] his Ch; world] worde T; wordle H. 2. As where bye fortune or variaunce D. 3. elles] ell H: thou] om. M D: þat] om. F. 4. of] or T H F: Be any resoun of] By resoun of som P.

"God haþ," quod I, "all þincȝ in gouernance;  
This doute I noȝt but trewly I beleue:  
Come neuer þat day þat fall[e] me þat chaunce  
Out of myne herte þat sentence for to meue."

(141)

3. 'Right as þou seide,' quod sche, 'right so it is,  
And in þy song whilare right so þou ment',  
Bot neuer-þe-latter thi compleynt was þis,  
þat god on man sette no gouernement  
Ne to youre werkes took he none entent:  
That thyng it was [þat] þou gan wepe *and* waille,  
All oþre þing þou woldest wel consent  
That god haþ putte at certayne gouernaile.

(142)

4. Owh! I merveile wonder hugely,  
Sith þow in suche a sentence art i-set,  
þat þou art seke of any malady.  
Som thing þere is wherby þi hele is let  
Wherfor we schal þe grounde enserchen bet:  
Sith god aboue all erþely þinges yemeþ,  
Thus seidest þou whilere, but seie me yit,  
Be whiche gouernementes as ye semeth?'

PROSA VI, STAN. 2.—5. haþ] had T H : That god knoweth þat hath all in gouernance P. 6. trewly] newly T H : I (2) om. Ch. 7. Come] Come me Dc : falle] fall L: me] om. T H: falle me] me befallie P. STAN. 3.—1. seide] sayest T P ; wȝyst H : right (2) om. Rl Ba H F J Ch P. 2. And] om. H : whilare] wel nere Rl Ba J ; wel more F ; right so] om. T D ; so H. 3. neuer pe latter] neuerþeles T H : thi] þis Ba : was] is H. 4. on man sette no] on no man sett þat T. 5. youre] ther P: took he] takeþ F. 6. Insertion from MS. R begins here. þat (2) N M h] om. all other MSS.: gan] can Rl Ba T J Ch : þat þou gan] þat þou canst F. 7. þing] thynges h. 8. haþ putte at] had set hyt at P: at] in N. [ll. 5-8 om. H, folio torn. ll. 6-8 om. L, folio om. Text R.] STAN. 4.—1. Owh] O which Rl Ba F J Ch ; O N ; O whyhte T ; O what M D ; ought h ; O wher Dc: merveile] merveylyd T ; to merveille h: hugely] hogly C: O that I wonder now ful hugely P. 2. i set] sett T F. 3. malady] melody T D. 5. schal] shull Rl Ba ; shulde D ; sholde h: we schal þe grounde enserchen] þe grounde we shall serche T ; þe ground we schal enserche Dc ; þe grounde I shal enserchen P: enserchen] enserch Ch. 6. þinges] þing Rl Ba F J Ch: yemeth] i mett T ; yeueth h: Sith god himselfe al thinges ruleth P. 7. Thus] This F: seidest þou] seidestow N F: me] nat T: yit] zutte Rl Ba. 8. whiche] what: gouernementȝ] gouernement T: ye] the N T Dc. [Stan. om. L H (Text R).]

(143)

5. "Yore sentence," quod I, "haue I noght conseyued ;  
 I can not answer to yore questioun."  
 'In sothe,' sche seide, 'now am I noght desceyued ;  
 The causes of thi perturbacioun  
 I knowe þe[m] wele by estimacioun.  
 Bot seie me yit, hast þou þis in þi mynde,  
 To what purpos or what entenciou[n]  
 Draweþ fynally þe verray course of kynde ?'

(144)

6. "I haue," quod I, "herde tolde it here be-for[n]e,  
 Bot drerynesse haþ marred all my þoght."  
 'Yit hast þou noght,' quod sche, 'þi wit forlorne  
 Pat þou ne wost who haþ þise þynges wroght ?'  
 "God hath," quod I, "all þinges forth [i-]broght."  
 'I wondre þan,' sche seide, 'how schold þis be ?  
 Of þe begynnnyng sith þow doutest noght,  
 The ende may noght been vnwynt perde.

(145)

7. This is the kynde of suche distourbalaunce,  
 Pat þay may moue a man out of his place,  
 But neuerþeles suche maner of greuaunce  
 Ne may hym noght all vterly arace,  
 Pat is to seien, all put him out of grace.  
 Maist þow remembre how pat þou art a man ?'

PROSA VI, STAN. 5.—3. sche seide] seid she F; ye seide J; quod she P. 4. causes] cause J. 5. þem] þeim Rl Ba F J Ch: hem N M; theyme D; them h P; yee C; þe R L; þem wele] thy wille T. 6. seie] seide Ch: yit] thatt T: hast þou] hastow N C F: in þi mynde] i mynde T; in mynde M h. 7. To] That F: or] or to F: or what entenciou[n] by inclination P. 8. verray] om. F; comen P: fynally þe verray course] verrely fynall corse T. [Stan. om. L H Dc Fols. om. (Text R.)] STAN. 6.—1. tolde] om. T; telle D: it] om. F: before] besforne all other MSS. 3. hast þou] hastow N: noght] om. F: wit] wille T H h: forlorne] forloron] F. 4. wost] wotest T; wist D: þise þynges wroght] thys world y wroght P. 5. God] O god P: hath] om. N; þynges] ping F Ch: ibroght] y broght T H F; y broft P; broght other MSS. 6. sche seide] seide shee D; quod she F: schold] myght Rl Ba C h F Ch Bb (but altered to schold by later hand); may N P; shalle D. 7. sith] sithen T: noght] i nofte P. 8. The ende] Thende h: vnwynt] vnwynty T; vnknown P. [Stan. om. L Dc (Text R.)] STAN. 7.—1. suche] þis Rl Ba F J Bb (but altered to suche by later hand); thy N: distourbalaunce] N T H D F. 2. may] om. H F: moue] meue Rl Ba N H D P: may moue] make many h. 3. neuerþeles] netheles h: of] om. N. 4. Ye may hit not vterli arace F. 5. Ne put hym fully fro the state of grace P. 6. Maist þow] Maystow Rl N; Might þou P: how] om. H P: þat] om. D.

"For soth," quod I, "it were a wonder case  
If I schuld noght my-self in mynde han."

(146)

8. 'Yit canst þou,' quod sche, 'telle me furthermore  
þe kyndly properte of man what it is?'  
I sey[d]e, "yea; as I haue herde byfore,  
A resounable best wiþ dedlynesse.  
þat I am suche I knowe wel *and* confesse."  
'Noght elles,' quod sche, 'knowest þou of þi kynde.'  
"For sothe," quod I, † "I can not elles gesse,  
Ne noght but þis haue I now in my mynde."

(147)

9. 'Another cause now knowe I wel,' quod sche,  
'Of þi disese *and* þat a wonder grete,  
Whiche is þe grounde of þyne infirmite;  
For what þou art, þi-self þou hast for-yete,  
Wherfor þe reson fully haue we gete  
Of þi disese, *and* furthermore a mene  
How þat it may the vtterly forlete,  
And þou to helpe be restored clene.

(148)

10. For cause þou art confounded in þi wit  
With þis forgetyng of þi self, for-thi  
þat fro thi good in exile art þou pyt,  
Thus waylest s[oo] *and* wenest folily;

PROSA VI, STAN. 7.—7. For soth] Ye forsoth T; In soth P. 8. I]  
om. C: myself in mynde] myselfen mynd T: hanj hauen H. [Stan. om. L  
Dc (Text R).] STAN. 8.—1. canst þou quod sche] quod she canstow N:  
quod sche] forsothe T; om. F: telle] ought telle M D: me] om. P. 2.  
kyndly] kynde F: it] om. T H; he F. 3. I seyde yea] Ye quod I P:  
seyde Rl Ba C T H F J Ch] seye R L; say N; sey h: yea] om. T H; the  
D; yes F: I (2)] ye T H. 5. þat] om. N: knowe wel] knowlege T;  
knowlech H; know yt well J; know & wyll P. 6. elles] ell H: of]  
om. N. 7. I (1)] sche R: I can not elles] noft elles as I P: elles] ell  
H h. 8. haue I now] can I haue P: now] om. Rl Ba N C T F J Ch Bb  
(inserted later). [ll. 5–8 om. M D; stan. om. L Dc (Text R).] STAN. 9.—  
1. now] om. Rl N C F Bb (insert. later): knowe I] I know T: well will J.  
2. a] om. F Ch; I P. 3. þe] þy H. 4. þou art] þou hast P: þou art  
þi self] thyself art T: þou (2)] om. F. 7. þat] om. F: it may the] thou  
shalt it P: the] be Ba Ch: the vtterly] vtterly be F: forlete] foryete h.  
8. be] to be H: helpe] hele F. [L 5 om. T; stan. om. L Dc (Text R).]  
STAN. 10.—2. forgetyng] foryetoun F: in exile art þou pyt] þou art in excile  
brought T: art þou pyt] þu art y put H. 3. art þou] artou F. 4. Thus  
This F: waylest soo] wenyst thou TH; waylest pow M D; wailest soo h Bb  
(see first, but altered to soo by later hand); weilestou F: folily] foly T:  
Thou wenest & complaynest pyteosly P.

And furthermore also as suppose I,  
 For þou nost what þe ende of þynges is,  
 þat wicked men *and* full of felonye,  
 [T]how wenest þat þei haue myght *and* wilfulness.

(149)

11. Thou hast forgete be whiche gouernement  
 This world is led ; þat makest þou thi colour,  
 þat [þ]is fortunes enterchaungement  
 Be fletyng þ[u]s wiþ-oute gouernour.  
 These ben lo causes of right grete vigour  
 Noght only to sekenesse and desese,  
 But vnto deth, bot-if þou haue socour  
 þat may the of þis[e] biter boundes ese.

(150)

12. Yit nature haþ noght all forsake þe,  
 Thanked be þe auctor of thyn hele ;  
 We haue yit a confort þat I see  
 That schall þi sikenesse slaken euerydele.  
 This sothfast sentence haue we sauied wele :  
 þat god haþe all þis world in gouernaunce,  
 Thus trowest þou, as I suppose and fele,  
 And noght suget to happes variaunce.

(151)

13. Ne drede þe not for of þis litel shyn  
 A lyfly hete schal spring[en] of thi brest.

**PROSA VI.** STAN. 10.—6. *nost*] ne wooste D ; wotest not h ; wost not F ; ne knowest P : þe ende] thende h : þynges] thyng h ; þese þinges F : is] om. N. 7. þat wicked men and full] Thou trouest þat wrecches full P : men] man Rl : felonye] foly T. 8. Thow N T H M D F Ch] How *all* other MSS. : þat] om. T H M D F : That they haue very myght and welthynesse P. [Stan. om. L Dc (Text R).] STAN. 11.—2. world] wordle H : led] lete Ch : þat] this F. 3. þat is fortunes] þat þys forennes T : þis] Rl Ch ; þese H F P ; is *all other* MSS. : enterchaungement] entier chaument h ; enterchaungementes P. 4. thus] N H M D ; þys T ; þis other MSS. 5. These ben lo] Lo thes ben P : lo] pee D ; tho h : right] om. N T. 6. and] and to F : desese] distresse T H. 7. bot] om. P : if] if þat P : haue] fayle P. 8. may] my soo h : of] out of F : þis] R ; þise Rl ; þe N : boundes] woundes H ; bandes J : ese] lese N H ; lesse C : That the myghte of thyse bytter wondes lesse T : That may þe with these bytter paynes lese P. [Stan. om. L Dc (Text R).] STAN. 12.—2. Thanked] I thonkyd T H ; Worth thankes P. 3. yit] om. Rl Ba F J Ch : a] one P. 4. sikenesse] sorow P. 5. sothfast] soth T ; sohte H : haue we] we hafe F : we] om. M D. 6. haþe all þis world in] thys world hath in his P. 7. trowest pow] pou beleuest P : suppose] conceyue P : & fele] om. M. 8. noght] no F : to] vnto F. [Stan. om. L Dc (Text R).] STAN. 13.—*End of insertion from R.* 1. þe] thowe D : of] in Ba Ch ; om. N : shyn] skyn Rl Ba F J Ch ; shyne N. 2. of] oute of F ; in P.

Bot for as moche as myghti medicyn  
 To gif the yit þe tyme is noght þe best,  
 And for as moche as myndes þus oppressed  
 Haue þis of naturel condicioun,  
 Whan þei fro thaym han trewe conseytes cast,  
 They wynde hem-self in false opinioun

(152)

14. Wherof derknesse [and] perturbacioun  
 Thus wexeth vp, and fully þei distroye  
 The sight of trewe consideracioun ;  
 Wherfore I schal assaien suttellie  
 To voyden wiþ som esy remedie  
 This derke cloude, if it may voided be,  
 Of fals affeccioun and esely  
 The verray light so schalt pou knowe *and* see

(153)

METRUM vijm

nubibus a[t]ris condita.

1. The sterres couered wiþ þe clowdes blake  
 Ne mowe not clearly cast adoun þaire light,  
 And when the wood[e] sotheren wynd doþ wake,  
 He waloweth vp þe see wiþ huge might.  
 The wawes þan þat were clere *and* bright  
 Lyk as þe glas or as the someres day,

PROSA VI, STAN. 13.—3. for as moche as myghti] as for shuche a myghty T : myghti] lyfly N ; a myghty D. 4. gif] ȝeue Rl Ba N H h : þe] om. T H F P : yit þe tyme is noght þe best] tyme ȝet is nat best Dc. 5. And] But Dc : myndes N C T H P] þy mynde is Dc ; mynde is other MSS. thus] this h F : þus oppressedl þis expressyd H : And for that thy mynde is opprest D. 6. Haueth this nature and condition P. 7. han trewe] om. F : han trewe conseytes] trew consaytes haue T : cast] kest C. That when they haue trew conseytes lest P. 8. wynde] wende D ; clothe P. STAN. 14.—1. Wherof] Therefore F : and H] is other MSS. 2. Thus] This D : wexeth] vexith H : Thus wexeth] may waxen P : and fully þei] that fully wyl P. 3. trewe] verray & trewe T. 4. assaien] aserne T ; assern H. 5. voyden] a voyde P : wiþ] theyme with T : esy] yesy F. 6. voided] avoided h. 7. esely] yesely F. 8. so schalt] then migth P : schalt þou] shaltow N F [ll. 4 and 5 in reverse order D, and l. 5 again repeated after l. 4.] METRUM VII, atris] aeris L. STAN. 1.—1. þe (2)] om. D F Ch. 2. Ne] om. F : mowe] may P : not] om. T : cast adoun] caste doun T ; casten doun P. 3. woode N D h] wode Rl Ba C ; wood L R Bb : wood sotheren wynd] sowþe woode wynde H : sotheren] south T : wake] awake T H P ; quake Dc. 4. waloweth] walweth N T ; walweth D : huge] hoge C. 5. þan] om. F. 6. as (2)] om T : someres] somer D

With filthe þat is resolued and vnheight  
Out fro þeym-self þei let oure sight away.

(154)

2. The ryuer þ rennyng out of þe hyhe mountaynes  
Is often tyme wiþstonden hugely  
As be som roche encountrynge þere agaynes  
þe wieche is fallen fro som clyf on hyhe.  
If þou þerfore wil see entertyfly,  
Be þ clere beholdynge trowþe þ for to deme,  
Lo take þis path and holde it certanly,  
Gladnesse and drede out of [thy] herte þou flemme.

(155)

3. Ne ioye þou noght of worldly wilfulnesses,  
Ne drede þe noping of þis worldly dynne,  
Ne hope þou noght þat transitorie es,  
Ne sorwe þou noght but only for thi synne,  
For euery þoght þat þis regneþ ynne  
Ful trouble and derk it is and may noght see.  
He is so wrast away he may not wynne,  
And brideled sore what þat euer he be.

Explicit Boecij de consolacione philosophie liber primus.

METRUM VII, STAN. 1.—7. filthe] fillthyd T H : is resolued] resolued ben P: and] vp T: vnheight] on hight N T P. 8. þeym] oure T: let] lede T; ledd H: oure] þe Dc: And fro thes wawes letteth oure sight away P. STAN. 2.—1. ryuer P] ryver T; ryueres other MSS.: out] om. F: þe] om. D Dc. F P: mountaynes] montayne H. 2. Is] Ben D; As P: tyme] tymes T: wiþ stonden] which stonde h; withstand J. 3. roche] stone P: encountrynge] entreynge R: þere] om. T. 4. clyf] chof h; rocke P: on] a T H. 5. therfore wil see] wol se therfore T: wil] wult H; wilt D; woll h: see] so F. 6. Be clere beholdynge trowþe] By trew holdingt rowth T H; a trewe beholdingt a trowþe F; With trew beholdingt truthes P: Be Rl Ba N C Dc Ch Bb (*altered from Bot by later hand*) Bot L R h M D: clere] true D: trowþe] trouthe N D; treuth Rl Ba Ch; þe trowþe Dc; trowþe] L R h Bb M. 8. herte L] thi herte other MSS.: þon] shall J: flemc] fleyn P. STAN. 3.—1. þou] the D: worldly] wordly T Dc; wordle H: wilfulness] dynne F. 2. þe] om. D; þou Dc: noping] no þynges H: worldly] wordly Dc: dynne] deuyne T: Ne hope þou not þat transitory is F. 3. noght] thought H: transitorie es] transitories h: es] is Rl Ba N M D J: Ne sorrow þou not but for thi synne F. 4. sorwe] sorowe Rl Ba D J; sorrow H h: but only for thi] but yf yt be for P: only] om. h: That þou so often hast done amys F (*inserted later in darker ink*). 5. þoght] thofte P. 6. Ful] om. P: trouble] troubeli F. 7. wrast] wraſte F: away] all wey T H: not] noſte P. 8. sore what þat euer he be] so þat he may not be fre P: þat] om. R F: euer] yeuer F: he] it N T.

INNICIJ PATRICIJ TORQUACI BOECIJ  
EX CONSULIS DE CONSOLACIONE  
INCIPIIT LIBER SECUNDUS

(156)

[PROSA j<sup>a</sup>]

1. Than after this astound sche helde hire stille  
And when sche wiþ a-tempre[d] stil[le]nesse  
Had seen þat myn entencioun *and* my will  
Was set to listen all with sobernesse,  
Thus sche began if it be as I gesse :  
*Quod* sche ‘þat I the cause *and* grounde knawe,  
Lo all þe habit of thyn heuynesse  
I can the tellen fully as I trawe.

(157)

2. In thy desire þou sorwest *and* compleynest<sup>t</sup>  
Vpon fortune þat with þe was a while,  
Wiche now þat hath peruered, as þou feynest,  
Þe state of þy corage in þis exile.  
I vndirstonde hire wrenches *and* hire wile  
Of þylke fortune wonderly disgised,  
Wiche vnto þaym whom þat hire lust begile,  
Noght first in þe bot evir sche haþ them vsed.

PROSA I, STAN. 1.—1. Than] When T: astound] stounde Dc: helde hire] was F. 2. wiþ atempre] by a tempore P: atempre] atempred Rl Ba N T H R Dc J Ch: stilnesse] stillenesse Rl Ba N. 3. seen] hen R; sey F: þat] with T: entencioun] attention P: my] om. F. 4. set] setthe Ch: listen] lusten Rl Ba D; heren P: all] her P. 6. þat I the] now I see in þe F: þat I] om. H: the cause & ground] the grounde & the cause D; the ground & cause P: ground knawe L] groundey knowe N C H; grounde knowe h; þe grownd knowe Dc Ch: knawel] knewe Rl Ba R Ch: Quod she the cause and as I know a grounde T. 7. þe habit] thabite h: thyn] myn Dc. 8. tellen] tell T. STAN. 2.—1. sorwest] sorowest Rl Ba h: sorwest C. 2. þat] whiche D 3. Wiche] þat D: now þat hath] hath now F: þat] om. Rl T H D J: þat hath peruered] hath peruered þat N: hath] hast T. 4. state] estate Rl N R F: þis] om. Ba Dc F J Ch; þyn R D: þus Bb. 5. hire wrenches & hire] theire wrecchidnesse & theire D; hire (2)] theire h. 6. þylke] þik R: wonderly] wordly T; wordely H. 7. vnto þaym whom] yn to hem whan H: whom þat] that so P: whom þat hire lust begile] whan that thaye luste and begyle T: that herselfe too begyle D: begile] to begyle Rl Ba F J Ch. 8. them] om. T H; hem Bb (*but altered by later hand to them*).

(158)

3. Sche wil be plesant *and* famyliere,  
 Full blaundischyng<sup>i</sup> in chere *and* debonaire,  
 Til þat hire like for to chaunge hire chere  
 And atte laste for-lete hem in despeyre  
 And out of hope þat [n]euer sche wil repayre ;  
 If þat þou knewe hire kynde *and* hire desert,  
 Þat þou be hire ne haddest nothing<sup>i</sup> faire  
 Ne noþing<sup>i</sup> lost, þow scholdest<sup>i</sup> knowe apert.

(159)

4. But as I trowe wiþouten gret trauaile  
 I schal reuoken þis to thy science ;  
 For þou were wont to hurtlen *and* assaile  
 With manful wordes drawen out of my sentence,  
 Whan þat sche blaundischyng<sup>i</sup> in thy presence  
 Sche plesid † the ; but certayn soth is þis,  
 Per fa[ll]leþ neuer suche sodeyn chaungementes  
 [But] þat youre corage somwhat chaunged is.

(160)

5. So is it now befallen, it is no nay,  
 þat þou art put out of tranquillite.  
 But tyme is þe to tasten *and* assay  
 Som softe þing<sup>i</sup> þat swete *and* lusty be,

**PROSA I, STAN. 3.—1.** will wol Rl Ba h ; wole N ; wolle F ; walde Ch : plesant<sup>i</sup> presant R.    2. chere] chiere h.    3. like] lust J: for] om. h Dc F: chere] chiere h.    4. atte] at þe Rl Ba C Dc J; at h ; att the T H: forlete] forlatte N ; to lete T ; for to lete H: hem] hym Dc.    5. And] Al: neuer F] euer other MSS.: wil wole N ; woll h: That first was lonesom she wil þan apayne D.    6. hire (2)] om. T.    7. be hire ne haddest] here hadde T; ne] om. R: ne haddest] naddest F.    8. noþing<sup>i</sup> nouȝt P: lost] leste T h M ; ylost P.    STAN. 4.—1. trowe] trowen Ba: gret] greten R.    2. reuoken] redoute N: thy] the D.    3. hurtlen] hurlen N ; hurle F ; dispute P: and] and to Dc.    4. manful] many N: out] om. H Dc P: sentence] science Ch P.    5. sche] om. Ba J Ch ; thee D: blaundischyng<sup>i</sup> blande-shid] F: in thy] thus in thy T; in the D.    6. Sche] So P: plesede N H] pleased P; plesyd T; plesid it D; plesith other MSS.: soth] soht H: is þis] it is T h F.    7. þer] The T: falleþ N] fallen T H; faileþ other MSS.: chaungementes] chaungement D.    8. But þat D] pat other MSS.: chaunged] he chaungid C P.    [ll. 3, 4 om. T.]    STAN. 5.—1. So is it] Soþen hit is F: is it now befallen] it is now fallyn T; hit is now befall N D.    2. thou art] ye ere T.    3. But tyme is þe to tasten] Time hit is þou taste F: tyme] om. T H: þe] ȝe N: om. D: tasten] attesten T H; casten Ba Ch: assay] assayle T.    4. softe] soft R: Som softe þing<sup>i</sup>] Sum thyng softe T: þing<sup>i</sup>] thyngys D.

þat whan it haþ his deuer done in the,  
 I hope it schal þe menden *and* dispose,  
 þat strenger[e] drinkes mowe haue þaire entre  
 þat schal þe helpen vp as I suppose.

(161)

## 6. Com forth now swetnes rethorien

Wiþ sotilte of suasioun  
 Wiche only þenne thi weies canst demene  
 When thow ne leuest oure institucioun.  
 Musik also wiþ swetnesse of thi sown,  
 þat art a damysele of oure-awne house,  
 Atempre wel thi tunes vp *and* doun  
 þat to þis man may be deliciouse.

(162)

## 7. What is the, man, where-of mayst þou compleyne?

What is þe cause of all þy heuynesse?  
 Som newe or vnkouth þinges hastow seyne?  
 Fortune agayn þe only turned is?  
 Now trowest þow so, than errest þow iwisse,  
 For all-[wey] suche hire maners haue be.  
 Bot sche haþ in the keped hir stabilnesse,  
 þat stondeþ alway in mutabilite.

(163)

8. Right suche sche was wiþ all hire blaundischinges  
 When sche suche feyned chere gan to make,

PROSA I, STAN. 5.—5. it] he Dc: his deuer done in the] doon his devoure  
 on the T H: the] me Dc. 6. þe] yea C; om. R D: menden] amenden Rl  
 J Ch; amend T; amende D h Dc P. 7. strenger] strengere R Bb: mowe]  
 may F: þaire] her N; om. T: entre] entiere h. 8. helpen] helpe N;  
 helyn H; helen P. STAN. 6.—1. forth] forthe Ba: now] thou T H;  
 to vs F: swetnes] swiftnesse N: rethorien] rethoriene Bl Ba: rhetoryciene  
 Dc. 2. sotilte] soubtile D; sotyl Dc; subtily Ch: of] of þy F  
 suasioun] saluacioun F. 3. þenne] om. T Dc; þat F: thi] the T; þey  
 Dc: weies] way D: canst] can T. 4. leuest] louest H; list h: institucioun]  
 instycien T. 5. Musik] Musicik H. 6. þat] Thowe D. 7. Atempre]  
 Attempred R: wel] wyll Rl: tunes] tenys H; tymes R D. 8. man] om.  
 H. STAN. 7.—1. mayst þou] maistow N F; doyst þou T: compleyne]  
 playne T. 3. or] om. T; oper F: vnkouth] cowþe H. 4. agayn þe  
 only turned is] only ayen the is turnyd yee T: agayn þe only] only agayn  
 the H: is] esse Rl Ba R Bb. 5. trowest þow] trowestou F: errest pow]  
 arrestou F. 6. alle other MSS.] all wey T H P: hire] theyre D h: be]  
 i be Kl Ba T H Dc J. 7. in the keped] kepte in þe F P: keped] kept Rl  
 Ba N H D Ch: hir] om. F: stabilnesse] stablinesse Ba. 8. stondeþ  
 alway] kendly standeth P: mutabilite] mutabill T. STAN. 8.—1. was]  
 om. F: blaundischinges] blandishyng. 2. feyned chere] flaterynge plesance  
 P; feyned] rayned D: chere] om. T H: gan] can Rl Ba T J Ch: to] hem N;  
 the C T H Dc F P.

To make þe lusten in thise worldly þinges  
 þat passen right as done þese cloudes blake.  
 Attaynt þat blynde goddes hast þou take  
 With double face of doutfull auenture,  
 For sche it is þat haþ þe now forsake  
 Of whos[e] frendship may no man be sure.

(164)

9. If þou appreue in thyng opinioun<sup>1</sup>  
 þat sche is good *and* all to þy plesaunce,  
 Lo take in worth þan hire condicioun,  
 And vse hire most tho[u] wiþ hire variance.  
 Compleyn þe noght, make no contrariance,  
 And if þou grise[st] of hire treccherie,  
 Than cast hire of, despice here wiþ meschaunce  
 þat [to] play is wont so harmfullye.

(165)

10. The cause þat now hath the wiþ sorwe schent'  
 Lo schulde be cause of pees *and* lustynesse.  
 Sche haþ þe left, þe wiche, or sche be went,  
 There is no man þat may haue sekirnesse.  
 And holdest þow þis as for a wilfulness  
 Of preciouste þat þus away schal slyde?

PROSA I, STAN. 8.—3. make] lere P; lusten] lusty T D F; lustee h: in] to Ch: pise] peses J: worldly] wordly T Dc; wordle H. 4. right] om. F: as] om. N: done] om. T: þese] þe Rl Ba T D. 5. Attaynt] Arteynt H; Take hede P. 6. face] om. T H: fare D: doutfull] doughte full T; double h F: auenture] adventuris D. 7. þat] now that h; haþ þe now] now the hath T. 8. whos] whose Rl; his T H: may] ther may N: no] now H. STAN. 9.—2. Her goodnesse when she is to thy plesaunce P. 3. Lo] om. P: take in worth] Take thou a worth P: in] a T H F. 4. hire (1)] it T H P: most] muste N: pou H F] om. D: tho other MSS.: most thou] pou moste F. 5. contrariance] greuaunce T. 6. þou] pou be Ba Ch; the P: grystest H h] grised L R; a grised F; gryved D; greued J; greseth P; gisest of] greuaunce take of T; grised with Dc. 7. Cast hire of despice here] Cast here forth and dispise her H: here om. D: Caste her forth with muche myschaunce T. 8. That to Ba Dc F Ch P] þat other MSS.: wont] y wont H; would F: so] ful N: harmfully] harmesfullye F. STAN. 10.—1. now hath þe] þe hath now Dc; hath þe T: wiþ sorwe schent] sorowe sent D: schent] has hente T. 2. Shuld moue the now with joy & lustynesse P. 3. left] rafte D; þe (2) om. T: wiche] wiþ J: or] is or F: be] om. D. 4. man] wight P: sekirnesse] sikernesse Rl Ba N R Bb; sekurnesse H; sikrenesse M. 5. as] om. F: wilfulness] welthynesse P. 6. preciouste] precious T; preciouyst H R: schal] shold H.

And now so dere † to þe þe presence is  
Of þis fortune vnfeithfully to abide !

(166)

11. And when sche goth, to mourne sche ȝow makeþ,  
Sith holden at ȝoure will sche wol noght be.  
Sche l[e]ueþ hem wrecches wiche þat sche forsakeþ ;  
Sche nys noght elles þenne, as semeþ me,  
þat so vncertaynly will fro ȝow flee,  
Bot signe of meschief þat schal after falle.  
Than is it noght, all ȝoure felicite,  
Noght but a fantom þat ȝe seken alle.

(167)

12. For it sufficeþ noght, I þe ensure,  
Only to seen on þing[! þat is present ;  
Prudence the ende [of] þinges doþ mesure ;  
For-why þis dyuers enterchaungement  
Fro wele to woo þat fortune hath þe sent  
Schulde techen the hire malice noght to drede,  
Ne to hire blaundisshe take right none entent ;  
hire faire byheste take no manere hede.

(168)

13. For at þe laste þe behoueþ nede,  
Sith þou hast ones in hir ȝok i-drawe,  
Susteyne[n] all þat fortune will þe bede  
With esy herte *and* stond þy lady awe.

PROSA I, STAN. 10.—7. so] she Dc: dere Rl Ba N T H R D Dc F P :]  
dede h drede other MSS: to þe þe presence] to thy presence h: þe (2)]  
om. N D Dc; here F: is] esse Rl Ba N C. 8. vnfeithfully] vnfeithfull Rl  
Ba N C D R Dc F J Ch P. STAN. 11.—1. goth] om. T: ȝow] joy T. 2.  
wol] may P. 3. leueþ loueþ L]: hem] om. P: wiche þat] whom D; þat T;  
tho that P. 4. nys] is D F P; noght] nofte P: elles] ell H; els D. 5.  
will] wol Ba J. 6. after] om. F. 7. Than is it noght] Loo than is thys  
P: all] at all F. 3. Noght] Ne F: fantom] fayer T; faire H; fayre P:  
seken] foloeth P. [Stan. unreadable Ch, MS. worn.] STAN. 12.—1.  
noght] the nat T. 2. þat is] om. T. 3. Prudence the ende þinges]  
The ende of thinges prudens P: of] om. L R Bb F Ch: þinges] alle thynge  
D. 5. þe sent] y sent N; sent T. 6. Schulde techen the hire malice]  
Hyt shuld the teche her manace P: to] for to T. 7. blaundische] blaund-  
ishing] Rl Ba Dc F J; blaundys N H; gloosynge D: right] om. D F. 8.  
Hire faire byheste] To her behestes P: take] take of Rl Ba N Dc J. [Stan.  
unreadable Ch, leaf worn.] STAN. 13.—1. at þe] atte þe Ba; atte Rl M  
D F: þe (2)] she F; om. P. 2. i drawe] drawe D: Susteynen] So suffer  
P; susteyne L: will] woll F: bede] guide T. 4. esy] yesy F: þy] in thy  
C: lady] ladies H; ladyeȝ T].

And if thow to þy lady write a lawe  
 To come or goon after þy gouernaunce,  
 Thi labour all availeþ not an hawe,  
 Thow wrongest hire wip þyn vnsuff[e]raunce.

(169)

14. Now suffre þan *and* take it noght so straunge  
 Lest þou hire fiersnesse in hire wrappe fynde,  
 And scharp thi sorte wiche þou ne might not chaunge  
 Pow myght noght hir compellen out of kynde,  
 For if þou haue thi sayle vp in þe wynde,  
 This wotest þow wel, it helpeþ noght to stryue ;  
 What-euer þou haue purposed in þy mynde,  
 Thow must there asþe weder wil þe dryue.

(170)

15. If þou thy corne wilt in þe feldes sowe  
 It may not wexen as þy wittes feyne ;  
 For in þy wit þou might wel þinke *and* knowe  
 Som ȝere [i]s plentevous *and* som bareyne,  
 And for to growe þou might it nouȝt constreyne.  
 And if it faile þere-to what myght þou done ?

PROSA I, STAN. 13.—5. to] om. Ba Dc F J Ch: to þy lady write] write to thy lady T: write] wilt D. 6. To come or goon after] To go or come at P: þy] pei Dc: gouernaunce] ordinaunce N T H. 7. all] om. T; pen F; loo P: availeþ] ne vailthe N. 8. vnsuffraunce] vnsuffraunce Rl Ba H R h; insuffisaunce D. STAN. 14.—1. so] too D: straunge] stronge H. 2. pou hire] in her T H: fiersnesse] fersar (*but fiersnesse in margin in the other hand*) N; fferser T H P; fayrenes D: in hire] or yn her T H: wrappe] wrong N (*but altered to wrappe by diff. hand*); wraght J. 3. scharp[shape] T H: sorte] short H; swerde h; swerdes P: wiche] with T; pat F: ne] om. Rl H R D Dc F J Ch: myght] may H F; maiste D P: chaunge] choynge T. 4. myght] maye D: noȝht] om. Rl Ba F J Ch Bb (*but inserted later by other hand*): compellen] complayne T. 6. wotest þou] wostow N F; vost þou H; wost þou R D: helpeþ] nedeth N: Thou mayst not chuse where þou shalt a ryue P. 7. Whatever þou haue purposed in] For what so be the purpose of P: haue] hast N: purposed] purpose Rl Ba J. 8. there] thyder T; be there F: as] om. F: þe(1)] om. N T: weder] wether R: wil] wole N; woll h. STAN. 15.—1. corne] cornes Rl Ba N F: wilt] om. R; wyl Dc: wilt in þe feldes] in þe feld wol Rl Ba J; in þe feld wilte T F: þe feldes] þy feld H: þe felde D. 2. not] no Rl; om. F: wexen] wexe N: as] at D. 3. might] may T D: þinke] penke Rl Ba N H R: þy wit þou might wel þinke] pis thought þou must conceue P. 4. yere is T H D] ȝeres other MSS.; yeres ben P: som]som be T. 5. might] maast D: might it nouȝt] may nat hem T; may not hit H. 6. it] om. R: þere to] thereto h: þere to what myght þou] what myghte þou thereto T H; what perto myght þou Dc: myght] mayst P.

How euer it be, to whom schalt þou complayne?  
Let nature þan hire-self þer-with allone.

(171)

16. Thow hast þe put vnder þe gouernaunce  
Of fortune lo, sche muste þy lady bee.  
Vnto hire maners owest þou obeyssance,  
And if þou purpose to enforce thee  
To stynte þir whele of mutabilite  
Of alle fooles ȝit art þou the mest;  
For when fortune stondeþ in stabilit,  
Þe name of fortune may no lenger leste.

(172)

METRUM .j<sup>m</sup>

Cum hec superba.

1. When sche, þis fortune, wiþ hire hondes proute  
Hire stoundes hap i-chaunged to *and* fro,  
As Euripys þat renneþ yn *and* oute,  
So wondirly hire wheel begynnyth go.  
Full ryall kynges cast sche doun in woo,  
Wiche þat somtyme many a man gan drede.  
And tho þat leyn discomfyte *and* vndo,  
Lo this[e] vnworthy liften vp þaire hede.

(173)

2. Sche þ[u]s of wrecchis hap right no pite  
Thogh þat þei waile *and* wepen day *and* nyght.

PROSA I, STAN. 15.—7. euer] euery H. 8. þan hire self þer with]  
therwith herselfe T; hire self þan þer with R. [Stan. unreadable Ch, folio  
worn.] STAN. 16.—1. þe put] put þe Rl Ba F J; put D. 2. muste]  
mot H. 3. owest þou] owestow N F; all weyes be thow T: obeyssance]  
obeyschaunce C. 5. stynte] stynt H: hir Rl Ba N H M F J P] er D;  
þaire other MSS. 6. foole] foole Dc. 7. when] whan þat T H. 8.  
name] om. D: may] ne may Dc: may no lenger leste] lenger may nafté T.  
[Stan. unreadable Ch, folio worn.] METRUM I, STAN. 1.—1. When] Then  
h: sche] yit P: hire] om. N F: hondes] worde Dc. 2. Hire stoundes hap]  
Hath thus her stoundes P: hap] had T: i chaunged] e chaunged C; chaunged  
D F; choyngid T; she changed H. 3. Euripys] euripis Ba D F; euripe  
N; euerippus T; eurippes H; euryppys R; Euriipes h; Erinus P. 4.  
begynnyth] gynneht Dc: goo] to go Rl Ba D F J P. 5. cast sche] she  
caste F. 6. þat] att T H: a] om. T: gan] can Rl Ba F J; om. T. 7.  
leyen] lyen Rl Ba H h; leyen N; lyeth T; lye D; lye F: discomfyte]  
discomfited T H. 8. thise N H] this other MSS.: vnworthy] vnthrifte  
C T; vntristy H; untrusty P: liften] liftee h; þaire] your P. STAN. 2.—  
1. þus P] þis all MSS.: right no] om. T; no F J P. 2. þat] om. F: waile]  
weylen N: waile and] om. T.

Sche skorneþ eke, so wondir hard is sche,  
 þe wailynge þat hire-seluen haþ hem dight.  
 Lo þus sche pleyeth, þus preueþ sche hir myght,  
 To hire seruantes schewyng many a wonder;  
 For he þat in his welthe was now right,  
 Wip-yn a while he is [i]casten vnder.

(174)

PROSA ija

Vellem autem tecum.

1. Me lust a litell pleten now wiþ the  
 Wiþ likly wordes as fortune may.  
 Axeþ sche right? Now loke þi-self and see.  
 Me semeþ wel suche wordes myght sche say:  
 "What is þe man compleynyng' euery day?  
 What haue I gilt? What wrong haue I the done?  
 What good of thyne haue I beraft away  
 þat was thyn owne? I schal answere þe sone.

(175)

2. Assigne thow and I schal sone appere  
 Byfore a iuge þat can þis case redresse,  
 And if þou canst thi purpose preuen clere,  
 Of hye estate, richesse and worþynesse,  
 To any man þat lyueth in dedlynnesse,  
 þat [t]hise þinges schulde apreued be,

METRUM I, STAN. 2.—3. eke] also h: wondir] om. D F: hard] om. R.  
 4. seluen] self F: hire seluen haþ hem dight] to her selfe to hem hase  
 dyghte T; hereself to hem haþ dyght H: hem] hym J. 5. pleyeth]  
 plaeth H: sche (2)] om. T. 6. hire] his Rl. 7. he] who T: his]  
 þis R: welthe] helthe Rl Ba N Dc J Bb (*but altered to welthe by diff.*  
*hand*); hele F: in his welthe] hye in welthes P. 8. Wip] Which h: a  
 while he is] an hour he lyeth P: he] om. T: casten L R Bb h] y caste Rl J;  
 caste Ba; ycasten N C H; foule caste T. PROSA II, STAN. 1.—1. a litell  
 pleten] to plede a lytel P: litell] lite D: pleten now] nowplete T F: pleten]  
 pleden Rl Ba H J; pletee h: now] om. J. 2. likly] suche P: as] a N.  
 3. axeþ sche] after the D; Loo sayth she P: loke] om. T: þi self] om. F.  
 4. myght sche] she mijte F: sche] theye D. 5. compleynyng] playnyng  
 T H: euery] yeueri F. 6. gilt] gult Rl Ba H; agilte F: haue I the done]  
 haue I the wrought T H P; to the done F: 7. thyne] theyme T: haue I  
 beraft away] haue I bere after awey T H: What good of thyne own I shal  
 answor the sone h. 8. owne] om. F: answere þe] þe answere: sone] om.  
 T H: I schal answere þe sone] or with þy seluen broght P. [ll. 7, 8  
 mistakenly combined h. Stan. unreadable Ch, folio worn.] STAN. 2.—2.  
 þis] þe Dc: case] cause F. 3. canst F: preuen] apprevyn Dc; profe F;  
 prouen P. 4. hye] thy Dc: estate] astate h: and] or N H Dc. 6. pese  
 H F P] the N; thyse C; hise other MSS.; apreued] approped H F;  
 appropriat P.

And certanly I schal þe graunte expresse  
þat þyn it was what now þou askest me.

(176)

3. When þat nature into þis worlde þe broght  
Out fro þy moder wher þat þou began,  
I took þe nedy, naked, *and wiþ* noght,  
And I þe norished wiþ my goodes þan,  
And all wiþ fauour norished þe to man.  
Wherfore inpacient I fynde þe now.  
Haue I the wronged? Say me if þou can,  
In wiche poyntes, wherewiþ, *and* as how.

(177)

4. With alle † goodes þat longeþ to my right  
I had the fully fret † wiþ habundaunce.  
Why schuld it noght be fully in my myght,  
As fro þe same wiche I my-self avaunce,  
My hand wiþdrawen after my plesaunce?  
The † oys þou haddest þat was of my grace,  
It was noght thyne; take it in no greuaunce;  
Thow hast no right to pleyne[n] in þis case.

(178)

5. Whi waylest þou? I do þe no duresse  
Ne violence as euery man may [tr]ownen.

PROSA II, STAN. 2.—7. þe graunte] graunte the T: graunte] preue  
Rl Ba J; *om.* F. 8. þyn] myn Rl Ba F J: what] þat Dc: what  
now þou] that thow nowe Ba J: þat þou F: askest] askyd T J; axest  
h: me] of me Dc. [ll. 3, 4, 5 *om.* T. Stan. unreadable Ch, folio  
*worn.*] STAN. 3.—1. into þis worlde þe] þe into pis worlde T; is into pis  
worlde D. 2. fro] of F: wher whan Dc: þat] *om.* T F. 3. naked]  
and naked F: noght] ryght noght Dc. 4. my goodes] mine goode Rl Ba  
J Ch; my gode F. 5. norished] I norisshed h. 6. inpacient] enpacient  
R. 7. the wronged] done the wronge T; do þe wronges H: say] tel P.  
8. In wiche] As in what P: poyntes] poynte T H: as how] why T; how F.  
STAN. 4.—1. alle T H F P] alle the other MSS.: goodes] goode D: þat  
longeþ] longyng F P: to] vnto Ba F Ch. 2. had] haue T H: fret] fed  
T H; freight h; freizte F: fully fret P] fret fully all MSS. 3. it] I N:  
be fully] fully be H. 4. fro] for h; same] *om.* Dc: wiche] which þat  
N P: myself] *om.* N P. 5. withdrawen] withdrawee h. 6. oys]  
wyche Ch; joyes P; *om.* H; voyce all other MSS.: Then thow haddyste of  
my grace T. 7. take it in no] takyt not yn H: in] to T; for P. 8. pleyne]  
planen H; compleyne Dc: þis] þe F; case] cace Rl Ba: With wronge thou  
the complaynest in þis case P. STAN. 5.—1. waylest þou] weylestow N F;  
playnest þou P. 2. trowen P] knownen all MSS.

Well likeþ me suche honour *and* richesse,  
 Wher þat me lust my right is to bestowen.  
 þe meyne nedes muste hire lady knownen.  
 With me þei come and wiþ me must hem wende.  
 This dar I seie, if þey had ben thyn owne,  
 Thow myghtest neuer haue lost hem in þis kende.

(179)

6. Where I be sche þat onely am forhight  
 To execute þe custome of my lawe?  
 Sith heuen may þe dayes maken bright,  
 At derk[e] nyght he may his light wiþdrawe;  
 [The] yeere also þe erþe may be-strawe  
 Wiþ floures *and* þeym eft wiþ wynter schende;  
 The see may now be pleyn wiþouten wawe,  
 And now wiþ styffe stormes turne and wende.

(180)

7. But þilke vnholsom mannes couetise  
 Now wolde me vnto stabilnesse bynde  
 Aȝeyn myn owne manere *and* my wise.  
 But þis my might is, þis play is my kynde:  
 My swyft[e] wheel þus vp *and* down I wynde,  
 þe hye wiþ lowe to entirchaungen ofte.

PROSA II, STAN. 5.—4. Wher] Whiche D: þat] om. R: Ryght as me liketh fully to bestowen P. 5. meyne] meane h; lady Dc: hire] theyre D; ther P: hire lady] ther lorde T H: lady] late Rl N C. 6. come] goon D: and] om. N: hem] þei T H D F P. 7. pey] pat Dc: owne] Owen N: myghtest] must T, myst H: haue] a Dc: lost] om. D. [Stan. unreadable Ch, folio worn.] STAN. 6.—1. Where I be sche] Ther I besech h: Where] There Dc: am] can D: forhight] so hight N; behighte D. 3. heuen] hewyn T: may] make T F. 4. At derke nyght he may his] And eke at nyght she may her P: light] lust Rl Ba: he] om. D: his] this] h F: At derkenyghte hys beames may withdrawe T. 5. The T H D] And other MSS.: The yeere] The ayer T H; the eyre D: yeere] þere Rl Ba N F J: þe erþe] thereth h: þe erþe may] maye thee erthe D: be strawe] wiþ foraw F. 6. þeym] reyne Rl Ba F: wynter] wynde D: schende] shynde P. 7. now] nocht R: The snowe be playn withouthen wawes H. 8. stiffe N h F] om. D; styf other MSS. [Stan. unreadable Ch, folio worn.] STAN. 7.—1. þilke] pik R; the sayd P: vnholsom] vnskilfil N; vnfuslum CH: But theyke manny covetes covetyse T. 2. me vnto] now to P: me vntoo stablenes me D: me] om. Ba C Ch Bb (but inserted later by different hand): vnto] to N T M F: bynde] wynde J: vinde Ch. 3. my wise] myne vse T. 4. my (1)] om. T; is H: is (1)] om. T: is (2)] om. Dc. 5. swift L] swifte N H D F: I] and Rl Ba Ch; to F. 6. þe] þa: wiþ] to; and P; wiþ þe F: to] om. F: entirchaungen] enterchangyn Dc.

That now beforne is, eft<sup>t</sup> must be behynde ;  
 þat now is low, me lust to set on lofte.

(181)

8. Now worth vpon my wheel if þat þe lyst,  
 But vpon couenant, as I schal þe say,  
 Thou must descend aȝeyn, þerto þou trist,  
 Whan þat þe resoun axeþ of my play.  
 Ne knew þow noȝt my maners or þis day ?  
 How Cresus þat was clepid kyng<sup>i</sup> of Lyde  
 þat Cyrus often feryð wiþ a fray,  
 Yit Cyrus took hym in his most[e] pride,

(182)

9. And in þe fuyre he caste hym for to brenne ?  
 Lo how þe effecte was turned to reuerse !  
 A litel reyne defended hym fro þenne.  
 What fell hym after booke done reherse.  
 And when þat Paule had take þe kyng<sup>i</sup> of Perse,  
 This Poule vpon hym wepid for pure pitee ;  
 Wiche crieth alle tragedenus verse  
 But pleyneth al on myne instabilite.

(183)

10. They wepen þat so sodenly I smyte  
 And welthfull rewmes ofte I ouerþrowe.

PROSA II, STAN. 7.—7. is] in Dc : must] mot N H P : That is now before may eft<sup>t</sup> be behynde T. 8. me lust] my lust is M : on] a F. STAN. 8.—1. worth] worche F : if] om. F: þat þe] þow T ; yee D; þat þou Dc ; þou hast F. 2. vpon] vpon oon Dc ; on F ; on this P: as] þat P. 3. must] most Rl Ba : þou (2)] om. F. 4. þe] om. D F. 5. knew] kepe R : maners] maner T M: or] er N. 6. Cresus] Cressous T ; Cresys D : clepid] om. T Dc ; called P. 7. þat] Whiche D : Cyrus] Sirus Rl Ba M h J Ch ; Syrus N C F ; Cyrus T ; Cirus H D : often] of F : wiþ] wiþ grete P: a fray] affraye D h. 8. Cyrus] Sirus Rl Ba M h Bb J Ch ; Syrus N C F ; Syrovs T ; Cirus D : most L] moste Rl Ba M D F. STAN. 9.—1. he] om. Ch : to] om. D. 2. þe effecte] the fefdde T ; þeffect H D h : was] is F. 3. defended] defendye H ; to defend D ; descendyd Dc ; defende F : fro] for T : penne] þeim Ba. 4. done] too D. 5. Paule] paul N H D : take taken Ba ; tan D : Perse] Perce N D h ; presse J : And when Paule wepte on hym for pure pyte T ; And when þat Paul vpon hym wept for pure pyte H. 6. Poule] paul N D ; paule Dc F : vpon hym wepid] gan on hym wepe P : vpon] on F : wepid] wepte Rl Ba N F : pure] pore Rl Ba. 7. Wiche] What C P J (*altered from wiche by diff. hand*: alle] om. M : tragedenus] tragedenus Rl Ba ; tragedienus N ; tragedienus H ; tragedyes D ; tragedeynes F ; tradigiens Dc. 8. al on myne] alone of my T : al] om. Rl F J Ch : on] of N ; in D ; vpon h : instabilite] vnstabilite Ba M Ch ; stabyllite D. [ll. 5, 6 confusedly combined T H.] STAN. 10.—2. And] om. N : welthfull] wellfull H P ; weleful F : rewmes ofte I] reames wele after I T ; reames well after I H : ouerþrowe] ouerdrowe H.

Thow lerned þis when pou were ȝong and lyte ;  
 Thow hast noght forgeten, as I trowe,  
 þat Jubiter two tonnes had bestowe,  
 Wip-yn the threschfold of his celar laied.  
 þe tone þ was good wyn euery man to knowe,  
 þat other noght; now hast þow boþe assaied.

(184)

11. And what ȝy[f] more plente þou hast i-take  
 ȝit of þi better part of lustynesse ?  
 What if I ȝit noght þe haue all forsake ?  
 What if so be þat myn vnstabilnesse  
 May gif the hope of better after þis ?  
 For-why dismay the noþing in þi þoght,  
 No[r] here wiþ-yn þe rewme þat commyn is,  
 Thy propre lawe to vse coueite þow noght.

(185)

METRUM ij<sup>m</sup>.

Si quantas rapid[i]s.

1. Thowgh plente, wiche þat cleped is goddesse  
 Of worldly goodes, cast on ȝow attones  
 As many habundaunces of richesse  
 Lo as þe see haþ smale grauel stones,  
 Oper as sterres when full many on es  
 Ful clerly schynynge in a lusty euen,

PROSA II, STAN. 10.—3. were] was T. 4. as] al T H. 5. Jubiter]  
 Jupiter N P; Jobiter T; two tonnes had hadde two tonnes h: two] to  
 T: tonnes] comons T; stoones D; townes Dc: bestowe] to bystowe N.  
 6. Wip yn] Whiche in h: threschfold] thressold Rl F; throssold Ba J Ch;  
 preysfold H: celar] soler D. 7. þe tone Rl Ba C J Ch] þe tonne L R  
 Bb]; The oon T; þe toon N; That one H M D h Dc F P. 8. þat] The  
 T J: noght] was noght Ba D J; nofte P. STAN. 11.—1. ȝyt L R h M]  
 ȝif Rl Ba Dc J Ch P Bb [inserted later]; if C D; of N: plyeunte  
 R: pou] om. P: itake] etake C; take D: And what if þow more haue  
 ytake T H. 2. ȝit] ȝif Rl; If Bb D; Lo P; om. F: þi] þe T H D F  
 P: better] om. T H. 3. ȝit] witte T: noght þe haue] þe haue nott  
 T: haue þe nought H P; not the halfe haue D; hafe not the F: þe]  
 om. Dc: all] om. T H D. 5. gif the hope] yen þyn hepe H: gif] ȝeue  
 N; geue h. 7. No] Ne Ba M D: þe] pi R: rewme] rewwe N; rem Dc.  
 8. coueite] conuerte R: þow] om. T. METRUM II. rapidis] rapidus L.  
 STAN. 1.—Thowgh] Though þat J: þat] om. T D: cleped] called D:  
 cleped is goddesse] is clepid goodnesse Dc: goddesse] godenesse F. 2.  
 worldly goodes cast] worldly goode wolde caste T H: goodes] good P:  
 attones] at ones D; at ones J. 3. habundaunces] habundaunce F J: of]  
 and Dc. 4. Lo] om. T: smale] lytyll T; many D. 5. as] of N F:  
 when] wheroft N: ones] on es Rl Ba J Ch; on is N Dc F; oon is h; one ys  
 P: Other of sterrys when full mon ouer (on H) ys T H: Or heuen hath  
 sterres wheere many oon is D. 6. schynynge] shynen N: lusty] ful clere F.

Yit lo þis mankynde of þaire rewful mones  
Ne þeyre compleyntes couthe þei not bileuen.

(186)

2. And þogh þat god of hys benignyte  
Theyre prayer heer, *and* gladly wolde hem plese,  
And of his gode graunte hem gret † plente,  
Richesse & honour fully to þayre ese;  
Theyre couetise þit may þer noþing † pese;  
Theire cruell raveyn gapeþ after more,  
And euer þei be compleynyng of disese,  
Settynge at noght al þat þei had before.

(187)

3. What maner brydell myght a man devise  
This wrecchid lust to rulen *and* restreyne  
To þise vnþrifty mennes couetise,  
Þat evire þe more þey haue þe more þei pleyne ?  
The þrist of hauyng breneþ hem wiþ peyne.  
For he þat nedeleſ ſo ferfull is,  
And wayleþ ſo forſoþe, I dar it ſeyne,  
He nys noght riche þogh all þe worlde were hiſ."

(188)

PROSA iij<sup>a</sup>

hijs igitur.

1. If fortune myghte for hireſelfe ſayne  
Right in þis wise as I haue ſeid to the,  
Thow hast noght what o word to ſpeke agayne ;  
And if þou hast, now ſeie it vnto me.

METRUM II, STAN. 1.—7. Yit lo] Lo yet F: rewful] rewthful H ; rufull h. 8. þeyre] neither N ; couthe þei] ne couth þe N ; can þey T : bileuen] leuen P. STAN. 2.—1. benignyte] benyngnyte h. 2. and] or D: wolde] om. T. 3. gode] goodes N C T H P ; grace Dc: grete] gret H. 4. ese] yese F. 5. þer] om. T F: pese C H P] pleſe other MSS. 6. gapeþ] gapith yett T; yet gapeþ F. 7. euer þei be] alway ben P: be] om. T F: compleynyng] compleineþ F. 8. Settynge] And ſet: at] all at Rl Ba F J Ch: þei] þou T: before] afore T F. STAN. 3.—2. wrecchid] wrecches Rl Ba: lust] listes F: rulen] rewlen Rl Ba; rule h: and] and to T Dc: restreyne] refreyne N T H. 4. euire þe more] euermore Rl: pleyne] complayne T D h. 5. The þrist] This luste T; The þrust H. 6. nedeleſ] nedles Rl: ſo ferfull] ſo ferforth N ; ſorowful J. 7. forſoþe] for ſath N : forth h. 8. nys] is Rl D F: all] om. Dc: worlde] wordle H. PROSA III, STAN. 1.—1. If] Off T: hireself] hir ſelue Rl Ba; hir ſelfen P. 3. what] om. T H h F: o] a N ; one M. 4. now ſeie it vnto] ſay it now to T; ſaye it now vnto D; now ſay and owce it unto Dc: vnto] to F.

Defende þi quarel if þou canst lat see ;  
 Thow schalt ben herd<sup>t</sup> til þat þou haue rehersed<sup>t</sup>,  
 And if þou kannest noght, let þi pleyntes be.  
 Vnlawful quarell oweth to ben amersed<sup>t</sup>.

(189)

2. "Certeyn," quod I, "full faire is þis to here  
 Of rethoryk all full of hony swete,  
 Whiche onely while þey sowneþ in myn ere  
 They lusteþ well, but sone it is forgete.  
 For my disese so light is noght to lete,  
 For also smertly as ȝoure song<sup>i</sup> is cesed<sup>t</sup>,  
 þe gruechyng<sup>i</sup> of my greuance is so grete  
 þat all my mynde with mornyng<sup>i</sup> is oppressed."

(190)

3. 'Right so it is,' sche seide, 'bot not-for-þat,  
 þis is no remedie for thi sckenesse,  
 But as aȝeyn þi sorwes obstynat  
 Ageyn þyn helpe it is a maner lesse.  
 But when I see þat better sesoun esse,  
 Of suche as schal [þe] persen to the rote  
 I schal the serue, *and* all þat is amysse  
 I schal amende *and* fully be þi bote.

(191)

4. Bot lest þat þou þi-self a wrecche holde,  
 Now wolde I wite wher þou remembre noght  
 þe maner of þi welthes many-folde.'  
 "I holde my pees," quod I, "seith on ȝoure þoght."

PROSA III, STAN. 1.—5. canst] can F: lat] lete h. 6. herd<sup>t</sup>] hert C:  
 þat þou haue] I haue D: þat] om. F. 7. kannest] canst Rl Ba H: noght]  
 om. T. 8. oweth] owed F; ought P: amersed<sup>t</sup>] arestid D: And lawfull  
 ayen to be amercyd T: And lawfull owen to be a mersyd H. STAN. 2.—  
 1. Certeyn] for certayn R. 2. all full of] full and as T: of] and C.  
 3. while] as longe as T: þey sowneþ in] þe sowne is in D: sowneþ] sownen  
 Rl Ba N H. 5. so light is noght] is natt so lightly T: is] is it De:  
 noght] for Dc. 7. gruechyng<sup>i</sup>] gryntyng<sup>i</sup> H; gruggyng<sup>i</sup> P. STAN. 3.—  
 1. It is] om. T: sche seide] seid she F: bot] bot only T: not] now F.  
 3. as] om. R F. 4. lesse] lysse T H. 5. better] bitter Ra N: sesoun]  
 sosoun Ch: esse] is D. 6. as] þat (but altered to as) N F: shall þe H]  
 schal other MSS.: persen] pertayne T H; peersen M; pershe F. 7. I]  
 Hit Ch: and] in Dc F Ch. 8. I] Hit Rl N H F J Ch: þi] þei Dc: I  
 schal amende and fully] Hyt shal redresse and hoelby P. STAN. 4.—  
 1. wrecche] wrecch Rl H. 2. wolde I] y wold<sup>t</sup> y Ch. 3. folde] a folde  
 T P. 4. seith] say N T; seyn H: your þoght] what ye wolde T.

'When þou,' sche seide, 'were † so lawe i-brought  
As orphelyn in manere desolate,  
Fortune for the so goodly haþ i-wroght';  
þow were in cure of men of hyhe estate,

(192)

5. And drawen sith [in]to affinite  
Of princes *and* of men of gouernance;  
Ful lef to lordes ar þou mightest be  
Ought worþi thy-self of worldly sufficeance,  
And sette in hye degree of aliaunce.  
Who seid[e] noght þen þat þou were blessid?  
Thy fader-in-lawe whom *vertu* doþ auaunce,  
Thy wyf also so goodly and honest,

(193)

6. Thi sones boþe sittynge þe biside,  
Youre worschep went in euery mannys mouthe.  
And for to lete thise comyn þing[es] slide,  
What dignitees þou haddest in þi ȝouth  
þat to full olde men ben werned nouthe!  
But I delyte to tellen more expresse  
Of soleyn þinges straunger *and* vnknowþe,  
How þou were wrapped all in wilfulness.

(194)

7. Yf any þing þat mortal is in kynde  
Wiþ any fruyt of blesse be founden here,

PROSA III, STAN. 4.—5. where L] were Rl Ba R h ; was T: lawe] lowe  
Rl Ba N : i broght] broght D F. 6. orphelyn] orphanyn N ; or plyne  
F. 7. i wroght] wroght F. 8. of (1)] with T: estate] astate H h.  
STAN. 5.—1. sith] sytthe Ba: into T H P] vnto N; to other MSS. 2.  
and] om. Ba F J Ch: of] of goode T. 3. ar] are Ba; er N; also T; as R.  
4. ought] om. F: worþi] worth N H D; with T; worthy K; wordly Dc:  
thy] om. R: of] or F. 5. sette in hye degree of aliaunce] sett on lyberte  
high degré T: in the degree of aliaunce D: in] on H. 6. seid] seide Rl  
N: noght] om. T H: þat] om. T H: were] were nat T H; art M: blessid]  
blest D; fully bleste P. 7. whom] who Rl; whos Ba F J. 8. and]  
and so T H. STAN. 6.—1. þe beside] by þi side Rl Ba T F J Ch P.  
2. went] om. F. 3. lete] lede h: pis] these H; thes P: comyn] comoun  
N; comyng Dc: þing slide] things glyde T; thynges slyde H P F. 4.  
þou haddest] haddestou F. 5. þat] om. F: old] hold H: men] folke D:  
werned] warned Rl Ba N; worned H: nouthe] to noght h; in sothe P.  
7. vnknowþe] vncouth Rl Ba; vnknowe h. 8. þou] þey T: wrapped] y  
wrapped H: in] in thy D: wilfulness] welfulnesse Rl Ba N H; welthful-  
nessse J; wilderness F; welthynesse P. STAN. 7.—2. fruyt] thyngé T:  
blesse] blisse N; blis H; blisse R; founden] founde in T; fownd H.

Pere may no meschief put out of þy mynde  
 þat day in wiche þy sonnes boþe in-fere  
 Reseyued had þe state of conseilere ;  
 And wiþ a semble fro thy house i-lad  
 Of senatoures and lordes þat þer were,  
 Wiþ huge prees of peple bli[þ]e and glad ;

(195)

8. And þen in court when þat þou sawest hem sitte  
 In setes longyng[*t*] to þeire dignite,  
 Pere wonne thow ioye † of eloquence *and* wyt,  
 As pronouncere of þe kynges nobilite,  
 Of all þat folk be-holdyng[*v*]pon þe,  
 As wiþ þy praisinge *and* victorious,  
 So well thow feddest all þat compayne  
 Wiþ giftes of þi wordes glorious.

(196)

9. Fortune thow feffed þan wiþ wordes gay,  
 While sche þe norisched[*in*] hire owne delice,  
 And suche guerdoun fro hire þow bare away  
 The wiche in sothe was of so hyhe a prys,  
 þat neuere before þat day at my devys  
 Sche graunted noght vnto no comynere.  
 Wilt þou accounte wiþ fortune ? art þou wys ?  
 Of arrerage þou schalt not passen clere.

PROSA III, STAN. 7.—3. þy] *om.* T M. 4. in (1)] the N T H: thy sonnes boþe] both thy sonnes T: in fere] y fere Rl Ba N J. 5. Reseyued had þe state] Hadden take thastate P: Reseyued] Reserued h: had] haue H: þe state] þat astate H; state F: conseilere] councelere T; consuler H. 6. wiþ] *om.* F: a semble] assemble D h: thy house] thynd hond T: i lad] yladde Rl Ba N; yledd H; I hade T. 7. senatures] senatoures Rl Ba N h. 8. blise] blipe *all other MSS.*: glad] gladde Rl Ba N. STAN. 8.—1. þat] *om.* H F: sawest] saw N; se T; sawe H. 2. longyng[*t*] belongyng[*e*] P. 3. wonnel] wonnen T; wonen H; whonne R: thow] *om.* H: ioye N T H P]; ioyes *other MSS.*; wit] witte Rl Ba h. 4. pronouncere] prounwncers T: the] *om.* T H P. 6. and] as C T H; so D: praisinge and victorious] preisynge victorious N. 7. þat] the D: compayne] compayne F; comynalte P. STAN. 9.—1. Fortune thow feffed] Thou feoffedest fortune P: thow] then thou F: thow feffed] the fed T; thou fed H; thow feoffed D; thou feddest Ch. 2. þe norisched] norisshhed þe Ch: hire] thyne T: delice] delic C; delyght T; delyte H; delite h. 3. for] to T; fro H Dc. 4. in soth] for sothe N: of so hyhe a] so hye of F: so *om.* T H J: prys] price Rl Ba h F; prise N; priees H. 5. þat] þe T: at] of N: devys] device Rl Ba h; devyce H h; deuise N. 6. vnto] to T. 7. Wilt þou] Wiltow N; accounte] accompte D h: art þou] artow N; þou art natt T: wys] wyse Rl Ba.

(197)

10. For now at arst sche haþ on þe byholde,  
 And printe vpon þe wiþ a bitter eye.  
 But now concidre clerly if þou wolde,  
 The maner of þy welthis by and bye,  
 Of alle þi ioyes lyuynge lustely ;  
 In þat other side þyn heuynesse  
 Acounted all ; ȝit myght þow not denye  
 þat þou ne hast ȝit part of wilfulness.

(198)

11. And if þou holde þy-self infortunat  
 Now for als moche as þise þat welþes semen  
 Ben passed þus, none cause hast þou for þat,  
 þat þow in meschef schuldest thy-self demen.  
 For þise sorwes þat þyn herte vnquemen,  
 And haldest hem as for a grevous peyne,  
 Ne doute þe noght bot fro þe schal þei flemen ;  
 Thou art þen set in wilfulness ageyn.

(199)

12. And wilt þou trowe þat þou þe ferste be  
 þat into þis lif come as a sodeyn gest,  
 Or wilt þou þat ony stabilit  
 In mannys lyf [be] wher-vpon to trist?

PROSA III, STAN. 10.—1. at] atte D F: arst] ardeste TH; hardest F:  
 2. printe] preynete H; printe h; prynched P: vpon] on F: bitter] bettir F:  
 eye] Iye D. 3. But] And H: concidre] considren N; consyderynge P.  
 5. Of] And in P: alle] all Rl Ba R: lyuynge] leuyng H D; leeuyng h.  
 7. A counted] Accompted h: all ȝit] all it yet T: myght] may T: pow  
 not] not powe D Dc. 8. ne hast ȝit] hast had T H; ne hast not yit Dc:  
 part] a part C T H J: wilfulness] welfulnesse Rl Ba C H Ch; welthynesse  
 P. STAN. 11.—1. holde] hold H R. 2. als moche] as muche Rl N;  
 als myche R Bb; as mich Ba: þise] theye D: þat] þy N. 3. none] no  
 h: cause] case R: hast þou] hastow N. 4. in meschef schuldest thyself] thyself  
 sholdest in myscheif h: in] thy N: schuldest thyself] thyselfe  
 shulde T: demen] demen N. 5. sorwes] sorwes Rl Ba; soroes C:  
 þat þyn herte vnquemen] þat in þy herte doth whemyn T: þat trobeleth  
 thus thyn hert P: vnquemen] quemen N: as] om. T D F. 7. Ne] om.  
 F: but] om. H: fro] for N: schal þei flemen] we shall the flemyn T:  
 wyl they start P. 8. Thou art þen] Thanne art þou T H: þen] þo N;  
 þen sette then h: wilfulness] welfulnesse Rl Ch; welþe F; welthynesse  
 P. STAN. 12.—1. wilt þou] wiltow Rl N; wult þow H: þou þe] in thy  
 T H. 2. in] om. N T H: to] om. F: þis] his N: as] om. Dc: a] om. Rl  
 J: sodeyn] subdeyne D. 3. wilt þou] wiltow N; wilt þow trow T H P;  
 woltow F. 4. lyf] lyf be Rl Ba N C T H Dc F J P: wher vpon] wropyn  
 T; whroppen H: to] þou N Ch.

This knawest þow wel, it is no þing vnwist,  
 þat in an houre a man is at an ende.  
 Lo all youre lyf wiþ dep so is betwist,  
 Now here ȝe be *and* here awaye ye wende.

(200)

13. And if so be, as it betideþ selde,  
 þat in fortune is any feiþfulnessesse  
 Abidynge wiþ a man into his elde,  
 þe laste day ȝit of ȝoure lyf iwisse  
 A manere deth ȝit vnto fortune isse.  
 What force is þenne when sche þe forsakeþ,  
 Fleyinge fro þe of hire vnthriftnesse,  
 Or þow fro hir when dep awey the takeþ.

(201)

METRUM iij<sup>m</sup>

Cum polo phebus.

1. When þat Phebus begynneþ for to sprede  
 Hire bright[e] bemes out in euery syde  
 As bi the morne, þe sterres right for drede  
 They wexen pale begynnyng hem to hyde ;  
 Forestes eek þat large ben and wyde  
 Ful freschely in þe firste somer sesoun,  
 ȝe Zephyrus, right as it were for pryd,  
 With floures hath depeynted yow to plesen ;

PROSA III, STAN. 12.—5. knawest þow] knowestow N: no þing] natt T F J. 6. in an houre] many N. 7. dep] det Rl; dette Ba Ch; dete F: so is] is so H F: betwist] bewist J: Loo alle oure lyffe or deth so is betwixe this h. 8. here away] now here T. STAN. 13.—1. so be] hit so be F: And if so be it betyde as it doth but selde T. 2. any] om. Rl Ba F J Ch. 3. into his elde] tyl he the geste vp elde P. 4. ȝit] om. T: ȝoure] oure N F: iwisse] it is D. 5. ȝit] eke T P; om. h. 6. force is] forseth D: is] om. M: when] though T H; if D; wher P: þe] om. F. 7. þe] pe cours Dc ( cours inserted later by diff. hand): vnriftnesse] vnriftnesse H; vnriftnesse P. 8. awey the takeþ] do the take T; the takeþ F. METRUM III, STAN. 1.—1. When] Then F: for] om. T: sprede] spede T]. 2. in] on Rl; of Ba R F J Ch; y H. 3. morne] mornynge P: þe (2)] om. D: right] om. P: for] fro R; as for D. 4. wexen] waxen Rl Ba: begynnyng] begynne h. 5. Forestes] Forest H: eek] also h F: large ben] ben large F: ben] ere T: and] an R. 6. freschely] fresshe D: in þe firste] firste in þe R; in þe fressh h: in] eke in T: firste] om. T F: soner] someres N: sesoun] sesen D. 7. ȝe] The N T H D Dc; Ye R: Zephyrus] ȝepherous T; ȝepherus H D: it] om. T H. 8. depeynted] defentid T H: plesen] plesoun Rl Ba N Dc F Ch; pleson R Bb.

(202)

2. And whence þat Auster putteþ out his hornes,  
 And bitter blastes gynneþ for to blowe,  
 Abateth þenne þe beaute of þe thornes.  
 Thus alle youre lustes passen in a þrowe.  
 þe see also as euery man may knowe,  
 Now may be calm wiþoute mocioun,  
 And sodanly or eny man wil trowe,  
 Wiþ tempest is it turned vp so doun.

(203)

3. And sith þe † forme † of al þise erþely þinges,  
 So seldom is it þat it stondeþ stable  
 Bot chaungeþ be so many varienges,  
 And mannys fortune is so transmutable,  
 Than wilt þou triste to goodes deceyuabla ?  
 This is a lawe wiþoute chaungementes :  
 þere may noþing be kyndly perdurable  
 þat is engendred of thise elementes.'

(204)

PROSA iiiij<sup>a</sup>

Tum ego ver[a] inquam.

1. Than seide I thus, "O worschipful noryce  
 All vertu for to feden and susteyne,  
 In all my wit, bot if I were vnwyse,  
 I can not wite but soþe is þat ȝe seyne.

METRUM III, STAN. 2.—1. whenne] when] Rl Ba N H h; om. M;  
 Auster] Aster R. 2. gynneþ] begynneth Rl T H h F J Ch: for] om. T.  
 3. penne] þeym F: thornes] hornes D. 4. alle] al P: youre lustes passen]  
 þe yere passeþ F: þrowe] trowe H. 5. may be] om. F. 6. wiþoute]  
 withoute eny T: mocioun] mouone P. 7. or] ar R: man] om. D: wil] I  
 may N. 8. tempest is it turned?] tempestes it torneth T H: it] om. Ba  
 N F J: turned] turn h; torned Bb. STAN. 3.—1. þe forme N C T H]:  
 þat fortune other MSS.: þe: þise] om. N T R: þinges] þinge M: And syth  
 the forme of al thyss worldly pinges P. 2. seldom] selden Rl Ba N Ch;  
 seld H: is it] hit is F. 3. varienges] varynges Rl Ba; variantes R;  
 varynges N. 5. wilt] wolt Rl Ba; wold J: goodes] god is T H; goddes  
 R h Bb. 6. is a] om. T; a H: chaungementes] chaungement Rl Ba H  
 Dc F J Ch. 7. no þing[!] no thynges H: be kyndly] by kynde be F.  
 8. þat] Whiche D: this] this N; þeese H; theise h: elementes] element  
 Rl Ba Dc F J Ch. [l. 7 om. D.] PROSA IV. vera] vero L. STAN. 1.—  
 1. Than] Whan T: seide] say J. 2. feden and] fede and to T. 4. ȝe]  
 y R: is] hit is F.

And of my fortune sothe it is certeyne,  
 þat wonder smartly haþ sche me anhaunced,  
 But here vpon it is þat I compleyne,  
 Whi sche vndoth wiche þat sche haþ avaunced.

(205)

2. For of myshappes to rehersen all,  
 It is þeworste for to haue ben wele  
 And in-to mescheef after to ben fall ;  
 For þat most scheend a verry herte o[f] stele.”  
 ‘Thow þow,’ quod sche, ‘so in þi wittes fele,  
 Be fals conceit of thyn opynyoun,  
 The trouthe ne haþ agilt þe neuer a dele ;  
 To witen it ȝit hast þou no resoun.

(206)

3. And [i]f þis ydel name of wilfulness  
 þat so vncertayne is ȝit moueth þe,  
 Wiþ me now come *and* thyne accountes gesse  
 Of þinges wiche as ȝit þow hast plente,  
 Wiche þat þou haddest euer in most deynete.  
 When all in richesse fortune had þe fret,  
 How myght þou pleyne on þi felicite  
 Sith þat þow hast þi beste godes ȝit?

(207)

4. Yit hole *and* sound þe fadir of þi wyf,  
 He lyueþ lo [in] honour and reuerence

PROSA IV, STAN. 1.—6. haþ sche] she hath T H: me] om. T H:  
 anhaunced[!] enhaunced Rl Ba T D. 7. here] wher T: it is þat] is not þat  
 N: I] I me D F. 8. vndoith vndoith h: wiche] om. D: þat] om. T H  
 F J Ch: haþ] om. Dc; had P. STAN. 2.—1. of] my N; of my F:  
 myshappes] mys happe F. 2. haue] om. P: ben] ben in N F; om. T.  
 3. after to] afterward N; afterward too D: to] om. H: ben] om. D F.  
 4. to L] of Rl Ba N C T R M D Bb Dc F J Ch P; as H: stele] stile R.  
 5. þow (2)] om. F: so in] some J; som Ch: fele] so feel Dc. 6. conceit]  
 consente T: of] in T. 7. ne haþ agilt] þe] þe ne haþ a gilt R; þe a gilt  
 F; ne agreueth þe P: ne] om. T H: agilt] a gelt H: þe] om. T H. 8.  
 it] it her P: it ȝit hast] yit hit as H. STAN. 3.—1. of L] ȝif N; if C T  
 H; of all F: ydel] soole D: wilfulness] welefulness Rl Ba J Ch; wellfull-  
 ness H; welthynesse P. 2. þat so] Whiche D: so] om. Ba F. 3. me]  
 om. T H: now] þow N: accountes gesse] countes a gesse T; accompts gesse  
 h. 4. wiche] of whych T H: as ȝit þow hast plente] thowe hast plente  
 as yett D. 5. þat] om. R D: haddest] hade T: moste] most Rl N R:  
 deynete] dente F. 6. richesse] richesses N: þe] om. N h: fret] fritte N;  
 sette T H. 7. myght] myghtest Ba: on] of N; in T H. 8. þat] om.  
 T R D. STAN. 4.—1. þe] be þi N; to þe h. 2. lo in Ba H J Ch] in  
 N D Dc; lo other MSS.: and] and in N Dc.

Of all mankynde, þe wiche þow wiþ þi lyf  
 Woldest gladly be stondyng' in his defence.  
 Symachus made alle of sapience,  
 All full of vertu and of honeste,  
 Though he be sure of any violence  
 As to him-self', yit waileþ he for the.

(208)

5. Thy witty wif so full of sobirnesse,  
 So chaast<sup>t</sup>, so honest, [and] so debonaire,  
 In schort<sup>t</sup>, to closen all here worþinesse,  
 Lyk to hire fader as his kyndely haire,  
 Full loth hire lyf sche lyueþ in dispaire ;  
 Onely to the sche kepeþ hire careful gost.  
 This oo thyng<sup>t</sup> is þat may þi welþe apaire,  
 Þat graunt I well, and [a]menuse it most.

(209)

6. And of þi sones wiche be counseil[ere]s,  
 What schal I seye but schortely þat þey be  
 In manere printes *and* as exsaumpleres  
 Bothe of theire eldere fadir *and* of the.  
 And euery mortal þing<sup>t</sup> as þou may see,  
 Vpon þis haþ [h]is principall besynesse :  
 This lyf to kepe fro all infirmyte,  
 And vnto man þe derrest þing it esse.

(210)

7. And this[e] to þe ben derrer þan þi lyf,  
 I dar it well affermen certanlye,

PROSA IV, STAN. 4.—3. wiþ] in D: þi lyf] þe lyue Rl Ba Ch; þe lyf J; þi wyse T H: þe wiche þow wiþ þi lyf] þat wiþ þe life F. 4. be] obeye H P: be stondyng<sup>t</sup>] stode F. 5. Symachus] Simachus H; Symacus D: alle of] al ful of Dc. 7. be sure] swore H (*but altered to be seure by Chaundler*). 8. to] for D. STAN. 5.—1. so] om. Rl Ba F J Ch. 2. honest] honest and Ba C H J. 3. closen] cloþe F; conclude P. 4. as] and H: kyndely haire] kynde eire N. 5. lyueth] leueth D F. 6. sche] he Ch. 7. may] om. N: welþe] helþe D. 8. and] om. N R: menuse L R] anenst Rl Ba J Ch; annentissbeth N; aunenysch C; amenusyd T; amenuse H; menyssh h; anenst Bb (*altered to menuse by diff. hand*); a nemptis Dc; avaunceþ F; more P: it] om. N T. [l. 8 om. D]. STAN. 6.—1. And] Too D: þi] my T: wiche] whiche þat T D: counseileres] counselors Rl Ba; counsulors N H; conseiloures R Bb; conseilours L. 3. printes] prentice T; prentis H; princes R h; princys D; prineteſe F; printe P: as] om. Rl Ba N D De F J Ch. 5. may] mayſt Rl Ba J Ch P. 6. hys T H R D J] þis other MSS. 8. it] om. F. STAN. 7.—1. this] þeſe Rl Ba N H: to þe ben derrer] to be to þe derer T: ben] is R: derrer] dere H.

Lo Symachus, thy sones and thy wyf.  
 Thow hast hem ȝit, now lete þy terys drye,  
 For ȝit fortune ys noght þyne en[e]mye  
 I[n] also ferforth as thy-seluen feynest,  
 No[r] ȝit is noght on the so feruen[t]lye  
 þe tempest fallen, as thi-sel[uen] feynest,

(211)

8. For-why gode haldyng ha[n] thyne ankyr[s] hent.  
 They ben ful stronge and cleuen wonder faste,  
 þe wiche the comfort of þis tyme present,  
 Ne hope of bettir suffrep to ben past.  
 “O god,” quod I, “now graunt it þat þey laste  
 For while þey holden, how-so-euer it stonde,  
 Or how-so-evire þise wrechfull wynd[es] wraste †  
 Yit in som manere schal we flete on londe.

(212)

9. But how grete beaute of myn apparaile  
 Is fro me went, þi-selfe seeþ it beste.”  
 ‘I haue,’ quod sche, ‘if þat it may auayle,  
 Avaunced somewhat þat pou were in reste,  
 But if so is þat pou þi-selfe tempeste,  
 Dysplesed wiþ þe sort of all thy lyf †,  
 How schulde þan þy meschyf be redrest  
 If pou wilt all-wey set thy-selue in strif?

PROSA IV, STAN. 7.—4. now] om. T. 5. ys] om. T: enmye] enemye  
 Rl N. 6. I L] In Rl Ba N T H D F J Ch: also] all so H P: ferforth]  
 forsoth h: feynest] fynest R. 7. No L] Nor El Ba Dc J Ch; Ne N D;  
 Now F; And P: ȝit] hit F: is noght on the] on the is not D: feruentye]  
 feruentlye Rl Ba N C T H M h J Ch: No ȝit is noght on] Nor it is  
 in T; Neyper hit is yn H. 8. fallen] om. T; fall H D: as thi selfe  
 feynest] as it myghte be and me lyst D: thi self] thou F; the P: self] selfe  
 Ba; selvyn Dc: feynest] menyst Dc; seynest J. STAN. 8.—1. why] thye  
 D: gode] god Rl Ba F; good N: haldyng] om. F: han] hap all MSS.:  
 ankyrs] anke N; ankyr other MSS.: hent] y hente F. 2. ful] so T:  
 cleuen] elen D. 3. þis] pe D. 4. bettir] bester T; to] not to P. 5. O]  
 Owgh H; Oo h: now graunt it] graunt pou Dc: now] pou Rl Ba N C T H  
 R D; om. h F: þat þey] at þe J. 6. how so euer it] however I T; how  
 þat euer hit H. 7. so] þat D P: pise] þis Rl Ba: wrechfull] wrecchede  
 N Dc; wicked P: wynd] wynde Rl h; wyndes P: wrayste] wraste N H M  
 h Dc F P; laste D; wyrast J. 8. schal] shille F; on] to N; a H.  
 STAN. 9.—2. went] gon P: þi self] ye yowself H; yowseluen P: self] seluen  
 C; selfe Ch: seeþ] see T; seye D. 3. þat it] I T; þat I De: þat] om.  
 H F: may] om. H. 5. so is] hit so be F: is] be D P: pou] om. T H.  
 6. þe sort of all] alle the sort of D: lyst L P Rl Ba Ch Dc F J lyue N; lyf  
 C H R; lyfe T D; lyfle h; leste F; laft J. 7. þan] om. h: þy] all þy F:  
 meschyf] lyfe T. 8. in] to N: strif] L (thrist at first) T H R D h Bb  
 (thirst first, but altered by later hand)] thrist Rl Ba C Ch; thurst Dc;  
 preste F; trist J; thryve N.

(213)

10. But I ne may noght suffre þi delice  
 Compleynyng<sup>t</sup> wip so greuous heuynesse,  
 All-wey coniectynge so in thy devise  
 þat sumwhat wanteth of þy welefulnessse.  
 For who is þat þat lyueþ in dedlynnesse,  
 þat in his welthes stant so ordynate,  
 That he ne stryueþ alwey more or lesse  
 Thus with þe qualite of hys estate ?

(214)

11. Full anguysshous þei ben, as for þe nones,  
 þe kynde of worldly wele, I say forwhi,  
 For eiþer þey [ne] comen noght attones,  
 Or þey ne stondeþ neuer stabilly.  
 For this þ haþ þ riche[sse] lo habundantly,  
 Hym schameþ þat hys lynage is so lowe ;  
 And this þ lo is renouned nobilly,  
 Yit had he leuer for pouert ben vnknowe.

(215)

12. An-other haþ boþe renoun and richesse,  
 He haþ no wyf, for-why he is displesed.  
 This haþ a wyf þat to hym lusty es[se] ;  
 Defaute of ysshue makeþ hym disesed ;  
 He ne woot who wiþ his goodes schal be sesed.  
 And þis haþ ysshue to hys lust perchaunce,

PROSA IV, STAN. 10.—1. ne] om. T R F: noght] om. D. coniectynge]  
 couetyng Ba F T H: thy] pine J Ch. 4. sumwhat] som F: þy welefulnessse]  
 thylke fulnes T H; þy wylfullnesse R D h F; þy welthynesse P. 5. who]  
 ho H; how R: þat (1)] om. J: lyueþ] lewith H. 6. his] þis R: stant] stand  
 Rl Ba: so ordynate] inordynate T; vnordynate H. 7. stryueþ] streyneth  
 M: alwey] owther T. 8. estate] astate N h. STAN. 11.—1. Full] om.  
 h; þei] pen F. 2. kynde] kyndes Rl Ba: worldly wele] welthe T H. 3.  
 þey comen] comeþ þei Rl Ba F J Ch: noght attones] att a wyse T; att a  
 vyce H: attones] at ones Rl Ba N; atte ones D; al at ones P. 4. ne] om.  
 T H: neuer] euer Dc F. 5. thishaþ] this haue L; this that hath h F: this]  
 they R: richesse] riche L Bb h; richesses N; ryches D P H: lo] so  
 Ba T H D h Dc J Ch; þu lo L R M Bb; om. F. 6. Hys] is Ba; om. D.  
 7. this] thise L F: And this lo is] These is also F: lo is renouned] is  
 renommied lo D: nobilly] nobly Dc: And þis lo is renouned for pouert ben  
 vnknowe J. 8. had] hath D: he] I M: pouert] pouerte H M F. [ll. 7, 8  
 confusedly combined J.] STAN. 12.—2. why] whiche h. 3. lusty] lust  
 T H: es] is Rl Ba N; ys T H. 4. hym] hym be P. 5. ne woot] not N;  
 noote D; note P: who wiþ his goodes] with his goode who D; how his good  
 Dc: goodes] goode h F. 6. ysshue to hys lust] yssu and lust T: to] in F:  
 perchaunce] & chaunce D.

Yit happeth of þeire vice he is vnesed  
And [w]eyleþ of þeire wicked gouernaunce.

(216)

13. Wherfore in sothe þere is no wight þat can  
Wip propre fortune holde hym-seluen payed ;  
For-why som þyngi is feled of euery man,  
Þat no wight woot but he þat haþ assayed,  
And he þat knoweþ it is þerof affrayed.  
Set þis þerto þat euery welefull wyght  
Ful tendre is to suffren, *and* myspayed  
If all þingi falle not to his wille aright.

(217)

14. And he þat worldly is most fortunate  
And set most hily in prosperite,  
Full litel þingi his blisse may abate  
Þat is not vsed in aduersitee.  
How many trowest þou in þis worlde þer be  
If þei the leste of þi blisses hade,  
Þat I can telle, of þy felicite,  
As þough þey were in heuene wolde be glade ?

(218)

15. This place of excile as þou hast it named,  
Good cuntre is to þeym þat in hit been,  
And neuere [þe] worse, [þogh] it of þe be blamed,  
Þat art no wreche but þou þi-self it wene,

PROSA IV, STAN. 12.—7. happeth] haply T P ; apply H : þeire vice] his wiff D : vice] vice; T : vices H : vnesed] dyseasyd T. 8. veyleþ L] wayleþ Rl Ba N D h Dc Ch ; weyleþ C H R. STAN. 13.—1. Wherefore] Therfore h : in sothe] soth it is T : soth H : forsoth h F. 2. seluen] om. M : self Dc P : payed] apayede D Dc ; apayde F ; a paed P. 3. feled] felt N. 4. no wight woot] wote no wight h : none knoweth P. 5. it] om. F. 6. perto] ther tho T : þat] om. M : welefull] welthfull N : wilful F. 7. to suffren] om. Dc. 8. not] no M : his wille] hym D ; his pay Dc : aright] right J. STAN. 14.—1. worldly] wordly T H : most] not D. 2. hily] hye h : in] in most Dc. 4. in] to F. 5. trowest þou] thou trowyst T H : in þis] þat in þe : worlde] world Bb : þer] þat T. 6. If] That yef F : blisses] blisse F : If that they had the lest blisse of vij P. 7. I] om. F. 8. þough] om. F : wolde] they wolde D F : They wold supposen that they were in heuen P. STAN. 15.—1. as] þat P : it named] i named T F ; here named D. 2. is to þeym] to hem is T H : been] see D. 3. þe worse þough it Rl Ba N T H R D Dc F J Ch P] worse it L h ; worse thof it C ; worse þogh it Bb : of þe be] be of þe N T. 4. þat] Thow D : þi self] om. F.

Thogh fantasye haue broght þe þus in tene.  
 And euery fortune þere ageyn is good,  
 Who so can in pacience hym-self deme[ne],  
 And suffre softly wiþ an esy mood.

(219)

16. Now say me this. What weleful man is þat  
 þat stant in blisse right as he can devise,  
 þat somtyme nolde changen his estat  
 When pacience is put out of seruise?  
 What attyr† wiþ ȝoure welthes many-wise.  
 Is mengid if ȝe kouþe it haue in mynde!  
 Though þey be swete to þilke þat þei eise,  
 They may noght be wiþholden when þey wende.

(220)

17. Than may ȝe seen be open evidence  
 þe meschief<sup>t</sup> of þise mortal þinges þus;  
 Thei stonde noght þogh þou haue pacience,  
 Ne lusteth not in all þe languisshous.  
 O foly vñwit<sup>t</sup> so erroneous  
 Of mortal † folk † sekyng<sup>t</sup> hemself wiþoute!  
 Youre welfulnesse, and hit so plentevous,  
 Is sette wiþ-ynne youre-self wiþouten doute.

PROSA IV, STAN. 15.—5. þe þus] þat N : þus in] in this D. 7. Who] ho H : so] om. N : in pacience hym self] hym self in pacience T H : self] om. J : demene N C H Dc] deme other MSS. : an esy] a besy R ; a wyse D. STAN. 16.—1. say] tel P: this] thus H: weleful man] wilfulman N ; wylfull man h. 2. stant] standeth P: blisse] felicite Dc: right] om. P. 3. þat] þat stant Dc: nolde] wolde T: estate] astate H ; astat h. 4. of] om. C. 5. What attyre] And after F: attyre L] attir Rl Ba J Ch; attre R Bb (attyre at first, but altered by different hand); atire N ; auctor T ; actor H ; om. D ; atter Dc ; trobel P: welthes many] welth may Dc: wise] awyse N T P. 6. mengid] menget Rl ; medled D ; if ȝe couthe it haue] with the cowe haue it D: ȝe] he h F ; þat ȝe De: it haue] haue it N ; haue this T ; haue Dc. 7. swete] sote D: þilke] tho H ; þilk Ch: þilke þat þei eise] suche as them vse P: þei eise] home vse T ; them vse H: eise] ese Rl Ba N ; yse Dc. 8. may] wyl P: wiþholden] with hold H: when] om. J: wende] wynde T H. STAN. 17.—1. Than] þere F. 2. þise] þese Rl Ba N H. 3. þou] þei F: That stondeth not þow they haue pacience T H. 4. not] om. Dc: þe] pi Rl F Ch ; thyn N C: languisshous] angisshous N T H. 5. O foly vñwit<sup>t</sup>] off foly dought T ; of foly dowte H: foly] foule N: vñwit<sup>t</sup>] vñwitty J: erroneous] yrrenous U. 6. mortale folke] mortell folk Rl Ba N h. 7. welfulnesse] welthynesse P: plentevous] plentious H. 8. Is sette] I sette R: youre self] you F: wiþouten doute] it is no dowte Dc.

(221)

18. I schall þe schewe of thi felicite  
 A souereyn poynt ; en[t]ende what I schal say.  
 Is ony þing so derworth vnto the  
 As is þi-self? Pou wilt answere me, nay.  
 If þou be hoole thyn owne, conclude I may,  
 Thow hast þat þing þat þou ne woldest forlete,  
 The wiche fortune ne may not take away  
 Til þow thi-self hit wilfully forfete.

(222)

19. And þat þou knowe þat þinges temporele  
 May nocht be suche wherin þou schuldest fynde  
 Thy blissfulnesse, now vndirstonde me wele  
 And take my wordes holy into þy mynde ;  
 Sith blisfulnesse is souereigne goode of kynde  
 Whos lyf is resoun *and* intelligence,  
 And souereigne good is þing þat haþ none ende,  
 Ne may be rafte þe with no violence,

(223)

20. Then vpon þis Y may conclude *and* seyne,  
 That þis fortunous mutabilite  
 To blisfulnesse may no-þing atteyne,  
 Ne is nocht had be suche vnstabilite.  
 And whom so þat þis false felicite  
 Thus [c]arieth forth, he wot or wot it nate †,

PROSA IV, STAN. 18.—2. souereyn] sorow T: endende L] entende Ba N C H R M D Bb F J Ch P; entendyd T: ended h: attende Dc: I schal] shall y Ba T. 3. þing] point N: derworth] derward F. 4. wilt] wolt P: ne] om. F. 5. be hoole] beholde Ba Dc Ch. 6. þing þat] om. P: þat (2)] om. D: ne] om. D: ne woldest forlete] woldest ne lett T; noldest forlete F. 7. ne] om. Rl N H J Ch P: take] bereuen P. 8. thi self] om. F: hit] om. T H: hit wilfully] wilfully hit F: forfete] forlete D; foryete h. STAN. 19.—1. þou] þan M: þat (2)] lye D. 4. holy] om. T H: hoole R: in] om. C J: to] om. F: þy] om. Rl Ba Dc Ch. 5. souereigne goode] nere the god D: of] and Rl Ba N T H Dc F J Ch. 7. is] a T: þing] þat D. 8. may] om. D: be rafte þel] þe be refte T H: rafte L] rafte N; crafte h: with] by N T P: wiþ no] withoute F. STAN. 20.—2. fortunous] fortunes N; fortunys H; fortuous Ch. 3. blissfulnesse] blisfulnes N h. 4. be suche vnstabilite] in stabilite T: vnstabilite] instabilite N D. 5. so þat] om. T H: þat] om. F: false] fals N h: felicite] felice N: and whoo hatthe this fals felicite D. 6. Thus] This H: carieth P N] tarieth other MSS.: tarieth forth he wot or wot it noght] caryeuth steth he wote it nought T; taryeth stephe he wote hit nought H: forth] om. D: nate N] noght other MSS.

How fals sche is *and* alway haþ i-be,  
For þis deuisioun is in-mEDIATE.

(224)

21. If he ne woot it noght he is deceyued;  
What blisse may be þanne in þis ignoraunce?  
And if so be þat he haþ aparcleyued  
þe maner of hire kyndely variaunce,  
Ne dredeþ [he] then wiþ ful gret greuaunce  
To lose þat þing! þat lightly may be gone?  
So þat þis drede wiþ his continuance  
Wiþdraweþ his blisse wiche he triste vpon.

(225)

22. Or if it be so þat he lose his blisse,  
He weneth to stonde in repreue *and* in skorn).  
And douteles full litel good it isse  
Whos losse wiþ esy herte may be born).  
And þow art he to whom þat here beforne  
It haþ be schewedþ be demonstracioun  
Þat mannys soule may not be forlorn)  
As þing! þat torneþ to corrupcioun.

(226)

23. And clere it is þat all þis worldly wele  
As fro yow [men] wiþ dep away schal wende,  
Þan may it noght be doutedþ neuere a-dele,  
Bot soþe it is be resoun and be kynde,  
ȝif worldly blisse schulde be ȝoure fynal ende  
And verray forme † of alle youre welfulnesse,

PROSA IV, STAN. 20.—7. sche] he D: alway] euer D; all J: ibe] be  
T H D h. 8. þis] his Dc: deuisioun] demyson] T. STAN. 21.—1. ne]  
om. T H h F: it] om. N. 2. blisse] blis H: in] to Ba F J: þis] his T D.  
3. aparcleyued] parceyuedF: And if it so be I haue perceyvyd T H. 5. Ne]  
He H D J P: Ne dredeþ L] Ne dredeþ he F. 6. lose] lese N H D h: gone]  
forgone F. 7. his] þis F; longe P. 8. wiche] the which h; wiche þat P:  
triste] trusteth H; trosteth D. STAN. 22.—1. Or] Other P: it] so N: lose]  
lese N P; lesse D; loue h. 2. repreue] reprofer D: and] or Dc: in (2)] om.  
Ba C D h J Ch. 3. doutless] douteles Rl Ba N; nodoute P. 4. whos]  
with T: esy herte] herte easey T H. 5. to whom þat] that whanne D;  
to whom F. 7. may] yt may Dc: forlorn] lorne D; forloron F. 8.  
to] into T H. STAN. 23.—1. þat] as J: worldly] world) Ba T Ch; wordly  
P. 2. fro] for h; ȝow men Ba N T H R D Dc J Ch] ȝow other MSS.: wiþ  
dep] which T; with H; which dep J. 3. noght be doutedþ] be doughtyd  
natt T: noght] om. F: be] om. Ch. 4. it] om. N. 5. ȝif] In Dc:  
schulde] shille F: ȝoure] oure D: fynal] small T; smale H. 6. forme H]  
fortune other MSS.: alle] al N; om. D: ȝoure] oure D: welfulnesse] welthy-  
nesse P.

Than euery creature of mortale kynde  
With deth must tornen in-to wrecchidnesse.

(227)

24. Bot we haue wist of many one here before  
To seche þe fruyt of blisse in þeire entent,  
þat haue it boght full bitterly and sore  
By deth, be doloure, be peynes *and* tourment.  
How myght it be þen þat þis lyf present  
Wiþ any lustes myght þe þe welfull make,  
Sith it is so þat when þis lyf is went  
They beeþ no wrecchis wiche it haþ forsake ?

(228)

METRUM iiijm<sup>m</sup>

Si quis volet perhennem.

1. Who so þat lust to bulde him-self a sete  
þat schulde be mighty sure *and* perdurable,  
þat bitter Eures bruse it noght ne bete,  
Ne fierse floodes make it not meuable,  
þe hyhe hilles ben not profitable,  
And mo[i]ste sondes most hym nede eschue,  
For on no mountayne may no werk be stable,  
Neper in þe sond þe foundement be trewe.

(229)

2. For-why þe south wynd bloweþ sore alofte  
þat on no mounteyn may noþing be sure,

PROSA IV, STAN. 23.—7. euery] eny N: of] þat is of Dc: mortale] notable h. 8. deth] dothe T: tornen] turne N P: in to] vnto P; to h. STAN. 24.—1. one] om. T H. 2. seche] seeke D P. 3. haue] hath h: full] om. Rl F J Ch. 5. be þen] than be D. 6. þe D] pou L; ȝow N M: welfull] wilfull N; wooful D. 7. þis] om. h. 8. wiche it haþ] that thee haue D: haþ] haven H. [ll. 3, 4 om. T.] METRUM IV, STAN. 1.—1. Who] Ho H: þat] om. T D h F: to] om. D: to bulde him self] hym selfe to bylde hym T: self] om. H. 3. Eures] eurus N T H F: eyres h: bruse] brose N; broyse D; brese P: it] om. N: noght] om. F: ne] and D. 4. fierse] ferse Rl Ba Ch; feurse N; fyrse H: meuable] mutable T. 5. þe] Ne H; To F: hilles] hulles Rl Ba: not] om. H. 6. moste L] moiste N F; moyste T H; most Dh J Ch; mostey P: hym nede] he nedys T H P; nedes hym h; hym nedys Dc F. 7. on] vppon h: no (1)] a N; the T H: mountayne] montaynes D. 8. Neper] Nor N; Noþer R h Bb: þe (1)] no T H: foundement] werke F; thing P: be] may be H. STAN. 2.—1. For why] For pi F: þe om. J: south] soth H; southe D: sore] to sore T: alofte] on lofte T D. 2. no] the N T H.

And sondes þat so louse ben *and* softe,  
 An heuy burthen may þey noght endure.  
 To fleen þerfore þat perilous auenture,  
 A siker sete to set þy-self vpon,  
 Take þis in mynde *and* sette þerto þi cure  
 To bulde a low hous on a siker ston.

(230)

3. That is to seyn þat þou set all þi mynde  
 Vpon þat blisse þat euere schal abyde,  
 And if so falle þat þe wode wynde  
 Turne vp and doun þe see in euery side,  
 In verray reste þou most þi-seluen hyde,  
 And in thi bastell ful of blisfulnessse,  
 In lusty age þan schall þe wel betide,  
 And set at noght þis worldly wrecchidnesse.

(231)

PROSA V<sup>a</sup>

Sed [cum] racionum.

1. Bot for als moche as I haue done þe lisso  
 Be my resoun descending into the,  
 To vsen now I trowe þat tyme it is  
 Som medecyne þa[t] more myghty be.  
 Now vnderstond, all were it so perde  
 þat goodes whiche þat fortune haþ bestowen  
 Schulde stonden euer in perdurab[ilitate],  
 How myght þou euer acounte þem for þyn owen ?

METRUM IV, STAN. 2.—3. so] om. F: louse] loos D; loyse h; longe Dc.  
 4. An heuy] But an easi h: þey] that T; ther D. 5. þerfore] there fro N  
 h: þat] om N. 6. set þyself] sette þis N. 8. on] vpon F: a (2)] om. Ba  
 N J Ch. STAN. 3.—1. That] This F. 2. [þat blisse] repeated h (*as in L*).  
 3. if] though TH; yefhit F. 4. vp and] vp so T: in] on D. 5. most  
 maist N F; maye D. 6. thi] the D; om. F: bastell] batell Ba J Ch;  
 bastyle H D; castel F P: blisfulnessse] blissnes Dc. 7. þe wel betide] we  
 betyde T H. 8. worldly] wordly T H Dc P. PROSA V. cum] quam L.  
 STAN. 1.—1. for als moche as] for cause F: done þe lisso] do thy lysse T;  
 done thys P. 2. into] vnto N D. 3. þat] om. F: it] om. h: is] isse Rl  
 Ba. 4. þat Rl N C T Dc F P] þan L; þat more myghty be] that myghty  
 myght bee D. 5. were] where J. 6. whiche] þat F: whiche þat] with  
 H: whiche þat fortune haþ bestowen] with fortune hath ben stowyn T  
 bestowen] þe stowen F. 7. perdurable] perdurabilite Rl Ba N C T H R D  
 Bb Dc F Ch; perdurablete P. 8. myght pou] miȝtestou F: þou] om. h:  
 euer] om. F: euer acounten] accompte euer T; acounten L] acounte N C  
 acompt H h P: hem] om. T H D.

(232)

2. And pilke same þat ye accounten best,  
 If þat þey were considered as þei ought,  
 Ful foule þei schulde seme † and dishonest,  
 And ben accounted as a þing of noght.  
 Now of richesse, how semeþ in þi þoght  
 Why been þey goode, wheþir of þ[aire] propre kynde,  
 [Or] ffor þey ben into þi warde broght,  
 And schul be good til þat þei fro þe wende?

(233)

3. What is þat gold wiche þat ȝe clepe richesse,  
 Or money gedered in ȝoure tresorie?  
 But þise scheweþ more þeire worþynesse  
 In puttyng out þan kepynge preuely;  
 For auarous men ben hate comounlye,  
 And euery wyght wil haue þeym in disdeyn.  
 And þo þat wil dispenden largelye,  
 þei schal haue loue and worschip þer ageyn.

(234)

4. And sith þis good þat þou dispenderest þus,  
 When it is spent abideþ nought wiþ þe,  
 Than is þy money only precious  
 When þou it hast i-put away fro the.

PROSA V, STAN. 2.—1. pilke] thyk C; þe F; thes P: same] fame F:  
 ye] þei N; þe R; om. D h: accounten] accountyd T; acompte H; acompte  
 them P. 2. þat] om. T H h F. 3. semen L] seme Rl Ba N H h.  
 4. as a] for T; for a H; as D. 5. how] of H; yt De: in] þe in M: þi]  
 þis H: No richesse of semes the in þi thought T. 6. Why] Now h: whetir  
 L] wheþer Rl Ba N C R h; whedre M; wher De Ch; om. T D: þi L] om.  
 Rl Ba F J Ch; here N H; theyre T; ther P. 7. ffor] Or for T H N: þi  
 warde broght] þe wold y brought N; youre worde i brought T; your ward  
 y brought H P: warde] worde h: broght] i broughte D F. 8. schul]  
 shulde N P; shille F: þat] om. T F: þe] yow T H P. STAN. 3.—1. What  
 is þat] That is h: is] ȝif Rl Ba J Ch: þat (1) it T H P; om. D: wiche þat  
 ȝe clepe richesse] that men call riches T; which ye call rychesse H: ȝe  
 clepe] is cleped R; ye cal P: ȝe] om. Dc: What yef golde which is cleped  
 richesse F. 2. in] into Ba F J Ch. 3. But] Lo F: scheweþ] sweth  
 T H; swythe D: þeire] om. Rl Ba De J Ch; of thye D: worthynesse]  
 vnthrifynesse T; wrechednesse D. 4. þan] þe N; þan in F. 5. men]  
 om. D: hate] hated F P. 6. wyght] om. h: wil haue] bath F: þeym]  
 hym T. 7. þo] þey T H: wil] wolle F: dispenden] spend T H D. 8.  
 þei schal haue loue] Honour þey shil hafe F: loue &] om. D. [1. 5 om. h.]  
 STAN. 4.—1. sith] om. N T P: pis] that h. 2. spent] spend Rl Ba;  
 spendyd H; spende h F; abideþ] abit D: nought] no thynge' D. 3. þy  
 money only precious] þy mon oonly pytuous T. 4. it hast i put] haste y  
 putt it T H: i put] put Ba D F J Ch,

Than in dispendynge lieth þe preciouste  
Of ȝoure tresour *and* not in hepes grete ;  
It stant ȝow neuere at no commodite,  
Ne avayleþ noȝt til þat it be forlete.

(235)

5. And what if all þe gold þat all men han,  
As it is now in distribucioum,  
Lo were assembled in an hepe *and* than  
O man it hadde in his possessioum ?  
This gold þan be this supposicioun,  
Alle oþere men most nedye make *and* bare,  
And oo man riche, this is no questioun,  
Beleuynge after all þe worlde in care.

(236)

6. A voys all hoole *and* noȝting diminude  
Attones may wiþoute apeyrement  
Fulfile þe yeres of a multitude.  
Youre richesse is not so sufficient ;  
For til þey be departed *and* i-schent,  
To many men ne mowe þei not be taken,  
And þilke men fro wiche þey ben i-went,  
They lyuen pore when þey han hem forsaken.

(237)

7. O streyt and pore þat richesse may [I] calle  
Wiche alle men ne mowe not haue attones,

PROSA V, STAN. 4.—5. in] in þi F : lieth] both T H ; lythe D ; lith h :  
þe] þi Rl Ba F J Ch. 6. Of] Or Rl ; hepes] hopes F : no] om. T. 8.  
noȝht] no thyng P : þat] om. T H F P : it] ye D. STAN. 5.—1. if] of T  
H : gold'] godes F : all (2)] om. T F. 3. Lo] om. D: assembled] dissembled  
D : an] oon D. 4. it hadde] had it D : his] 'om. D. 5. be] om. h :  
this (2)] om. N h Dc F ; thy T. 6. moste L] most Rl Ba H ; must N R :  
nedye] nedly T : and] them D J. 7. riche] right Rl. 8. Beleuynge]  
Blevynge N : after all þe worlde] all the worlde after T H : all þe] alle h :  
worlde] welde h. STAN. 6.—1. and] om. D: diminude] devyd T ; diminute  
Dc : all hoole and nothing diminude] vniuersal (I may conclude) P. 2.  
Attones] At ones Rl Ba N : wiþoute apeyrement] owten approximent T H.  
3. yeres] eres Rl Ba N C D J Ch ; ayeris H. 4. richesse] riches D: so]  
om. T H. 5. departed] partyd Dc : i schent] shent D ; y sente F ; i spent  
P. 6. many] money : ne] om. H : mowe] may T : not] om. F. J. 7.  
þilke] thes P : wiche] welthe h ; whom P : i went] went F : As tho which  
fro me be shent (went H) T H. 8. They (1)] Yet D : lyuen] leuen Rl Ba  
N Dc J ; leue me T H ; leuyth F ; leue þe P : pore] pouere N h ; om. F :  
hem] me T H. STAN. 7.—1. pore] pouere N h ; poere M : þat] pey T :  
richesse] riches D: may] may I J P C (*I inserted later*) ; may men Dc ; men  
may F. 2. ne] om. H D F : mowe] may T H D: attones] at ones Rl Ba  
N ; at onys C.

Ne none haue al, but if þe toþere alle  
 For pouert<sup>t</sup> and for nede make þaire mones !  
 And eke I merveile þat thise precious stones,  
 þat ȝe beholden þaym so lustelye,  
 And feynen beaute in þing<sup>t</sup> þer þat none is,  
 And þere it is ȝe konne it noght aspie.

(238)

8. And what þing<sup>t</sup> is it ? brightnesse of colour  
 Why þat þis perry semeþ yow so faire ?  
 This wite ȝe well þe brightnes is not youre,  
 Ne noght of yow, but only it is þaire,  
 As be a light reboundyng<sup>t</sup> in þe ayre.  
 And moche I merveile why ȝe wonder so  
 On þing<sup>t</sup> þat may amenden noght ne payre  
 Youre kyndly goodes be † noght þat þei may do.

(239)

9. What þing<sup>t</sup> is þat þat lakkēþ lyf and lyth,  
 þat may be likned to a creature  
 That berip lyf and resoun haþ þere-with,  
 That schulde be demed faire as be nature ?  
 And þogh þei drawe a beaute in figure  
 Of hym þat made it, ȝit in ȝoure presence  
 Thei may not worthi been in no mesure  
 To be merveilled in ȝoure excellence.

PROSA V, STAN. 7.—3. none] one H F: none haue al] non natt all T: þe  
 toþere] þat oper Rl Ba H D F J Ch: þe toðyr Dc: alle] shalle D. 4.  
 pouert] pouerte N H F: for (2)] om. T F. 5. eke] also h: IJ a D.  
 7. feynen] fayne T; fynde D: in] in a T: þing þer þat] þinges where P:  
 þat] om. T F; it Ch: none] non Rl Ba N. 8. þere] where F: konne it  
 noght] cannot F: it (2)] right h: aspie] espye Rl Ba N. STAN. 8.—1. of  
 colour] om. J. 2. þis] þe T. 3. wite] wote H D; wete h: þe] þis N:  
 youre] youres J. 4. only it is] hit is of F: it] om. N. 6. ȝe] þe H.  
 7. On] O Rl: amenden noght ne payre] not amende nor appayre D; ne  
 amende ne payre P: ne payre] non appayer T; no appere H; ne appeire h;  
 ne apayre F. 8. goodes] good T H P: ben I.] by C T H J P; be h: þei]  
 om. Rl Ba F J Ch. [I. 6 om. T. Stan. om. Dc.] STAN. 9.—1. þat  
 (2)] om. N: lyth] lyght D P. 2. likued] lickened Rl Ba. 3. berip]  
 om. R: resoun haþ] has reson T: That is reson endowed wiþ F. 4. And  
 soule þat euer shal endure F. 5. þogh] om. h: þei drawe] þe drawn N:  
 a beaute] a beaut H; aboute D: in] of C; in a T. 6. Of hym þat made  
 it ȝit] Of that it had T; Of that y made yit H. 7. may] om. N. 8. be  
 merveilled] merveiled be M: in] of H. [Stan. om. Dc.]

(240)

10. And wheþire þise feldes lusty faire *and* grene  
 So full of floures lusteth oght youre sight ?  
 “ Why schulde þey noght ? ” seide I, “ syth þat þey ben  
 A faire part of his werkes full of myght.  
 For so somtymes when þe see is bright  
 We wonder moche, *and* when þat heuen is clere,  
 Vpon þe moone *and* sterres in the nyght,  
 And on þe sonne þat schyneþ on vs here.”

(241)

11. ‘ Bot aperteynþ,’ quod sche, ‘ oght to þe ?  
 Might þou þat beaute in þy-self[e] fynde ?  
 Darst þow reioken þat þey in the be  
 As þing[!] subiectid[!] in þy propre kynde ?  
 Art þou depeynted[!], semeþ in þy mynde,  
 Wiþ floures of þe firste somer sesoun,  
 Or þat þou as a tree wiþ rote and rynde  
 May norisse fruytes ; trowest þou þis be resoun ?

(242)

12. And wherfore be ye ravisched so in veyn,  
 As þogh þise goodes schulde be þyn owne  
 þe wiche fro the ben vtterly forreyn,  
*And* wonder fer as euery man may knownen ?  
 For-why fortune, þou myght it fully trowen,  
 Ne may not make hem thyn[e] for to bene,

PROSA V, STAN. 10.—1. Wheþire] Where Ba F P; whedre M: feldes lusty] lusty feldes D: lusty] þat ben P: faire] om. T H. 2. lusteth] delyteth P: oght] om. T H. 3. þat] om. F: þei (2)] om. R. 4. faire] fayr N: part] partee h. 5. so] om. T: somtymes] somtyme F: see] om. H. 6. and] om. T D. 7. and] and the T: sterres] sterre J. 8. on (1)] vppon h: on (2)] vppon h: on vs] amonge ous P: here] so clere T; clere F. [Stan. om. Dc.] STAN. 11.—1. quod sche oght to þe] aught to the quod she T. 2. Might pou] Maistow N; Mayst þou P: þat] þe T: self] selfe Ba D; seluen N C. 3. Darst] Darest Rl Ba; Dyrst T; Derst H: Darst þow] Darstow N F: reioken] reiyses N T D; reyosen H: þat] thyself þat T. 4. þing[!] thus T H: subiected] subiecte N H: kynde] mynde T. 5. Art þou] Artou N F. 7. þat] as Rl Ba Bb (*but altered to þat by later hand*) ; om. D; Art J: þat pou] thow that T H; Artou F: rote] rout H 8. May] Maist H: norisse] norish Rl H: fruytes] frute T: þis] om. D F J Ch. [Stan. om. Dc.] STAN. 12.—1. wherfore] where N T H: be ye] art þou P: ye] om. T; theye D: ravisched so] so rauysshed Rl: so] om. F J Ch. 2. goodes] om. T H; þinges F: þyn owne] þing Owen Rl Ba J Ch: owne] Owen N H. 3. The wiche fro the] Ther foore theye D: fro the ben vtterly] be vtterly fro the T F. 4. fer] there D; sore h: euery] yeueri F. 5. myght] maist N P. 6. Ne] om. F: thyn L] þyne Ba h: for] owne D.

Wiche þat nature haþ oþer-wise be-stowen  
And vtterly made fro the alienē.

(243)

13. For-why þat fruyt þat doth on erthe encresen  
Deserueth vnto bestes sustenance,  
And litel thyng' youre nede may acesen  
So þat nature may haue hire su[ffisaunce].  
Why schuldest þou þen desiren habundaunce  
And aske of fortune superfluite,  
Sith þat nature may hauen hire plesaunce  
With litel þing' in price *and* quantite?

(244)

14. And ȝif þou wilt hire suffisaunce oppresse  
Wiþ superfluite surfetously,  
Other it wil brynge the in heuynesse,  
Or elles þe annoyen grevously.  
But of þis o thyng' certayne merval I :  
þat þou woldest seme faire *and* gloriouse,  
As for to been i-clothed ryally  
In dyuers schap *and* colour preciouse.

(245)

15. For if in clothes any beaute be  
Wherby þe sight is faire *and* agreeable,

PROSA V, STAN. 12.—7. Wiche þat] The which T H P : oþerwise] oother D ; elles where P : bestowen] be sowen Rl J Ch. 8. made] has made T ; y made F : fro] for Bb (*but altered to fro by different hand*) : alienē] aleyn H ; alyne F. [Stan. om. Dc.] STAN. 13.—1. þat fruyt þat doth on erthe] The frute that on erthe doth T: þat (1)] the N H: þat (2)] om. D: on] in N ; on the D. 2. vnto] into the D ; out to h. 3. youre nede may] may youre nede D: acesen] acesoun Rl Ba ; cease T; assesten D. 4. may] om. P: hire] his Rl T H F J Ch: sustenaunce R L M h Bb] suffishaunce Rl Ba N C T H F J Ch ; gouernaunce D. 5. schuldest] woldyst T ; þen desiren] desire than T. 6. aske] eke Rl Ba C F J Bb (*but altered to ask by different hand*) ; axe h: fortune] fortunes Ba D F J. 8. price] pryses H. [Stan. om. Dc.] STAN. 14.—1. wilt] wult H ; wolt P: hire] hir Rl Ba N ; om. F: oppresse] expresse J. 3. Other it wil] Or hit woll Rl Ba F ; Or it wold J: wil] wole N h: brynge the] the brynge P: in] into F. 4. Or] Other P: þe] ye Bb: þe annoyen] ayen þe T; annoyen the H. 5. þis o thyng' certayne] pisse fortune one thyngē T: certayne] certeyn Rl Ba N ; certaunly C; om. h: certayne merval] meruayll certayn H: I] is yt J. 6. þat] om. N: þou] om. T H: woldest seme] semen woldest T H. 7. iclothed] clothed so T H; clothed D F P. 8. schap] chapp H: &] of H: colour] colours D. [Stan. om. Dc.] STAN. 15.—1. if] om. Ch: if in clothes] i clothis yf T H: beaute] beaut H. 2. Wherby] Where H: þe sight] om. T.

þat perteyneþ noþing<sup>i</sup> vnto þe,  
 Bot þat matir lo holde I merveilable ;  
 Or þat þe wit of hym is commendable  
 þat made þis þing, þis may be cause of wonder,  
 But þat þou schuldest þerfore ben honourable  
 As in ȝoure kynde, ȝe ben full fer asonder.

(246)

16. Or for to walken wiþ an huge route,  
 And so of mayne to be copiouse,  
 May make þe blissful? Nay, wiþoute doute!  
 For I suppose þat þei ben viciouse,  
 Thei ben a grevous charge vnto þy house  
 And mowe be cause of thy destruccioun.  
 And what if þei be goode *and* vertuouse  
 And verry honest of condicioun?

(247)

17. Whi schulde þeire vertu *and* þeire honeste  
 Be acounted as a part<sup>i</sup> of þi richesse?  
 Or wherfore schuldest þou commended be,  
 Or haue a þank of foreyn worthynesse?  
 Lo in all thyse rehersed<sup>i</sup> are expresse  
 Þe wiche as þow accounted in þy þoght  
 As for þi goodes; cheerly as I gesse  
 I haue þe schewed<sup>i</sup> þat þyn[e] be þei noght.

PROSA V, STAN. 15.—3. perteyneþ] apperteyneth T H: vnto] to H.  
 4. matir] nature J: lo] om. Rl T H D P: merveilable] merveille h. 5. Or  
 þat] Other P: wit] with T. 6. þing<sup>i</sup>] forsaid thyng T: þis (2)] þat F: of]  
 o T. 7. þerfore] om. T: honourable] homyyable T. 8. As] And T:  
 asonder] on sondre D. [Stan. om. Dc.] STAN. 16.—1. wiþ] ayer with F:  
 an] om. F: huge] heuge Rl; hoge C; hye h. 2. of mayne to] off many  
 for to T: mayne] many H; mayit R; meyny D F; manye J; mayn þer Bb  
 (per inserted later by different hand): to be] om. D 3. þe] þis h: nay]  
 maye h. 4. I] if I R; om. J. 5. charge] char N. 6. mowel]  
 may T; mow H h; moche Dc: thy] þine Ch: destruccioun] distincciuon h.  
 7. what] om. N: if] and T H: good] goode Rl Ba H h Ch: and] om. Ch.  
 8. vertuouse] vettuous P. STAN. 17.—1. þeire (1)] her N H: and] or  
 T H: and þeire] other P: þeire (2)] her N H. 2. acounted<sup>i</sup>] acompted  
 H D h: a] om. Rl T D Dc J Ch P. 3. Or wherfore] of worship h:  
 schuldest þou] sholdestou F. 4. a] om. T H: of foreyn] for thy T.  
 5. are] here T H P; and F. 6. wiche] om. T H: accounted] accountedest  
 N; acounte T; a comptyn H; acompted D h; acomptest P: in] om. T H.  
 8. schewed<sup>i</sup>] swewyd H: þyn] þine Rl Ba N R Ch; thus D: þei] þi J.

(248)

18. In wiche þinges, as I haue set beforne,  
 If þou no lusty beaute canst i-fynde,  
 Whi sorwest þow þat þow hem hast forlorn? 1  
 Or of þe hauynge ioyest in þy mynde?  
 If þei be faire as of hire owne kynde  
 What may þat apperteyne[n] vnto þe?  
 For hadde þei ben fro þe wiþoute[n] ende  
 Lo also fayre and lusty had þey be.

(249)

19. For doute it noght þai be not preciouse  
 For þou hem hast and kepest bisely,  
 But for þei semed the deliciouse,  
 Thow þeym accounted thy tresour forþy.  
 What craue þe þen wiþ so gret a cry,  
 þat þe on fortune callen þus al day?  
 Wiþ habundaunce in soþe as suppose I  
 Ye seken for to dryuen nede away.

(250)

20. But þit þe sothe reuerseþ ȝoure entent;  
 For mykell help ȝow nedeþ to mayntene,  
 And for to kepe ȝoure precious hostilment,  
 Lest so bifalle þat þe it lese ageyn.

PROSA V, STAN. 18.—1. set] seyd Rl Ba N C T H D Ch J; sette h; y  
 seid F. 2. canst] can T: i fynde] fynde N T H D F P: þi fynde J; not  
 fynde h. 3. sorwest] sorowest Ba h: þat] om. D: þat þou hem hast] þau:  
 þou haſe F: hem hast] hast them T H D Ch; haue hym J: forlorn] lorn Dc.  
 4. þe] þyn N; þy T; ioyest] yoist H; enioyest P; ioyest thou h. 5. paire  
 Rl h Bb] þey Rl Ba N T H D Dc F J Ch P: as] om. F. 6. þat] pis N;  
 om. Ch: apperteyne L] apperteyn Rl Ba: vnto] to H. 7. hadde] hadd  
 H; had R: fro þe] for T; om. D: wiþoute] withouten Rl Ba N. 8. Lo  
 om. P. STAN. 19.—1. doute it noght] no doute P. 2. hem] om. T H.  
 3. semed the] semeth to þe] Rl Ba J Ch; seme to pe T; semeth pe H F.  
 4. þeym accounted] accomptest them T H: accounted] accompted D h: thy  
 tresour] pei tresory Dc. 5. What eryn] than that with shuche a cry T.  
 6. ȝe] þe Rl Ch: on] in R: calien] take D: callen þus] þus calle Dc. 7. in]  
 for N. 8. for] om. F: nede] sekenes D. [ll. 2-5 repeated on turning  
 leaf D.] STAN. 20.—1. ȝit] ȝut Rl Ba: þe] for Rl Ba Dc F J Ch; in D:  
 But ȝit the contrary to your entent doth fal P. 2. mykell] moche N;  
 muche T H: ffor yow nedeth helpe (not lytel) to meynteyn P. 3. ȝoure]  
 om. N: hostilment] hostielment N: thynges al P. 4. bifalle] yt falle  
 Dc: þat] om. T: ȝe it lese] ye lese it now T; ye lese hit F.

Lo myche þerfore ȝoure laboure is in veyn  
 That ȝe moste lyue in heuynesse and drede.  
 And þis is sothe also þat I schal seyn :  
 Who so mychel haþ, of mychel þing haþ nede.

(251)

21. And litel þing hym nedep certanly  
 þat can his presence mesure in þis wise,  
 Right euere as nature nedep kyndely  
 And nowht vnto þe lust of coueitise.  
 Ne can [y]e noght ȝoure-seluen bet avise  
 To see what good is set yow-self<sup>t</sup> wiþ-yinne,  
 Bot nedes will ȝe seken and devise  
 In straunge þyng<sup>t</sup> youre godes for to wynne ?

(252)

22. And þus of þyng<sup>t</sup> þat schulde be worþiest<sup>t</sup>  
 The ordre is peruered vp so doun.  
 þe wiche is clepid a devyn[e] beest<sup>t</sup>  
 Be kyndly myght and meryt of resoun,  
 Ne can nougnt knownen his condicioun,  
 Ne see þe merite of his excellencie,  
 But be þe will and veyn possessiou[n]  
 Of suche ded<sup>t</sup> vnsauled hostilmentys.

PROSA V, STAN. 20.—5. Lo myche þerfore ȝoure labour] So muche your more laboure T ; Lo muche more youre labour H ; So moche the more your labour P : þerfore] tresoure F. 6. mostel] must N : lyue] lewe H ; lieve h : and] and in H. 7. is] om. N : also] also pis J. 8. Who] Ho H : mychel (1) moche N ; much T H ; mykell h ; miche F P : mychel (2)] moche N P ; mykyll T h ; muche H ; mochell M ; miche D F : þing] om. T H F : haþ (2)] he most H. STAN. 21.—1. And] A T : þing] om. h : hym] om. F. 2. presence] plente T H P : in þis wise] in his lyfe D. 3. euere] euen N D Ch ; anon T H. 4. nowht] om. Rl Ba N C Dc J Ch ; now R ; inserted later Bb : vnto] to F ; euen D : þe] om. T H ; þat R. 5. ne (2)] ȝe all other MSS. ; yow P : bet avise] be wyse T ; be auise H : better aduyse D ; bettir avise J P. 6. what good] what goode gode T : is set yow self] your selfe is sette F ; self] om. T. 7. will] woll h F. 8. straunge] strang H : þyng<sup>t</sup>] pynges T H F P. STAN. 22.—1. þus] þis F : þus of þyng<sup>t</sup> þat schulde] þus oon thyng T : of] in J : þyng<sup>t</sup>] þinges P. 2. ordre] word Rl C Ch Bb (but altered by later hand to ordre) ; world N Dc : vp so] sette vp and N ; vp and R. 3. is] ye F : devyn L] deue Rl Ba J Ch (but altered by different hand to deffe) ; doome h ; dyuine N H ; deef Dc ; dere F. 5. his] his awne P. 6. Ne] Nor h : see] seme T : om. h. 7. þe] thy T ; om. F : will and] desire of P : and] of F. 8. vnsauled] vnsaule h : hostilmentys] vstilmentes Rl Ba D J Ch ; vstilmence N ; hustylmentes C : houstylment H : Of shuch and vnsoule hostylment T : Trusteth wordly ryches to be hyd defence P.

(253)

23. Al other bestes holde hem-sel[uen] payed  
 Of beaute þat wiþ-y[n] hem-seluen es ;  
 But nyce men, as I beform haue seid,  
 Youre god hap set in suche a worþinesse  
 þat in þoure soules ye ben his liknesse,  
 And ben in kynde so noble a creature,  
 Ye seken here be felthe *and* wrecchidnesse  
 To enbelesch youre excellent nature !

(254)

24. Ye vndirstonden noght, y[e] can noght see  
 What wronge ye done vnto youre creat[our].  
 Sith he mankynde hath set in this degré  
 All erþely þing to passen in valour,  
 Ye do youre dignite gret dishonour  
 To þrest it vnder most vnworþy þinges,  
 Right as it were a lord, a gouernour,  
 Wolde make hym suget to his vnderlinges.

(255)

25. For if ȝe schulde haue þis entencioun,  
 þat all þing þat is had of any wight,  
 Schulde more be had in reputacioun  
 Than he þat hath or aweþ it be right,  
 Ye do ȝow-seluen schame *and* gret vnhite,  
 So foule þing[es] sith ȝe demen ȝoures,

PROSA V, STAN. 23.—1. Al] Alle Rl Ba N : other] othere N R ; oþre  
 Bb: payed] a payed P. 3. nyee] wyse T ; niys h: But ye men the wyche  
 as I haue said P. 4. god hap] goode haue T ; gode hawe H : set] pow  
 sette Ch (pow inserted later): in] om. Dc: in suche a] on yowe sucie D.  
 5. ye ben] y ben Bb (but altered to ye ben by different hand); ye bereth P:  
 liknesse] sekernesse T ; siknesse H. 6. in] om. T: noble] nobly h.  
 7. Ye] Theye D: seken] secure T H : here] hir D: felthe] welthe h: and] of  
 Rl FJ; or Dc. 8. enbelesch] emblesh T H; evenlesshe h. STAN. 24.—  
 1. Ye] I C; Ye (2) T H] Y L; I R: Ye can noght see] that I con see D.  
 2. wronge] wrong H: vnto] to D: creature L] creatour Rl Ba N h. 3. this]  
 om. T ; his D Dc Bb (but altered to this by different hand); hye F. 4. All]  
 alle R: þing] pinges P: to passen iu] ys turned of Dc; to excede in P.  
 5. do] doth Rl H. 6. þrest] thriste N ; trist H: vnder] wondyr H  
 vnworþy] worþy Rl Ba Dc J Ch. 7. Right] Like N: a (1) om. N: a  
 (2)] and N ; om. C; of h. 8. hym] om. Ba J Ch: to] vnto T ; vndyr Dc.  
 STAN. 25.—1. schulde] woolde D: pis] his D. 2. pinges L] þing] N T  
 H: wight] worthy T ; worth H. 3. had in] set of P: in] y H. 4.  
 aweþ] awey M. 5. do] doth Rl Ba: yow] ȝoure N H h: seluen] self Rl  
 Ba H h P: schame] greeete shame D. 6. foule] fulle J: þing] thyngis  
 H P: sith] ȝif Dc: demen] demien it N ; deme then T ; demen hem H;  
 deme them P.

Submyttinge yow, as in ȝoure awne sight,  
To þing wherof ȝe ben þe possessoures.

(256)

26. At youre desert this falleþ verayment;  
The kynde of man lo stant in þis degré,  
þat only þanne he is most excellent  
When þat he knoweþ his owne dignite.  
And þer ageyn eft-sones when þat he  
Ne can noght knowe his owne worþinesse,  
He is be-nethen bestialite  
And vndercast to alle wrechdydnesse.

(257)

27. A rude beest his nature vseþ þus  
To mowe not knowe hym-self[e] kyndely.  
In man it is ful foule *and* viciouse  
His nature for to leten folily.  
And þus ȝoure errour scheweþ openly  
þat ȝe supposen þat suche accident,  
Youre kynde þat is so worthi *and* so hye,  
Schuld maken faire be foreyn ornement.

(258)

28. It may not be þat resoun haþ defended,  
For if suche accidentes ben faire and gay,  
This[e] accidentes awen to be comended.  
But lo þat keuereð þing!, [it] is no nay,

PROSA V, STAN. 25.—7. as] inserted later R: awne] om. Rl Ba C Dc F J Ch Bb (*inserted later by different hand*). 8. To] Tho H: þing!] thinges T H P; thynke h; wherof] where H: þe] om. T h F. STAN. 26. 2. lo] soo D: stand] standeth P: þis] his T H 3. is] om. T H: most] om. h. 4. þat] om. R: owne] moste D. 5. þer] þus Ba N C De J Ch Bb (*but altered to per by later hand*); þis F. 6. Ne] om. D: worþinesse] vnworthynesse h. 8. all L] alle Ba Ch. STAN. 27.—2. To mowe not knowe] Soo maye hee not knowe D: mowe] may T; mow R; self] selfe Ba Ch. 3. ful] om. N; so F: viciouse] vicious N H h. 4. for to leten] to forleten Rl Ba N C H R Bb De J Ch : to foryete T F. 5. þus ȝoure] this D: scheweþ] shyneth T H. 6. þat] There H: accident] accidentes P. 7. kynde] kynd H: þat is] om. T. 8. faire be foreyn] before feyre F: be foreyn] byforn N; be fore T; be for H; beforne) in h; verray Dc: ornement] ornamentos P. STAN. 28.—1. defended] forfendyd T H. 2. if] whiche Ba F J Ch Bb (*but altered by later hand to if*): accidentes] accident T H. 3. This L] Thees Ba: accidentes] accident T H: awen] ought P. 4. lo] soo D: keuereð] kyured N; couered H; keured D: þing] om. F: is] it is Rl Ba H Dc F J.

So in his filpe abydeþ stille all-way ;  
 And I denye *and* vtterly dispreue  
 þat ony þing<sup>i</sup> is good þat harmen may,  
 Or ought þe hauere noyen or agreue.

(259)

29. Now is þis soth in certayn as I gesse ;  
 Thow wilt it seyn, I gabbe noght of þis.  
 For oft it falleþ þat tresour *and* richesse  
 Makip hire lordes for to fare amys,  
 Sith euyer wrecchid fool þat cursed is,  
 Suche gold and tresour whos [þat] euere it be,  
 He wolde coueite *and* wille þat it were his,  
 And þerfore put his lyf<sup>i</sup> in iuparte ;

(260)

30. And onely theym he holdyth worþiest<sup>i</sup>  
 þat of suche gold<sup>i</sup> *and* tresoure haue i-now.  
 Forþy þ behoueþ hym wiþoute rest<sup>i</sup>  
 To haue þat good, ne rekkeþ he not how.  
 But þow þat lyuest in suche a drede now  
 As þogh þou schuldest wiþ swerde or spere be stonge,  
 Haddest þou be pouere, it hadde be for þi prow,  
 Before þe þeef<sup>i</sup> þou myghtest haue gone *and* songe.

(261)

31. Ow wonder cleer is þis felicite  
 Of mortal þ ping<sup>i</sup> *and* worþi to be soght,

PROSA V, STAN. 28.—5. his] this D: filpe] fyst Dc: stille] om. D. 6. dispreue] dispreue it N. 8. agreue] greue T H h: Though he haue hir noyed or agreeued N. [l. 3 om. N.] STAN. 29.—1. Now] No T: þis] yt Dc: in] om. H. 2. wilt] wolth F P: it] now D; om. F: seyn] sema Dc: gabbe] gable J. 4. Makip hire lordes] maken here ofte N: lordes] lorde D: for] om. H: amys] omysse C. 5. Sith] Sith þat Rl Ba J. 6. and] or T: whos] whoes Rl Ba: whos þat N H P. 7. wolde] wyll Rl Ba H Ch; wole N R: coueite] coueyt it H: wille] wilne N: will þat it] wolde it T: He woll willen and coueyte hit were his F. 8. iuparte] partie Rl Ba; iuparde D; jeoparte h; ieparde F. STAN. 30.—1. theym he holdyth] holdest hym Rl Ba Dc F J Ch Bb (*but alter. to theym he holdyth by dif. hand*); holdyth C: theym] om. T H; peryn R: than D: holdyth] holdeth hit R; And only holden is he the worthieste N: And namly he holdeth them worþiest h. 2. of] hathe T: suche] such T H: haue] om. T; haþ F. 3. For pey] For pi Rl R F J; for hee D; forthy N; forvhy P: behoueþ hym] he besieth N; he beseeeth C; be sett theym T; besieht hem H; he besyeth hym P. 4. ne] and F; ne rekkeþ he] he ne rekkeþ R: he] om. F. 5. a] om. T D Dc. 6. þogh] om. T H: swerde] shelde T: stonge] strong H. 7. pouere] poure H: prow] perow R; prowe h. 8. myghtest] mayst P: myghtest haue gone] myghte goo T: haue] om. H. STAN. 31.—1. Ow] How N h; O when H. 2. mortale L] mortell Rl N; mortall H h: and] and lykly T: soght] softe P.

Pat reueþ a man of his tranquillite,  
And makeþ him be destourbled in his þoght!  
I not how dere pat blisse may be boght,  
A man to wynne suche a wilfulness.  
Thow art in pees while pat þou hast it noght;  
When þou it hast þou lesseſt þi sikernesſe.

(262)

METRUM Vm

felix nimium prior etas.

1. Full wonder blissful was þat rāþer age  
When mortal men couthe holde h[em]-self[en] payed,  
To fede þeym-selfe withoute suche outrage,  
Wiþ mete þat trewe feldes haue arrayed;  
Wiþ acorne[s] þaire hunger was alayed,  
And so þai couthe sese þaire talent;  
Thei hadde ȝit no queynt[e] craft assaied  
As clarry for to make ne pymtent.

(263)

2. To d  en purpure couthe þei noght be-þynke  
The white flees with ve[n]y[m] t[y]ryen ;  
þe rennyng<sup>t</sup> ryuer ȝaf hem lusty drynke,  
And holsom sleep þei took<sup>t</sup> vpon þe grene ;

PROSA V, STAN. 31.—4. *be]* to be T D: *destourbled*] destourbed N; distributed H J; troubled D F; distributed h P. 5. *not]* noot N R Bb: dere] here D: *pat]* om. R. 6. a (2)] om. T Dc: wilfulness] wellfullnesse H. 7. while] om. F: *pat]* om. T H R D Dc J: *it]* om. Dc. 8. *leskest]* leseth J: *pj]* om. Dc, in J. METRUM V, STAN. 1.—1. wonder blissful] wonderful D. 2. men] man T H: *couth]* coude D: *couth* holde hymself payed] coude hem apayde F: hym] hem Rl Ba M h; theym D; them P: self] selfe Ba T D: *payed]* apayed N D P Ch (*a insert. later by diff. hand*). 3. *peym]* hym N T H J: withoute] with D: *suche]* om. Dc. 4. *feeldes]* folkes D: *haue]* om. T H; had P. 5. *acorne]* ake cornys T; ackerns H; acornes D F; oo corn h; akernes P. 6. *pai]* the N: sese jcese Rl Ba N M; lese Dc; cesse F; cessen P. 7. *had]* hadde Rl Ba N h; had as T H: queynt] queynte Rl Ba N h: *craft]* craftes F. 8. *clarry]* clarey T; clarre H F; clarraye D; klarri Dc: *for]* om. F: ne] pe Ba Ch; om. T; nor D; or Dc J. STAN. 2.—1. *deen]* dye H D F; dyeen Ch (*y insert. later by diff. hand*): *couth]* coude N D: *couth* pei noght be pynke] they coude nat thynke T H. 2. *venym, tyryen* R P] vevyn treene Rl Ba M J Ch L; om. N; vevyn ge tryen C; venym tyten T; venem tytyen H; venem true h; venim tyren Bb (*altred from vevyn treene by diff. hand*); weuyng treene Dc; venyme treene F: The white fles of the lambes shyn D. 3. *ryuer]* rewer H: *zaf* hem lusty] though they lyste T: *zaf]* yevee D. 4. *vpon]* on T.

þe pynes þat so full of braunches been,  
 þat was þaire hous to kepen vnder schade ;  
 The se to kerue no schipes were þere seen,  
 þer was no man þat marchaundise made.

(264)

3. Thay liked noght to sailen vp and doun,  
 But kepe hem-self[en] where þei weren bred<sup>k</sup> ;  
 Tho was ful huscht þe cruel clarion ;  
 For egre hate þer was no blood i-sched<sup>k</sup>,  
 Ne þer-wiþ was non armour ȝit be-bled ;  
 For in þat tyme who durste haue be so wood  
 Suche bitter woundes þat he nolde haue dred,  
 Wiþouten reward<sup>k</sup> for to lese his blood.

(265)

4. I wolde oure tyme myght turne certanly  
*And* þise maners alwey wiþ vs dwelle.  
 But loue of hauyng brenneþ feruently,  
 More fersere þan þe verray fuyre of helle.  
 Allas ! who was þat man þat wolde hym melle  
 [Wiþ] gold *and* gemmes þat were keuered þus ?  
 þat first bygan to myne, I can not telle,  
 Bot þat he fond a parel † precious.

METRUM V, STAN. 2.—5. pynes] Pynus P : sc] om. F.      6. hous] om.  
 T H : kepe] kepe hem H D Dc F : schade] slade T.      7. kerue] keue F :  
 no] om. T: were þere seen[en] there were sende T H : seen] i sene Ch (i insert.  
 later by diff. hand).      8. was] were T H : man] men T H : marchaundise]  
 marchaundes C: made] i made Ch (i insert. later by diff. hand).      STAN. 3.—  
 2. kepe] kepte N H : where] þer F P : where þei were bred] ther they were  
 harde T : bred] i bred D.      3. huscht] husti F; hunth J; husche P.      4. i  
 sched<sup>k</sup>] shedde N ; shed T H D F.      5. Ne] Ne yett T: wiþ] om. D : ȝit] om.  
 T: be-bled<sup>k</sup>] bled C; i bled D ; be- insert. later by diff. hand Bb.      6. who]  
 he ne T H : haue] a T ; to han] H ; om. h ; inserted later R.      7. nolde  
 haue] ne wolde haue H ; wolde not P.      8. reward<sup>k</sup>] mede P.  
 STAN. 4.—1. oure] ȝoure N T H.      2. maners] maner F.      3. loue of  
 hauyng] law of hangyng T.      4. fersere] wondry ferser T ; forfer H : ferfer  
 R ; fierser D h ; feruent F: verray] om. T F ; weri h ; ferry Dc : fuyre] fure  
 h ; feyr De ; fury J.      6. Wiþ] Thus T ; This other MSS.: gemmes]  
 gemme H : were keuered þus] we honouré thus N.      7. myne] wynne D :  
 That first began comun I shall you telle T.      8. fond] founde Rl Ba N ;  
 parel P] peryll T H ; parelous other MSS.

(266)

PROSA VI<sup>a</sup>

Quid autem de dignitatibus.

1. Bot forþermore what schal I telle or seyn  
 Of hye power or elles of dignite,  
 þe wiche ȝe magnifieþ so in veyn  
 As þogh þei schulde as [hyhe as] heuenes be  
 Right as a þing of hyhe felicite?  
 And folily ye failen all amys,  
 Ne cunne noght wiþ-ynne youre wittes se  
 Where verray power *and* dignite is.

(267)

2. And if it so be þat a wrecchid wight,  
 As often hap it fallen here before,  
 In hye estat or dignite be dight,  
 How fiers a floode may harme ȝow so sore!  
 þe fuyre of Ethna may not harmen more,  
 þat blasteþ out *and* brenneþ euery side.  
 Lo suche a wrecche had better be vnboare  
 Than suche estates schulde to hym betide.

(268)

3. And certes þou remembrest, as I gesse,  
 Of þe conseilour[e]s dignite,  
 þat was þe hiest estate of worthynesse  
 In the begynnyng<sup>t</sup> of ȝoure liberte.  
 They were so full of prude and cruelte  
 Wherfore ȝoure eldres wolde it haue remeued,

PROSA VI, STAN. 1.—1. what schal I] I shall ȝow N: telle] knowe D.  
 2. Of] But T: hye] hyer N: elles] ell H: of (2)] om. T H. 3. magnifieþ] mavisen N; magnyfyhed] H. 4. as (2) L] verrey N; in maner D; as high as T H. 6. fallen] fallen N J: all] as h: amys] on mys N; omysses C. 7. cunne] can N; kone M; come J; comyth H; can ye P: ynne] om. D: youre] om. H. 8. Where] Where þat P: verray power] powere verray M: power & dignite] dignyte & power T H. STAN. 2.—1. it] om. Rl Ba N Dc F J Ch: a] a very T. 2. hap it] hit hath T H: it fallen] byfallen N: before] to fore Dc. 4. ȝow] om. F: so] to h. 5. fuyre] fure h: may not harmen] ne may harme no T: may harme no F: not] om. D. 6. blasteþ] blascheuyth T; blassheth H; lasteth D: out and brenneþ] and doth bryn T: brenneþ] fyreth D: euery] euer J. 8. Than] That h: estates] estate T: to] om. Ba D F J Ch. STAN. 3.—1. remembrest N C T H R D h P Bb (*altered from repenteſt by different hand*)]: repenteſt Rl Ba M Dc F Ch J]; in L remembrest *in margin*. 2. conseilours] consulars N H. 3. estate] om. N J; state D. 4. ȝoure] oure h.

And for þe same cause fro ȝoure citee  
 þe name of kyng<sup>t</sup> was voyded and repreud.

(269)

4. And if so be þat good[e] men be raysed  
 To hye estate, as seldom is þe chaunce,  
 Who is perfore of resoun to be praysed ?  
 Noght þat estate, bot youre good gouernaunce.  
 So þan in vertu lieth þe suffisaunce  
 Wherby þat honour comeþ to dignite,  
 And dignite noght be contrariaunce  
 Ne makeþ vertu worshipful to be.

(270)

5. This pouer wiche þat is [so] sore asoght,  
 So derworth and so clere in ȝoure entent,  
 What þing is it ? Why [be]holde ȝe noght  
 To þe wiche þinges ȝe been president,  
 As where-vpon ȝoure power is extent ?  
 What if þou saw a wrecchid mows allone  
 To claymen power or gouernement  
 Of oþer myse ? Pow woldest scorne sone.

(271)

6. And if þou woldest be-holden in thy mynde  
 What is þe mortal body of a wight,  
 A freeler þyng<sup>t</sup> þow schal nowhere i-fynde  
 þat lesse haþ of power or of myght.

PROSA VI, STAN. 3.—7. fro] of N D; soo Dc; for J. 8. of] of þe Rl F J: voyded] woyd Dc. [ll. 3-8 om. T H.] STAN. 4.—1. good] gode Rl Ba N M D F; wode h. 2. seldom] selden Rl Ba Ch; as hye F: þe] þat C P: om. M: chaunce] chaunge D. 3. of resoun] om. F. 4. þat estate] thastate h; the estate F: youre good] her N; good F: than] that N: lieth] lyth N; lith h. 8. Ne makeþ] Maketh not P: vertu] vertues T: to] om. D. [ll. 1-6 om. T H.] STAN. 5.—1. wiche] þe wiche R; om. F: þat] om. T H: is sore a soght] is so sore a syght N; y sore is sought T: a soght] y sought H P; soght D. 2. derworth] derward F: clere] clene Rl Ba Dc F Ch; dere N. 3. Why holde] and why behalde P: holde] behold C; beholdith H: ȝe] ȝe hit Rl D Dc F J; om. T H. 4. þe] om. T H Dc P: ȝe been] that be T; ben H. 5. where] pouer H: extent] existent D: And pouer apon pouer power is extent T. 6. mows] mouse Rl Ba N h J Ch; mows H. 7. claymen] clyment T; cleyment H. 8. scorne] skorne hym T; him skorn H; hane scorne D; laugh P. [ll. 5 om. h.] STAN. 6.—3. freeler] frayeloure F: pou schal] shal powe D; pou sholdest F: nowhere] nowre C; neuer T H h; not F: i fynde] fynde Rl Ba N T H M D h J Ch: pou schal no where i fynde] ne shalt thou none fynde P. 4. of (1)] om. H: or] and h F,

How sone he may be frayed *and* afright,  
 Or deed be bitynge of a litell flye,  
 Or be som worm þat crepen may in right  
 Withynne a mannes body preuely !

(272)

7. And who is he þat may do strengþe of force,  
 Or vsen myght or power, sey me þis,  
 But only on þe corruptible cors  
 Ryght of þe same kynde þat is his,  
 Other o[n] thing[  
s] þat more vnworthy is  
 As on fortune? Or whos myght may atteyne,  
 Be hye estate, power or worþinesse,  
 A fre corage to aresten or constreyne?

(273)

8. Stedfastly þat set hym-self<sup>i</sup> in reste,  
 And knet hym-self<sup>i</sup> in resoun euerydele,  
 Might þow his pece byreue out of his breste,  
 Vnto þi will his purpos to compelle?  
 Of suche a man, as somtyme it byfelle,  
 A tyraunt wolde arted hym be paynes  
 A certeyn counseil to bewrey *and* telle  
 Þe wiche þat was conspired hym agaynes.

(274)

9. Bot þen þis man boote of his tonges ende  
 And in his face he spet [it] so þat he,

PROSA VI, STAN. 6.—5. be frayed] gafta D; be flayed P; be frayed and a fright] be ffaylyd or of fflighte T; be flaied or a flyght H. 7. Or] Or he h. STAN. 7.—1. And who] Or ho H: do] by F: of] and T; or H D F. 2. Or (1)] om. F: vsen myght] as semyth H: þis] pus D F: Or of semeth of of power seyme þis T. 3. on the] in Rl Ba Dc F J Ch; vppon a H; apon a T; vppon the h. 4. same] om. N: is his] he is D. 5. Other o] Or o H; Or other D: vnworthy] worþi J. 6. on] of F: whos myght may atteyne] who so myȝte atteyne F: As one fortune as his myght yn ay atteyn H: Ass on as fortune as his myghte þou ay atteyne T. 7. or] and J. 8. A fre] After R: arestenj aretten Rl Ba N R Bb J Ch; arrettyn C; coart T H; artyn D; arteyn P: and] or T. [l. 5 om. T.] STAN. 8.—1. Stedfastly] Stedfastaly R; Stedfast P: þat] has T; hath H: set] setteth N; hath P: hym] hem P: self] selfen J. 2. knet] knowes T; knowith H; knitteþ F P: euiry] any T H. 3. his (1)] this T: byreue] benym T H: his (2)] thyte D. 5. a] om. T: man] man (Zeno) P: as somtyme it byfelle] somtyme as it fell N: somtyme] som T H. 6. hauel] an T; om. H: paynes] Payne T; paynesse h. 7. bewrey] bewrye Rl Ba. 8. þat] om. H: agaynes] agayne T H; agaynesse h. STAN. 9.—1. man] om. H: of] on T. 2. in] om. Rl: he (1)] om. T H F: spet] spette N: it] om. all MSS. and P.

This torment wiche þis same tyrant wende  
 To haue ben matir of his cruelte,  
 þe wise man to schewe his liberte  
 Of fre corage þat may not be constreyned,  
 He made it cause of vertu for to be,  
 And set at noght how sore þat he were peyned.

(275)

10. And what is þat of angir *and* of grame  
 Wherwiþ a man anoþer may oppresse,  
 þat he ne may sustene of hym þe same  
 If afterward his auenture encresē?  
 As we haue lerned þat Busyrides  
 His gestes had ful often tymes slayne,  
 And afterward hym-self of Hercules  
 þat was his gest was done to deth ageyn.

(276)

11. And Regulus ful many oon in bataile  
 Of men of Affryk<sup>i</sup>; as þou hast i-rad,  
 Had taken while he had[de] gouernaile  
 And kast hem into bondes sore and sad.  
 And after þis in maner was [he] glad  
 For fere of peyne to put[te] forth his hondes  
 To tho þat firste of hym were sore adrad ;  
 Than was he feteder in þe same bondes.

PROSA VI, STAN. 9.—3. þis (2)] þe H D; that this h: same] om. h.    4. matir] moter H; matier D; a mater h; martyr Dc.    6. þat] which T: constreyned] contreyned J.    8. at noȝht] a nowgh H: þat he were] he was T H; ye were: were] waas D: peyned] y peyned F.    STAN. 10.—1. of (1)] or: angir & of] angrynes and F: and of] or T H; or of D J P: grame] grame R; game J.    2. a] or T.    3. sustene] sustene aȝen Dc: sustene of hym] of hym susteyne D: hym] om. H.    4. his] suche P: encresē] encre H; encreste D.    5. lerned] redde F: Busyrides] busyridenesse Rl Ba J Ch; busirides N H; busy redes M; besi rides h; Buserydes D: busireddes F; busy redynesse Dc.    6. His] His awne P: had ful often] often had P: full] om. T H: often] of X T: tymes] tyme Rl N T H h F Ch: slayne] sclayn Dc; y slayne F.    7. afterward] after F: of] or Dc: Hercules] Ercules N.    8. gest] ghest M: was (2)] that was T: done] do H: done to deth] slay F.    STAN. 11.—1. many] om. D: oon] om. F: in] om. D. 2. Affryk<sup>i</sup>] Affrike Rl Ba N J; aufryk D: affryke H M: irad] rad F. 3. while] when F.    4. into] into thee D; in F: bondes] boundes R.    5. after þis] afterward P: he Rl N C T H D Dc F J Ch P] it L R h M Bb. 6. peyne] Payne; T H F: hondes] hond T; houndes R.    7. tho] theym F: firste of hym were sore] of hym were fyrist T: hym] hem H: sore] so M; soo sore D.    8. feteder] fetted Rl; fetred N H; fetred J: bondes] boundes R.

(277)

12. And woldest þou setten be þat mannys myght  
 þat may noght let þat same [þing be wrought  
 Vnto hymseluen of þat same wyght]  
 þe wiche he haþ into disese broght?  
 And if so were as semeth in my þoght,  
 If hye estate myght kyndely conteyne  
 Any propre good, I ne doute it noght,  
 To wicked folk' ne schulde it noght atteyne.

(278)

13. Contrarious þinges þat maner ha[u]e not vsed  
 As for to be conioyned and i-met,  
 For euere ȝit nature it haþ refused.  
 And syn þat often wicked men ben set  
 In hye estate, as it wil noght be let,  
 þan seweþ þis, þat no good kyndely  
 Hath þat estate þat suffreþ to be knet'  
 To suche as leden þaire lyues wickedly.

(279)

14. And lo the same I may wel deme of all  
 Fortunes goodes, be þey more or lesse,  
 þat most habundantly ben woned to fall  
 To wicked pepull ful of cursidnesse.  
 For of all þis Y may suppose and gesse  
 þat who so haþ strengþe, a mighti man is he,

PROSA VI, STAN. 12.—1. þat] þat same F.      2. þing] om. N : of þinge  
 þat is ayein him y wroȝte F : Of whome to foxe in mention is here brought  
 Ba (in different hand in space left for l. 2) : Whiche con oppresse a noother  
 man too noughe D.      3. himseluen] hymself N. ll. 2 and 3 confusedly  
 combined into þat may noght let þat same wyght L Rl Ba H R M D h Bb  
 De F J Ch.      4. in] om. H : broght] i brought T H F.      6. If] That F :  
 conteyne] to conteyne T.      7. Any] And Ch : propre] propren F : 1] om.  
 D : ne] om. N F : doute] counte N.      8. To] The Ch : ne] om. Rl H D  
 J Ch. [ll. 2 and 3 in correct form C N T P.] [Text corrected from C.]  
 STAN. 13.—1. þat maner] whiche man D : haue] haþ all MSS. and P : maner  
 haþ not] man hath T : not] om. T.      2. As] om. F : for to] forte Rl : con-  
 ioyned] communed D; conyoynes Dc : i met] i knytt D.      3. nature it] hit  
 nature H: it haþ] haþ it T F.      5. wil] wull H : noght be] be no J : let]  
 bett D.      6. seweþ] sheweth Rl Ba T Ch ; sueth N.      7. þat suffreþ] too  
 suffre D.      8. as] þat Ba C H D F Ch : lyues] life T F.      STAN. 14.—  
 1. well] om. h De F : of] att T.      2. Fortunes] Fortunus C; Fortenous H :  
 be] made D; be þey more or] they be more and T.      3. þat] pe J : woned]  
 wont N D P; i wont De.      4. wicked] om. F : pepull] puple M.      5. of]  
 om. F : all þis] alle þese Rl Ba : Y may] may I N ; may J : Y may suppose]  
 suppose I may T.      6. who so] he þat H ; whos F : is he] he is P.

And in whom may be founde gret swiftnesse,  
þat man is swift so moste it nedes be.

(280)

15. Thus musyk' makeþ a musicien,  
And fisyk' a fysycien to be ;  
Thus retoryk' make[þ] a rethorien.  
The kynde of euery þing, we may wel see,  
Enducen moste his kyndely propirte,  
Ne suffre noght to be conioyned to  
None effectes of contrariouste,  
But all aduerse þinges putten h[y]m fro.

(281)

16. Bot lo youre worldy richesse haþ not þat  
For to restreyne youre cursed auarice ;  
Nethire þe power of none hyhe estat  
May make hym strong[er] þat bounden is in vice,  
þat ledeþ hys lyf in lustes and delice ;  
Ne dignite in wicked folk be-stowen  
Noght makeþ hem þe worþiere of price,  
Bot rather makeþ thaire vnþrift to be knownen.

(282)

17. And why is þis forsoþe ? for ȝe deliten  
And so reioken in youre fantasye †  
Vntrewe names of þinges for to witen,  
All opere þan becomeþ hem kyndely ;

PROSA VI, STAN. 14.—7. in whom] I who T: may] it may N. 8. so  
moste] that muste T; þis moste F: it] om. F. STAN. 15.—2. fisyk]  
phesik D: fysycien] fesycien M; phesycien D. 3. Thus] The N; This H:  
make] makeþ Rl Ba N. 4. wel] om. D. 5. his] her T; om. H. 6.  
suffre] suffreþ Rl: noght] om. F: conioyned] communed D; conieyned h;  
comaundered F. 7. effectes] effectus C; affectes D. 8. all] alle Rl Ba;  
om. R: pinges] ping Ch: putten L] putte N; put h; putteth H: hem L]  
hym R Bb P. [ll. 1, 2, 3 in reverse order D.] [ll. 8 om. D; 1. 5 om. h.]  
STAN. 16.—1. worldly] wordely T H Dc P: richesse] riches D. 3. Nethire]  
Noother D F: hyhe] his h. 4. make hym] hym make T: bounden is] is  
bound P. 5. hys lyf] hym selfe J. 6. wicked] shrewed P: folk] om.  
J: bestowen] for strowyn T; be strowen H; benistowen D; to bestowen h.  
7. Noght makeþ] Maketh not P: hem] hym R: þe] om. T. 8. rather  
makeþ thaire] makes hem rather T; makeþ rather theire h: makeþ thaire  
vnþrift to be knownen] makeþ hem vtrest y knownen F: thaire] hym H;  
them P: vnþrift] vnthrify N P; vntryfte H: to] om. Dc. STAN. 17.—  
1. forsoþe] in soþe C P: ȝe] þei T D. 2. so] om. T: reioken] reyoisen H  
F; reioyse D: fantasye D F] fantasy P: fantasyes all other MSS. 3. Vn-  
trewe] False P: of] on P: for to witen] to conterfeten P: witen] writen F J.  
4. All opere þan] And all other theyme T: becomeþ hem] hym becometh h.

Forwhy þe effectes preuen openly  
 þat dignite, þat power, þat richesse,  
 Paire names bere[n] all vnpropirly ;  
 As I haue schewed, it † seweþ euen expresse.

(283)

18. And lo þis same I may concluden wel  
 Of all [fortunes] þing, as semeth me,  
 In wiche þere is no bounte naturel  
 Ne cause why þey schulde desired be.  
 For selde it is, as euery man may se,  
 Thei ioynen hem to goode *and* vertuous,  
 Ne þei ne hauen noght þat propirte  
 To maken good[e] men of vicious.

(284)

METRUM vj<sup>m</sup>

Nouimus quantas dedit ruinas.

1. Ye knownen wel how gret destruccioun  
 This Nero did, þat Rome on fuyre set<sup>t</sup>  
 And slough þe senatoures of þe toun.  
 His owne brother to þe deth he bet,  
 And wiþ his moder blood he was be-wet<sup>t</sup>  
 The wiche he made die in his presence ;  
 So hard<sup>k</sup> of herte þat neuer a † tere he let,  
 Bot of hire deth hym-self<sup>t</sup> he gaf sentence.

(285)

2. And neuerþelesse yit he gouerned all  
 þe wide worlde þat Phebus goþ aboute,

PROSA VI, STAN. 17.—5. þe] theyre T: preuen] prouen N. 6. þat  
 dignite þat power] þat power þat dignite F. 7. bere] beren N H: all] om. F. 8. seweþ C F] scheweþ other MSS.: euen] om. Th. STAN. 18.—  
 1. same] fame Ch. 2. fortunes N P] fortune T H: vertuous other MSS.:  
 þing] thynges T H D. 3. bounte] beaute T. 4. schulde] shold H.  
 5. selde] fold H: as] þat F. 6. ioynen] ioyen Ba; ioyee h; yeuyn F: to  
 goode] to geder<sup>r</sup> T. 7. ne (2) om. Ba T H F J Ch. 8. good] gode Ba H  
 Ch; goode N H: of] and N D. METRUM VI, STAN. 1.—1. Ye] We T  
 H F; Yo J. 2. This] þat F: did] dide Rl Ba Ch; dede H: on] of Rl Ba  
 J Ch; a F. 3. slough] slowh Rl Ba; slow H N h. 4. owne] om. Ba  
 J Ch: to þe] vnto T. 5. moder] modres D: he was bewet<sup>t</sup>] was beute T;  
 he was beute H. 6. dye] dyhe H; to dye h P. 7. of] an N: herte]  
 here H: neuer] no F: a tere Rl Ba N C H R D Bb] attere L; after h; teere  
 F: he] om. N. 8. hym self<sup>t</sup>] om. F: he gaf] gaf þe Rl Ba J Ch; he yeave  
 D: he gaf þe F: he] om. T: sentence iugement h. STAN. 2.—1. neuer-  
 þelesse] Netheles h: he gouerned] gouernyth he T; gouerned he H. 2.  
 worlde] wordle H: Phebus febus T.

And sceptir bare as prince imperiall ;  
 And euery worldly wyght moste hym aloute  
 As to þaire lord, þis is wiþouten doute,  
 fro est to west, north, sowth and euery side.  
 All vertu yit his soule was wiþoute,  
 And was fulfilled of malice and of prude.

(286)

3. And yit this power ne this mageste  
 Of þilke Nero had[de] noght þat myght'  
 As for to turne the cursed cruelte  
 þe wiche þat was wiþinne his herte i-pight.  
 Allas ! þat sort is greuous to my sight,  
 Als often as þe swerd<sup>k</sup> of wickednesse  
 Bitaken is to suche a wrecchid wight  
 In whom so moche cursed venym isse.

(287)

PROSA vii<sup>a</sup>

Tum ego scis inquam.

1. Than seide I thus, “ my maistresse dere,  
 Ye witen wel þere regned neuer in me  
 No couetise o[f] mortale þinges here,  
 But þis alwey was myn entent<sup>t</sup> perde :  
 þat þe vertu [þe] wiche I hadde of the  
 Schulde not ben hid ne elded in þis wise,  
 Bot þus be gouernance of comynalte  
 Hit myght be schewed and put in excersise.”

METRUM VI, STAN. 2.—3. sceptir] cepture T ; ceptre H.      4. worldly]  
 wordly H Dc : moste hym aloute] to hym moste loute F ; moste to hym  
 loute P.      5. lord] om. F (*space in M.S.*) : þis is wiþouten] it is no P.      6.  
 north sowth] om. N : sowth] om. T : and] on D.      7. his soule was] was  
 his soule T h : was] is D.      8. fulfilled] filled F : of (1)] with T H : of (2)]  
 om. T H.      STAN. 3.—1. this (1)] his T H : ne] and Rl Ba F J.      2.  
 þilke] the sayd P : had] hadde N h : þat] þe H.      3. As] om. T : the] that  
 T : cursed] coursed R ; verry D ; om. F.      4. þe wiche] om. F : þat] om.  
 H D : wiþiune] in T : i pight] nigh N C T H De P.      5. is] en N.      6.  
 Als] As Ba N H : of] and Dc.      7. a] om. R.      8. moche] muche R ;  
 myche Bb : venym] venom Rl Ba C Ch : isse] esse Rl Ba ; is N H h.  
 PROSA VII, STAN. 1.—2. regned] reynyth H : neuer] non] T ; euere Dc.  
 3. of Rl Ba N C T H D Bb Dc F J Ch P] or L.      4. was] bi F.      5. þe] om.  
 Ba F J Ch : pe which H R] wiche other MSS.      6. ne] nat H : elded] eleed<sup>t</sup>  
 Ba J Ch : elden P ; helyd T H ; yelded F.      7. of] of þe F J : But in  
 gouernaunce to the comynalte T : But in gouernaunce by comunyalte H.

(288)

2. 'This [is] a thyng,' sche seide, 'I the ensure,  
 þat may well meue to lust<sup>t</sup> of gouernaunce  
 Sich hertes þat ben noble of þeire nature;  
 Bot þo þat verray vertu doth avaunce  
 Desiren noȝht hem-seluen to enhaunce  
 [Be] worldly fame ne worschip of re[n]oun.  
 To put þeire merite so in remembraunce,  
 Hit noȝht belonȝt to perfeccioun.

(289)

3. How litel worth hit is, full p[leñer]lye  
 This myght þou see if þou wilt taken hede.  
 As þou has preued be astronomye  
 þat all þis erthe in compace and in brede  
 no more in quantite of mykel-hede  
 It hap, if þat the mesure schulde be soght  
 Be-twene [hym]self and heuen in lykly-hede,  
 Bot as þe lest[e] poynþ þat may be þoght,

(290)

4. Ne in regard conteneth noȝht a space;  
 And as þou hast<sup>t</sup> conceyued as I trowe  
 Be Tholome, this litel erthely place,  
 þe fourthe part, als fer as men may knowe,  
 Wiþ lyfly bestes only is be-stowe;  
 And if þou scholdest abaten out of this

PROSA VII, STAN. 2.—1. This L] This is Ba N C T H R h Bb Dc F J Ch P: ensure] aunswer T H. 2. meue] me Rl Ba F Ch; now N; om. Dc: of] and Rl Ba N F J Ch; to h. 3. Sich] Sytthe Ba: þeire] om. Dc: Sich hertes of her noble name in þer nature T. 4. þat] with T H. 5. seluen] self Rl H; selfe Ba D Ch: enhaunce] enchaunce Ba Ch; avaunce enhaunce D; auance N; avance T. 6. Worldly L h] By worldely Rl Ba N C R D Bb Dc F J Ch; By wordly T H P; Borely M: renoun N C T H] resoun other MSS. 7. þeire] he N. 8. noȝht belonȝt] belonȝt not D; longeth no thyng P. [In Ch ll. 6, 7 om. at first, but put later at top of page with reference mark.] STAN. 3.—1. How] ffull T: full] om. F: plenerly T H] om. N; priuily other MSS.: ffull lytill it is worth plenerly T. 2. might þou] maistow N; may þou T D: wil] wilt Rl Ba N R D Ch; om. T; wult H; wol h; wolt F P. 3. preued] y preuyd H; proued P. 4. þis] þe N: in (2)] om. J: brede] stede D. 5. of] of þe J: mykel] muche T H; mochel P. 6. þat] om. T H F. 7. pi self] hym self T H: in] om. T H: in lykly hede] hit is no drede P. 8. lest] leste N: þoght] soght h. STAN. 4.—1. a] of T. 2. as (1)] om. T: conceyued] lerned P. 3. Tholome] Ptolome N; tholomye H; Tholomy F: this] his T H: erthely] om. T H. 4. als] as Rl Ba N h J: als fer] of the spere T; as spere H. 5. lyfly] lyuy C H: only] om. T H.

Als mykel as þe see haþ over-flowe,  
Mareys and sond desert and wildernesse,

(291)

5. Vnneþes any place may be founde,  
Where-yinne þat men mowe dwellen *and abyde*,  
But lo þis litell, wrecchid, narrow grounde.  
And wherof þan serueþ all þat pryde  
Of ȝoure ronoun to be delated wyde,  
Þat in þe poyntyng' of a prikkes ende  
Envyround' is † all close on euery side?  
Youre fame perde ne may no firthire wende.

(292)

6. What is youre fame in worthynesse or grace  
Þat is † so closyd in a narow cage,  
Sith þat wiþ-ynne youre litel dwellyng' place  
Ben many folkes dyuerse of langage,  
Of resoun, wit, of lyuyng & corage?  
For dyuersite in maner of spekyng',  
And what for difficulte of passage,  
And for defaute of entrecunyng',

(293)

7. Noght only mennes names singulerly  
The wiche þat ben renomed glorijs,

PROSA VII, STAN. 4.—7. Als mykel] As muche Rl Ba N T H h J Ch ; as myche F ; as moche D. 8. Mareys] Maares h ; Marise F : desert] om. H : wildernesse] wildernis N P ; wildernes D : Marreȝ sonde an the wyldernesse T. STAN. 5.—1. Vnneþes] Vnnes C ; Huneþes R ; vnnepes D ; onneþe F : place] placis T. 2. þat] om. T R F Ch : mowe] may T F P : mowe dwellen] may be dwellyng H ; mowe duell D. 3. But] om. N : litell] om. Dc F : narow] om. D. 4. þan serueþ] serueþ þan R D Dc : þan] them T ; þere H : þat] pis H. 5. delated] dilated Rl Ba N. 6. poyntyng'] poynte T : a] om. D. 7. Envyround'] Euen by rounde P ; Eny grunde N : is] ben all MSS. : all] and F : close on] closede in h ; closed on F : on] in N. 8. ne] om. T H : no firthire] not forthe F ; firthire] forthire R Bb. STAN. 6.—1. or] and D F : or grace] grete H. 2. is so closyd] so be closed h ; ben so closyd all other MSS. : narow] narw H ; naro C ; narogh H. 3. þat] þan þat H : dwellyng] narogh H : Sith than that ye were in youre litel narow place T. 4. folkes] folke D ; folk Dc : dyuerse of] of dyuerse T F. 5. resoun wit of lyuyng & corage] reson lyvying with corage T ; reson with lyuyng of corage H : of (2)] om. F : and] of N P ; and of D. 6. in] om. T : of] in Dc. 7. of] and T H. 8. for] om. D C : entrecunyng'] entercomonyng Rl Ba M ; enterconnyng H ; entercomenyngge h ; entre-konnyng Dc. STAN. 7.—1. mennes] wymennes D : names] om. N ; singulerly] singlerly D ; synglery J. 2. The] om. D : The wiche] om. F : þat] om. H : renomed] renouned Rl Ba N ; renownyd Dc.

But citees been vnknownen vtterly  
 Wiche þat now ben [ful] worschipful to vs.  
 For in þe tyme of Marchus Tullius,  
 þe rénown of þe comynalte of Rome,  
 As seith þe same, þe mounte Caucasus  
 Ne was not passed ne ynto Ynde i-come.

(294)

8. And ȝit was it to Parthus þan in doute,  
 And many a land it hadde in huge drede.  
 Ne seest þou noght loo what ȝe ben aboute,  
 ȝoure noble name to strecchen *and* to spredē  
 þat is compassed in so litell brede?  
 Supposest þou þat o Romeynes name  
 Myght forth be born) be worthynesse of dede  
 There Rome spredde noght hire noble fame?

(295)

9. Ne seest þou noght how fele folkes ben  
 Ful dyuerse in hire lawe *and* gouernaunce,  
 Of maners eke, as euery man may seen,  
 Medled wiþ so gret contrariaunce?  
 So þat o dede wiche þat here perchaunce  
 Amonges yow is worþi þonk and mede,  
 An oþer peple haþ þis variaunce:  
 Men schulde be punysched for þe same dede.

(296)

10. And here-of is þat þogh a man delite  
 His name to be dilated *and* extent,

PROSA VII, STAN. 7.—3. vnknownen] knowyn T H. 4. Wiche] The whych T: now ben] ben nowe D h; ben ful P: ben] ben ful N C H: to] of T H; vs] hus H. 5. Marchus] marcus N h F D; marcius D: Tullius] tulyus T. 7. þe same] thys clerke P: þe mounte] the mounte h: Caucasus] cantasus D. 8. Ynde] ende R: i come] i comyde T. STAN. 8.—1. it] om. T H; Rome P: to] om. F: Parthus] Perarthus Ba F J; parthes N; Barthes D; Pararkus Dc. 2. hadde] hath N: huge] heuge Rl Ba; hoge C; myche D; hugy P; om. T H F. 3. seest þou] seestow; seeist they h; cesse þou F: loo] om. T: ȝe] theye D. 4. strecchen] stryen T H. 5. compassed] compressyd T H; passid D: brede] breme Dc. 6. Supposest þou] Supposestow N: þou] om. H: þou þat] þat þou Rl Ba Ch: þat o] om. J: o Romeynes] the Remys T; þe remynis H; one realme hys P. 7. forth] om. P: dede] drede R. 8. There] The N: hire] per Dc. STAN. 9.—1. seest] wiste T H: feele] many H. 2. in] of J; and] and in her T H. 3. eke] also h; om. J. 4. so] om. T. 5. þat] om. F. 6. Amonges] Amonge F. 7. peple] puple M: pis] his H. 8. schulde] shull H: þe] þat h. STAN. 10.—1. is þat] om. T H: þat] om. N D.

BOETHIUS.

It may so be it schal be knownen lyte  
 Wiþ many folkes as to [h]is entent.  
 So euery man moste holde him-self content  
 For to dilate his name *and* his renoun  
 Amonges hem þat dwellen nyhe present  
 Wiþ-yinne þe boundes of oo nacioun.

(297)

11. And þus ȝoure noble inmortalite  
 Of fame, of renoun, *and* of worthiness  
 Wiþ-yinne þe litel space of oo cuntry  
 Ful streit compressed *and* restreyned esse.  
 And many a noble man haþ been or þis  
 þat in his tyme full worthi was *and* grete;  
 Defaute of writyng *and* of besynesse  
 Haþ out of mynde h[y]m vtterly forgete.

(298)

12. I ne woot of scripture what it schal profite  
 Sith euery mortale thing schal over-passe,  
 And theym, right as þe auctours þat hem write,  
 Grete age schal destroyen *and* deface.  
 But lo yow semewiþ þat ȝe mowe purchace  
 As be youre fame an[e] inmortalite  
 Cont[ynu]ed after þat ȝe hennes passe,  
 And so to haue a perdurabilite.

PROSA VII, STAN. 10.—3. *bel om.* H: schal] may F. 4. *as]* in N ;  
 his T H F P] pis other MSS. 5. *self]* om. T F. 7. Amonges] Amonge  
 F. 8. *boundes]* bondes h : þe] om. T H : oo] a Rl Ba N Dc F J ; om.  
 T H. STAN. 11.—1. *þus]* this F: ȝoure] om. h. 2. of (2)] om. T : of  
 (3)] om. T H. 3. *ynne]* om. T H : oo cuntry] a centre N : oo] a H h Dc  
 F J. 4. *streit]* soore D: compressed] compressed h: restreyned] straynyd  
 T ; strenyvd H ; constreynd D ; refreynd h. 5. *haþ*] han N : or] ere  
 D: As meny men haue ben or thisse T: And many men hawe be or thus H.  
 6. *tyme]* toun T H: worthi] hardye D. 8. hym H] him F ; om. J ;  
 hem other MSS. : hem vtterly] vtterly hem T ; vtterly hym H. STAN. 12.  
 —1. I ne woot] In what T H; I noote D; I wrete h: of] in h: what it  
 schal] shall it T H: it I] Dc. 2. *mortale]* mortell Rl Ba N. 3. *theym]*  
 payne h ; deye F; pat] of pat J: And hem that the auctors wryte T H.  
 4. *Grete]* At greete D: deface] defaute T. 5. *But]* And H: yow] ye H:  
 ȝe] om. T H: mowe] may T H P. 6. *ane C]* and other MSS. ; om. T F.  
 7. Contynued N C F] condempnyd T; contemned H: Conteyned other  
 MSS.: þat] om. T H: henes] hens T H h. 8. a] om. F: perdurabilite ]  
 perduralite H D.

(299)

13. But if þou woldest weie or counterpayse  
 The tyme of all þi fame and þi renoun,  
 Thogh þat þou woldest abouen it rayse,  
 Yit schuldest þou fynde no proporcione  
 Aȝenst the eternall perduracioun  
 þat euer haþ† be *and* neuer schal [haue] ende.  
 Why hast þou then suche dilectacioun  
 To renoun þat schal passen out of mynde?

(300)

14. For take a litel moment or a stounde,  
 And if þou counterpayse it in þi wit,  
 Wiþ thritty þousand yeres, it will be founde  
 And in certayne proporcione be pyt;  
 Though it be litel, somwhat is it ȝit,  
 For-why þey ben diffyned boþe two,  
 But þing þat is wiþ-ynne a noumbre knyt,  
 Vnto eternal þing it may noght† so.

(301)

15. For thogh þou woldest thy noumbre multeplie  
 Als fer as wit haþ possibilite,  
 Yit it ne may not comparabill  
 Be lykkened to þe hole eternite.  
 For þinges þat wiþ-ynne noumbre be,  
 Betwene hem may comparisoun be soght,  
 But to þe endeles perdurabilite  
 All finit þing ne may be likned noght.

PROSA VII, STAN. 13.—1. or] and T D: counterpayse] contraye pese H.  
 2. The] þi Ba: þi fame and þi] the fame of þy N; thi same of þi T: and] and of Rl F J Ch; of H; and all Dc: þi (2)] om. h.      3. þat] om. H F: heuen] om. T H J.      5. the] om. F.      6. hath ben N C H P] schal be other MSS.; neuer] euer h: shall haue N C T H J] schal other MSS.; om. D.  
 7. Why] What N: dilectacioun] dylatacioun T H.      8. renoun] reuen Rl Ba J Ch; reuyn Dc; renewe F.      STAN. 14.—3. thritty] ten T H P: yeres] yere H P: wil] wol Ba N; wold J.      4. in] in a N; om. T H: proporcione] porcyoun J: be] to be Ba F J Ch; wil be T.      5. is it] hit is H D De Ch.      6. why] om. H: two] to H.      7. þat] whiche D: is] is vnto N.      8. it] om. F: so T H D] be so all other MSS. and P.      STAN. 15.—  
 1. thogh] om. T H: woldest] wylt D; wolt P: thy] yn H.      2. Als] As Rl Ba N: possibilite] possyble Dc.      3. ne] om. Rl R De J Ch: not] om. T H: comparabill] temperally D.      4. þe] om. Rl F: hole eternite] holy ternyte T; holy trinite h.      6. may] may noo D; that Dc.      7. perdurabilite] perduralite D.      8. finit] fynd N; feyned D; feynt h: þing] þinges F: ne] om. N H Dc F.

(302)

16. Wherfore I say if þat ȝe wolde devise  
 Thi fame to be dilated *and* i-sprad  
 Als fer as any myndes mowe suffice,  
 Or any book be writen or be rad,  
 Yit may þere no comparisoun be made  
 Vnto þe tyme þat stant eternally.  
 Noght onely small þe tyme schal be had,  
 Bot demed right as no þing vfferly.

(303)

17. Bot lo [ȝ]e men konne do no worþi dede,  
 Bot if it be for folkes audience  
 þat vayne rumour for to delate *and* sprede.  
 So fareth þat the worthi excellencie  
 Of verray vertu *and* of conscience  
 For folkes tales ye forleten clene,  
 For veyne rumours, litell of credence,  
 Of foreyn folkes, all noght worþ a bene.

(304)

18. Now take good hede *and* þou schalt here *and* see  
 Lo of þis litel tale I schal þe telle,  
 How þat þis lewed *and* proude vanite  
 Of a full witty man was skorned welle.  
 A nyce man þer was as it befell  
 þat falsly toke a philosophres name,  
 Noght for þe loue of vertu neuere-a-dell,  
 Bot only to reioysen of the fame.

PROSA VII, STAN. 16.—1. if] thogh P: if þat] yow yf T; þow þat H: wolde] woll h. 2. Thi] ȝoure N J: to] for to T H: i sprad] sprad T H D. 3. Als] As Rl Ba N J: myndes] mynde N; mowe] may N T H: suffice] suffice R. 4. be writen or be rad] by wrytyng or to be red T: be (2)] om. N Dc. 5. may] om. H: made] mad Rl; maad N. 7. Noght] That H: small] finall Ba N Ch; om. T H; lytel P: smal þe tyme] þe time smal F. 8. right as no ping] by right as thing T H: vfferly] verruly D. STAN. 17.—1. But] Nowe D: ȝe Rl Ba N H Dc F Ch P] om. R; than D; the other MSS. 2. for] byfore H. 3. vayne] veyn Rl Ba N; rumour] turnor H: to] om. H. 4. fareth] Ferfort T; ferforth H: þat þe] hit þat F. 6. ye] theye D: forleten] for yeten T; foryete F. 7. veyne] deme H: of] om. F. 8. Of foreyn folkes] A for folke T H: folkes] folke D: all noght] alle be it not D: worþ] worthy H. STAN. 18.—1. Now] And T. 2. of] how T H: litel] a litel F. 3. proud L] proude Rl Ba N C H D h. 5. as] om. C; that D: befell] befelle Ba N R h. 6. toke] to Rl. 7. þe loue of] loue of þe h: a dell] a dele Ba R. 8. reioysen] reioys D: the] that P: fame] same D J.

(305)

19. This wise man beþoght þis foole to preue,  
 If þat he kouþe kepe sufferaunce.  
 He seide hym wordes wiche þat schulde hym greue  
 But alway ȝit he keped his contenaunce.  
 This wise man to see þe vtterauce,  
 If þat þis were of vertu verrely,  
 Som þing he dede or seide him of greuaunce  
 The wiche he wiste he myght þym preue by.

(306)

20. Of pacience tho gan he sone obreide,  
 And what he was in sothe he gan it schewe.  
 "Might þou nocht vndirstonden ȝit," he seide,  
 "Þat I am lo a philosopher trewe?"  
 The wise man whan he [þe] sothe knewe,  
 Ful bityngly anon he ȝaf hym þis.  
 'Haddest þou,' he seide, 'þy tunge holde in mewe,  
 I myght haue vndirstonde wel i wys.'

(307)

21. Bot now of noble worþi men to mene  
 Whiche þat be vertu geten hem renoun,  
 What schal þaire fame availe, wolde I sene,  
 When þat þe body to corrupcioun

PROSA VII, STAN. 19.—1. beþoght] þoght R: þis (2)] þe N: foole] fool  
 RL; fool N; fully T; full H; scole h; foole for Dc. 2. þat] om. T H:  
 kouþe] koude N D. 3. wiche] om. F: þat] om. H. 4. ȝit] right h:  
 keped] kepte RL Ba N; kept H D. 5. This] The Ba: vtterauce]  
 outraunce F. 6. þat] om. T H F: of] a F: verrely] vtterly F. 7. he  
 dede] bet dude J; he dude RL Ba: dede or seide] sad or dyd T; seid or  
 dede H; seide F; sayd or dyd P: of] om. D. 8. myght] myghti RL D  
 preue] preuen RL Ba: preve hym L] hym preuen C N J P; hym preue H.  
 STAN. 20.—1. tho] þat H: gan he sone] sone gan he T; gan soon he D;  
 sone] som RL Ba Ch; sumwhat F: obreide] a breyde N; abraid H; vpbraide  
 D. 2. sothe] om. T H: gan] can RL Ba T F J Ch: it] hym T D. 3.  
 Might þou] Maistow N. 5. sothe] þe sothe Ba N H D Dc; þe troupe F.  
 6. bityngly] benignly D; bitirly J: he] om. RL Ba H F Ch: he ȝaf hym  
 þis] hym this dyd tell T: þis] þus F. 7. Haddest þou] Haddestow N F:  
 þy tunge holde] halde þi tongue F P: holde] holden RL Ba; hadden H; woolde  
 D. 8. haue] a T: wel] it wel C F; þis H. STAN. 21.—1. noble]  
 wordly T: noble worþi] worthye nooble D. 2. Whiche þat] The wych P:  
 gotten] gaten N; gheten M. 3. þaire] youre T H: availe] om. RL Ba C Dc  
 F J Ch Bb (*inserted later by different hand*): wolde I sene] worht a seene Dc;  
 ben assene F: I] om. RL Ba C J Ch Bb (*inserted later by different hand*);  
 What þat her fame wolde sene N. 4. to] is too D; of Ch.

Be deth schal be resolute vp and doun?  
 And if also þe soule deie and faile,  
 Whiche to beleuen may be no resoun,  
 What schulde þanne þis worþi fame availe

(308)

22. To þeym of whom so is beblowne here,  
 If þat þe soule tornen into noght?  
 But suche a soule þat knoweþ hym-self[e] clere,  
 Fro erþely bondes when it schal be broght,  
 The hyhe heuene it perseth as a þoght,  
 And so reioyseth of þat souereigne blesse  
 Whiche he be vertu haþ ful sore i-soght  
 Despisynge all þis worldly wrecchidnesse.

(309)

METRUM vij<sup>m</sup>

Quicunque solam.

1. Who þat supposen will vnwittily  
 In renoun souereyne ioyes for to be,  
 †Lat hym look vp into þe heuene on hy  
 And so behold vpon þat large cunre,  
 And after lat hym to þe erthe see;  
 So narow it is þat soore it schal hym schame  
 þat in so litell space of quantite  
 He may it noght fulfille wiþ his fame.

PROSA VII, STAN. 21.—5. Be deth] Bideth Ba Ch ; om. F: vp and] vp so T H. 6. And] om. F: also þe soule] þe soule also shuld P. 7. be] om. Dc. 8. What schulde] When shal Ch: þanne] hem N; pan h: worþi] wordly P. STAN. 22.—1. so is] hit is H D; is it P: be blowne] blowne H D P: To whome it is blowyn here T. 2. þat] he T: þe] po R: tornen] shulde turne T H P. 3. suche] sech H: hymself] hyt selfen P: self] selfe Ba ; om. h. 4. Fro] For T. 5. perseth] pereseth C. 6. blesse] blis H; blysse R h. 7. i soght] soght T H F; y boght h. 8. þis] þe T: worldly] worldes T; wordly Dc Ch P. METRUM VII, STAN. 1.—1. Who þat supposen will] Whoso wolde suppose F: supposen will] wyl suppose P :will] wole N. 2. souereyne] souereyn RI Ba N H R; souuerayn h: ioyes] ioye is N; yoie H; ioy P: for] om. T. 3. Lat N T H F P: And lat other MSS.: vp into] vpon N: into] in Ba J Ch: þe] om. T H M D Dc F P: on] and N; a P. 4. vpon] om. H h: þat] þe F. 5. after] om. N: þe erthe] þerþe R: erthe] deth T H: see] ysee N F. 6. narow] narwe N R; naro C; narrough H: it (2)] om. T F: hym] it N; om. D. 7. þat] And F: litell] lite N: space] place T. 8. wiþ] without F.

(310)

2. Allas ! what aylen fierce men *and* proute  
 To leften vp þaire nekkes so in vayn ?  
 This mortal yok which þat ȝe bere aboute  
 Schal payse it doun vnto þe grounde agayn.  
 Thogh þat ȝoure re[n]oun passe many a playn,  
 And so be spred about be many a tung,  
 þat of youre lynage hyhe and souereyn  
 In grete honour the fame of yow be sprung,

(311)

3. Yit deth de[s]plyseth all youre hyhe renoun ;  
 Neijer greet ne litell wil he none knowe,  
 Bot boþe inlykt he layth hire hedes doun  
 And euene he makeþ þe hyhe wiþ þe lowe.  
 Lo where ben now þe bones, as we trowe,  
 Of Brutus *and* Fabricious þe trewe ?  
 Of sterne Katoun þe fame is over-blowe,  
 And ma[r]ked now in lettres bot a fewe.

(312)

4. And yit þe men we knoweþ not at all  
 Thogh þat we knowe þeire faire names so ;  
 For þey be deth, as euery oþer schal,  
 Out of þe sight be passed and agoo.  
 Forwhy þis lyf when þat ȝe passe fro,  
 For to be knownen then ȝe ben vnable,

METRUM VII, STAN. 2.—1. fierce] ferse Rl Ba N H J: proute] proude  
 Rl Ba h Ch. 2. nekkes] noobles D: so] om. D. 3. þat] om. T H F:  
 ȝe] þei F: bere] werith T H. 4. payse it] passe D: it] hem T: doun] om.  
 F: vnto] to F. 5. renoun N C T H] resoun other MSS. 6. be (2)]  
 with Rl N Dc J: a] om. R: tung] tongue Rl Ba N H M. 8. honour]  
 howses D: fame] same H F: sprung] spong[e] Rl Ba N H M. STAN. 3.—  
 1. despiseth Rl Ba N T H F J Ch] defadeth D; depayseth other MSS.: hyhe]  
 grete T. 2. Neijer] Ne H F; Nother h: wil] wol F: none] om. F: Grete  
 ne smale he spareth none I knowe P. 3. in lyk] y like Rl Ba H F J Ch:  
 layth] lett T; lyth Ch: he layth here] theye leye theyre D. 4. euene] an  
 ende T H: hej] om. N. 5. we] I T F J Ch. 6. Fabricious] Fabricius  
 Rl N D F; fabrtyous H. 7. sterne] trewe N; sturne H: Katoun] Caton  
 Rl Ba D h P; Catoun R F J: þe] þat T: fame] same H. 8. marked  
 N C T F P] made D; maked other MSS.: now in lettres] in lettres now  
 Ba F J Ch. STAN. 4.—1. And] But F P: yit] om. P: þe] po Rl Ba N C  
 M D Ch P: we] om. P: knoweþ] knewe N: at] om. T. 3. be deth] ben dede  
 N H D Ch: be deth as euery] be dede as all T: euery] yche F. 4. þe] þis  
 T: passed] past H: agoo] go T H F. 5. why] wiþ R: þis] the N. 6.  
 ȝe ben] be ye T D.

Youre worþi fame may no more do  
But flyen aboute veyne *and* variable.

(313)

5. And ȝif ȝe wene to drawe ȝoure lyf on-long<sup>i</sup>  
As be a litell wynd of worldly [n]ame,  
As fooles þan ȝe done yow-seluen wrong<sup>i</sup>.  
For when O cruell deth ȝow schal atame,  
Al youre renoun schal turnen into grame  
Wiche þat ȝe han purchased so wiþ pride ;  
For after þat be styntyng<sup>i</sup> of youre fame  
Ye muste then another deth abide.

(314)

PROSA viija<sup>a</sup>

Sed ne me inexorable.

1. Bot for als mykel as þou schalt not wene  
Þat I haue take a bataile vntretable  
A[geyn] fortune, þow myght þi-selue sene  
Þat þogh sche be full fals *and* deceyuale,  
Lo ȝit som-tymes is sche comendable  
When þat sche scheweþ hire disposicioun,  
Hire false front<sup>i</sup> so flittyng *and* vnstable  
Discoveryng<sup>i</sup> it witþ hire condicioun.

(315)

2. Thow vnderstondest<sup>i</sup> noght perauenture,  
Now what þe purpose of [my] menyng<sup>i</sup> isse.

METRUM VII, STAN. 4.—8. flyen] flen Rl ; fleen Ba N F ; fle H D h.  
STAN. 5.—1. ȝif] om. N ; lyf] liue N : on long<sup>i</sup>] along Rl Ba N F J P. 2. of] and T H : worldly] wordly De J : name] fame all MSS. and P. 3. þan] om. D : ȝe] om. T : yow] you youre T : seluen] self H D h ; silfen J. 4. O] pe N ; om. T H h F ; a D : ȝow schal] shall yow H h De: a tame] attame Rl Ba D F Ch. 5. grame] game h. 6. þat] om. D : so wiþ] with your P. 7. styntyng<sup>i</sup>] stynkyng T. 8. another] in oþer J : abide] vnbyde. [ll. 6-8 om. H (fol. om.)]. PROSA VIII, STAN. 1.—1. als mykel] as muche Rl Ba h J Ch ; als moche N D ; als much T ; als myche F ; as moche P. 2. I haue take a bataile] haue I take a vayle T. 3. Ageyn N] Anentes L R ; Anounte F ; agenst P ; ayenste T D ; anempste h ; a nemptis De : myght] maist N D P. 4. full fals & ] fals & ful F: full] om. D : And she be false & full deceyuale T. 5. ȝit] om. T : som tymes] somtyme N Dc F Ch. 6. þat] om. F : schewep] sweweth Rl ; seweth Ba : disposicioun] condicioun Ch. 7. fals] false Rl Ba Bb J : flittyng<sup>i</sup>] fletynge P. 8. Discoueryng<sup>i</sup>] Diskouete Dc. [ll. 5 om. J ; ll. 7, 8 om. T. Stan. om. H (fol. om.)] STAN. 2.—1. Thow vnderstondest<sup>i</sup> noght] Now vndirstondest thow nat T. 2. of] of my Rl N C R D Ch: isse] esse Rl Ba Bb ; is N h.

Lo a full wonder þyng<sup>t</sup>, I the ensure,  
 I purpose for to tellen the expresse,  
 So þat vnnethe I can my wordes dresse  
 In open sentence for to make it clere.  
 For lo fortune avayleth more, I gesse,  
 With frowardnesse þan wiþ hire lusty chere.

(316)

3. For whan sche scheweþ hire-selfe debonaire,  
 Sche feyneth þan *and* falsly lyeth sche  
 Des[ce]jvyng<sup>e</sup> ȝow wiþ hire bihestes faire,  
 With fals colour of ȝoure felicite ;  
 But when sche smyteth wiþ aduersite,  
 Than is sche trewe i-nowh at my devise.  
 For in þe firste sche desceyueþ the,  
 And [in] þis other techieþ the to be wise.

(317)

4. This plesaunt fortune mennys hertes byndeth  
 Wiþ false goodes wiche þei haue on honde ;  
 Bot froward<sup>t</sup> fortune losyth *and* vnbyndeth,  
 And techeþ hem to knowe *and* vndirstande  
 þat weelfulnesse is freel *and* variande.  
 þe firste seest þou fletyng<sup>t</sup> as þe wynde,  
 And of it-self<sup>t</sup> vnware *and* vnkunnande,  
 And haþ hire-self forleten out of mynde ;

PROSA VIII, STAN. 2.—3. full wonder] wonderful F. 4. for] *om.* F.: the] *om.* Ch. 5. So] But N : vnnethe] vnnethes Rl Ba N Dc J Ch : I can] *om.* D. 6. sentence] wordes N. 7. avayleth] vailleth h. 8. hire] *om.* R D: chere] chiere Ba; chiere h. [Stan. *om.* H (*fol. om.*.)] STAN. 3.—2. þan] *om.* Ch : and] and as T. 3. Desceyvynge] Desavyng<sup>e</sup> L C; deceifing F: hire] *om.* M: bihestes] hestes T Dc F. 5. wiþ] *om.* F. 7. sche desceyueþ the] then deceyvyngh she T. 8. in] *om.* L Rl Ba N C R Bb F J Ch Dc h: þis] þe T; as Ch: techieþ] she techeth P: to] for to Dc; *om.* F. [Stan. *om.* H (*fol. om.*.)] STAN. 4.—1. plesaunt] plesaund Rl Ba. 2. goodes] goode R. 3. froward<sup>t</sup>] forward J: losyth] leuseþ F. 4. and (2)] and to F J Ch. 5. so] *om.* h: freel] fre R; freel is D: and] and so J: That symulate weelfulnesse to be varyande P. 6. þe firste seest þou] Thow first seist h: seest þou] sestow N; þowe seest D: fletyng<sup>t</sup>] fleeng T. 7. it self] himself T; here sylfe Ch: vnkunnande] vncouenyand] T. 8. haþ hire self<sup>t</sup>] of hit selfe F; hire self Ch; haþ hem selfe T. [Stan. *om.* H (*fol. om.*.)]. 1. 7 *om.* at first, but inserted later in the same hand at bottom of page with reference mark J Ch.]

(318)

5. Thow seest þat oper sikerly restreyned  
 As fully lerned be experiance,  
 Right as aduersite hire haþ constreyned  
 By excercyse enformed in prudence.  
 The firste I seie, to schorten my sentence,  
 Fro verry goodes draweth men on-side ;  
 þat oþere draweþ men by violence,  
 Wiþ verry goodes makynghem abyde.

(319)

6. Woldest þow acounten þis among þe leeste  
 þat so this aspir fortune hath þe taght,  
 To knowe þi frendes trewe of þeire beheeste  
 Whos hertes in þi welthe knew þou noght?  
 Sche haþ discouered clerly to þi poght  
 And made the certayne of þi frendes chere,  
 And out of doute [sc]he haþ þi herte broght  
 Of þinges whiche þat stonden in a were.

(320)

7. Now is sche gon *and wiþ* hire haþ sche hent  
 Hire frendes all *and* lafte to the thyne awen.  
 When þat hire plesaunce was to þe present,  
 Ful dere thow woldest haue boght þis as we trowen.  
 Now let of thus to pleynen *and* to howen  
 Thi richesse þat þou haddest forleten þus.  
 Thi feithful frendes hast þou found *and* knownen,  
 þat of all richesse is most precious.

PROSA VIII, STAN. 5.—1. þat oper] thee toother D: sikerly] soberly T P.  
 2. As] And F. 4. in] by N. 5. schorten] short D. 6. Fro] for J:  
 men on] on euery D: on side] aside h F. 7. þat oper] Thee toother D.  
 8. hem] men N: abyde] to abide Ba D F J Ch; to byde P. [Stan. om. H  
 (fol. om.)] STAN. 6.—1. acounten] accompte h P: þis] þe D: among]  
 amonges Dc. 2. þat] What D: so] om. F: this] om. Ch: aspir] sharpe P:  
 taght] kaught Dc; taugh J; y tauȝte F. 4. hertes] herte T: þi welthe]  
 þin helthe Dc: knew] know J. 5. to] in D. 7. sche] he L Rl Ba C T  
 R M D Bb De h J Ch P: sche haþ] om. F: broght] boght h; y broughte F.  
 8. whiche] pe wheche R; om. D: þat] om. F: stonden] stode F; sloden P:  
 a were] a where R. [Stan. om. H (fol. om.)] STAN. 7.—1. hent] went  
 Dc. 2. to the] þe to Rl Ba Dc; wiþ þe N; with T; þe F: awen] owen  
 Rl; owne h. 4. boght] brought N: þis] it D: as] om. T F. 5. let]  
 om. D: thus] this F: pleynen] plenie N: to (2)] om. N: howen] mone P.  
 6. haddest] hast T Ch P. 7. hast pou] hastow N. 8. most] om. T:  
 richesse] riches N. [Stan. om. H (fol. om.)]

(321)

METRUM viij<sup>m</sup>

Quod mundus stabile fide.

1. That þus þise worldly enter[ch]aungementes  
 Acorden alway in þaire variaunce ;  
 And also þat þise fletyng<sup>i</sup> elementes  
 Halden þe bondes of þeire aliaunce,  
 Thogh þat betwene hem be contrariance ;  
 And þat þe Phebus with his chare of golde  
 The rosye day haþ in his gouernaunce,  
 þat is so clear & lusty to beholde ;

(322)

2. And be þe mone þe nightes ben gouerned<sup>k</sup>  
 As Esperus haþ broght þeym in cumpace ;  
 Also þe wode see þus is be-werned  
 His propre boundes not for to overpace,  
 þat he beflowe noght þis erthely place ;  
 All þis accordaunce doþ þe bond<sup>l</sup> of loue,  
 þat see and lond<sup>l</sup> doth clippen *and* embrace  
 And may comaunden in þe heuene aboue.

(323)

3. And ȝif [t]his loue hys reynes schulde aslake,  
 Whateuer þinges þat now loueþ beste  
 Continuelly a werre schulde þey make,  
 That now accordantly beth sette in reste ;  
 And in þaym-self<sup>f</sup> alle þinges schulde be preste  
 This world for to distroyen *and* vndone,

METRUM VIII, STAN. 1.—1. þus] om. h F ; þus is J : worldly] worlde h : enterchaungementes] entergaungementes L R Bb : That is that wordely enterchaungement T. 2. Acorden] Accordaninge D. 3. þat] om. R: fletyng<sup>j</sup>] fyghtynge P: elementes] elymet T. 4. bondes] boones Dc. 5. hem] om. T. 6. þat þe] þus D: þe] om. Rl N R F J Ch. 8. and] and so h. [Stan. om. Ba h (*folios missing*).] STAN. 2.—2. Esperus] Hesperous T: þeym] om. T. 3. see þus] om. T: þus is] is thus R: þus] þis F. 4. not] om. N C T R M D h Bb Dc J Ch P (*inserted later in L*). 6. bond<sup>l</sup>] bound h. 7. clippen] knecten P: and] or T: embrace] onbrace H. 8. þe] hye P. [l. 8 om. T; ll. 1–6 om. H (*fol. om.*). Stan. om. Ba (*fol. om.*).] STAN. 3.—1. ȝif this] of this J Ch Bb (*but alt. to ȝyf hys by diff. hand*); ȝif hys L R ; ȝif T H D: hys reynes schulde aslake] shulde his reynes slaake D: reynes] rainys T. 2. þinges] thinge D: þat] þat he T. 3. werre] water N. 4. beth] best Ch. 5. þaym] om. T H: preste] rest T. 6. worlde] wordle H ; world N Bb : for] om. T De.

þat now wiþ bondes holy and honeste  
 Haþ dyuerse folkes bounden into one.

(324)

4. This loue it is þat holy bondes knytteth  
 Of mariages full of honeste ;  
 And loue it is þat trewe lawes setteþ  
 þat felawes haue in theire comynalte.  
 Bot ow mankynde, full blisfull myght ȝe be,  
 If þise ȝoure hertes had in gouernaunce  
 þat heuen haþ set in suche tranquillite,  
 That þere-ynne may be no contrariaunce !'

Explicit liber secundus.

METRUM VIII, STAN. 3.—7. and] an M: bounden] ybounden H: into] a  
 in P. [Stan. om. Rl Ba (fols. om.).] STAN. 4.—3. trewe] om. T: lawes]  
 lawe M H; loove D. 4. felawes] felonueȝ; felons H: hane] om. T H;  
 hath D. 5. ow] oughte T; ough H; oo D; om. h: full] om. R: full  
 blisfull myght ȝe be] i blessed mot thowe be D. 7. þat] Whiche D:  
 heuen] om. T H. 8. ynne] om. T: no] om. h. [Stan. om. Rl Ba N  
 (folios om.).]

## INCIPIT LIBER TERCIUS

(325)

PROSA ja

1. And whan sche had[de] endid þus hire song<sup>i</sup>,  
It was so swete *and* lusty for to here,  
þat euene into my herte rote it throng<sup>i</sup>  
So þat I was astroone<sup>d</sup> of my chere.  
And after þan I seide in þis manere :  
“ Oo soueraigne solace of hertes þus distressed<sup>k</sup>,  
Youre sentence *and* ȝoure songes boþe infere  
Ful hugely my langour haþ repressed,

(326)

2. In so ferforth þat now, as semeth me,  
I haue i-nogh of st[r]eng[th]e *and* suffisaunce  
As peregal to alle aduersitee.  
þat fortune may me smyten wiþ greuaunce,  
Full redy am I with lawly obeysaunce.  
Youre cures whiche ȝe callen scharpe *and* kene,  
I drede hem noght, but ȝit at youre plesaunce  
I schal receyue hem, what-þat-euer þei bene.”

(327)

3. ‘ This feled I wel,’ quod sche, ‘ what tyme þat þow  
My wordes hard[est] so ententyfly ;  
þe habyt of þy mynde behalde I how  
Was sadly set þerto þe wiche þat I

PROSA I, STAN. 1.—1. hadde] had R L H: þus] þis F. 2. swete and  
lusty] lusty and swete D: for] om. T. 3. rote] om. F. 4. astroone<sup>d</sup>  
astonoyed F; astored J. 5. þan] om. T D: I seide in þis manere] sayd I  
thus in my maner T. 6. Oo] Ough H: þus] þis F; om. P. 7. boþe]  
be T; ben H. [Stan. om. Rl Ba N (fols. om.).] STAN. 2.—1. þat] as  
T H D; om. F: now] y now H; om. F. 2. inogh] you T; noughe D;  
strengthe] stenge L. 3. As peregal] And indifference P: to] in J. 4.  
me] om. J Ch: greuaunce] gouernaunce T H. 5. am I] and T H; am P.  
6. kene] clene H. 7. but] by T: ȝit] ryght C T H; now F: at] atte D.  
8. þat] om. T H F: þei] þe D. [Stan. om. Rl Ba N (fols. om.).] STAN. 3.—  
1. feled] fele T; felt D: what tyme] when F. 2. hardest] hard C L R Bb;  
herde M D h Dc F Ch; herd J: ententyfly] entify D. 3. behalde C L R  
Bb] beholde T H; behelde F J Ch; beheld P: how] now T H; you h.  
4. þe] om. T h F.

Enformed had[de] pleyn and perfightly.  
 But þat I schal þe schewe forthermore  
 As in þe tastynge byteþ eagerly,  
 But ȝit resayue it, and I am þerfore

(328)

4. Thow schalt it fynde ful deliciose,  
 And replenysched full of lustynesse.  
 Bot for þou seist þat þou art couetouse  
 This mater for to here more expresse,  
 If þat þou wist[e] what my purpose esse,  
 And wheder þat I thynke þe to lede,  
 For gret desire þou schuldest, as I gesse,  
 In all thyn herte glownen as a glede.'

(329)

5. "Ow!" seide I then, "wheder may þat be?"  
 'Now listen,' quod sche, 'and I schal þe lere  
 Vnto þat verrey hyhe felicite  
 Of wiche þi soule dremeth as it were.  
 But while þi soule wiþ erþely þing[es] here  
 Es set in such ymaginacioun,  
 Thi gostely syght ne may not stonden clere  
 Vnto þat blisful contemplacioun.'

(330)

6. "I pray ȝow," quod I, "seith me what it es."  
 'And for þi loue,' sche seide, 'I schal full feyn.  
 But firste þe cause of fals[e] welfulnes  
 I schal þe schewe and make it to þe pleyne ;

PROSA I, STAN. 3.—5. hadde] had C L R M D: perfightly] perfectly H.  
 6. þat] yett D: forthermore] of euermore T; for euermore. 7. byteþ] beteþ F. 8. þerfore] fer for P. [Stan. om. Rl Ba N (*folios om.*).] [l. 8 om. D.] STAN. 4.—1. it] I J. 3. pou seist] om F. 4. mater] matier D: for to here] further T H. 5. þat] om. F H: wiste] wist L R Bb T H M D F J Ch. 6. wheder] whether R; whether h: þat] om. T F: þe] om. T F. 7. schuldest] shulde D. 8. In] With P: glowen as a glede] diligently take hede P: a] om. T. [Stan. om. Rl Ba N (*folios om.*).] [l. 3 om. D.] STAN. 5.—1. Ow] Howe D J; Now Dc F: þat] it D: O sayd I whether that I may T. 2. listen] lest H: I] om. Ch. 3. þat] the Ch: verrey hyhe] hyhe verrry R. 4. as] that D. 5. þinges] T H D P] þing L Ba C R h Bb Dc F J Ch; þinge M. 7. ne] om. Ba H F J. [Stan. om. Rl N (*folios om.*).] [l. 1-3 om. Ba.] STAN. 6.—1. seith] say Ba; telle T F: it es] is it T. 2. I schal] om. F. 3. false P] fals L R C T H M D h F J Ch Bb; al De. 4. þe (1)] you T: it to þe] to you T; to þe F.

And when þat þou thise false goodes hast seyne  
 Ful perfytyly, þan schalt þow know *and see*,  
 Be turnyng on þat oper side ageyne,  
 The verray myroure of felicite.'

(331)

METRUM j<sup>m</sup>

Qui Serere ingen[u]um.

1. For who þat casteþ for to sawe his cornes,  
 Firste moste he nedes clensen euerydele  
 His feldes fro þe busshes *and* þe þornes.  
 þan schal his labour ben effectuele,  
 And so his cornes growen wonder wele,  
 To [h]euy eres ripen atte laste.  
 And hony is þe swetter for to fele  
 To hym þat haþ som bitter þing<sup>t</sup> in taaste.

(332)

2. The sterres also schynen more bright  
 When rayne blastes passed ben þaire waye :  
 When Lucifer hath dr[yu]en away þe nyght,  
 [Than] after þat þe clerrer is þe day.  
 Of þe also þe same schal I say ;  
 When erthely lust is put out of þi þoght,  
 The verray light of trowþe, it is no nay,  
 May be ful sone in-to thy mynde i-brought.

PROSA I, STAN. 6.—5. goodes] goddes Ba; om. F: And thou haste  
 false goode sayne T: And whan thou hast fals gode sayn H: And when thou  
 hast the false good seyn P. 6. þan] om. H: þan schalt þow] schalt þou  
 þan R. 7. on] to T H: þat oper] the toother D. [Stan. om. Rl N  
 (fols. om.).] METRUM I, ingenuum] ingenium L. STAN. 1.—1. For]  
 or R Dc: þat] so D: who þat casteþ for toj who so castes to T H: for (2)]  
 om. h F. 2. nedes] om. H. 3. fro] om. F; þe (2)] om. R F. 4. his]  
 be his T H: ben] om. T H. 5. so] so shall T H: growen] shal growe D.  
 6. To] Tho H: heuy] euy L; ony h: eres ripen] corypyn T H: atte] at  
 J Ch. 7. þe] om. Ba T H F: swetter] swete H; better P: to] ye C; the  
 H. 8. in taast] atast' F. [Stan. om. N (fol. om.).] [l. 1 om. Rl.]  
 STAN. 2.—1. The] These F: also schynen] shineþ also F: more] moste T.  
 2. rayne] reyn Rl Ba; rayny T F: passed ben] passen well T; falle bye D;  
 ben passed F; ben gon P: þaire waye] away J. 3. dryven] drawen  
 L Rl Ba R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch; dryven T P; dryve H: away] ayen T H:  
 nyght] light h. 4. Than T H P] And L Rl Ba R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch.  
 6. lust] lustes h: lust is] lustes ben F: þi] om. F. 7. it is] is it Ch: it is  
 no nay] is no myȝhte nay; is no nyght nay H. 8. i-brought] brought Rl  
 Ba N T H D J Ch P: Into þi mynde may sone be brouȝte F. [l. 1-4 om. N  
 (fol. om.).]

(333)

PROSA ij<sup>a</sup>

Tum defixo.

1. And þan awhile sche caste hire sight to grounde,  
 And as it were sche drewe hire wittes nere ;  
 And after þat wiþ-ynne a litell stounde  
 Sche gan to speke *and* seide on þis manere :  
 “ The cure of all þise mortall [folkes] here,  
 Be many-fold<sup>l</sup> of dyuerse excercise,  
 As dyuers wittes may þaire hertes steere,  
 Procediþ forþ in many dyuerse wise.

(334)

2. But all þis cure *and* all þis besynesse  
 Vnto ane ende enforceþ to atteyne,  
 þat is, to come vnto þe wilfulness  
 þe wiche is g[o]od ; *and* sothely for to seyne,  
 He þat may itacheuen in certeyne,  
 None oþer good coueteþ he to wynne,  
 Forwhi hym-self<sup>t</sup> þat good is souereyne,  
 All oþer good con[teyneth] him wiþynne.

(335)

3. And in þis good if þat þer lakkeþ ought  
 þe wiche wiþoute it mighte desired<sup>l</sup> be,  
 It semeth wel þat souereyn was it noght,  
 Ne parfyt good as euery man may see.  
 Than sueth it þat þis felicite,  
 As for to make a diffinicioun :

PROSA II, STAN. 1.—2. drewel] driueth H : wittes] witnes D. 4. gan]  
 bygan Rl F J : seide] say T: on þis] in þat D. 5. folkes P] þinges all  
 MSS. 6. of] om. T H. 7. hertes] hert J. 8. Procediþ] Produceþ  
 Rl Ba N C F Bb (*but altered to procedeþ by later hand*) ; proledeþ R.  
 STAN. 2.—1. cure] om. F. 3. to] om. H: þe] þis Rl Ba Dc F J Ch ;  
 om. T; that H: wilfulness] welfillnesse Rl ; welfulnesse Ba F J Ch P ;  
 welthfulness N. 4. þe] om. M D: good] god Rl Ba C N L R M Bb F J  
 Ch. 5. He] Ho Rl: itacheuen] acheuyn it T H: achieveun in certeyne]  
 eschewe & attyne D ; achieveun] atteyn P. 7. þat good is] is that good P.  
 8. good] godes F: conteyneth D] conceyuyng<sup>t</sup> L R M h Bb Rl Ba Dc N C ;  
 contynnyng T H D ; conteynnyng F J P: him] hit P. STAN. 3.—1. in þis  
 good if] yf in thy goode T: þat] om. H F: lakkeþ] lalkeþ R. 2. wiche]  
 om. F: mighte] may F. 3. was] is D. 4. euery] any D: see] be  
 N. 5. sueth] semeth N ; sheweth D F: þis] om. Dc. 6. diffinicioun]  
 distincciou D.

It is the estat in perfyt assemble  
Of all[e] good[es] gedered into one.

(336)

4. So þis estat in many diuerse wise,  
All mortall folk<sup>t</sup> enforcen hem to wynne,  
Forwhy þere is a kyndely couetise  
Of verray good a mannys wit wiþynne.  
But wrecched errour drawyng<sup>t</sup> vnto synne,  
To fals[e] good awayward<sup>t</sup> doth hem lede.  
For some supposen þat verray good begynne  
Of worldly thyng<sup>t</sup> to be wiþouten nede,

(337)

5. And þise alway trauaile to be riche.  
And some supposen þat verray good be þat  
To ben onered oþer men vnliche,  
And þai enforcen to þat same algat.  
And some supposen þat in hyhe estat<sup>t</sup>  
Schuld souereyn good be founden verrailye,  
And þise enforcen for to be þere-at,  
For to be lordes or to þ lordes nyhe.

(338)

6. And some supposen eke, it is no fayle,  
Þat souereyn good is re[n]oun as I gesse ;  
And þey be art of pees or of bataille  
Purchesen hem a name of worthynesse.  
And many ben þat myrþe and gladsumnesse  
This souereyn good supposen þat it be,

PROSA II, STAN. 3.—7. It] Yett T: the estate in] pestate of N; the state of T D F; pastat in C: estate] state Rl Ba H Dc J Ch. 8. alle] all L R Rl Ba N C Dc F J Ch: goodes P] good all MSS. STAN. 4.—1. Soj Lo Rl Ba N R Bb F Ch: wise] om. T. 3. kyndely] kyndefull N; verrai F: couetise] couetouse R. 4. good] goodes D: a] of T h Dc: wit] om. H. 5. drawyng] drawnen D: vnto] into Rl Ba T D F. 6. false] fals L: hem] him F J. 7. supposen] purpos D: begynne] to ben P. 8. worldly thyng<sup>t</sup>] wordly goode T H: nede] ende H: Of al maner worldly good to haue no nede P. STAN. 5.—1. trauaile] drawyn T H. 2. verray good] verrey dere goode T: be] is P. 3. oper] ther other T: vnliche] i leche D. 4. þat] þe H: And supposen that oon estate T. 5. in] on H: hyhe] om. H. 6. good] goodes h. 7. for] om. T D. 8. to (2) Rl C J] to be Ba N L R M h Ch; lo T P; om. H D F. STAN. 6.—1. eke] om. h: no] not J. 2. good] om. H Dc: renoun N C T H P] resoun Rl Ba L R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch: I] they T H P. 3. of (2)] by Rl J; om Dc. 4. hem] om. T: worthynesse] vnthriftnesse T. 5. ben] ther ben D: myrþe] myrye R: gladsumnesse] gladnesse T D Dc F. 6. souereyn] verray Dc: supposen] om. T F: it] they Dc.

BOETHIUS.

K

And þise enforcen hem to lustynesse  
To lede þaire lyues all in iolite.

(339)

7. And som wil enterchaungen as it were  
Boþe cause *and* ende, for some wolde riche be  
For to achenen hi[gh] estates here  
Or lyuen in voluptuosite.  
And some coueten after dignite  
Because of richesse or of hye renoun.  
Thus diuerse folk[es], eche in his degré,  
Dyuerse maken theire entencioun :

(340)

8. As nobl[en]esse *and* fauor, as it semeth,  
It makeþ men renoune[d] worthily ;  
And wyf *and* children, as som other demeth,  
Schulde make men to lyuen merily.  
But for to ben well frended certanly  
A wonder holy þing in kynde it esse,  
Pertenynge[n] noght to fortune vtterly,  
Bot vnto vertu holy as I gesse.

(341)

9. The cause of [all] þe remenant, as we trowen,  
Is myght or fleschly dilectacioun.  
Bot goodes of þe body as we knownen  
To þise forseide haue relacioun ;  
For strengthe *and* largesse of proporcione  
Ben like to cause worþinesse or myght ;

**PROSA II, STAN. 6.—8.** lyues] life F ; lyffes P : all] *om.* H.      **STAN. 7.—**  
 1. wil] wolde N : enterchaungen] enterchaungyng Dc.    3. high T H P]  
 his Rl Ba N C L R D h Bb J Ch ; such M ; here F: estates] estate N T ; a  
 state M.    4. lyuen] lyfe T.    6. or of] and F ; and of J Ch: of (2)] *om.*  
 T: hye] his Dc.    7. folkes N C Dc P] folk Rl Ba L R h M D Bb F J Ch ;  
 folke T H: eche in] after D.    8. Dyuerse] Diuersely N : eche] euer T ;  
 every H.      **STAN. 8.—1.** noblenesse F P] noblesse *all other MSS.*    2.  
 renouned] renowne L R M D Bb H ; renomyd T H.    3. children] childer  
 C: som] sones T H.    4. Shulde men lyfe vere merely T.    5. ben] *om.*  
 H T: well frended] tell frendy T: frendy N H.    6. wonder]  
 worthy T: in] and F: it esse] is this T H.    7. Pertenynge[n] perceyuyng h:  
 noght to fortune vtterly] to fortune nat i wisse T ; to fortune nott vtterly H:  
 vtterly] witterly N.      **STAN. 9.—1.** The] Be h: all T H P] *om.* Rl Ba L  
 N C R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch.    2. fleschly] freshly h.    3 knownen]  
 owen N.    4. forseide haue] fors it had Dc.    5. and largesse of] of  
 largenesse or T ; or largenes of D: largesse] largenesse F P.    6. or] of F ;  
 and J.

Beaute and swiftnesse causeþ eek renoun,  
And helthe delyt, þis woot wel every wight.

(342)

10. And in all thise noght elles is required  
Bot o þing<sup>t</sup> whiche is verrey blisfulnesse ;  
For what þing<sup>t</sup> þat is principally desired<sup>k</sup>,  
Thou wilt it deme þat souereyn good it is ;  
But sith we haue diffyned here or this  
þat souereyn good is þis felicite,  
Than þat estate he demeþ for his blis  
Whiche principally and most desireþ he.

(343)

11. Now hast þou set before thyn eyȝen here  
The forme of wilfulness of man wel nyhe :  
Richesse, honour, fame, lust and powere  
W[hiche] Epicurus wel beheld<sup>k</sup> and syhe ;  
And he devised<sup>k</sup> in his fantasye  
þat lust schulde be þe souereyngne good of kynde.  
All other þing<sup>t</sup>, hym semed certanly,  
Bereueth reste and myrþe of mannys mynde.

(344)

12. But I retorne to besynesse of man  
W[hiche] all þaire labour setten here vpon,  
Wiþ suche blynde wittes as þei can,  
O souereigne good þei seken euerychone.  
Bot as a dronken man þat goth allone,  
He can noght fynde a redy way ne path

PROSA II, STAN. 9.—7. and] or N F: swiftnesse] swetnes D: eek] also h.  
8. þis] þus H: woot] om. T H. STAN. 10.—1. thise] wise N: elles] ell  
H; els D. 2. whiche] the which H: is] is þe J. 3. þing] tyme H;  
om. P: But what tyme that is veryr pryncipall desyrd T. 4. þou wilt]  
þat will Rl; þat wolle F: it (1)] he F: it (2) om. F. 6. is þis] it is T.  
7. he demeth] demeth he T H. 8. Whiche] Wyche þat P: and most] om.  
P: most] more Dc. STAN. 11.—1. thyn] myn Dc: eyȝen] Iyen D; yeen P.  
2. wilfulness] welfulnesse Rl Ba C T H Dc F J P; welthfulness N: wel] full  
T D. 4. Which] Wiþ Rl Ba L R M Bb N Dc F J Ch: Epicurus] epicuris  
H; epicures F: beheld<sup>k</sup>] behyled N; byholde T F; behelded H: syhe] seye  
Rl Ba H J P; see T; y seye F; esylye Dc. 7. All other þing] All other  
kynde of thynges T. 8. myrþe] myght Ba F Ch; mynde T H. STAN.  
12.—2. Which T H h F] Wiþ Rl Ba N C L R Bb M D Dc J Ch: setten] set D;  
om. h. 3. Wiþ] Of T; þei] þe T. 4. O] One F: seken] sechen N h.  
5. a] om. Ba: man] om. R. 6. ne] and T; nor D.

Homward to his owne hous to gone,  
So blynde beeth þe wittes þat he hap.

(345)

## 13. Tho þat enforcen for to nede noght,

[Now] trowest þou þat þei erre as semeth þe ?  
In soth þere is noþing þat may be þoght  
þat so performen may felicite,  
As may þe estate of alle good plente :  
Of foreyn þing<sup>t</sup> to nede noght at all,  
But in itselv<sup>t</sup> to haue þsuffisante  
Of alle good, to speke in generall.

(346)

14. And firthermore what seist pow ? Erren þay  
þat suche a þing<sup>t</sup> acounten honorable  
The wiche is souereigne good ? Forsothe nay.  
For suche a þing<sup>t</sup> may noght be repreueable,  
þat to all mortall folk is desirable,  
Wherto is sette all þeire entencioun.  
And also power it is comendable ;  
It is full good, it is no questioun.

(347)

15. How schulde might fro suche a þing<sup>t</sup> be revyd,  
The whiche of alle þing<sup>t</sup> is worthieste ?  
And noble renoun schulde it be repreued,  
þat is a þing<sup>t</sup> so worthy and honeste,  
Sith þing<sup>t</sup> þat is most excellent and beste  
Most nede be worschipfull and reuerent ?  
For euery wight to wynne it is full preste,  
þerto trauaillynge with theire hole entent.

PROSA II, STAN. 12.—7. to (2)] for too Dh. 8. beeth] by h. STAN. 13.—1. Tho] Whoo D ; They P. 2. Now N T H R Dc F Ch] But L Rl Ba C M h Bb: þat] om. D F: þei] om. T: erre] ar D: þe] me h. 3. þoght soughte T D; broȝte F. 5. estate] state T D: alle] om. P. 6. to nede] þat nedeth Rl Ba J; þat nede N: at] om. TH; atte R. 7. haue T H R h F] haue all *all other MSS.* and P: suffisante L R h] sufficiaunce Rl Ba N T H M D J Ch F Bb Dc. 8. generall] gouernaile N. STAN. 14.—1. what seist pow erren þay] what wyst pow rather þan thay h. 4. repreueable] prevable T H. 5. mortall folk] folke mortal Dc F: folk] thing N: desirable] desiderable Ba M J. 7. is] is not F. STAN. 15.—1. schulde] shulde or N: fro] om. N. 2. is] is the T. 4. is a] pis J: a þing<sup>t</sup> so worthy] so worthi a þing<sup>t</sup> F. 5. and] a Rl. 7. to wynne it] hit to wynne H. 8. trauaillynge] trauailen N; traeleth P: hole] om. F.

(348)

16. Bot for to speke of angir or distresse,  
 Of sorwe, mournyng<sup>t</sup>, anguische or of Payne ;  
 Suche þinges mow noght been in blisfulnesse,  
 þerfore of suche it nedeth noght to sayne.  
 For in full litell þinges men be fayne  
 To haue *and* vse þat may þem do solace,  
 And only þis to hauen in certayne,  
 All worldly folk enforsen to purchace.

(349)

17. And for þis cause desire þei habundaunce  
 As lordschipe, fame, deli[ce] *and* dignite,  
 Therby to wynne *and* haue suffisaunce  
 Of honour, renoun, myght, *and* glad to be.  
 Than is it good, as euery man may see,  
 þat men so faste seche in suche a wise,  
 And so trauailleþ eche in his degree  
 To wynne[n] [it] as þei can best devise.

(350)

18. In whiche desire apereþ openly  
 How gret, how mighti is þe strengþe of kynde,  
 Sith al[so] be it þat full dyuersly  
 Descordeth lo þe sentence of thei[re] [my]nde,  
 [Yit] alle thise consenten at one ende  
 As for to loue a þing<sup>t</sup> þat semeþ beste,  
 For here-to nature doþ þaire hertes tende ;  
 Till þis be had þey may not be in reste.

PROSA II, STAN. 16.—1. or] and T Ch. 2. sorwe] sorw Bb: or of] other P: of (2)] om. F. 3. þinges] thynge T: mow] may T H. 4. þerfore] þer F. 5. þinges] om. T H: men be] ben men T: fayne] faile H; ful feyne F. 6. and] and to Rl Ba J Ch : þem do] do hem H D: do] om. Rl Ba N F J Ch. 7. þis to hauen] to haue thys T. 8. worldly] wordly T De. STAN. 17.—1. þis] þis same T. 2. lordschipe] lordshippes h: fame] famys D: delice P] delites Rl Ba Nc L R M D h J Ch Bb; delite H; delyghte T; om. Dc F. 3. haue] yaff T; ȝaue H. 5. it] om. D: as] þat Ba J: may] om. Rl Ba J Ch: see] bee T. 6. faste] flaste T: seche in suche a wise] in suche a wyse seke T: seche] sett D; seche h; seketh P: a] om. D. 7. eche] om. T H: his] her T H. 8. wynnen] wynne all MSS. and P: it] om. L Rl Ba M F: as] and T; þat R. STAN. 18.—2. how (2)] and T H. 3. also T H P] all L Rl Ba N R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch: full] soo D. 4. theire mynde C P] thei ende L R Bb; the ende M D; þeir ende Rl Ba N T H Dc F J Ch; thy kynde h. 5. Yit N T H] þat Rl Ba M h Bb Dc F J Ch P; Thus R: consenten] consenteth natt T: ende] ynde Rl Ch. 6. a] o R: þat] as T. 7. For] And T: þaire] his Ba J. [l. 5 om. D.]

(351)

METRUM ij<sup>m</sup>

Quantas rerum flectat habenas.

1. Hit lust to schewen be subtile song,  
 And be þe sown of delectable strenges,  
 How nature þat full myghty is *and* strong  
*Attempreþ* the gouernement of thynges ;  
 This wide worlde wiþ all his varyenges  
 So by here lawes keþeth *and* susteyneth,  
 And be bondes þat hauen no lowsynges  
 Full sikerly sche byndeþ *and* constreyneth.

(352)

2. For though þe leoun[s] of þat strange lond  
 þat hight Pene þe faire chaynes were,  
 And taken me[t]e be gifte of mannys honð,  
 And of theire sturdy maistres þt hauen feere  
 Of whom þei ofte stiffe strokes bere,  
 And softly þei suffre to be bete,  
 Yit be þei ones laused of þat gere,  
 Theire olde corage will þei noght forȝete.

(353)

3. For ȝif þe hote blood of any best  
 Theire foule mouthes haue maked rede,  
 Theire hyhe corage þat longe haþ ben þt areest,  
 It will repayren vnto cruell-hede.

METRUM II, STAN. 1.—1. Hit] I Rl Ba J Ch : lust] lusteth me D : song] songs P. 2. be þe] to be T; be Dc: strenges] singes D. 3. þat full] om. T H; þat F. 4. Attempreþ] And temperith T H; attempteth h. 5. wide] blynde D: his] om. F: varyenges] varynges P. 6. lawes] law T. 7. be] by þe N; om. F: no] in N; by D: lowsynges] lesyngis H D. 8. byndeþ] wyndeth T. STAN. 2.—1. leouns] leoun *all MSS. and P:* þat] the D F: strange] strong J. 2. þat] Whiche D: Pene] Feno T; Pers D: þe faire] that few T H: cheynes were] om. N. 3. mete C T H Bb F P] mede L Rl Ba N R M D h F J Ch: be] of N: gifte] yfte H. 4. sturdy] om. T H: maistres T H F P] maistresse L Rl Ba N C R M D Rb Dc h J Ch. 5. ofte] of Rl Ba Ch; ought h: Of whom styl strokes they bere T: Whom of þei styl strokes bere H. 6. softly] soothly T; soothly H: suffre] suffered Rl Ba J Ch. 7. Yit be þei ones] But yett be onys T H: laused] leused Rl Ba Ch; lowsed N; losed H; launced h. STAN. 3.—2. maked] y maked N; made T H D P: maad Dc 3. haþ ben areest] be vnreste T: ben] ben of L R M h Bb: areest] on rest H. 4. vnto] into þe F; into ther P.

He casteþ þan his chaynes ouer hede  
 And roreth, faste remembrynge as it were,  
 His maister ferst<sup>t</sup> of whom he was adrede.  
 With blody teeth þan wil he al to-tere.

(354)

4. The bryd þat syngþ on þe braunche on hye,  
 If he be closed<sup>t</sup> in [a] cage of tree,  
 And lusty folk hym seruen besily  
 With metes þat full swete *and* lusty be,  
 If he may ones skyþ out *and* be fre,  
 Hys lusty mete he casteth vnderfote,  
 And to þe wode ful faste sekilþ he  
 And croweþ wiþ a wonder lusty note.

(355)

5. A yerde wiche þat growen is in lengþe,  
 With mannys hond i-bowed to þe grounde,  
 If þat þe hond remitteþ of his strengþe,  
 þe cropp full sone will vp aȝeyn rebounde.  
 And when þe sonne is, passed † dayes stounde,  
 So vndergone þe wawes of the west,  
 Full sone he hath a priue path i-founde,  
 And in þe morne ariseþ in þe estē,

(356)

6. And so the day begynneþ † aȝeyn to spryne.  
 Thus euery thyng<sup>t</sup> reioyeth in his kynde,

METRUM II, STAN. 3.—5. He casteþ than] And caste thus N ; He cast in þan De. 6. roreth] coreth T H. 7. His] Of his F: a drede] in drede De. 8. teeth] tothe D: þan] them H: wil he al] all he wyll T H. STAN. 4.—1. syngþ] sitteth T: on (1)] vpon h; in F. 2. a] om. L Rl N C M h Bb: cage] braunch T H. 3. folk] folkes F; men P: folk hym seruen besily] folkys servith hym beestly T: besily] bestly H. 4. full] shull N : full swete and lusty] lusty and full swete T: and] and full M. 5. skyþ] stepe T: out] om. F: be] so be T; om. J Ch. 7. to] om. H. 8. croweth] syngeth T h: a] om. F: And begynneth to trute with a lusty note P. STAN. 5.—1. wiche þat] þat is P: þat] om. T H: is] vp P. 2. i-bowed] bowed N D; y boweþ J: i-bowed to þe] bowed down to P. 3. remitteþ] ryndeth T. 4. vp] om. N T: rebounde] rebownde h. 5. dayes] þe dayes Rl Ba R L M D h Bb F J Ch: dayes] day J; om. Ch. 6. þe (1)] wiþ þe F; om. J: wawes] dayes] T H; walles D. 7. he] om. N: i founde] founde T D. 8. morne] mornynge F P: ariseþ] he ryseþ R. STAN. 6.—1. so] om. T H: the] om. F: begynneþ] begynnyngþ L; gynneþ D: begynneþ aȝeyn] ayen begynnys T H: aȝeyn to] om. P. 2. reioyeth] reioyeth Rl Ba T H F J,

Theire olde recourse ayeinward<sup>t</sup> for to brynge,  
 And besily to turnen and to wende.  
 Be thyse we schull conceyuen in oure mynde  
 þat alle þinges moste þeire ordre sewe,  
 And þe begynnynge ioynen to þe ende  
 To knetten of hem-self<sup>t</sup> a cercle trewe.

(357)

PROSA iii<sup>a</sup>

Vos quoque terrena animalia homines.

1. Bot O þe erþely bestes, as me semeth,  
 With a full thyn yimaginacioun,  
 Of ȝoure begynnynge as it were ȝe dremeth,  
 I-led be naturel entencioune,  
 And haue a maner blynd inspeccioun  
 As of þe verrey ende of blisfulnesse ;  
 But error of youre false affeccioun  
 With-draweth ȝow to verrey wrecchidnesse.

(358)

2. Beholde and see now if it may be so,  
 Wheþer men atteyne may in suche a [wyse]  
 Vnto þat ende þat nature stireþ hem to  
 Of blisfulnesse, so as theym-self<sup>t</sup> devise.  
 If so is þat þeire nyse couetise  
 Of mon[y], honour, or suche other þing<sup>t</sup>,  
 May make hem fully to þeym-self<sup>t</sup> suffice  
 þat no good lakke as vnto þaire likyng<sup>t</sup>,

METRUM II, STAN. 6.—3. recourse] course R1 Ba J Ch : ayeinward]  
 agayne T D h F: for] om. D: brynge] finde Dc. 6. alle þinges moste  
 paire] all thing muste his T H: þinges] þinge D: moste] most hit R; om.  
 Dc. 7. ioynen] of joy T H; ioye h: to] wip P. 8. hem] om. T H:  
 And of them-selfe make a cercle trew P. PROSA III, STAN. 1.—1. O ȝe  
 N H] to þe L R1 Ba R M D h Bb Dc J Ch ; ye oo T; ye F; þe P: me] yt P.  
 3. begynnynge] benyngne h. 4. be] with R1 Ba J Ch : naturel] ynnaturel  
 F: entencioune] inclination P. 5. And hath in maner a blynde suspec-  
 cioun T. 6. þe] a D: verrey ende of] ende of very P. 7. But] Bi F.  
 8. to] into Dc: verrey] om. F. STAN. 2.—1. now] om. T H. 2.  
 Wheþer] Which F: atteyne may] may attayne T: a wyse H P D F] a blisse  
 all other MSS. 3. Vnto] om. F: þat] þe T H F: stireþ hem to] strecche  
 may doo D: stireþ] seruþ F; draeth P. 4. so] om. F: as] þat R1 F.  
 5. is] om. T H; be D P: nyse couetise] vyce couetosly T: nyse] vice H.  
 6. mony T H] mone R1 Ba N C R M Bb Dc Ch; money P D F; many h;  
 mane J. 7. hem fully to þeym self] þeym self to ben fully F: Make may  
 hem self<sup>t</sup> fully to fulfull and suffice T. 8. vnto] to T h Dc F.

(359)

3. And then be þis wyle I graunt and seyn  
 þat suche men mowe lyuen lustely.  
 But þan eft on þat oþer side ageyn,  
 If þay may noght performen verely  
 All þat þei haue behight hem vtterly,  
 Bot many goodes lakken þat þey mysse,  
 Wil it noght þenne apperen plenerly  
 As a full fals colour of blisfulnesse ?

(360)

4. Bot first of the I aske þis demaund<sup>t</sup>,  
 As þou þat were not ȝit full longe agone  
 In worldly [w]elþe[s] fully habundaund<sup>t</sup> :  
 Where þou amonge þ[y] welthes euerychone,  
 As in thy corage neuer feltest none  
 Distresse or anguysch no tyme in þy mynde ?  
 “Certayn,” quod I, “þat can I think vpon.  
 In þat estat couþe I me neuere fynde

(361)

5. þat I nas all-wey somwhat in distresse.”  
 ‘And was not,’ quod sche, ‘þis þe cause why,  
 þat somwhat lakked the, as dedest þou gesse,  
 Whiche þou wolde fayn haue had it presently ;  
 And som þing<sup>t</sup> eek þou haddest hardely  
 Whiche þat ful fayne þou woldest haue forgone ?’

PROSA III, STAN. 3.—1. be] too D: be þis wyle I] woll I bi þis F:  
 þis] these P. 2. suche men mowe] a man may P: mowe] may T D.  
 3. þan eft on þat] eft he in the T H. 6. lakken] lak D; om. F. 7.  
 þenne apperen] appere þan F: penne] þem H: plenerly] prevely T; privyly  
 H; plainly D. 8. fals] om. T H: blisfulnesse] blyndefullnesse T H.  
 STAN. 4.—1. of the I aske] I aske of þe T H F J. 2. ȝit] om. T H: full]  
 om. Rl F Ch. 3. worldly] worldly T P: welþes T H P] welþe D; helþe  
 all other MSS. 4. Where] Wheþer D F: þy T] þe all other MSS. and  
 P. 5. As] And T: feltest] feldest F; feldest thou P. 6. anguysch]  
 greuaunce F: in] of F. 7. Certeyn] Certis D: I (2)] om. H. 8. coupe]  
 I] coude ye T H; cowde I Dc: me] om. F. [ll. 7, 8 om. J (fol. om.)] [ll. 1 of next Stan. joined on L R Bb.] STAN. 5.—1. nas] ne was T H F P:  
 all wey] om. T. 2. þis] om. T H; thus D: quod sche þis] this quod she  
 P. 3. somwhat] som thinge P: dedest] dudest Rl Ba; dist C; dovs T;  
 dost H; dyst P; om. Dc: dedest þou] thowe ded D. 4. Whiche]  
 The wyche P: fayn] om. N: haue] om. T H; an Dc: it] om. T H F P; in Dc.  
 5. som þing<sup>t</sup>] sumwhate T: lek] also h F: hardely] presently D; sikerly P.  
 6. þat] om. F: Which ful fayne woldist haþd forgon H: Which thow woldyst  
 fayne haue forgone T: The wyche thow woldest gladly haue for gone P.

"Right as þe sayn, right so it is," quod I.

'Thow wilned,' quod sche, 'presence of þat one

(362)

6. And so þe absence of þat oþer þan ?'

Quod I, "Y graunt I cannot go þerfro."

'Now þan,' quod sche, 'nedeþ euery man  
þe same þingi þat he desireþ to.'

"Full soþe it is," quod I, "hym nedeth so."

'Now then,' quod sche, 'he þat nedeth oþht  
He ne is noȝht suffisaunt ?' I seyde, "No,  
As to hym-seluen he sufficeþ noȝht."

(363)

7. 'When þou,' sche seide, 'were full in þi richesse

Thow suffred þan þis same vnsuffisaunce.'

"How elles ?" seide I, "so it is expresse."

'Then it is so,' quod sche, 'þat habundaunce  
Of worldly good may neuer man avaunce  
As to hym-selue þat he schal suffice,  
And nede noȝht of foreyn purveaunce  
Whiche þat þei han behighted to accomlice.

(364)

8. And þis is to consideren, as I trowe,

þat tresour haþ no kyndely resistence

For to defende þe lordes þat þeym owe,

But þat þay may be raft be violence.'

PROSA III, STAN. 5.—7. right (2) om. T F. 8. wilned] wille nede T H; woll not h; woldest D; wyllest P: presence] the presence Ba h P: þat one] þe tone Rl Ba Ch. [Stan. om. J (fol. om.)] STAN. 6.—1. so] om. P: þe absence] thabsence D: þe] om. Dc. 2. Quod] Seyd F: can] maye D. 4. to] so T H. 5. quod I hym] sayd I it T H. 6. then] þat Dc: he þat] who so N; hym Dc. 7. ne] om. T H h F P: ne is] nis N: noȝht] om. N: I] om. N; as I D: no] loo D. 8. he sufficeþ noȝht] sufficeþ he no D: he] it Dc: sufficeþ] sufficeþ F; sufficeþ Ch. [Stan. om. J (fol. om.)] [ll. 4—6 om. D.] STAN. 7.—1. When þou sche seide] When she seid pou F. 2. Thow] And thow H: suffred] suffredest N. 3. elles] ell H. 4. it is] hit H. 5. worldly] wordly T H Dc: man] a man N: avaunce] suffice D. 6. schal] schulde T H; may P. 7. foreyn] forence H. 8. Whiche] With D: þat] om. T H F: behighted] behight P; highted h; hiȝte F: to] of Ch: accomplice] complice Rl Ba N D F Ch. [Stan. om. J (fol. om.)] [l. 6 om. D.] STAN. 8.—1. to consideren] to be consydred P. 3. þe] thou D; om. F. 4. þat] om. F: may] om. H: raft] cast D: be (2)] wiþ F: But they that be rafte with violence T.

[I] seide þat verray soth is þat sentence.

‘And what,’ quod sche, ‘þough þat þou seidest nay,  
Sith euer ȝit men done hire diligence,  
þe strengest for to gete it if he may.

(365)

9. For wher-of elles ben querelles meued<sup>k</sup>,  
As men alday in courtes hem compleyne,  
But for here good is falsly hem byreued<sup>k</sup>  
Be fors of fraud<sup>k</sup>, *and* askeþ it ageyne ?’  
“In soth,” quod I, “it is right as ȝe seyne.”  
‘Lo þan,’ quod sche, ‘nedeþ euery man  
Of socour *and* of foreyn help certeyne  
As for to kepe þe tresour þat þey han.’

(366)

10. “Who is þat may denye this ?” quod I.  
‘And þen,’ quod sche, ‘schulde hym nede non  
Of suche defence ne warde certanly,  
Ne had he þat tresour þat he may forgon.’  
“Pere is,” quod I, “no doute þere vppon.”  
Sche seide þanne, ‘Lo all ȝoure affiaunce  
Is torned ȝow into reuerset anon,  
For it bereueþ ȝow of suffisaunce,

(367)

11. Wherby ȝe wende in ese for to be,  
And bringeþ ȝow in anguysche *and* distresse,  
Of foreyn help to haue necessite.  
ȝit wolde I know þat maner-wise expresse

PROSA III, STAN. 8.—5. I] And L R M h; And I C: þat] *om.* F: is]  
was T; hit is F: I graunt wel quod I to your sentence P. 6. sche] *om.*  
h: þough] *om.* Dc: þat] *om.* T H De F. 7. euer ȝit] yett ever T;  
every day P: done hire] doth hem T. 8. if] yf þat T. [Stan. *om.* J (*fol.*  
*om.*).] STAN. 9.—1. wher-of] wherfore N: elles] ell H: ben] by D  
querelles] whervelys T; querell h: meued] y meued Rl F Ch. 2. courtes]  
contres N. 3. is falsly hem] is hem falsely T. 4. of] and T H: askeþ]  
asked R. 6. euery] euyr R. 7. and] that D: foreyn] *om.* D. 8.  
tresour] money P: þey] ȝe Rl Ba Ch; þeyn R. [Stan. *om.* J (*fol.* *om.*).] STAN. 10.—1. may] þat can T; þat H: denye] devyne Rl; diuine N. 2.  
þen] *om.* T H. 3. ne] and T; noo D. 4. tresour] þe tresour T F; þat  
money P; þat tresour Rl Ba N H R M D h Bb De Ch: þat he may] hath  
hyymay D. 6. panne lo] lo þenne F; lo T; þanne R: all] as T: Loo  
than quod she al your affyance P. 7. ȝow] *om.* D: ȝow into] into youre  
T. 8. For] But Ba: ȝow] *om.* T: of] youre Rl Ba N C F Ch P; in D.  
[Stan. *om.* J (*fol.* *om.*).] STAN. 11.—1. wende] wene P; ese] yese F.  
2. ȝow] *om.* R. 4. þat] þe Rl F P.

How nede may voyded ben be richesse;  
 Wheþer riche men ne hungre[n] neufer a-dele;  
 Or wheþer þei mowe not thristen, wilt þou gesse;  
 Wether þei ne mowe no cold in wynter fele.

(368)

12. Bot vnto þis þou wilt answere me sone  
 þat riche men haue wher-with euery day  
 Theire cold, þeire thrist, þeire hunger to fordone,  
 As vnto þis in all I say noght nay.  
 In sothe þis will I graunte hem þat þei may  
 Be richesse be conforted at hire nede;  
 But vtterly to putte nede away,  
 þat power haue þei noght wiþoute drede.

(369)

13. For sithe þis nede, þat alway gapeþ so  
 To be fulfilled and after more it gredith,  
 If[s] such a þing þat neuere may be do,—  
 Of kynde ne speke I † noght þat litel nedeþ  
 But auarice þat noþing fully fedeth,—  
 Ne may not be fulfilled wiþ habundaunce,  
 Bot into more necessite ȝow ledeþ,  
 Why trowe ȝe þereby to haue suffisaunce ?

(370)

METRUM iiij<sup>m</sup>

Quamvis fluente.

1. All were † it þat þe riche couetous  
 Had all of gold full rennyng [a] ryuere,

PROSA III, STAN. 11.—5. voyded ben be] be voyded by T H D P. 6.  
 riche men ne hungren] no riche men hungir T H : ne] om. Rl Ba Dc F :  
 hungren N C] hungred L R M h Bb Dc Ch P ; vngury H ; hunger D ; hungre  
 Rl Ba F : neufer] not Dc. 7. þei mowe] may they T ; they may H ; mowe  
 theye D : mowe not thristen] thirst not F. 8. ne] om. N T H M D h F :  
 mowe] may T H P : no cold in] not the colde of N : cold] gold H. [Stan. om.  
 J (fol. om.).] STAN. 12.—1. vnto] to H. 2. wherwith] herwith T. 3.  
 þeire thrist] þeire hunger to fordone] her hunger her thurst for to done T :  
 þeire (3)] and F. 4. vnto] to H : in all I say noght nay] I seye not ones  
 nay D. 5. þis] om. Ba: graunte hem] graunten N C T H Dc P. 6. Be  
 richesse] By ther good P : be (2)] to be T ; om. H : at] atte D. 7. to] om.  
 R. [Stan. om. J (fol. om.).] STAN. 13.—1. For sithe] fforsope F. 2.  
 gredith] graieth D. 3. Is H Rl P] In Ba C T R L M h Bb Dc F Ch ; as D.  
 4. ne] om. D : I T H F P] om. D ; It all other MSS. : Of kynde ne speke I  
 nat fully fedeth T H. 5. noþing] noo wighte D. 6. not] om. D : fulfilled]  
 fullyd T H ; fyllde F. 7. into] vnto F. [ll. 4, 5 confusedly combined T  
 H.] [Stan. om. J (fol. om.).] METRUM III, STAN. 1.—1. were] where L  
 Rl C T. 2. all] om. F : of] the h : gold] good De: a] of L Rl M h F Ch P.

And also fele of stones precious  
 As in his nekke he might hym-seluen bere,  
 And oxen fele his londes for to ere,  
 His besynesse, ȝit til þat he schal deye,  
 He wil not leue, ne when he lyeth on bere  
 All his riches ne schal him not conveie.

(371)

PROSA iiijs<sup>a</sup>

Sed dignitates.

1. Wheþer dignitees to þilke þat hem wynne  
 May make þeym fully worschipful to be,  
 Oþer empresse vertu þeym wiþ-ynne,  
 And make vice out of þaire hertes flee ?  
 Nowt so, [forsoth] ; þou myght þi-seluen see  
 It is not wont to voyde wickednesse,  
 But vice þat was all close in priuite,  
 It makeþ fully to be knowe expresse.

(372)

2. Whereof it is I haue right grete disdeyn  
 þat suche wicked men *and* surfetous  
 Schulde any tyme in dignite be seyn.  
 Perfore it was þat oon Ca[t]ullius,  
 When he saw one þat highte Nonius  
 Set in a sete of worschip in þe toun,  
 He clepid hym a posteme venemous  
 All full of attre *and* corrupcioun.

METRUM III, STAN. 1.—3. And] *om.* D: fele] full T H D. 4. might]  
 myghte nat T: hym seluen] *om.* F; them selfen P. 5. fele] on fylde P:  
 ere] here Dc. 6. besynesse] couetesee F: þat] *om.* N T Dc F. 7. ne]  
 and T: lyeth] lyght Dc: on] in R. 8. ne] *om.* R F: him not] not hym  
 R: conveie] couer T; conuere H. [*Stan. om. J (fol. om.)*.] PROSA IV,  
 STAN. 1.—1. þilke] them T; þo H; suche P: þat] as P: hem] *om.* T. 2.  
 fully] *om.* F. 3. vertu þeym] he[n] vertu D h. 4. vice] vices T D h F;  
*om.* M. 5. Nowt] And D: forsoth C T H P] ferforth L Rl Ba N M D Dc  
 F Ch Bb (*but altered by later hand to forsoth; for þoght R: þou*] þat þou F:  
*myght*] maist N P. 6. wont] wonde T H; would F. 7. close] closed  
 h: in] *om.* M: priuite] dyg Dc (*but crossed out and prevyte inserted in other*  
*hand*). [*Stan. om. J (fol. om.)*.] STAN. 2.—1. right] *om.* T H F: grete]  
*om.* M. 2. surfetous] forfettoris T; surfetours D; sorfetours H Ch. 4.  
 Catullius Dc P] Carullius L Rl Ba N C R M D Bb J F Ch; Catellyous T;  
 Catilius H; Concarullus h. 5. þat highte] y cleped F; Nonius C L R Bb  
 JJ Nomius Rl Ba N M h F Ch P; Nomyous T H; Nennius D; Nomyus Dc.  
 6. in] on D: a] *om.* Rl Ba J: in (2)] too D. 7. posteme] postom N h;  
 poste T H. 8. and] and of F. [ll. 1—3 *om.* J (fol. om.)]

(373)

3. Ne seest þow noght what schame *and* velanye  
 To suche schrewed<sup>k</sup> wicked folk it is  
 For to be sette in suche honour on hye ?  
 For were noght þat, ȝit þaire vnworþynesse  
 Of oþere folk schulde knownen be þe lesse.  
 And what periles woldest þou stonden at,  
 Or þou woldest bere an office, schal I gesse,  
 Wiþ pilke cursed wrecche Decorat ?

(374)

4. Ne I ne may not demen in my wit  
 þat suche wrecchis schulde be honorable,  
 And worth þat honour, þogh þei hauen it,  
 þat been þertoo vnworthy and vnable.  
 But if þow saw a wise man *and* an able  
 Endowed<sup>k</sup> al of wit and sapience,  
 Woldest þou foriuggen hym as repreuable,  
 And as vnworþi to þat excellency ?

(375)

5. ‘I seyde, “nay.” ‘Now certes þan,’ quod sche,  
 ‘Thise dignitees belongeþ properly  
 Only to vertu and to honeste ;  
 And vertu schal transporte hem verrely  
 To wiche sche is [con]ioyned sewyngly.  
 And for as mekyl as þat reuerence  
 Receyued of þe peple commynly  
 Acordeth not alwey wiþ conscience,

PROSA IV, STAN. 3.—1. and] *om.* F. 3. For] *om.* T: on hye] only  
 T H. 4. ȝit] *om.* T H F. 5. knownen be] be know T: lesse] leste Dc.  
 6. periles] parelois T H P; perell F: woldest þou] thowe wolde D. 7.  
 an] any Rl Ba F J Ch : schal] as N D Dc. 8. pilke] thyke D; a suche  
 P: wrecche] wrecched D; man P: Decorat] Decorate Ba C T H D h F J Ch;  
 dedecorate P. STAN. 4.—1. ne (2) *om.* D F P: not] *om.* T H: demen]  
 dyvyne T; denyen H: in] *om.* H: my] *om.* Rl J Ch. 2. schulde] *om.* F:  
 honorable] euere able N. 3. worthy] worthy N T: honour] worship P:  
 poghi] þat D. 4. þat] Whiche D. 5. an] *om.* F. 6. Endowed]  
 Endewed Rl Ba h Ch; Endid T; Endued H; Endewed M: al of wit] with  
 al wytte T: of] with Dc: sapience] pacience D: And hoelly al fulfylled with  
 sapience P. 7. foriuggen hym] deme that man P; fongen hym Rl Ba F J  
 Ch; juge hym T H: as] a T; as for Dc. STAN. 5.—1. nay T H D J] nay  
 philosophia all other MSS. and P: certes] *om.* T H. 2. belongeþ] þat  
 longeþ F. 4. transportel] transpose T. 5. conioyned P] ioyned all other  
 MSS. 6. as (1)] alls C; so F: mekyl] much Rl Ba T H J Ch; moche h;  
 miche D; myche F: þat] *om.* Rl Ba De F J Ch. [l. 5 *om.* Ch, but inserted  
 later by another hand.]

(376)

6. Ne to, þat honour whiche þat þey receyuen  
 May make hem noþing worþi for to be,  
 Than may we clerly knawen *and* conceyuen  
 þat honour hath in propre no beaute  
 As euen worþi to þat dignite.  
 And most to þis ȝe aught to taken hede :  
 The mo folk þat despisen hem perde,  
 þe more abiect þei be wiþ-outen drede.

(377)

7. So þan as dignite may not suffice  
 To maken schrewes worþi to reuerence,  
 Bot raþer makeþ þat men will hem despise,  
 Thowh þat þei done hem honour in presence  
 Yit þei despisen hem in conscience,  
 Theire dignitees so make hem to be knowe,  
 And clerly schewe to folkes þeire offence,  
 Of whom þei be despised as þei owe.

(378)

8. And þis is not vnpunished sikerly,  
 For þei revenge þeym of þeire dignite  
 The whiche þei haue defouled wrecchedly  
 With cursed vice of þaire dishoneste.  
 Bot þat þou might þy-seluen knowe *and* see  
 þat verray honour falleþ in no wise  
 [Be] suche estates þat transitorie be,  
 Now vndirstond what I the scha devise.

PROSA IV, STAN. 6.—2. May make hem noþing] Ne may not make them  
 P: for] om. T D F. 3. we] I N. 5. even] men J. 6. ȝe] theye D:  
 aught] owed F; awth P. 7. mo] most Ch. 8. abiect þei be] they be  
 aiecte T: withouten] hyt is no P. STAN. 7.—1. þan as] þat þe F. 2.  
 worþi] worth P: to] of Dc: reuerence] dignyte and reuerence T. 3. will]  
 wolde N; om. F: will hem] them wyl P. 4. hem] om. N T H: Thogh  
 they honour them in ther presence P. 5. Yit] þat Rl Ba F Ch. 6.  
 dignitees] dignite D: so] om. D: make hem to be] make þeym so F: to] so  
 to T; om. H D. 7. clerly] churles T; cherlis H: to] the N: folkes] folke  
 F. 8. despised] dispesyd T H. STAN. 8.—2. revenge] reuyngre Rl;  
 reuyng T; reven N; revyng C Dc; om. F (*but space left for the word;*  
*rennigh in margin*). 3. defouled] despoylyd T. 4. As wythe ther vyce  
 & ther vnhoneste P. 5. might] maist N. 6. verray] vertu D: falleþ]  
 faylith T. 7. Be H] But *all other MSS.* and P. 8. vndirstond] vndyr-  
 stondest pou T: what] that D: the schal] shalle the D Ch; shall h; the T.

(379)

9. I suppose þat a man of hye renoun,  
 þat ofte haþ had estat<sup>t</sup> of conseilere,  
 Schulde come among<sup>t</sup> [a] straunge nacioun  
 þat noght aknoweþ what þ estate he bere.  
 Trowest þou þat þei hym wolde honouren þere  
 For his estate? þou wilt answere me, ‘nay.’  
 But if honour in suche estates were  
 In kynde a propre thyng<sup>t</sup>, þan wolde I say

(380)

10. Peire kyndely office schulde þei not forlete  
 Thogh þat þei wente into þe worldes ende;  
 As fuyre ne may not cesen of his hete  
 While þat [it] fuyre is, where-þat-euer it wende.  
 But honour is no propir thyng<sup>t</sup> of kynde  
 To dignite bot fals opinioun,  
 As nyce men deviseþ in peire mynde.  
 Wherfore among<sup>t</sup> a straunge nacioun

(381)

11. That noght ne knoweþ of þat dignite  
 He ys honoured as another man.  
 “In strange lond,” þou seist, “þis may wel be.”  
 ‘Boot look þat lond where his estat began,  
 Wher þat it schulde all-wey his honour han,  
 Stondeþ it alwey in his honour þere?  
 Bot of þe provostry what seist þou þan,  
 þat whilom was estate of hye powere?

PROSA IV, STAN. 9.—2. ofte haþ had estat<sup>t</sup>] had y had state F: haþ]  
 hadde Rl Ba J Ch: estat<sup>t</sup>] the state D: of<sup>t</sup> om. h. 3. a] om. L Ba T H R  
 M D h Bb J Ch P. 4. noght a knoweþ] knewe not F; they ne knew P:  
 aknoweþ] ne known N; knownen D: what] what his L Ba C R D Bb J Ch;  
 what hey Dc: he bere] were C; was here D; he were F: þat noght he knew  
 of what astate he ben T H. 5. þat] om. P: hym wolde] woolde hym D  
 P: hym wolde honouren þere] wolde him chere F. 8. þan] om. T F.  
 [l. 4 om. Ch, but put at bottom of page in another hand.] STAN. 10.—1.  
 schulde þei not] þan shulde not they T: þei] om. F: forlete] forye F.  
 2. þat] om. F: þei] he D: þe] om. J Ch. 3. ne] om. Rl R F J Ch: not]  
 om. M h. 4. it] om. L R M D h Bb Dc Ch: fuyre] fuer T; fyry F: þat  
 (2)] om. F: it (2)] he T. 7. nyce] wyse T. 8. a] om. h. STAN. 11.—  
 1. noght ne knoweþ] knewe not F: ne] om. T: knoweþ] knewe M. 2.  
 ys] om. C T; inserted later Bb: ys honoured] honoured is Rl Ba N F Ch:  
 as] om. T H: another] a nofer Ba D. 3. In] In a h: pou] that D: þou  
 seist] om. F: þis] om. D. 4. his] þat his H F P. 5. it] he D F. 6.  
 it] om. T; he F: in] om. T: honour] power P. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.).]

(382)

12. Now is it noþing<sup>a</sup> but an ydell name,  
 And lo þe charge of senatoures rent.  
 Now at þis day it stondeþ in þe same  
 Thogh þat somtyme it was full reuerent.  
 A man somtyme was holden excellent  
 þat had þe charge of vitaile in þe toun ;  
 All vp-so-doun þus is the world<sup>b</sup> i-went,  
 Now it is of no reputacioun.

(383)

13. As we haue seid<sup>c</sup> a litel [here] beforne,  
 A thing<sup>d</sup> þat hath no beaute propirly,  
 Now haþ it honour *and* now it haþ it lorne,  
 After the vse of mennes fantasie.  
 Sith dignite ne may not kyndely  
 Inducen verrey cause of reuerence,  
 Full ofte it is defouled sikerly  
 B[e] þeym þat vsen it with insolence.

(384)

14. And if þei now be fayre *and* now not so  
 As tymes han hire transmutacioun,  
 And if þeir beaute þus hem passeþ fro  
 After þe folkes estimacioun,  
 What is þere, aftire youre opinioun,  
 Of beaute in theym worþi to be soght<sup>e</sup>?  
 Sith þat þei ben of suche condicioun,  
 How schulde þei gifен þat þei hauen noght ?

PROSA IV, STAN. 12.—1. it] om. T H : an ydell] a nydel R. 2. lo] so  
 T H : of] of the D. 3. in þe same] at no fame J. 4. þat] om. F. 5.  
 was] that was T. 7. All] Lo H; Tyl D; Thus P: þus] þis F; om. P:  
 world] worde T; wordle H: i-went] went D. 8. it is] is it D P: of] for F:  
 reputacioun] repetacoun C. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.).] STAN. 13.—1. As]  
 And F: seid] y seyd F: here] om. L R h. 2. þat] whiche D: haþ] om.  
 N. 3. haþ it (1)] it haþ T H D: honour] renoun N: now (2)] om. D h:  
 it (2)] om. N F: it lorne] y lorn Ba J Ch; for lorn P: lorne] forlorn N H.  
 5. Sith] Shuch T; Such H; suiche D: dignite] thyng D: ne] om. M F;  
 not] om. T. 6. verrey] verrily h. 8. Be Ba N H D] Bot L Rl C T R  
 M h Bb (*altered by different hand to By*) F J Ch: with] bi H; om. F.  
 [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.).] STAN. 14.—1. now be fayre] be fayer now T:  
 fayre] fayn N. 2. transmutacioun] trance mutation T. 3. if] of N.  
 5. þere] there of D. 7. þat] om. F. 8. þat] at J: hauen] ne haueth P.  
 [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.).] [l. 4 om. J.]

(385)

## METRUM iiijm

Quamius Se [Tyri]o.

1. Thogh proude Nero wiþ his lecherie  
 All clothed was in purpure tyriene,  
 And with full riche perry ryally,  
 Of lyf he was acorsed *and* vnclene  
 þat he was lothely euery wight to sene,  
 ȝit gaf he setes to þe senatoures.  
 How schuldest þou trowe hem blisfull for to benc,  
 Tho þat of wrechis taken suche honoures ?'

(386)

PROSA [V<sup>a</sup>]

An vero regna.

1. 'What trowest þou yit as for to be a kyng'  
 Or wiþ a kyng' to be famylier,  
 Supposest þou þis were a noble þyng' ?  
 May he þe maken strong' *and* myghty here ?'  
 "What elles," quod I, "scholde I trowe it were ?"  
 'Ye,' quod sche, 'when þat þeire felicite  
 Schal alwey stonden in his welthes clere,  
 And haue alway perdurabilite.

(387)

2. Bot eldar age of tyme þat is went  
 Exsaumple haþ of gret vnstabilesse ;  
 And also [of] þis tyme now present,  
 We seen it proued euery day expresse

METRUM IV, Se Tyrio] Sereno L. STAN. 1.—1. wiþ] which Rl Ba; which  
 þat with T. 2. All clothed was in] Clothes hym wyth P: tyriene] tyriene  
 T; tyriene H D F P; tirydun h. 3. with] om. T H; perry] perrys F.  
 4. acorsed] cursed Ch; vntryfty P. 6. gaf] yf T; if H; yeafe D; he] the  
 D; om. h: setes] cyteis H D: to] of J. 7. hem] hym F: for] om.  
 D F. 8. Tho] om. F: wrecches] werkes h: taken] tooke D. [Stan. om.  
 Dc (fol. om.)]. PROSA V, Prosa V<sup>a</sup>] Prosa iiija L. STAN. 1.—1. What]  
 But what P: yit] nowe D; om. P: as] om. Ba N F J Ch; om. P: for] so  
 T H. 2. Or wiþ a kyng'] Other with kynges P. 3. Supposest] Sup-  
 posed D: Supposest þou þis were] Woldest þou hold hyt for P. 4. May]  
 þau; F; May he] Whiche may D; That may P. 6. þeire] om. T. 7.  
 his] her T H D; om. F. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)]. STAN. 2.—1. age of  
 tyme] tyme of age F: went] yent P. 2. Exsaumple] Examples P. 3. of  
 T H] om. all other MSS. and P: tyme] om. R. 4. proued] preueþ F:  
 euery] all T; om. H; euir R.

þat kynges fallen fro þaire welfulnesse  
 And vnto verray meschief ben þei þrought.  
 O þ clere and noble þing! þat renoun esse,  
 To save it-seluen yt sufficeþ nocht!

(388)

3. For if þat regne or suche regalite,  
 And gouernance of londes longe and wyde  
 May make a man to haue felicite,  
 What if hym lakkeþ oght in any side,  
 Than moste his welthe somewhat slake and slyde  
 And meschief entre for vnsuffisaunce.  
 And þogh it so be, as it may betide,  
 þat kynges hauen in þaire gouernaunce

(389)

4. Myche folk at þaire comaundement,  
 Yit schal we fynde many a nacioun  
 þat been to kynges nocht obedient;  
 Thei holde þeym at no reputacioun.  
 Then heere-of suyth þis conclusioun:  
 Where faileþ my[gh]t þat causeþ blisfulnesse,  
 þere is no mene in þis diuisioun,  
 Vnmyght is þere þat causeþ wrecchidnesse.

(390)

5. There is none erþely [k]yng!, þis dar I seie,  
 That is so myghty in his gouernance,  
 Bot mo þere bene þat wil hym not obeie  
 Than beþ constreynd at his ordynance.  
 In þis his power lakkeþ suffisaunce,  
 And if þat boþe his power and his vnmyght!

PROSA V, STAN. 2.—5. welfulnesse] welthfulness N; wilfulness R.  
 6. þe] om. T H: broght] i brought L R T H M h Bb. 7. O N] On I. Ba  
 C R M h Bb P; How Rl T H D F J Ch. 8. yt L R M D h Bb] þat Ba Rl  
 N C T H F J Ch P. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)] STAN. 3.—1. regne]  
 realmes P; or] of H P. 2. londes] londe T. 4. in] on F. 5. somewhat  
 slake and] slake & sumwhat T. 7. it (1)] om. T H: so be] be so F P.  
 [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)] STAN. 4.—1. at] are at D. 4. peym] hym  
 T: no] om. D. 5. suyth] suche Bb; such is Rl Ba F Ch; is R; sweth  
 C; seuyth H; semyht Dc; ensueth P: this] the D. 6. myght] myth L;  
 myȝth H: þat] whiche D. 7. no] none Rl. 8. Vnmyght] Vnneth T.  
 STAN. 5.—1. kyng T H] pyng all other MSS. and P: þis] þat F. 2. his]  
 theire D. 6. if] om. R: boþe] om. T H: his (2)] om. T P.

Were fully counterpaysed in a balaunce,  
His non-power wolde paysen all doun right.

(391)

6. Sith wrecchidnesse comeþ of non-powere,  
As may not be [wiþ]said by no resoun,  
And sith þer is no kyng' þat lyueþ here  
Bot his vnmyght haþ † in proporcione,  
As for to make a iust comparisoun,  
Well myche more þan his power is,  
þan wil þer sewen þis conclusiouñ,  
Lo þat his more part is wrecchidnes.

(392)

7. A kyng [þer] was þat had experience  
Of gret perile and often was in drede.  
He made a man be sette in his presence,  
And made a swerd to hange abouen his hede  
Be a full small vnmyghti sotel threde,  
þat euery man myght vndirstonde and see :  
Lo breke þis threed, þan is þis man but dede.  
So stant alwey a kyng' in ieuparte.

(393)

8. What is þis powere þat may noght remewe  
þe bitter biting' of this besynesse,  
Ne þat [þe] prikkes may he not eschewe  
Of all þis drede and all þis heuynesse ?

**PROSA V, STAN. 5.—7.** Were fully] Shold ben P: a] om. M P: Were justly compressyd in balaunce T H. 8. non-power] owne power T: paysen] passen R: all] om. D: doun] adoune D: wolde paysen all doun right] wold be the mone of wyght P. STAN. 6.—1. Sith] Shuche T H D: non-powere] vnpower P. 2. wiþsaid T D P] genynseid Dc; aȝeyn seid F; said all other MSS.: by] with D: no] om. T. 3. sith] loo P: kyng'! pinge F: lyueþ] lacketh h. 4. in T H P] his in L R M h Bb (in inserted later); his Rl Ba F J Ch; þis Dc; om. N C: in 'proporecioun] vaproporecioun D. 7. þan] þat Rl: sewen] ensuen P. 8. more] om. N. STAN. 7.—1. þer] om. L: þat had] om. T. 2. often] ofte tymes T. 3. be sette] byfore T H: his] om. h. 4. swerd] shrewe D: abouen] ouer T H. 5. full] om. C T M h Dc: small] synal D: sotel] om. F: Fastened by a lytel sotel threde P. 7. þis (1)] þe F: þis (2)] þe F. 8. alwey a kyng'! a kyng alway N R F P: in] om. Rl: ieuparte] partye Ba J; iuparde D; ieparde F. STAN. 8.—1. þis powere] that Bower T; that power H: may noght] noght may P: remewe] remeve D. 2. this] his T. 3. þe P] these T H; his all other MSS.: prikkes]: prikke N h; prick D: he] om. T H F. 4. Of] But H: drede] om. D: all (2)] om. H.

Thise kynges lo wolde ben in sikernesse  
 But sikerly þei can noght come þerto,  
 And euermore þey seke it as þei gesse,  
 And euer þe fer[þer] þey ben allwey þerfro.

(394)

9. Bot þey reioyen myghti to beholde.  
 And wilt þou trowe hym myghti for to be  
 þat may not worche þat he faynest wolde ?  
 Or for to walken with a compayne  
 Of myghti men þat lusty ben to see,  
 And þat his biddyng<sup>i</sup> all a rewme arerith,  
 And ȝit hym-selue stonde in this degre :  
 He dredeþ most þe same þat he fereþ ?

(395)

10. And for he wolde myghti seme *and* strong<sup>i</sup>  
 He moste putte hym-seluen in daungere  
 Lo of his meyne wiche he is among<sup>i</sup>,  
 And of his lyf he stondeþ in a were.  
 Or wiþ a kyng<sup>i</sup> to be famyliere,  
 To what it schal availe kan I not sayn,  
 Sith often it is schewed among vs here  
 þat kynges of here meyne haue be slain.

(396)

11. And often-tymes schewed it is expresse  
 Of some þat vnto kynges haue ben nyhe,  
 þat þise kynges of theire cruelnesse  
 Haue putte hem vnto meschyf<sup>i</sup> sodenlye,

PROSA V, STAN. 8.—5. lo wolde ben] wolde lo ben F ; so wolde lyve T: ben] lyn N ; leue H P: levyn Dc. 6. sikerly] certenly P: can] may R. 7. þei] I N. 8. ferþer D R Dc] fer L; ferre Rl Ba F J Ch; ferer T; farrer H: þey ben] be þe D: all wey] om. D; away P. STAN. 9.—1. reioyen] reioys D. 2. hym] hem D: myghti] om. h. 3. þat] þat he. 4. for to] om. T H: to] om. C: walken] goo D. 6. at] þat L Ba C M R h Bb Dc F Ch P: rewme] reigne T: arerith] he rereth D Dc. 7. ȝit hymselue] himselfe yet F. 8. most] om. P: þe same] to save. STAN. 10.—1. seme] be T; be seyn H. 4. stondep] is F. 6. kan I] I can N T H: I not] no man Rl Ba F J Ch: sayn] hit sayne F. 7. it is] is it Rl R. 8. here] his D: meyne] many H. STAN. 11.—1. often tymes] ofte tyme D: tymes] tyme F: schewed it is] ys thys y-shewed P. 2. vnto] om. T H; with P. 3. þat] And H: of] that T H. 4. putte hem vnto] Haueth them put at P: vnto] T H.

Somtyme of malice stered of envie  
 Be wicked folk þat worse be than fendes.  
 And kynges often stonde sliperlye,  
 And if þey fallen falleþ eke þaire frendes.

(397)

12. For Nero lo þat cursed emperor  
 Made Seneca his owne deth devise,  
 þat was his maister *and* his gouernour.  
 And Antonius in the same wise,  
 Papynian þat hadde hym done seruice,  
 A myghty man þat longe tyme had ben,  
 He made his knyghtes full of cowardise  
 þat wiþ þeire swerdes all þei schulde hym sleen.

(398)

13. And boþe two ȝit wolde þei haue ben glad  
 To haue forlete þeire power vtterlye ;  
 And Seneca loo all þe good he had  
 He wolde haue gefen hit Nero wilfullye,  
 Hym-self exiled euer perpetually,  
 For-sakyng all his occupacioun,  
 And so haue lyued solitarily,  
 Ledyng hys lyf in contemplacioun.

(399)

14. But he þat mynteþ dounward for to go,  
 His awne weight wil drawe hym doun in haste ;  
 And þerfore noþer of hem boþe two  
 Ne myght his purpose hauen at þe laste.

PROSA V, STAN. 11.—5. of malice stered of] styred by malice and P:  
 stered of] stored with N; storid or H: of (2) or of T. 6. Be (1)] Of  
 P: folk] om. Dc. 7. often] ofte tyme Rl F Ch: sliperlye] sharplye F.  
 8. pey] om. Ch: falleþ eke] eke sooo doothe D: eke] also h; eek al Dc.  
 STAN. 12.—1. For] Loo P. 2. Seneca] Senyca D: owne] vone H: deth]  
 om. T H: devise] to deuise J. 4. Antonius] Antonious H; Antonius  
 h: in] on T H F. 5. Papynian] pampinian F: hadde hym] hym hadde  
 h: hadde] maade D: hym done] done hym Rl Ba N H J. 6. tyme]  
 om. T; ben] i ben Dc: And a ful mighty man had longe ben P. 7.  
 He made his knyghtes] His knyghtes he made T: cowardise] cowardnesse T.  
 8. swerdes] swerde N; om. F. STAN. 13.—1. two] tho R: þei] om. H.  
 2. Seneca] Senecka T: he] pat he D. 4. gefen] om. h; ynd H; gofen M:  
 Nero] to Nero Rl Ba F J Ch. 5. exiled] excused D: perpetually] per-  
 petuall H. 7. lyued] y lyued H F. STAN. 14.—1. mynteþ] mynted  
 Rl Ba F J Ch; meneth D; maynteneth N; purposeth T H: dounward]  
 dounwardes h: for] om. T. 2. weight] om. N: wil] om. T; wolde F:  
 drawe] draweth N. 3. noþer] om. F: hem] hym R. 4. þe] om. Ch P.

This power þan, þat euery man so faste  
 Desireþ þus, why is it wolde I see,  
 Sith he þat hath it is þere-of agaste,  
 Who so will forlete it may noght siker be,

(400)

15. And when þou woldest it vtterly forsake,  
 Lo at þi will þou myght it not forgone?  
 And frendes wiche þat fortune doth þe make  
 And vertu noȝht, what profit þ may þei done?  
 When lusty fortune forth is fro þe gone,  
 Than alle hire frendes with hire gooth in-fere.  
 A more parelous meschief is þere none  
 Than is þi foo with þe famuliere.

(401)

METRUM V<sup>m</sup>

Qui se uolet esse potentem.

1. Who so þat wilneth myghti for to bene  
 And of his foes to haue þe victorye,  
 His corage first þat is so fiers *and* keene  
 Hym moste repressen well *and* myghtilye,  
 So þat þe foule luste of lecherrye  
 May haue non manere maysterie in hys mynde.  
 For þogh þou be so hauteyn þ *and* so hye  
 þat men þe dreden in þe londe of Ynde,

(402)

2. And eke þe yle þat ferrest is of all  
 Out in þe west þat Tyle cleped is,

PROSA V, STAN. 14.—5. This] *om.* N. 6. why] what H: is it] it is D F: it] *om.* N. 7. he þat hath] theye that haue D: is] be D: is þere of] þer of is F: þere of] *om.* N. 8. siker be] sikerly J: siker] socour T H. STAN. 15.—1. vtterly] wilfully N C T H Dc; verrily h; willingly P. 2. myght] maist N P. 3. that] *om.* T: doth] *om.* D: þe] *om.* T H. 4. profit] profight L R; profect H: may] myght Rl Ba F Ch. 5. forth is] is forth Ba J Ch: ffor ffortune at laste wil froo the goone D. 6. in fere] y fere N. 8. þi] the T: with þe] withe N. METRUM V, STAN. 1.—1. Who so] He F: þat] *om.* T P: wilneth] desireth P. 3. His corage first] Fyrst his corage P: so] *om.* N D: fiers] free T J. 4. Hym] He H D: Hym moste] He mutten T: moste] *om.* M. 5. of] of his J. 6. manere] *om.* D F: maysterie] mysterie R Bb (*but altered to maysterie by diff. hand*): hys] thy T. 7. hauteyn Rl Ba F J Ch] hawten M; haunteyn L R Bb; haunte h; hawte P: ffor though þat þou be neuere so hy N. 8. þedreden] dreden þee M: Inde] Ind C. STAN. 2.—1. eke] also h: yle] tylle T; isle D: ferrest] fairest D. 2. Tyle] Ile T H; yle F; tile J Ch.

Be to þe sugget as þi bonde þrall,  
 Yit if thi foule derke besynesse  
 Wip sore compleyntes of þi wrecchidnesse  
 Thus in þeire bondes haþ þe holden fast  
 þat þow ne myghte hem voyden ne represse,  
 I seie it is no power þat þou hast.

(403)

PROSA vj<sup>a</sup>

Gloria vero quam fallax.

1. Bot hey renoun, how full of vanytee,  
 How fals it is *and* often deceyuabe !  
 As a triadien in his ditee  
 Noght causeles þus cryeth in a fable :  
 “Ow renoun,” he seith, “ fals *and* variable  
 To many a thowsand<sup>l</sup> of thyn omageres,  
 In noþing<sup>i</sup> art þou good ne comendable  
 Bot as a wynd þat swelleþ in þeire eres !”

(404)

2. For many one be fals opiniouen  
 Of nyce folk haue had an huge name,  
 But certanly a foule confusioun  
 It is so falsly for to haue a fame,  
 For nedes-cost þei moste hem-seluen schame  
 When þat þey ben commended wrongfully.  
 And þogh þey haue deserued yit þe same,  
 What schal a wys man wynne hym-self þerby

METRUM V, STAN. 2.—3. Be] Butt T: to þe sugget] subiecte toothe D:  
 bonde] londe T H; bonde and F. 6. peire] youre D: haþ þe holden]  
 holdeþ the P: þe] yow M; om. D: þe holden] holde the T H. 7.  
 myghte] maist N: ne (2)] and T. PROSA VI, STAN. 1.—1. Bot] Not  
 De: hey] thy N; how T H. 2. fals] foule P: often] ofte tymes T; om.  
 F. 3. triadien] tragyen D; traladie J: ditee] deite D. 4. a] his F.  
 5. Ow] O N; Thowe D: he seith] saith he T H P: fals] howe fals D.  
 7. ne] and N Dc; nor D: In noþhyng elles art þou comendable P. 8  
 Bot] om. T: swelleþ] shemyth T H; eres] yeres F. STAN. 2.—2. had]  
 made h; y had F: huge] hugy P. 4. for] om. H M F. 5. For nedise  
 coste hem selfe fame and shame T: For nedes retorno to them moste shame P.  
 6. commended] commaundyd H: wrongfully] wrongwysly Rl Ba N Bb Dc  
 J Ch; wrongesly F. 7. pey] ȝe Rl Ba F J Ch: haue] om. Rl Ba F J Ch.  
 8. wynne hym-self] furdred be P.

(405)

3. Pat me[t]eþ noȝt [þ]e mesure of his mede  
 Be veyn rumour of folkes audience,  
 Bot putteth all þe meryt of his dede  
 In verrey vertu of his conscience ?  
 And if þou holde it for an excellencie  
 Thy noble renoun for to ben extended,  
 Than will it sewen evene of consequence  
 Pat þou were foule but-if þou were commended.

(406)

4. Bot as I seid a litel here beforne,  
 þ[er] nedys mot be many a nacioun  
 To wiche a mannis name may not be borne,  
 þe wiche as in thyn estimacioun  
 A man of worschip ys and hye renoun.  
 Lo þan as for þe moste quantite  
 Of all þis litell worldly regiou[n]  
 Lo vnrenommed moste hym nedes be.

(407)

5. I hald it noȝt full myche expedient  
 Of comyn poepull to be comendable  
 Pat han no resoun in theire iugement,  
 For it is flittyng and noȝt perdurable,

PROSA VI, STAN. 3.—1. meteþ N C THP] medeth Rl Ba L R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch : þe N C T H P] be Rl Ba L R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch. 3. all] om. N: his] hyr P. 4. his] om. M; ther P. 5. it] om. D: an] any other Rl Ba F J Ch : a T. 7. euene of] of euen Ba F Ch : of myn J: of] and D: of consequence] in conscience N. 8. if] om. F: were (2)] om. h: commended] amended N. [ll. 7, 8 om. T.] STAN. 4.—1. beforne] too forn D. 2. þer] pat T H L R M D h P: Of þinges pat may not be forlorn Rl Ba J Ch : þer beþ ful mony by estymacyoun F: þe which as in thyn estimacioun Dc : In thyss worlde there ys many a nacioun Bb (*inserted in margin by different hand*). 3. þe wiche as in thyn estimacioun Rl Ba J Ch : To whom a mannes fame is as y loren F; That al þing may not be forlorne Dc : *Line inserted later in margin by different hand* Bb. 4. as] om. D: A man of worschip hath an hye renoun Rl Ba Dc J Ch. 5. and] a D; in a h: hye] of P: Lo þan as for þe moste quantite Rl Ba J Ch : His worship & his renoun F. 6. þe] om. F: Of all þis litell worldely regiou[n] Rl Ba J Ch. 7. litell] om. F: regiou[n] religiou[n] F: þat wyll not don no manere of guerdon Rl Ba J Ch. 8. Lo] Who T H : hym] he T H Dc; they Bb ; He must nedes vnrenouned be P. [ll. 2, 3 om. C N. *In N another scribe tentatively adds in margin:* (1. 2) So smart it is so lightly wole it fail; (1. 3) And fallen doun right as a somer flour N. (1. 5 om. Dc).] STAN. 5.—1. hald] shall M. 3. theire] þe F: Of hem nowe loved nowe he shall be shent D. 4. flittyng T: perdurable] perdurabyllyte Dc : The voice of theym is euermore vnstable D.

For why I holde it be noght remembrable,  
 But for to speke now of gentilnesse,  
 A man þat haþ his wittes resonable  
 Lo may beholde how veyn a þing it esse

(408)

## 6. For if it be referred to renoun

All foreyn þing<sup>t</sup> þan is it vtterly,  
 For noblesse is a comendacioun  
 þat comyth be meryt [of] þyn auncetrye.  
 And if þat praysing<sup>t</sup> is the cause why  
 þat gentil folkes ben renomed so,  
 Then þo that þus ben praysed worþily,  
 They moste ben only gentil *and* no mo.

(409)

## 7. Wherfore I seye, but thi desert it make

þat þou be gentil be þyne honeste,  
 No foreyn gentillesse, I vndirtake,  
 A gentil man ne may noght maken þe.  
 If any good in gentilnesse be,  
 It is þat nature gentil men enclyneþ  
 As fro þe vertues and þe honeste  
 Of þaire auncetres þat þei noght forleyneth.

(410)

METRUM vj<sup>m</sup>

Omne hominum genus.

1. For all mankynde bothe greet *and* small  
 A lyke begynnynge han euerychone,  
 And one eke is þe fader of hem all,  
 Which alle thyng<sup>t</sup> gouernynge is allone ;

PROSA VI, STAN. 5.—5. be] *om.* T h : remembrable] comendabyll T H :  
 Now semeth it trouthe now is it deceyuabile D. 6. for to speke now]  
 now for to speke T. 7. haþ his wittes] wit haþ P. 8. may] man F:  
 beholde] he holde N. STAN. 6.—2. all] a T H: it] *om.* Dc. 3.  
 noblesse] nobilnesse T P: is] *om.* T. 4. of Rl Ba N] as L R C M D Bb h  
 F J Ch P; is T H Dc: þyn] his P: auncetrye] awnstreriyt T; avnscetrie H.  
 5. þat] *om.* h. 6. folkes] folke J. 7. þus] *om.* F: þus ben] be thus T:  
 worþily] vtterly Dc. 8. only] *om.* T H. STAN. 7.—1. Wherfore  
 Therfore h: thi] her N; yf T; the M. 2. be (2)] of h J. 3. I] *om.*  
 T H. 4. man] *om.* h: ne] *om.* H R Dc F J Ch. 6. gentil] þat gentil  
 T. 7. fro] for H J: vertues] vertuous F: þe (2)] *om.* D: honeste] honestite  
 C. 8. auncetres] kynrede P. METRUM VI, STAN. 1.—1. bothe] *om.* T.  
 2. A] O D. 3. eke is þe fader] is the fadyr eke T: eke] also : hem] *om.*  
 Ch. 4. gouernynge] gouerneth T H : is] *om.* D; he H : allone] alle one Ch.

Abouen hym lo fadir is þere none.  
 He yeuth þe sonne bemes to be clere,  
 And brighte hornes gifeþ he þe mone ;  
 Vnto ȝow men he gifeþ erþe here,

(411)

2. And as hym lust all þinges he disposeth.

Vnto þe heuene he ȝeveth sterres bright,  
 And soules here wiþ membres he encloseþ  
 þat doun ben sent out of þat souereyn light.  
 Wherfore I seye þat euery mortal wight  
 Is first engendred of a noble kynde ;  
 Boþe riche and pore, lo seruant, kyng<sup>i</sup> and knyght  
 Oon heritage schal hauen at þaire ende.

(412)

3. Wherfore of þem so faste avaunten ȝe

And so reioyes of ȝoure auncetrie,  
 Sith youre begynnyng, if ȝe couthen se,  
 Youre alther makere wiche is god an hye,  
 Fro hym lo ye proceden principallye,  
 Whos gentilnesse þer may no wight forlyne  
 But if he norische vices wickedlye,  
 And fro his kyndly birthe þat he declyne.

(413)

## PROSA vija

Quid autem de corporibus voluptatibus.

1. What schal I seyn of bodily delice

Whos lustes ben full wonder anguyschouse ?  
 The plente of hem is of litell price,  
 All full of repentaunce and venemouse ;

METRUM VI, STAN. 1.—5. hym om. Dc. 6. He yeuth to the by  
 sonny bemys clere D. 7. he] to F H. 8. Vnto ȝow] And vnto P : he  
 gifeþ erþe] in þe erthe T : erþe] ayer D. STAN. 2.—1. all þinges he] he all  
 thing T : þinges] thyngē D F. 2. þe] om. T. 3. here] om. T ; þer J :  
 encloseþ] closeth Ch. 4. sent] set Dc; sette J : out] om. P. 6. first] fire N : engendred] engenderest Ch : noble] mortal T. 7. pore] pouere  
 N h : lo] om. T Dc P. 8. schal hauen] shall they haue h. STAN. 3.—  
 1. Wherfore of þem L h] Wheroft pen Rl Ba N C T H R D Bb Dc F J Ch P.  
 2. of] ȝow of N. 3. if] and R ; is if h : couthen] koude N. 4. You<sup>e</sup>  
 alther] Is your alder F : alther] aller C P : is] om. H : an hye] only T H.  
 5. Fro] For H : lo] om. D : ye] is H ; pe R : For he is lo procedent pryncipally  
 T. 7. if] om. T H : vices] vice h. 8. pat] than T ; om. F. PROSA VII.  
 STAN. 1.—1. delice] deligght D. 2. lustes] desyrous T ; desiris ; desyres  
 P : full wonder] wonderfull Rl Ba Ch : full] om. T H F. 3. litell] full litell  
 Rl Ba T H D J : price] worth T. 4. All] As H : venemouse] vemouse Ch.

And suche wrecchis þat ben surfetouse  
 Into what siknesse *and* disese it ledeþ !  
 Of alle harmes þ[ei] ben fructuouse,  
 As myche meschief in þi body bredeth !

(414)

2. Who so wil remembren of his wrecchidnesse,  
 Of fleschly lust he schal hym-seluen see  
 þat sor[o]wfull alway þe issue is  
 Of all þaire foul voluptuosite.  
 If lust schulde make ȝow blisful for to be,  
 No skille kan I not see ne cause why  
 þat bestes schulde noght been as good as ye,  
 þe wiche entenden euer besily

(415)

3. Theire flesche wiþ lustes for to fede all-wey.  
 This may not be þe besynesse of man,  
 But þis delyt is honest dar I say,  
 A wyf *and* children lawfully to han.  
 It haþ be seyn, vnkyndely noght-for-þan,  
 Where þat þey oghte ben þe comfortoures,  
 I not how many sith þe world began  
 þat han þaire children founde tormentoures.

(416)

4. How bityng *and* how scharp a þing it is  
 With wyf *and* children ofte for to melle !  
 Thi-self þat hast þe sothe assayed or this,  
 It nedeth noght as now the for to telle.

PROSA VII, STAN. 1.—5. þat] as P: surfetouse] surfetours J. 6. what] om. P: disese] disease h: it] they P. 7. pei Rl T H P] pat other MSS.: fructuouse] furtuose J. 8. As] And Rl Ba N T: þi] þe D; ther P. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)]. STAN. 2.—1. of] om. Rl F J. 2. lust] lustys D. 3. sorowfull] sorwfull L R; sorweful N; sorofull C: alway] of hem alweye D: issue] y shewed Rl Ba J Ch. 5. blisful] blyve T: for] om. F. 6. skille] sleke T; slik D: not] om. N F: see] om. F: I ne can not see no maner cause why P. 7. noght] om. F. 8. euer] alway P. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)]. STAN. 3.—1. flesche] flesches R: lustes] lust R: for] om. T H F. 3. delyt is] delites D: dar I] I dare J. 5. It haþ be seyn ] þau; somme be F: for þan] for þi J. 6. þat] om. D: ben] to ben N D P: þe] theire D. 7. not] ne wote F: sith] sen D. 8. peire] om. D: tormentoures] tormentours. [l. 7 om. T. Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)]. STAN. 4.—1. How] Nowe D: how scharp a þing] a thyng how sharpe h: a þing] om. T. 2. for] om. F. 3. or] of N. 4. now] you F: the] om. F.

But þis sentence appreue I wonder welle  
 Of Euripes, for þus lo writeþ he :  
 " þe man þat hath [of] issue noght a dele  
 Be infortune a blisful man is he."

(417)

METRUM vijm

Habet hec voluptas.

1. Lo [euery] lust hapþ þis wiþouten drede,  
 Hit prekkeþ tho þat vsehit comunly.  
 Right as a bee wil first his hony schede  
 But after þat he stingeþ bitterly ;  
 He flyeth his way, it akeþ feruently.  
 So done þese lustes where þat þey smyteth ;  
 They plesen first þe hertes lustily,  
 But after þat full bitterly thei byteth.

(418)

PROSA viij<sup>a</sup>

Nulli igitur dubium.

1. Than may it noght be douted of no wight  
 Bot þise ben wayes ledyng all amys,  
 And mowe noght bringen as þey haue behight  
 Vnto þe lyf<sup>t</sup> of verray blisfulnes.  
 Bot in how myche care *and* wrecchidnes  
 Thise wrong-wise wayes doth ȝow men imlyen,  
 In sothe I schall þe tellen as it is,  
 And schortly for to schewe I schal me hyen.

(419)

2. If thow wilt gader gold *and* riche be,  
 f fro þeym þat han it þow mooste it take away.

PROSA VII, STAN. 4.—5. wonder] *om.* T.      6. Euripes] Eurippes T :  
 for] *om.* T: þus lo] þis lo F; loo thus D.      7. issue] ofte yshewed  
 Rl Ba F J Ch; of issue N D: noght] nere P. [Stan. *om.* Dc (*fol. om.*).]  
 METRUM VII, STAN. 1.—1. euery T H P] oper all other MSS.: hapþ þis]  
 hast þus Ch.      3. wil first] first wol D.      6. þey] þe H.      7. hertes]  
 hert D: They plesyn the fyrste lustely T H.      8. after þat] afterwarde  
 h: full] *om.* T: bitterly thei] they biteth T. [Stan. *om.* Dc (*fol. om.*).]  
 PROSA VIII, STAN. 1.—1. noght] *om.* T H F.      2. ben] *om.* H.      3.  
 mowe] may T P: as þey haue] þat þey F; þat þey haue Ch.      5. in how]  
 into T H; in so h.      6. wrongwise] wrongfull N; wronge T H P: ȝow] ȝe  
 T: men] me N; euer h.      7. þe] *om.* T; hit H.      8. schal] will T:  
 hyen] plye P. [Stan. *om.* Dc (*fol. om.*).]      STAN. 2.—1. wilt] wolde F:  
 riche be] richesse T H.      2. þeym] þeyn R; þen Ch: it (1)] *om.* P: it  
 take] take it T D.

If þou wilt haue estate of dignite,  
 þerfore to þeym þat gyveþ it most þou pray.  
 And þou þat woldest preferred ben alway  
 Before all othere or even wiþ þe beste,  
 Wiþ lowly askyng most þou nede obeye,  
 And [so] thyn owne person dishoneste.

(420)

3. Bot powere woldest þou haue *and gouernaunce*,  
 In gret parell thou schalt be vndercaste  
 Of thy suggettes whiche þat [mowe] perchaunce  
 The mortheren or destroyen atte laste.  
 Or after glorie þow desirdest faste?  
 Thow schalt be set in many a scharp distresse,  
 And for a wynde þat sone away schal waste,  
 Thow schalt forleten all þi sykernessee.

(421)

4. If þou wilt haue þi lust *and thy likynge*,  
 Who is þat will not þan despice the  
 As for þe seruant of so freel a þyng!  
 As is þi flesche, so full of vanyte?  
 Who so will preferren bodely bounte  
 Abouen his inwit and his awne resoun,  
 He is a fole in sothe, as semeth me,  
 And litell worth is his possessiouen.

(422)

5. Myght þou in gretnesse passe an olyphaunt,  
 Or elles a bole sourmonten in thy myght?  
 Or whether þou mightest make thyn avaunt  
 The tygrye for to passen in þi flight?

PROSA VIII, STAN. 2.—3. of] and N M D.      4. most þou] þou must.  
 5. þat] om. F: preferred] om. F: preferred ben] be preferryd T H.      7.  
 askyng] axinge D h: nede] nedes Rl Ba H F J.      8. so T H] to Rl  
 N; om. Ba C M R L D h Bb F J Ch.      [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)] STAN. 3.—2. thow schalt] shalwot N: vndercast] ouercast D.      3. Of]  
 ffor D: mowe N H F] þou L h Bb M C; may T P; now R D; i now Rl Ba  
 J Ch.      4. The mortheren or destroyen] The murder & destroy T; The  
 mordren & destroyen H; murþer or destroy þe F: or] and h: atte] atte þe  
 D.      6. a] om. R.      8. forleten] forlesen P.      [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)] STAN. 4.—1. If] And if T H: þi lust &] om. T H.      2 þan] om. F.  
 3. þe] a H.      4. þi] the T: flesche] body P: so] om. P.      5. preferren]  
 preserue T.      6. inwit] witte N; owne wytte h: awne] om. h J.      7. in]  
 for H: as] as it R.      [ll. 2, 3 om. T. Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.)] STAN. 5.—  
 2. sourmonten] surmounde T.      4. in þi] into N: þi] om. T; his D.

But into heuen casteþ vp youre sight  
 And see how faire, how swift, how long it is,  
 For somewhat merveile þer vpon þou myght,  
 Bot not vpon þis worldly wrecchidnesse.

(423)

6. And not in suche poyntes singulerly  
 þe heuene † is to be had in grete mervaile,  
 Bot it is for to wondren principally  
 As in þe resoun of þe gouernaile.  
 What may youre [schap or beaute] ȝow availe  
 þat may so sone passen in an houre?  
 So smart it is, so lightly wil it fayle,  
 And fallen dounright as a somer floure.

(424)

7. And as doth Aristotiles rehersen,  
 If þat youre eyzen hadde suche a myght,  
 As hath þe lynx þat alle þing may persen  
 Thurgh alle obiectes for to seen aright,  
 And þat þay myght beholden wip þaire sight  
 Wiþynne þe wombe of Al[c]ib[i]ades  
 Whiche þat wiþouten was so faire a wight,  
 Full foule he schulde hire seme neuerþeles.

(425)

8. That þou be fayre ne makeþ not þy nature,  
 Bot þe febilnesse and þe infirmytee  
 Of mennes yen wiche mowe noght endure  
 What þat þou art wiþ-ynne forþ for to see,

PROSA VIII, STAN. 5.—6. how faire how swift] how swyfte how faire  
 D: how long] and large T; how large H P. 8. not] om. D: þis]  
 þe N: worldly] worldes Rl Ba T F J Ch; wordly H. [Stan. om. Dc (fol.  
 om.).] STAN. 6.—1. in] vpon D: singulerly] singulerly F; synglare J;  
 sikerly N; principallye D. 2. is H F P] it is all other MSS. 3. for  
 om. D P. 4. gouernaile] generall J; gouernance P. 5. schap or  
 beaute T C H P] worschip Rl Ba L R M h Bb F J Ch; shap your beaute N;  
 worschip now D. 6. may so sone] so sone may: so] om. H: an] one Rl  
 Ba. 7. lightly] liȝte F. 8. somer] somers F. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.).]  
 STAN. 7.—1. Aristotiles] Aristotell Rl Ba F J Ch; Arystotle D. 2. If]  
 And ȝif Rl: þat] om. Rl: eyzen] I yen D: If that you then had shuch a  
 sygthe T. 3. hath] om. D F: lynx] lynkes T: þat] which D: persen]  
 perceiuen T. 4. aright] on right T; ryght P. 5. pay] om. N. 6.  
 wombe] wombes T H: Alcibiades] Altibrades Rl Ba N C L R M D h Bb F J  
 Ch; All tibiades T H; Altybyades P. 7. Whiche] Wip R. 8. Full]  
 om. N: he] shee D: hire seme] seme hire F; seme P. [Stan. om. Dc  
 (fol. om.).] STAN. 8.—1. That] Thou Bb: ne] om. T; hit Bb: þy] om. N.  
 2. febilnesse] febelnessos Ch: and] of J Ch: þe (2)] thy T H. 3. yen] eyen  
 N M h; yene Rl Ba J Ch; then T; yyen D: mowe] may T F P. 4. for] om. D.

But preiseth as ȝow likeþ ȝoure beaute,  
And wondreþ on youre goodes bodely.  
Yit knowe þis þat a fevire of dayes thre  
Thi body may dissoluene vtterly.

(426)

9. And of al this I may concluden wel,  
Thise goodes after theire promissioune  
Sith þat þey mowe performen neuere-a-del,  
They ben no goodes of perfeccioun  
Of alle good in congregacioun,  
Ne trewe mennes ben þey nocht to take,  
Of blisfulhede to gifen possessioun  
In sothe, ne no wight blisful þ may þey make.

(427)

METRUM viij<sup>m</sup>

heu quam miseros.

1. Allas what foly wrecchid ignorauunce  
Mysledeþ fooles into vanite,  
Out of þe path of verrey suffisaunce  
Of alle good and alle felicite !  
Who gedereþ gold vpon þe grene tree ?  
Or who will pullen perles of þe vynes ?  
On hulles hye for fisches of þe see  
Men casten nocht þaire nettes ne þaire lynes.

(428)

2. Or who þat lusteth to huntun for þe roo,  
He ne sekeþ not þe forthes tyriene.  
And over this [ȝe witen] wel also  
Where þat þe crykes and þe caues bene

PROSA VIII, STAN. 8.—5. ȝow] hem N ; ye T F ; they Bb. 6. on] in T H ; vppon h. 7. þis] pou N ; ye thys T. 8. Thi body] Thee freel boody D. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.).] STAN. 9.—2. promissioune] permixsyon H. 3. mowe] may Rl N H F P. 5. good] godes F P. 6. mennes ben] men ne be N : to] to be F. 8. In sothe ne no] Ne yn sothe ne H : ne] nor D : blisful] blisfulhede L R Bb M h : blisful may þey] may þey blisfull N : may] mowe D. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.).] METRUM VIII, STAN. 1.—1. foly] foles Rl N. 2. fooles into vanite] foule oute of way T ; foles foule oute of the way H. 3. verrey] vertu D : suffisaunce] suffraunce E. 4. and all] om. F. 5. gedereþ golde] golde gedereþ F: vpon] on T. 6. Or who will] Or who so willeþ T : perles] om. M ; pereilles h : þe] om. T. 7. hulles hye] hygh hilles T ; hull hilie H. 8. nettes] hokes T ; net D: ne] nor D. [Stan. om. Dc (fol. om.).] STAN. 2.—1. Or who þat lusteth Who so liste F : þat] so T D: to] om. D. 2. ne] om. T H D : þe forthes] for the D ; þe forthe J ; þe fordes P : tyriene] tirene J ; tyriene Rl ; tyryen H D P ; tyriene C ; tyren T ; torenne or tyreyne h. 3. ȝe witen] om. L Bb. 4. caues] cautis D.

Vnder þe floode wiche ȝe may not sene ;  
 And where ȝe schall þe white perle aspien ;  
 And where also þe schelle fisches bene,  
 þe blood of whom dooþ purpure colour dyen.

(429)

3. Ye knowen well also þe strondes alle  
 Of tendre fische or scharp, it is no fayle,  
 Of halue a foote þat men eschinus calle,  
 þat letten so þe schippes for to saile.  
 Bot youre vnewit a cause is for to wayle,  
 Ye suffren so yow-seluen to be blynde,  
 And pilke good þat schuld yow most avayle  
 Ye seken so *and* kun it neuer fynde.

(430)

4. Ye fooles plungen doun ȝoure hertes even  
 Into þis muddy grounde, *and* sothe to saye,  
 þe souereyn good þat hier is þan heuen  
 Ye seken þere. What schal I for ȝow praye  
 Richesse *and* honour wiche ȝe seke all-waye,  
 Till þat þis false good you haue oppressed,  
 And þan it caste out of youre mynde awaye,  
 To verrey goode þat ȝe may be redressed ?

(431)

PROSA ix<sup>a</sup>

## Hactenus Mendacis.

1. As vnto þis I suppose it suffise  
 To haue schewed þe forme of fals felicite,

METRUM VIII, STAN. 2.—5. floode] flosis H: wiche] wych þat C; where D; the wyche P: may not] not may Ch. 6. perle] om. D; pereill h: white perle] wight perell H. 7. þe] þat þe F. [Stan. om. Dc (*sol. om.*).] STAN. 3.—1. well] om. D: alle] falle. 2. or] and T. 3. eschinus] eschinnis N; eschynes T; eschynys H; eschymus D; eschinis F. 5. is for] haue I N C H P; hath T; yowe for D. 6. to] so to T. 7. pilke] þat P: yow] om. Rl Ba F J. 8. so] it so D: kun] gan H: kun it neuer] canneth not hyt P; it] om. P. STAN. 4.—1. Ye foole] Ye fole; ye T R: doun] om. F. 2. þis] þe T: muddy] myddel F: and] the T. 4. what] where P. 5. wiche ȝe seke] that ye desyre P: wiche] whiche þat D: seke] selde h. 6. þis] þe D: false] falser h: you haue] haue you T F. 7. þan] om. H: it caste] caste it T; it is caste D: awaye] alway P. 8. ȝe] om. F. PROSA IX, STAN. 1.—1. it] þat it Dc. 2. To haue schewed] Too shewe D: schewed] y shewed F.

Whiche þif þou w[i]ll[t] behalde and well avise,  
 I trowe þou myght þe verray sothe see.  
 Fro hennes forþ now most my processe be  
 To schewe þe forme of verray blisfulnesse.'  
 "In soth," quod I, "þat full clere it is to me  
 þat ȝe haue schewed of worldly wrecchidnesse.

(432)

2. I see þat richesse yefeth no suffisaunce,  
 Ne hyhe estate ne worldly reuerence,  
 And þogh þat worldly fame a man avaunce,  
 Of gentilesse it ȝeuþ none evidence.  
 Ne riall powere wiþ his excellencie  
 Ne may not gyue ne causen verrey myght.  
 Ne fleschely lust with all oure diligence  
 Verray gladnesse causeth not be right."

(433)

3. 'Hast þou,' quod sche, 'aspyed þe cause why  
 þat all thise þinges stonde in þis manere ?'  
 "Yes þat I [haue] aspyed þat wel," quod I,  
 "Lo be a litel creves, as it were,  
 Bot more apertly of ȝow wolde I lere  
 If þat ȝe wolde it openly declare."  
 Sche seide, 'ȝis, þat wil I wiþ good chere ;  
 I wil not for a litel labour spare.

(434)

4. That þing! þat is so symple in his kynde,  
 þat may not be devided propirly,  
 þe folisch errour lo of mannys mynde  
 Thus han devided in þaire fantasy,

PROSA IX, STAN. 1.—3. wylt] well L R Bb M D : wyll Rl Ba J Ch ; wolt N ; woll Ch ; om. T H ; wolte F: and] and þou R. 4. þou] ye D : myght] maist N: see] y se N C F. 6. verray] om. T. 7. ful Rl Ba H F J Ch P] for ful N C T M D L R H Dc Bb. 8. haue] om. F. STAN. 2.—2. hyhe] bi F: ne (2)] ne by F: worldly] worthy C Dc P; wordly T H. 3. þat] om. F: worldly] wordly T H Dc P; a] þat D; om. h; inserted later R. 4. none] no Ch. 6. ne causen] oo cause of D: myght] right h. 7. oure] youre F. 8. causeth] ne causeth N. [l. 7 om. Dc (*space for it in MS.*.)] STAN. 3.—1. aspyed] spyeid P: why] why wele quod I T. 2. stonde] om. H. 3. Yes] ȝe N: I haue aspyed H D] I aspyed it L R h Bb M Rl Ba J; aspyed I it Ch; I haue aspied it Dc C; I aspyed F; haue I aspyed it N: Ye forsooth I haue a spyeid quod I P. 4. a] om. N. 5. apertly] apiertly M. 6. If] ȝit Ch: ȝe] I T: it] om. T M D. 7. ȝis] this T. [l. 2, 3 om. T.] STAN. 4.—1. þat] whiche D. 2. devided] voyded T H. 3. lo of mannys] of a manne D; lo of youre F. 4. Thus han] This haue I D: han devided] dyuydeth P: devided] om. H: paire] his D: This ben in her ffantaȝye T.

And þing þat schulde ben oo good perfityl  
 Transportyng' so to fals *and* inperfyt.  
 In þis þat þey devided it wrongfully,  
 It noyeth hem *and* doop hem no profyt.

(435)

5. What wilt þou seyn of hym þat wanteþ myght?  
 Wolt þou suppose þat he noght nedys is?  
 I seyde, "Nay." Quod sche, 'þou demest right.  
 Who so haþ in any part vnmyghtynesse,  
 Of foreyn help hym nedeaþ þan in þis.'  
 "Right so," quod I. 'Than sueth it,' quod sche,  
 'þat power lo, *and* suffisaunce, i-wys,  
 Most o thyng *and* þe same in kynde be.'

(436)

6. "Right so," quod I, "hit semeþ in my mynde."  
 'This þing,' quod sche, 'þat we han þus devised,  
 þat suffischant *and* myghti is of kynde,  
 Wilt þou suppose it schulde be despised?  
 Or elles þou art oþer-wise avised,  
 And demest it full worthi reuerence?  
 "Youre resoun," seide I, "is so wel assised,  
 I doute it no-þing in my conscience."

(437)

7. 'Let vs,' sche seyde, 'assemblen thise anone,  
 Lo pouer, reuerence *and* suffisaunce,  
 So þat þise alle verrailly be one.'  
 "Do we," quod I, "as is to your plesaunce,

PROSA IX, STAN. 4.—5. þat] om. T: oo] a T H; one P. 6. Transportyng] Transposyne D F; and] om. T. 7. þat] om. R: þey] om. T: devided] devided Rl Ba Ch; demyd T: devided it] ded it in D: wrongfully] wrongwysly Rl C Bb J Ch. 8. hem (1)] om. Rl. Ba F Ch. STAN. 5.—1. wilt þou seyn of hym] saiest thou of theyme T: þou] om. H: myght] wyt Dc. 2. he] om. J Ch. 3. seyde] say Rl Ba F J. 4. part] party H. 5. hym nedeaþ þan] that nedeth hem T. 6. sueth] sitth J: it] om. D F. 8. and] in D: Must only one thyng in nature & kend be P. STAN. 6.—1. I] she T. 2. þyng] om. D: quod sche] om. F: þus] þis F. 4. it] that it T H. 6. it] in D: worthi] worthy of Ch (of inserted later). 7. is so wel assised] may not be refused P: assised] avisyd T; assided J. 8. doute] ne dout P. STAN. 7.—1. sche seyde] quod she P. 2. reuerence] reason T. 3. pise alle verrailly be] all thees be verrily D; þise verrily ben in F: be] by h. 4. Do we] Now T; No H; So do we F: we] om. P: as is to] right at P.

For in þis other þ may be no distaunce  
 If þat we scholde of trowþe ben aknowe."  
 'Right so,' quod sche, 'þere is no variaunce.  
 Than of this þing what wilt þou deme *and* trowe?

(438)

8. This þing þat myghty is *and* reuerent,  
 And suffiseant, all oo þing *and* þe same,  
 What seist þou, myght it be conuenient  
 þat þis þing schulde dishonest be of fame,  
 Or elles ben a noble þing of name  
 And hyhe in clernesse and celebrite?  
 For if it in this on þing schulde be lame  
 Hit were noght suffisaunt, how semeþ þe?

(439)

9. Consider well [now] if it may be so,  
 þat suche a þing þat no-þing nedys is,  
 þat myghti ys, *and* worschipfull also  
 Right as beforne is graunted here expresse;  
 Now mighte it faile in fame of worþinesse  
 þe wiche it may not of it-selfe purchase,  
 So þat it schulde defouled be in this,  
 And in h[it]-self more [a]biect ben and base?'

(440)

10. "In sothe," quod I, "Y may it noght wiþ-seyn,  
 But þat it haþ renoun *and* excellencye."  
 'Than is it,' quod sche, 'consequent *and* pleyn  
 þat noble[n]esse haþ no difference  
 fro suffisaunce, pouer *and* reuerence  
 Wiche þat we han assembled into one.'

PROSA IX, STAN. 7.—5. other may T H] other quod I may *all other* MSS.; ther may P: be no] not T H. 6. of] our J: aknowe] knowe R: Yef of the growth we shulde be aknowe T. 8. deme] don RI Ba Dc F J Ch: and] or RI Ba D F Ch P; I T. STAN. 8.—2. And sufficiaunte of all thinges in þe same T. 4. schulde dishonest be] dishonest shulde be T: dishonest] vn honest P: of] on J. 5. Or] Other P: elles] ell H: ben] bye D. 6. in] and RI Ba J; of F: and] and of F: celebrite] celibryght T. STAN. 9.—1. now P] om. *all* MSS. 2. þat (2)] om. N T. 4. beforne] by fortune T. 5. faile] falle F: of] and T H. 6. it (1)] he P: of] in RI Ba N C De F; om. R: it (2)] hym T D P. 8. hitselv N C T P] hymself *all other* MSS.: abiect T H Dc J P] obiect *all other* MSS.: base] wasse T. STAN. 10.—1. it noght] not it RI Ba J Ch. 2. and] in T H P. 3. and] in R: and pleyn] certeyn P. 4. noblenesse T H P] noblesse *all other* MSS.: haþ no] ne hath P. 6. þat] om. F.

"I grante wel," quod I, "youre consequence.  
Diuersite betwene hem is þere none."

(441)

11. 'This [þ]yng,' quod sche, 'þat nedeþ noght a deel  
Of foreyn help, *and* may it well suffice  
Of propre myght, *and* is renouned wel  
And fully worshipful in *every* wise,  
Now schulde noght þis be gladsome for to vse ?'  
Quod I, "fro when it schulde haue heuynesse  
I can noght þenke ne in myn herte devise."  
'Than it is,' quod sche, 'full of gladsumnesse.

(442)

12. If þise þinges stonden sad *and* trewe  
þat we haue seide, we may it noght denye,  
Bot lo be verry resoun wil it sewe  
þat þou[gh] þise names sound[e] dyuerslye  
As suffisaunce, renoun *and* honour hye,  
Power *and* gladnesse, as we haue reherseeþ,  
In substaunce ben þey oo thing<sup>g</sup> verrelye  
þe wiche in no wise may not be dyuersed.'

(443)

13. Quod I, "it muste be nedes as ye sayne."  
'That þing,' quod sche, 'þat is so noble þan,  
So simple in his nature *and* so playne,  
Wiche þat þe rude wrecchidnesse of man  
Enforceþ hym a party for to han,  
Lo, of þis þing þat partisoun denyeþ ;

PROSA IX, STAN. 10.—8. hem] *om.* J : is þere] þer is T H. STAN. 11.—  
 1. þyng] kyng L R Bb h M : þat] *om.* D : noght] neuer T D F; nere P.  
 2. it] it not D: well] self N C T H P. 4. fully] ful D F: worshipful]  
 wurshipfully H J : worshipfull fully M. 5. noght þis] *om.* T; theye not  
 D. 6. it schulde] shold it F P: when] whens T H. 7. herte] witt H P.  
 8. it is] is it Rl N C H Dc F: gladsumnesse] gladnes T F. STAN. 12.—  
 1. þise] þe Dc: sad] *om.* T H; faste D. 2. may] mow Dc: it noght]  
 nat hyt T. 3. lo] *om.* P: be] the h: wil it sewe] I wole shewe N :  
 sewe] shew T. 4. þough] þou L Rl Ba C R M h Bb Dc J Ch :  
 sounde h] sound L C T H R M Bb Dc F J; sowne N P; stande D; sowned  
 Rl Ba Ch. 5. and] with T H; *om.* F: hye] an hye h. 6. Power] And  
 power H: and] *om.* F. 8. wise] thyng T H: not] *om.* N T R Dc F:  
 dynuersed] reuersed D. STAN. 13.—3. nature] matier D. 4. þat] *om.*  
 F P: þe] *om.* R: rude] foule P. 5. Enforseþ] Conforteth N; Enforseþ  
 Ch: party] parte D; part P. 6. of] *om.* H : þing] thinges T: partisoun]  
 party some Ch.

And while þat þey no partye fynde can,  
 This noble þing þei sch[en]den and distroyeth ;  
 (444)

14. And of þat þing' þey gete no porcioun,  
 For none it haþ; for þat þing', wite it wele,  
 All hole þey han not in possessiou[n],  
 In sothe, for þey desire it neuer a dele.'  
 " How may þis be," quod I, " this wolde I fele ?"  
 ' Som men,' quod sche, ' trauaille for richesse  
 And perto putte thaire þoght contynuele,  
 To dryue away pouert and nedynesse.

(445)

15. But hye estate he laboure[þ] not to gete ;  
 Full levire he haþ be [vile] in lawe estate,  
 And many a kyndely lust will he forlete  
 As for to saue þe tresour þat he gat.  
 What suffisaunce may be had in þat  
 þat lackeþ myght and ofte tyme is greued,  
 þat in persone despised is algate,  
 And is in fame defouled and repreued ?

(446)

16. And he þat doth þe entent of his labour  
 To hyhe estate, his richesse will he waste ;  
 He wil dispysen lust, and his honour  
 þat lakkeþ power from hym wil he caste ;  
 To hyhe renoun he haþ no manere haste.  
 But now suche one, þ[ou] myght þi-self beholde,  
 Of his purpose he faileþ at þe laste,  
 And soth to seyn, he hath not þat he wolde.

PROSA IX, STAN. 13.—7. þey no partye] the partieȝ T: partieȝ part D F; part P. 8. þei] þat T: schenden] schulden L M C; shelden h. STAN. 14.—1. getel] geue Ch: porcioun] proporcione T H. 2. none it haþ] nowe it happeneth D; it haþ none P: for (2)] om. T; ne H P: wite] we know T; knowe H. 3. not] it not P. 4. In] It is T; Hit H; Hit in F. 5. this (2)] om. H: I] In H. 6. sche] om. h. 8. pouert] pouerte H F. STAN. 15.—1. he] we T H; om. R: laboureþ N C H P F] laboured Rl Ba L R Bb M D h Dc J Ch; labour T. 2. Full] for h: be vile] too be D; to be in wele F: vile T H] will L R M Bb Dc; well Rl Ba N C h J Ch P: He hath wel leuer be wel in lawe estate P. 3. will he forlete] he wyl forsake P. 4. tresour] money P. 6. and ofte tyme is greued] that often is agreued P: ofte tyme] often T. 7. in] in no T: persone] comparison h: is] it D. STAN. 16.—1. he] om. R: þe entent] interipte: þe] om. H. 3. his] high T H; om. h; hey P. 4. wil] om. F. 5. hyhe] þise R. 6. now] om. P: pou] þat L h M Bb: pou myght] myght pou R. 7. þe] om. h. 8. þat] om. D.

(447)

17. And ofte it falleþ þat he is oppressed  
 With nede of þinges of necessite,  
 And ofte he schal wiþ angwische be distressed  
 And noyed with full gret aduersite;  
 And at þe laste, when it will not be  
 To voyden alle þese greuances sore,  
 Lo of his principal purpose faileþ he  
 As more vnyghti þan he was before.

(448)

18. And þus I may the same resoun bringe  
 To lust, to fame, honour and reuerence.  
 Sith so þat eueriche is þe same þing  
 þat other is wiþoute difference,  
 He þat doth labour oþer diligence  
 Som part to haue of thise and alle noght,  
 He lesiþ boþe his labour and expense  
 And failleþ all þe purpose of his þoght.'

(449)

19. "What schal I sey," quod I, "if any wight  
 Desire for to haue hem alle infere?"  
 'I say,' quod sche, 'þat he desireþ right  
 þe sum of blisfulnesse in þat manere.  
 But wi[l]t þou [w]ene þat he may fynde † [it] here  
 In þinges wiche be demonstracioun

PROSA IX, STAN. 17.—1. falleþ] faileþ C. 2. nede] ne N : of (1)] and D: þinges] thyng P. 3. he schal wiþ angwische] with anguische shall be P: be] om. T. 4. and noyed] a noyd H: with full gret] gretly with P: full] om. T. 5. at þe] atte þe D: þe] om. P. 6. To] For to P: voyden] avoyden C T H P: alle] om. P: þese greuances sore] þis grevous fere T H: greuances] greuaunce C F. 7. Lo] om. P: his] þis M. 8. As] And F. STAN. 18.—2. honour] too honoure D: and] and too D. 3. so þat] om. F; þat P: eueriche] I euery T; euery H. 4. difference] reuerence N; any difference T H. 5. labour] his labour P: oþer] or T P. 6. part] party Rl J Ch; om. P: to haue of thise] of this to hafe F P. 7. boþe] om. P: his] om. F: and his P: expense] experience F. 8. þe] his H: And fayleþ clene of that he had thought P. STAN. 19.—2. Desire] Coueyteth P: for] om. R: in fere] yfere Rl N. 3. I say quod sche þat he] He quod she I seye D: sche] I T: desireþ] coueteth P. 4. þe] To T. 5. wilt N C T H P] om. R; wit all other MSS.: wene T H] trowe P; om. h; þen all other MSS.: may] may not F: fynde it N C T H P] fynden all other MSS.

I haue þe schewed þat fals ben of þaire chere,  
And mowe not parforme þeire promyssioun ?'

(450)

20. I seyde than, "forsothe I trowe it noght."  
 'It will,' quod sche, 'full clerly schewen þan  
 þat blisfulnesse schulde not ben soght  
 In none of thise þat we rehersed han,  
 Wiche þat men trowen graunten may and can,  
 Eche as vnto þaire awne propirte,  
 Som oo þing' þat deliteþ euery man  
 Bot yit noght all þat may desired be.'

(451)

21. "This muste I nede graunte þan," quod I,  
 "þere is no þing' þat sother may be told."  
 'Thow hast,' quod sche, 'þe forme and þe cause why  
 Of fals felicite many afold;  
 But turne þy goostly sight now and behold,  
 And sette þy wit now to þat other side ;  
 Of þat I haue þe hight I dar be bold  
 Thow schalt it seen if þat þou wilt abide.'

(452)

22. "Al þis," quod I, "is playne i-now and clere  
 To any man all blynd þogh þat he ware,  
 As ye han schewed to me a litel ere,  
 Enforcyng yow þe causes to declare  
 Of false felicite, and wiche þei are.  
 þe forme also of verray blisfulnesse,

**P**ROSA IX, STAN. 19.—7. of] and N. 8. mowe] may T P: parforme] fullfil C: Youre purposed intencion F (*full line*). [ll. 5-8 in order 8, 6, 5, 7 in L. Scribe noticed mistake and lettered them d, b, a, c. 1. 8 om. Rl Ba Dc J Ch Bb (*but put in margin in other hand, with direction to be inserted after l. 4*). ll. 7, 8 in reverse order M.] STAN. 20.—1. I seyde than for-sothe] Nay quod I in sothe P: than] om. T H: I] om. H. 2. will] waas D; wolde F; most P: full] om. F P: clerly] cherily Ch: schewen] follow T; sewen H; shewed D; ensue P. 3. schulde not ben] ne ought not to be P: soght] boght h. 5. þat] om. R. 6. Eche] Euerych T D P: vnto] to T Dc; awne] om. Dc F: propirte] pertie J. 8. noght] om. R. STAN. 21.—1. ned] nowe D: þan] om. D; tho P. 3. and] and þe L N C R Bb h M De; of P: cause] causes P. 4. many] full many N C H P: a fold Dc. 5. sight] om. h: now] om. D Dc; ofte h. 7. haue] dar D: þe] om. N: þe hight] beheight T: be bold] beholde H R D. 8. it seen] right sone T: þat] om. T F. STAN. 22.—2. any] many Rl F: all] a D: þogh] thoughte D; if P: þat] om. N T D F: he] it D. 3. ye han] he hath D. 4. þe] to Ba J Ch. 5. wiche] which þat T: are] eare T. 6. of] in D.

But-if deceit my wittes mysbeware,  
It is to me ful open *and expresse*:

(453)

23. That ilke þing [þat] makeþ any wight  
Wel famous *and* to lyuen gladsomlye,  
Full suffisaunt in honour *and* in myght.  
And þat ȝe wite *and* knownen verrelye  
That I haue ȝow conseyued plenerlye,  
Sith alle þi[se] most o thing<sup>t</sup> nedes be,  
What one of thise may graunten perfightlye,  
I sey þat it is full felicite."

(454)

24. ‘Ow nory,’ quod sche, ‘a blisful man art þou.  
God holde the longe in this opinioun  
So þat to þise þou woldest adden now.’  
“ And what,” quod I, “ is youre addicioun ? ”  
‘ May blisfulnesse in full possessioun,’  
Quod sche, ‘ be had in mortal þinges here  
þat falsly faileþ, fletyng<sup>t</sup> vp and doun ? ’  
“ That trowe I noght,” quod I, “ in no manere,

(455)

25. For as youre-self haue schewed me here before,  
He þat may ones haue þis blisfulnesse  
þere is noght þanne to be desired more.”  
‘ Lo ! ’ quod sche, ‘ þan sueth here expresse  
þat worldly suffisance *and* worthynesse,  
And alle þise othere noþing<sup>t</sup> elles bene,

PROSA IX, STAN. 22.—7. if] om. N; yut J Ch: deceit] deceytes F: wittes] witte F: mysbeware] me beware T. STAN. 23.—1. ilke] om. T H; þat P: þat (2) T H] which P; om. other MSS. 2. Wel] om. P. 3. Full] om. P: honour] hous D. 4. ȝe wite & knownen verrelye] ye know wele & witt verely T. 5. ȝow conseyued] concefed you F: ȝow perceyued P: plenerlye] priuely Rl Ba N C F J. 6. Sith] þat N: þise C H P Bb (alt. from þing by diff. hand) thyngges h; þing all other MSS.: most] om. F: Sith that nedis muste on thinge be T. 7. one of] of oon D: perfightly] priuely D. 8. I sey] Sith Ba C Dc Ch; Seþen F: þat] om. R: full] full of J: I sey then is hyt full felicite Bb (in other hand). STAN. 24.—1. Ow] Now Ba Dc F J Ch: Ow Nory] om. N: Nory] Norce D: art þow] þou art T. 2. God] Golde M. 3. to] om. De: woldest adden] wolde haue had T: adden] hadden H. 6. be] om. T H: in] om. H. 7. faileþ] sayleþ D. 8. trowe I] I trow T. STAN. 25.—1. youre self] yow self C Bb P; yooself R; me] om. H: here] om. F: before] afore T. 2. may ones] ones may F. 4. þan] it þan T N P; þan þou J: sueth] shewest Rl Ba J Ch; sheweth N D Dc; shewestou F: here] wele: here expresse] vpon thyss P. 5. worldly] wordly T H P. 6. alle] om. Ch.

But as it were, ymages or liknesse  
Of verrey good, or as þe folkes wene,

(456)

26. A maner good imperfit bringeþ þey  
To mortal folk þat marreþ so þaire mynde.  
But verrey perfit good, þat dar I sey,  
þey bringen noght, it is not [of] þaire kynde.'  
"To þis," quod I, "my resoun doth me bynde."  
'Now,' quod sche tho, 'sith þou hast vndirstonde  
Wiche ben þe wayes trusty for to wende,  
And wiche ben fals þat beren wrong' on honde,

(457)

27. Now setteth ȝow to knowe[n] and to lere,  
This blisfulnesse where þat we schal it seche.'  
"This is," quod I, "þat I abood while-ere."  
'My plato,' quod sche, 'haþ þis manere speche,  
Right as his book Thimeus doth ȝow teche,  
þat in þe l[e]st[e] work þat schal be wrought,  
If þat ye will to youre desires reche,  
þe help of god most nedes be besought.

(458)

28. What wilt þou deme then is best to done,  
This souereyne good þat we may see and fynde?  
"In sothe," quod I, "to bidden in oure bone  
To hym þat souereigne fader is of kynde.  
For certanly who so leueþ þat behynde  
Noþing may be begonne perfity."

PROSA IX, STAN. 25.—7. or] of F: liknesse] lykenesses T. 8. or]  
om. T: as þe folkes] elles as men P. STAN. 26.—1. imperfit] om. T;  
imperfite; R: þey] þeym D. 3. þat] om. T; thys P: dar I] dare F.  
4. is] om. M: of T H P] om. D; for all other MSS. 5. To] Lo F:  
quod] seide D: my] om. Rl Ba Dc F J. 6. tho sith] þe soþe F. 7.  
Wiche ben þe wayes] ffor the wayes which be T. 8. þat] and P.  
STAN. 27.—1. setteth ȝow] sytteth the T H; setteth it D; longeth the P.  
2. þat] om. T D F. 3. This] That T H P: is] om. J. 4. Plato] Plate  
N; place h: sche] om. R: manere] manere of R F. 5. Thimeus] Tyme  
T; tymeus H; Thimus D; Thimes J: doth ȝow] so doth he T: ȝow] om.  
N. 6. leste N C T H P] om. D N; firste F; last all other MSS.: work]  
om. T; worle R: þat] ther D: be] om. N. 8. besought] sought T h F P.  
STAN. 28.—1. then is best] best pen is R: is] what is T. 3. bidden] bide  
H: in oure bone] men boune Dc: oure T H. 4. souereigne fader is] is  
souerayne fader T. 5. certanly] certeyn T: who so] ho ho H; who D.  
6. Noping] No De: be] om. N D Dc: begonne] begynne N.

'Full right,' quod sche, 'þou demest in þy mynde.'  
And þus lo gan sche synge suyngly.

(459)

METRUM ix<sup>m</sup>

O qui perpetua.

1. 'O fader þat gouernest' wondirly  
This hole worldly vniuersite  
Be perdurable resoun myghtily,  
And sowest heuene *and* erthe as liketh þe ;  
And tymes of þe hole eternite  
Thow hotest for to moven *and* to passe ;  
Thi-self<sup>a</sup> abidyng evire in stabilite,  
All þing þow movest<sup>b</sup> boþe more *and* lasse.

(460)

2. Ne the þat art oure prince souereyn  
So pleyn in power *and* perfeccioun,  
No foreyn cause myght arten ne constreyne  
Of matire flowynge in confusioun  
This werk<sup>c</sup> to bringe into produccioun,  
But lo þe forme of souereyn good in the,  
þat evire hath ben in full possessiou[n],  
In whom envyne ne malyce may not be.

(461)

3. Aftir þe hye and souereigne exsaumplere  
Alle þinges þou producest<sup>d</sup> wonderly,  
Thow althire fairest lord in heuene clere.  
þe faire worlde þat was eternally  
Conceyued in thy mynde formally,  
Thow schippest<sup>e</sup> forth in forme of lyklyhede,

PROSA IX, STAN. 28.—8. lo] om. P: lo gan sche synge] gane she syng lo T; began shee too synge D: synge] to synge Dc P. METRUM IX, STAN. 1.—1. wondirly] worthely T; worldly D P. 2. worldly] wordely T; wondreful D; woldy H. 4. sowest] shewest h J P. 5. tymes] tyme T; thus D: hole eternite holy trinite N T H; holy eternite D h. 6. for] om. T M: moven] mowen M. 7. abidyng evire] euer abydyng D. 8. boþe] om. T. STAN. 2.—1. the þat] þatt þow T; thowe þat D: prince] prynce and T; prince so D. 2. and] and in D. 3. cause] om. Dc: myght] may P: arten] om. D: ne] not D; the and Dc. 4. flowynge] foluyng D; fleyng h; folewyng F: confusioun] conclusion F. 5. werk] were D. 6. lo] om. P: þe (1)] om. Rl Ba F Ch: forme of] om. T. STAN. 3.—1. souereigne] worthy T: exsaumplere] example Dc. 2. þinges] thyng H R F; thyng D P. 3. althire] all the T; al ther P: clere] om. J. 5. conceyued] conseyyvd T; concedef F. 6. schippest] shapest N; shapest T M D De: forth in] om. D.

And so, performed well and perfightly,  
In perfit parties makest hym procede.

(462)

4. Thow byndest forþermore thise elementes  
In certane noumber and proporcional,  
þat hete and colde may haue conuenience,  
Moysture and droght haue non discencioun,  
And lest the fuyre þat of þ condicoun  
So cleen and clere is schulde fleen his wey,  
And so þe heuy weightes plonge doun  
þe erthe. Pow knyttest eke, it is no nay,

(463)

5. Th[e] mene spirit to þe full obeissant  
Of treble kynde þat all þing meveþ soo,  
Resoluynge it in membres consonant;  
And theym devideſt in-to speres two;  
þe sterred firmament is one of tho,  
That other is of þe planetes seuene;  
Theire kyndely cours he makeþ hem to go.  
In-to hymſelf þan he retorneth euene,

(464)

6. Enſerchyng þan þe depe intelligence,  
þe hye exsaumpler of þe eternyte,  
And be a cours of lyk conuenience  
He torneth heuen aboue as likeþ the,  
And soules þat in creatures be  
Thow ſendest hem in erthe to lyuen here,

METRUM IX, STAN. 3.—8. hym] them P. STAN. 4.—2. certane]  
cerne in h. 3. conuenience] conuenyent T. 4. non] in N: discen-  
cioun] diuisioun F. 5. lest] let Ba J: fuyre] sure T: þat of] of þat L  
h R Bb: And let þe fire his shuld fleen away J. 6. is] it De. 7.  
doun] a doone M Dc. 8. knyttest] cuttist T. [l. 5 om. D; ll. 5, 6 con-  
fusedly combined J.] STAN. 5.—1. The T D P] Thy other MSS.: spirit] om.  
T H; shipt h: full] om. N. 2. treble] troublle T: þat] to þe pat Rl  
F: þing] om. F. 3. membres] nombres N. 4. devideſt] byndys T.  
5. firmament] firment R. 6. That other speres of planetis vij. P. 7.  
he] om. D: to] om. T. 8. þan] om. T: retorneth] retournys hem T; turneth  
J. [ll. 7, 8 om. N (fol. om.).] STAN. 6.—Enſerchyng T H P] Enter-  
chaungyng all other MSS. 2. hye] om. F: exsaumpler] ensample F;  
exaulple Rl Ba D Ch: þe] thyte T: eternyte] trinitate D. 3. a] om. D:  
conuenience] convenens T. 4. He turneth heuen] Thou turyst them T:  
heuen] heue R: aboue] om. F: as] as it R. 6. hem] om. D: to] þat  
Ba J Ch.

Be lyke causes, eche in his degré,  
Lyk for to perteyne vnto heuene clere.

(465)

7. In heuen *and* erthe þow sowest hem as þe lyst,  
And wiþ þy lawe benigne I am certayne,  
With fuyre flaumble of loue withynne þeir brest  
Thou makest hem to þe retorne agayne.  
This manrys mynde, þat perced is wiþ Payne,  
Thow fairest fadire, graunte hym of thi grace  
þat souereyn see to serchen and atteyne,  
[W]here perfite goodenesse hap his propre place.

(466)

8. The welle of wisdom for to seke *and* fynde  
Thow graunt hym lord be lemyng of þi light,  
Clerly in þe þat he may sette hys mynde  
To fecchen [þere] þe vigour of his sight.  
Breek þou doun þe pays of heuy wight  
Of erþely bondes þat him sore annoyeth,  
And hym beschyne þow wiþ þi bemes bright  
þat alle clowdes skatureþ and distroyeth.

(467)

9. Thow art cleernes, þere may none be so faire ;  
Thow art pesible rest of manrys mynde ;  
To hertes þat ben meke *and* debonaire,  
The to beholde it is þaire perfit ende ;  
Thow principal begynnner of þaire kynde,  
þow berist all, þow ledest hem full even ;

METRUM IX, STAN. 6.—7. lyke] lyckely T H P : eche] eueryche D F.  
8. Lyk for] As for lyk Rl ; As for R Ba Bb (*but altered to lyk for*) F ;  
Lekely for P : for to perteyne vnto] as it apperteyns to D : perteyne vnto]  
person in T H ; percen P. [Stan. om. N (*fol. om.*).] STAN. 7.—  
1. and] and in T: þe] þou T De; þi H. 2. law] loue C. 3. fuyre]  
fury Ba R J ; fure T: loue] lawe Rl Ba De F J. 4. Thow] Ther T H : to]  
om. F : þe] om. Rl Ba De F J Ch : þe retorne] tourne to þe T. 8. Where  
D] þere other MSS.: perfite] profyte M. [Stan. om. N (*fol. om.*).]  
STAN. 8.—1. The welle] O the whèle D : for] om. F. 4. To fecchen þere]  
And there to fyxe P : þere] om. L h M : vigour] ffigure T H. 5. doun]  
om. F : þe] þat T : pays] pepis Ba J Ch : of heuy wight] that hym wyght P.  
7. hym] om. Rl : hym beschyne þow] beschyne þou hym Ba F J Ch : þou]  
om. D. [Stan. om. N (*fol. om.*).] STAN. 9.—1. none be] be non T.  
2. pesible] possible D : of] om. D. 5. begynnner] gennner T : þaire] þat D.  
6. berest] cariest T : hem] al D.

Pow art the wey in wiche þat man schal wende,  
And þou þi-self art all þe blisse of heuen

(468)

PROSA X<sup>a</sup>.

Quoniam igitur.

1. Now for as myche as þou hast seyn in þis  
Wiche is imperfite good *and* to eschewe,  
The forme also of good þat perfit is  
Wiche þat is to seken *and* to sewe,  
Fro hennes-forth oure processe [to pursewe],  
It is to schewen, as it semeth me,  
þe verrey good þat perfit is *and* trewe,  
What þing<sup>i</sup> it is, *and* where it myghte be.

(469)

2. Bot first of all it nedeþ to enquire  
If suche a þing<sup>i</sup> may be in any kynde  
As we before di[ff]ined haue whilere,  
Lest so be þat in veyn oure wittes wende,  
And lest we be deceyued at þe ende  
As by [a] false ymagineacioun  
Of þing<sup>i</sup> þat nocht is fourmed in oure mynde,  
And so to lese oure occupacioun,

(470)

3. Bot þat we saue oure purpos hole *and* sound.  
þat þerfyt good is, no wight may wiþseyn,  
þe wiche is in a manere welle *and* ground<sup>i</sup>  
Of alle good þat is; þou † be certeyn  
þere may no wight replyen þere ageyn.  
If any þing<sup>i</sup> haue imperfeccioun,

METRUM IX, STAN. 9.—7. in wiche þat man] in the whiche þei T H ; wheryn that they P: þat] the D: man] men Ba Ch. 8. þe] om. T. [Stan. om. N (fol. om.)] PROSA X, STAN. 1.—1. Now] om. P: in] om. T. 2. good] om. D: eschewe] enchewe F. 4. Wiche] þe wyche P: þat is] is for T: to] for to H. 5. to pursue] om. L M ; is renew h. 6. it (2)] om. h. 7. þe] To T. 8. it is] is it D: where] what D: be] hit be F; y be J. [Stan. om. N (fol. om.)] STAN. 2.—1. nedeþ] nedful P: to] not to Dc. 2. s] om. D P. 3. diffined T C H P] om. N ; devyned all other MSS.: whilere] while here J. 4. oure] an T H : wende] we wende T. 5. þe] om. Dc. 6. a] om. L h M. 7. fourmed] om. T. 8. so] for T: lese] leue T. [Stan. om. N (fol. om.)] STAN. 3.—1. saue] sawe T H ; haue Dc. 2. no] not Ba J; om. T H. 3. a manere] matier D: welle] the wel P. 4. alle] all þat J: þou] youre L R h M D Bb: þou be] be þou F. 6. haue imperfeccioun] here haue perfeccioun T: haue perfeccioun H.

Pat is because it is noght full ne pleyn  
Wiþ perfyt þing† as in comparisoun.

(471)

4. Forwhy in euery generall of kynde  
Where any þing† imperfyt is, say I,  
A perfyt [þing] also þere myght þow fynde ;  
For if þere were no perfyt vtterly,  
Sith lak of perfyt is þe cause why  
Pat any þing imperfyt may be preued‡,  
Than is þere none imperfyt sikerly  
Fro which þe perfight þinges ben remeued‡.

(472)

5. fforwhy of þinges skars and diminute  
Nature ne took noght hire produccioun,  
Bot of a hoole, compleat‡ and absolute  
Fro all defaut‡ and diminucioun ;  
And so fro þennes made progressiou  
Vnto þise lowere þinges pat we seen,  
Pat lasse hauen of perfecciooun,  
And as it were, all voyde and empty been.

(473)

6. And if so be, as I haue schewyd or this,  
Þere is an imperfite felicite  
Of frell and febil good, for sothe it is,  
An † other good and perfyt must þer be.  
“ Full sothe it is,” quod I, “ as semeth me  
Concluded also fully and f[e]rmely.”

PROSA X, STAN. 3. —7. because] the cause Ch: it] pat it H: ne] and T; nor D. 8. Wiþ] Whiche T: perfyt] perfityth L. [Stan. om. N (fol. om.).] STAN. 4.—1. euery] euer H J; any P. 3. þing] om. L h M: myght] may T; mayst P. 4. were no perfyt] be no thing so perfite T: were] ben H. 5. þe] om. T. 6. may be] is peryn T. 7. none] om. F: A perfite thyng ther muste be sicurly T H P. 8. þe perfight‡] imperfecte T H P: ben] must be T; may ben D: remeued‡] dyscryued P. [Stan. om. N (fol. om.).] STAN. 5.—1. of þinges] om. T H; of these F: and] of T. 2. ne] om. R: noght] om. T H F: hire] hire fyrist P. Bot] Not T: of] ȝif N; om. P: a] all R D Bb P: om. T H. 4. Fro] For D: and] of Dc: and diminucioun] and all corruption P. 6. þinges] thinkes N. 8. all voyde] a voyde T H; voyde & all F. [ll. 5-7 om. T H; ll. 1, 2 om. N (fol. om.).] STAN. 6.—1. if] ȝif it Rl Ba F Ch: as] pat F. 2. an] eny F. 3. Of] Or M: good] om. T: for-sothe] full sooth T H P; om. D F; sooth J. 4. An] And N L R h M: must] mute T. 5. it is] is this T H F. 6. also] om. T: fully and] full of T; full and H P: fermely N C H P] ffymite T; formely all other MSS.

'But now,' sche seide, 'thou must beholde *and see*  
Where þat þis good is founden fynally.

(474)

7. The comyn conceyt lo of mannys mynde  
Be resoun is vnto þis poyst i-brought,  
þat god which prince *and* auctor is of kynde,  
Hym-self<sup>t</sup> is good ; in þis þey faillen noght,  
Syth þat þer may † no bettre þing<sup>t</sup> be poght  
þan god hym-self<sup>t</sup>, this wot well euery wight.  
þat god is good *and* worthi to be soght,  
This douten none þat resoun seen of-right.

(475)

8. Yit resoun will enducen furthermore  
Be verry force þat in god perfightly  
Is verrey good ; in no wight<sup>t</sup> may be more.  
He were noght elles cleped rightwisly  
þe prince of þinges, vnderstonde for-why,  
For elles one were worþiere þan he,  
þat perfyt good possesseſt principally,  
þat rathire moste and also elder be.

(476)

9. For euery þyng<sup>t</sup> þat fully is perfyte,  
Than any þing imperfyt rathire is.  
Now lest oure processe passe in infinite,  
We ben compelled for to graunte this :  
That souereigne god of perfyt good i-wys  
Lo is fullfilled. þan sueth here vpon,  
Sith perfyt good is verry blisfulnes,  
In god is perfyt blisfulnesse alloon.'

PROSA X. STAN. 7.—1. comyn] comyng J. 2. vnto] to H P  
i-brought] brought D. 3. whiche] þat P: prince] prynce is T H: prince  
and auctor] auctor and prince D. 5. Syth] Suche Rl Ba Ch: þat] om.  
T H: may] may be R L Bb h M; be Rl Ba Dc F Ch: þing<sup>t</sup>] þinges F: be  
poght] y wrught Rl Ba Dc F J Ch; be wrought N; be brought T H.  
6. hymself] hymselfe is T: well] om. T. 7. worthi] vtterly T. 8. none]  
not Dc: of right] a right N T H D P; o right C. STAN. 8.—1. resoun]  
om. T. 2. þat] þat is T: in] om. D. 3. Is] His T: in no wight may  
be] may be in no wight T. 4. elles] ell H: cleped] y called F; called P:  
rightwislye] rightwysnesse h: He were natt righte clepyd allys wysely T.  
5. vndirstonde for why] I vnderstond why T: I vnderstond for why H: for  
why] where bye D; for thy Ch. 6. For] or h: elles] ell H. 8. þat]  
Whiche D: and also] also and F. STAN. 9.—3. in] om. Rl Ba T H F  
J Ch. 5. souereigne] perfite N: perfyt] souereyn N; om. T. 6. sueth]  
sheweth T. 8. god] good Rl Ba N M: perfyt] verrey N Dc.

(477)

10. "Full well," quod I, "this I conceyue *and feele*.  
 þere may no wight replyen there ageyn."  
 'I pray the,' quod sche, 'vndirstonde me wele  
 How fermely is preued þat we seyn,  
 Lo þat of perfyt good *and souereyn*  
 God is fulfilled, be my conclusiou.'  
 "In sothe," quod I, "þis wolde I heren feyn  
 How þat ȝe make þe demonstracioun."

(478)

11. 'That self,' quod sche, 'þat is þe prince of all  
 And full of souereigne good, how semeth the,  
 þat fro with-oute þis good is to hym fall  
 Or is in hym be kynd[ly] propirte?  
 And þinkest þat two þinges most þay be,  
 Lo, God þe hauere, and his blisfulnesse,  
 And in þeire substaunce haue dyuersite?  
 This wilt þou not supposen as I gesse.

(479)

12. And if he † haue resayued of withoute  
 This blisfulhede, þan seweth sikerly,  
 þe yeuere of þat þing, it is no dowte,  
 Precelleth þe receyuere [verry]ly.  
 Bot þis we moste confessen vterly,  
 Aboue all þinges god is excellent.  
 And if þis good in god be kyndely  
 In substaunce, *and* in resoun different,

PROSA X, STAN. 10.—1. this] *om.* H : this I conceyue] conseyve I this T ;  
 this conceyue I J : conceyue] perceyue P. 2. there (2)] his T ; here P.  
 4. fermely] suerly T ; formaly F : þat we seyn] wel Dc. 6. my] a T ;  
*om.* H. 7. hereu] fele N. 8. How ye it preue by demonstracioun P.  
 STAN. 11.—1. þat] whiche D : þe] *om.* M. 2. souereigne] sorowe D :  
 how] as N ; how soo T ; so H. 3. to hym] *om.* P. 4. is] *om.* F ; is hyt  
 P : kyndly] kynde L h M Dc F. 5. þat] *om.* Dc : þat two] pou pat T H :  
 þay] there D. 6. god] quod she D : his] the T. STAN. 12.—1. if] *om.*  
 Rl Ba F J Ch : he N T H D F] þey L h M Dc P ; ye Rl Ba C R Bb F J Ch :  
 resayued] reserued T : of] oughte D. 2. blisfulhede] blisfulnesse Ba J Ch :  
 þan] *om.* T : seweth] sewep hit F. 3. þe] þat þe F : it] *om.* P : no] out  
 of N. 4. verryly] Rl Ba Dc F J Ch] certenly P ; sikirly other MSS.  
 5. god] þat god D. 6. þinges] þing Ch. 7. if þis] þus T ; þis H.  
 8. in (2)] *om.* T D F. [ll. 3, 4 *om.* T.]

(480)

13. The prince of þinges wiche þat we reherse,  
 Let se devise or f[e]yne it who so may,  
 Who hath conioyned thise two dyuerse.  
 He may no fer[re] be ; no manere of way.  
 But atte laste þis dar I sothly say :  
 A ping<sup>i</sup> þat diuerse fro an-other is,  
 It may not ben the same, it is no nay,  
 Fro wiche it is dyuersed so i-wys.

(481)

14. Wherfore þat þing<sup>i</sup> þat ha[þ] dyuersite  
 Fro souereyn good in resoun of nature,  
 þe same souereyn good it may not be.  
 And god forbede þat any creature  
 As in his wit schulde passen so mesure  
 Of god oure souereyn for to demen so,  
 That kepeþ all *and* hap vs in his cure ;  
 So perfit *and* so good þere ben no mo.

(482)

15. Lo þis, I trowe, conceyueth euery man,  
 þat þe nature of noþing<sup>i</sup> vtterly  
 May better be þan he þat it began.  
 Than may I thus concluden fynally  
 þat he wiche is begynner verrely  
 Of alle þing<sup>i</sup> þat is, I say þat he,  
 In substance *and* in kynde propurly,  
 This souereigne good he moste nedes be.'

PROSA X, STAN. 13.—2. feyne T H P] fynde N M ; seyne D ; fyne Rl Ba C L R h Bb (*but altered by later hand to feyne*) Dc F J Ch : it] om. N : who] om. H. 3. twol] to N : conioyned] cōmūned] D; conceyued h ; conieyned R. 4. ferre Ba h H] furder P ; ferter T ; ferther D ; fer L Rl N C R M Bb Dc F J Ch : no manere of way] this dare I say T : of] a R ; om. N P. 5. atte] atte þe Ba : this dare I sothly say] by no manere of way T : sothly] soth h. 6. another] other T. 8. dyuersed] dyuerse hede H. STAN. 14.—1. þat þing<sup>i</sup> þat hap] thoo thyngys that haue D: hap T H F P] had *other MSS.* 2. Fro] om. T: in] in the T. 5. As] That T : schulde passen so] so shold passe F : so] lo N. 6. oure] and T ; of H : demen] denye D. 7. þat] Whiche D: all & hap vs] & hap all vs D. 8. good] goodely D: þere] om. D. STAN. 15.—1. conceyueth] perceyueth P. 2. nature] kend P. 3. it] is T ; om. F. 4. Than may] Wherfore D. 5. wiche is] with his T H. 6. ping] om. H : þinges M : is] om. F : Of all I say that this that hee T. [l. 4, om T ; l. 5, om. F.]

(483)

16. "This is," quod I, "concluded well *and* clere."  
 'And souereyn good,' quod sche, 'is blisfulnesse.'  
 "Right so," quod I, "this graunte[d] I whilere."  
 'Lo,' quod sche, 'þan it sueth here expresse  
 þat god hym-self<sup>f</sup> is souereyne blisfulnesse.  
 Lo where it is þat þou so long hast soght!'  
 "This moste I," quod I, "graunten *and* confesse ;  
 Youre resouns han me to þat þoynþ ibroght."

(484)

17. 'That þis,' quod sche, 'be preued fermely,  
 Beholde *and* see what I schal farther seyn.  
 Two þinges þat ben diuerse propirly  
 Ne mowe not be two goodes souereyn.  
 For if þer be discord bytwene hem tweyn,  
 They mow not be þe seluen *and* þe same  
 Eueryche þat other is, þow be certeyn,  
 Though þat þei boþe be called oon be name.

(485)

18. If þey be souereyn goodes bothe two,  
 Devise it in his conseit who so may,  
 If þat þis oo goode be þat other fro,  
 Inperfyt ben þei boþe, it is no nay,  
 Sith noþer ben wiþoute[n] other may.  
 Bot þing þat lakkeþ in perfeccioun,  
 þat it be souereyn good þou wilt not say ;  
 It wolde includen contradiccioun.

PROSA X, STAN. 16.—1. quod] om. Bb (*but inserted later by diff. hand*): quod I concluded] concluded quod I Dc : concluded<sup>d</sup> well] wele concludyd T. 2. quod sche] om. T. 3. graunted] graunte L R Bb h M. 4. Lo quod sche þan] Lo thou quod she P: sueth] sheweth D Dc: expresse] expressed Ch: Lo then quod she here it sheweth expresse T. 5. self<sup>f</sup>] inserted later M: souereyne] verrey N T. 6. so long hast soght] hast sought so long T H. 7. I quod I graunten] I graunt quod I D. 8. resouns] reason T: ibroght] brought T D. STAN. 17 —1. That pis] This is J: That pis quod sche be preued] This is quod she prevyd T: pis] is R. 2. see] here N T H. 3. Two] Tho H; two R. 4. not] om. F. 6. þe seluen] selfe D P: seluen] suven H: þe (2)] an J. 7. Eueryche þat other] Euery to oother D: þou] pen N Dc; yow h: þow be] be þow D F. 8. boþe be called] be called boþe F: boþe] om. N D: oon be] by oon T. [ll. 5, 6 N om. first, but put in margin later.] STAN. 18.—1. bothe] om. T. 2. who so] whos F. 3. þat (2)] pis N C. 5. noþer] none F: wiþouten] wiþoute L: sith noþer oother withoute be maye D. 6. But] By h M: lakkeþ in perfeccioun] inperfeccioun lacketh T H. 7. pou] om. H: þou wilt not say wilt þou say nay T: wilt not] with no N. 8. includen] concluden N C.

(486)

19. Than mowe þei noȝt be two thise ne dyuerse,  
 This souereigne good as sueth here expresse ;  
 Bot blisfulnesse *and* god þat we reherse,  
 This souereigne good in alle wise it esse ;  
 þat same þing<sup>t</sup> þat þan is blisfulnesse,  
 þat same þing<sup>t</sup> is souereigne deytle.  
 “ No þing,” quod I, “ may trewere as I gesse  
 Ne worthiere of god concluded<sup>t</sup> be.”

(487)

20. ‘Than right,’ quod sche, ‘as geometrenous alle,  
 When þei han schewed th[eire] propo[sici]oun[s],  
 Thei bringen in porysmes þat þai calle,  
 þat ben conceytes or conclusioun[s]  
 And as in manere declaracioun[s]  
 Of forseid þing<sup>t</sup>, right so schal I the fede ;  
 As sewyng<sup>t</sup> on my demonstracioun[s],  
 This correlary I gif þe to thy mede :

(488)

21. Sith þat be getyng<sup>t</sup> of þis blisfulnes  
 Men blisfull may be made, *and*, wilt þou see,  
 Sith blisfulnesse þat souereigne godhede is,  
 And eke þe getyng<sup>t</sup> of þe deite  
 May blisful make, as I haue schewed to þe,  
 As right as wisdome makeþ men be wyse,  
 And rightwisnesse rightwise for to be,  
 I may conclude *and* suengly devise

PROSA X, STAN. 19.—1. mowel may T P: be two thise] thus be too  
 T H : thise] *om.* h P: Than mow not thees too be diuerse D. 2. sueth]  
 sheweth D Dc. 3. &] *om.* T. 5. same] som D. 6. þat T H P]  
 And þat all other MSS.: deytle] dett T. 7. may] *om.* D: as] be P.  
 STAN. 20.—1. geometrenous] geometriens N; geometreus H; geometrenus  
 R; geometrys D; geometres Dc P; Geometerys F; geometreonus Ch.  
 2. theire T H D P] thise all other MSS.: proposicio[n]s N C T H P]  
 proporsions all other MSS. 3. in] *om.* T H : porysmes] poiesmes H;  
 porismus P: þat] as T. 6. Of] *om.* R: þing<sup>t</sup> thynges T D: the] *om.* Dc.  
 7. sewyng<sup>t</sup>] shewyng H D: on] vnto D; of Ch. 8. correlary] colerey T;  
 caprelarie h. STAN. 21.—1. Sith þat be getyng<sup>t</sup>] Sithe bygethyng H:  
 þis] his R. 2. blisfull may be made] ben blysful made P: may] mowe H:  
 made] *om.* Dc. 3. Sith] *om.* P: þat L h M Bb] þe Rl Ba N C T H R D  
 Dc F J Ch P. 4. eke] also h. 5. to] *om.* N F Ch: Maketh blisful as it  
 is shewed to the P. 7. rightwisnesse] rightuousnesse P: rightwise  
 rightuous P: rightwise for to be] makes right to be T: for] *om.* F.  
 8. suengly devise] suyng debite T; sewyngly debyte H.

(489)

22. Pat be [þe] wynnynge<sup>t</sup> of dyuynite  
 Men may be maked goddes sikerly ;  
 Lo þan is euery blisful man perde  
 A god, this sueth also formally.  
 Though þat ther be oo god kyndely,  
 In sothe yit be participacioun  
 Right well þere mowe be fele noght-for-thi  
 As in þe staat of hye perfeccioun.'

(490)

23. "This is," quod I, "full faire and preciouse  
 Wheþire it porysme or corilare is."  
 ' Hit is,' quod sche, ' more faire and gloriouse  
 þat resoun will annexen vnto þis.'  
 I asked " What?" Quod sche, ' Sith blisfulnesse  
 So myche þing doth in it-self conteyne  
 As honour, power, lust, fame and hye richesse,  
 Wheþir all þei bene as membres, wilt þou seyne,

(491)

24. Whiche as of parties diuerte in manere  
 This blisfulness compowneþ in this wise  
 Into a perfyt body as it were ;  
 Other þou trowest<sup>t</sup> þat som þing<sup>t</sup> of thise  
 This blisfulness doth fully accomplise  
 Into a perfyt thing<sup>t</sup> substancial,  
 To whom thise opere, if þou so devise,  
 Referred ben as to þeire principall ?'

PROSA X, STAN. 22.—1. þe Rl Ba N C H Dc J Ch] om. T P F; no L R h Bb M D. 2. be maked] we make T; we made H. 4. this] loo this D; also] om. D. 5. Though] And T; Thought D þat] om. T H: be] is T. 7. mowe] may T P: fele] many P: noght forthi] om. F. 8. þe staat] þastath; þe astate Dc; þe estate F: hye] ful P. STAN. 23.—2. or] oper F: corilare] corialry N; verely T H. 3. and] than H. 4. annexen] aughten T; amitte h: vnto] wele to T H. 5. sith] om. ND; suche H. 6. So] Some H: þing<sup>t</sup>] om. F: it] that T H; her D. 7. lust fame] fame lust T: hye] om. P. 8. all þei bene] be they all T: þei] thees D. STAN. 24.—3. perfyt] perte h. 4. Other] Or T H; Either h: som] oo T; som one P: thise] this D. 5. This] Thi same P: fully] som thing Dc; om. P. 6. a] one P. 7. thise opere] this othe H: if þou so] as I do P: so] om. T; myght Dc. 8. þaire] hier J.

(492)

25. "I wolde haue þis," quod I, "declared fayn."  
 'Haue we not seid,' quod sche, 'þat blisfulnesse †  
 Is good, Boecius ?' "ȝis," seyde I, "souereyn." †  
 'Adde we,' quod sche, 'þe remenant vnto þis  
 þat souereyn good bifore rehersed is.  
 Lo souereign myght, *and* souereign suffisaunce,  
 Lust, honour, fame, o thing! þey ben i-wys  
 Wiþ blisfulnesse wiþouten variaunce.

(493)

26. This is þat I wolde asken here of the.  
 This suffisaunce, honour, delice, renoun,  
 Wheþer þei ben membres of felicite  
 As dyuerse parties doth o þing! compoun;  
 Or þou hast þis consideracioun,  
 þat alle þise wiche we rehersed han,  
 To soueraigne good schulde haue relacioun  
 As to þaire hede, þis say me if þou can.'

(494)

27. "In sothe," quod I, "now vndirstonde I wele  
 What ȝe purposen to enserchen here,  
 Bot I desire of yow to heere *and* feele  
 This questioun þat ȝe wolde maken clere."

PROSA X, STAN. 25.—1. haue þis] þus haue H: quod I] *om.* T: quod] said Rl Ba Dc F J Ch : I] and Rl Ba F J Ch. 2. þat] *om.* H: þat blisfulnesse] þe remenant vnto þis L R M D h Bb; Haue we not quod sche reuaunte vnto þis T. 3. Yis] this T H: and] high and T H: How þat blisfulnesse is god & souerayn L M h: Is good Boecius ȝis seyde I souereyn Rl Ba N C Dc F J Ch: That blisfulnesse is good & souereyn þis seide I R: Is good (Boecius) Yes seyd I hye & souereyn P; þat blisfulnesse is god & souerayn Bb (*in margin*). 4. Adde] Hadd H: þe] than H: quod sche] *om.* R: to þis] *om.* J: ȝis quod I phia: Adde we quod sche þe remenant vnto þis L M h: Bb: Had we quod sche this to the declaryd T. 5. That souerayne myste & souerayne sufficaunce. 6. & souereign suffisaunce] with obiectes nat mevid T. 7. honour fame] fame honour P. [ll. 3, 4 *om.* D.] [*In Bb. ll. 3, 4 om. at first, but inserted in margin with reading as in L.*] STAN. 26.—1. asken] *om.* F: asken here] here askyn N; asken er P: of] *om.* J. 2. This] Yef F: honour] *om.* Dc: delice] delichte T: renoun] and renoun N De F Ch. 3. þei] that þei D: membres] nombres h. 4. compoun] companoun N. 5. Or] ther T; there F J. 6. wiche] wyche þat P: we rehersed] rehersid we T; be rehersen H: han] þan N. 7. To] That T. 8. þis say] thus thou T: say] *om.* H. STAN. 27.—1. now] this D. 3. of yow] ofte h: of yow to heere] to here of yow P: heere and feele] fele & here T: and] and to F. 4. þat] the whiche T H: maken] make yt P.

'I schal,' quod sche, and seide in þis manere :  
 'If all þise þinges whiche þat we reherse,  
 Of blisfulnesse in manere membres were,  
 Than muste thise membres nedes be dyuerse ;

(495)

28. For lo of parties † þis þe nature is,  
 That þey dynuerse o body certanly  
 Schal maken ; bot I haue þe schewed or þis  
 þat alle thise ben o thing.' "Ye," quod I.  
 'Thei ben,' quod sche, 'no membres sikerly  
 Sith þey ben one, or elles will it sewe  
 þat blisfulnesse were maked wonderly  
 Of o membre ; þat nature will eschue.'

(496)

29. "This is," quod I, "[full] soth I doute it noght,  
 But now full fayne þe remenant wolde I see."  
 'Than all thise þinges,' quod sche, 'most forþ be broght  
 And to this good as cheef referred be.  
 And for this good, full soth it is perde,  
 All men desiren after suffisaunce ;  
 To han powere or stonde in hy degree,  
 For it is good, þei maken purueaunce.

(497)

30. The same I may devisen seuyngly  
 Of reuerence, renoun and lustynesse ;  
 They deme it good, þat is þe cause why  
 þat þey requere it wiþ þeir besynesse.  
 Than is þis good þe verray cause expresse  
 and som of alle þat owen to be required,

PROSA X, STAN. 27.—5. seide] say T. 7. manere] mannes D: were]  
 we ere T. 8. nedes] in maner N. STAN. 28.—1. lo] lone N; om. T:  
 þis] lo þis N C L R M D h Bb; lo T. 2. o] of N: body] bodily T.  
 3. bot] but oon D: I haue þe] hyt is P. 5. no] þe N. 6. elles] ell H:  
 will] wold P: sewe] shewen h. 7. maked] made ful P. 8. o] om.  
 D: þat] which D. STAN. 29.—1. full] om. L h M. 2. þe remenant]  
 theyme reuerent T H. 3. most] may T: forþ] om. P. 5. full] om. T:  
 soth] om. D. 6. all] om. P: after] to haue N. 7. or] and T H.  
 8. good þey maken] godd þat maketh H. [l. 4 om. Ch, but inserted at top of  
 page in later hand.] STAN. 30.—1. may] made F. 2. reuerence renoun]  
 renoun reuerence N. 3. They] þanne Rl. 4. requere it] it requyre T:  
 þeir] þei R Bb; om. T. 5. þe] om. N; of F J Ch: expresse] y wysse P.  
 Than is the verry goode the cause expresse T. 6. of] om. h: And sum all  
 though it be requyryd T.

For þing<sup>r</sup> þat no good hap in lik[ly]nesse,  
Ne none in sothe, ne may not be desired.

(498)

31. And þ[er] agayn lo in contrarie wise,  
A thing þat is noght good in no manere,  
Yit if it seme good, as þei devise,  
Right as þey verrey right[e] goodes were  
Men wilneth hem. Than wil it s[e]wen here  
þat bounte is þe grounde *and* cause of all  
Why þinges aughten to be lief *and* dere,  
þat any man of right desiren schall.

(499)

32. And over þis it semeþ furthermore  
þat euery þing<sup>r</sup> whiche is þe cause why  
þat ony other is desired fore,  
The cause is eke desired principally.  
Right as because of hele † fynally  
A man desireþ for to ride and play,  
His heele he doth desiren sikerly  
Als well as for to ride, it is no nay.

(500)

33. Sith all þis thing<sup>r</sup> þat þus desired is,  
þe cause of all, is principally bounte,  
This bounte is desired þan i-wys  
Als myche as is þat þing<sup>r</sup> in his degre.  
Bot we han grauted þat felicite  
Is cause þat þise þinges euerychone  
Desired be. þan sueth it perde  
þat blisfulnesse desired is allone.

PROSA X, STAN. 30.—7. no] *om.* T H: good] god T H: liklynnesse Rl  
Ba H Dc J Ch P] liknesse *other* MSS. 8. ne (2)] *on.* H D F; it P.  
STAN. 31.—1. lo] in sope F: per T H P] theye D; þat *other* MSS.  
4. þey] *om.* D; theire h; hit F: right[e] right L: righte goodes] gode right  
T: goodes] good F. 5. wilneth] willeth T H: wil] while T H: sewen]  
swen L R; semeth T; suen N h; siwen H. 7. aughten] aven H.  
8. desiren] disseyten N. STAN. 32.—2. whiche] þat P: þe] *om.* T.  
3. þat ony other] Loo that another P. 4. The] That H P: eke] also h.  
5. hele] helle R L Bb M. 7. he doth] his deth h. 8. it] þat N; thys  
C: no] *om.* H. STAN. 33.—1. þus] þis Dc. 2. principally] principal  
N P; principale F. 3. i wys] is wysse h. 4. is] *om.* P. 6. þat]  
*om.* P. 7. Desired] Desyrithed H: sueth sheweth T.

(501)

34. Of this it semeth *and* it suyth loo,  
 þat þan [þ]is good a[nd] verry blisfulnesse  
 In substaunce ben þey oo þing<sup>t</sup> *and* no moo  
 And verrailly þe same þing<sup>t</sup> expresse.  
 “I can not seen,” quod I, “in sothfastnesse  
 How any wight [y]ow myght in wordes blame.”  
 ‘Bot god,’ quod sche, ‘and verrey blisfulnesse  
 As we han schewed, ben oo thing<sup>t</sup> *and* þe same.’

(502)

35. “Ryght as ye sayn,” quod I, “it is ful clere.”  
 ‘Than may I,’ quod sche, ‘well *and* sikerly  
 þe sentence *and* þe som of this matere  
 Lo þus concluden full *and* fynally :  
 Lo þat þe substance of oure god on hy  
 Is set *and* founded in none oþer place  
 Bot in þe same good eternally.  
 To fynde it þere god sende the of [his] grace !

(503)

METRUM X<sup>m</sup>

huc omnes pariter.

1. Now cometh alle ye þat ben i-brought<sup>t</sup>  
 In bondes full of busy bitternesse,  
 Of erthely lust abidyg<sup>t</sup> in youre þoght<sup>t</sup>!  
 Here is þe reste of alle ȝoure besynesse,  
 Here is þe port of pees *and* restfulness  
 To þeym þat stonde in stormes *and* diseise,

PROSA X, STAN. 34.—1. it (2)] *om.* Ba T h F J : suyth] sheweth T H ; vseth Bb (*but altered to suyth*). 2. þis T H P F] *is all other MSS.*: good] gode H : and N C T H D P F] *om.* R ; of Dc ; a other MSS. 3. þey] *om.* P. 4. verrailly] verray F. 5. seen] say T H P ; seye D : sothfastnesse] sothe fastynesse H. 6. Yow] pow L h M D : yow myght in wordes] your wordes may P: Why any yn yow myght I word blame H: Why eny worde in yow I myȝte blame T. 7. sche] *om.* h : and] a h. 8. ben] by H ; owte D : and] *om.* T. STAN. 35.—1. Ryght as ye sayn] then may ye saye T. 2. Ij *om.* H. 3. and] of T : matiere D h. 4. full] I fulle D : full and] *om.* Dc. 5. oure] þe N : on] in N : on hy] only R : That by eny substaunce by god on high T: That by substaunce of any gode an hihe H: þat the substaunce lo of god on hy P. 6. none oper] no nother H. 8. þere] *om.* T H: the] vs D ; it Dc : of] *om.* h P : his] *om.* L M J. METRUM X, STAN. 1.—1. Now] Howe P: alle ye] ye all H : i broght<sup>t</sup>] broght T. 2. bondes] boundes D h : busy] *om.* T : busy bitternesse] bitter besynesse P. 3. youre] his h. 5. and] and of h : restfulness] ryghtfulness Rl Ba J (*altered from rightwisnesse*) ; rightwisnesse N F. 6. and] of H P

[Refut ouert to wrecches in distresse],  
And all comfort of myschief and mysesse.

(504)

2. For all þat euere Tagus doth [ȝow] bede  
Of faire golden grauell stones bright;  
Or þat Erynuſ wiþ his strondes rede  
May ȝeuen ȝow to pleſe wiþ ȝoure sight;  
Or þat Ryuere wiſe þat Ind[u]ſ hight  
þat is full nyhe þe hote regiou[n],  
Whiche þat þe grene stones wiþ his myght,  
Wiþ white perles turneþ vp-so-doun;

(505)

3. They schynen wondir clere vnto youre eye †  
Bot yowre insight in sothe þey maken blynde,  
And wiþ þeire derke clowdes perelously  
In vanyte youre hertes done þey bynde, †  
For how-þat-euer þei plesen to ȝoure mynde  
As prayſed worthy † many a þowsand pounde,  
Yit ben þey full vnworthy in þeire kynde  
As noryſched in þe caves of the grounde.

(506)

4. Bot lo þe sche[n]yng[! of þat souereyn light,  
Be whiche þe hyhe heuene gou[ern]ed is,  
Chaseth awey þat foule derke nyght  
þat hath ȝoure soules drawen all amys.

**METRUM X, STAN. 1.—7.** Refut ouert] Only refuge P: ouert] & couerte T: couerte H; kouert Dc. 8. of] and T H; to Dc: mysesse] disese N. [l. 7 om. L M h.] STAN. 2.—1. ȝow H P] vs T; þe other MSS.: bede] bynde T. 2. Of faire] with hys P: golden grauell] grauell golden D. 3. Or þat] Other P: Erynuſ] Diryous T; drynuſ H; Eriniſ F: his] her T. 4. ȝow] now Dc: to] for to P: wiþ] om. P. 5. þat] pylke T H; þat þe P: Induſ] Indas L h M. 7. grene] grete D. 8. perles] stones N; perelles P. STAN. 3.—1. They] Whiche D: schynen] shewen N: clere] om. T: in] vnto N T H: eye D P] sight other MSS. 2. insight] myghte D: in soth] forsothe TH: þey maken] they do T. 3. derke] derkys H; derked h: perelously] perellosly diȝte F. 4. youre] her H: hertes] herte D: þey] þey all F: bynde] blynde L M h. 5. how] om. Dc: euer] om. T. 6. worthy] worship full Ch: many NT] full many other MSS. 7. full vnworthy] vnworthifull Rl Ba F; full vnworthyfull J Ch: kynde] mynde T. 8. norisched] nocked T; noeched H: of the] vnder N. STAN. 4.—1. lo] om. P: schenyng R Bb] schynynge T H; schewyng other MSS. 2. þe] om. T H: gouerned N C H P] grounded other MSS. 3. Chaseth] Cacheth Ba J; Abateth TH: þat] þe T P. 4. amys] mysse F.

This souereyn light, if þou may see i-wys,  
 Beholde it well *and* kepe it if þou kunne,  
 And þou schalt seen þat in regard of þis,  
 Pere be no brighte bemes in þe sonne.'

(507)

PROSA xj<sup>a</sup>

assencior inquam.

1. "To þis," quod I, "I moste nede assente ;  
 Youre wordes han me knet so fermely  
 By resoun of youre subtile argumente."  
 'What ȝif þou knewe,' quod sche, 'verrely  
 This good ? What woldest þou þen set þerby,  
 If þou myght clerly knownen what it were ?'  
 "I wolde it prayse at infynyt," quod I,  
 "If I myght knownen god in þat manere."

(508)

2. 'I schal,' quod sche, 'as verry resonable  
 The schewen þat apertly ar we goo,  
 So þat þo þinges stonde ferme *and* stable  
 Whiche we byfore þis haue consentid to.'  
 Quod I, "thei moste, we mowe not goo þperfroo."  
 'Haue I not schewed þe priuely,' quod sche,  
 'þat alle þise þinges þat [b]e desired so  
 Of feele folk ben full of vanyte,

(509)

3. And syth they ben dyuerse, it is no nay,  
 They ben no verrey goodes perfisly ;

METRUM X, STAN. 4.—6. it (1)] eke Rl Ba J Ch. : þou] ye H. 7. in]  
 in þe F Ch. 8. in] of H. PROSA XI, STAN. 1.—1. To þis] Lo thus  
 T H; lu this h : I moste] moste I Ba Dc F J : nede] nedes Rl Ba F J P;  
 y nedes Ch. 2. Youre] Ye C (*altered from youre*): wordes] word L T  
 M R Bb; om. C; resouns N: fermely] surerly T; formally Dc. 3. youre] om. R.  
 4. knewe] knowe Ba N h F Ch. 5. þen (*inserted later* R).  
 6. clerly knownen] knownen clerly P. 7. prayse] om. F. : at] at þe Ba  
 J Ch; at an h; and Dc. STAN. 2.—1. as] do T. 2. The] To T H :  
 we] þou P. 3. þo] thes P. 4. Whiche] Whiche þat F; That P: we  
 byfore] before we T: þis] om. T. 5. Quod I thei most] They must quod  
 I P: thei] þen Rl Ba h F J Ch; we T H M: most] nede M: we] I H: mowe]  
 now F. 6. priuely] plenerly T H. 7. pise] the N: be Rl N O T H R  
 F J P] we L Ba M h Bb Dc Ch. 8. feele] heele h.

For when þat one fro oþer is away,  
 No full ne verrey goodes vtterly  
 To no wight may þey bringen certanly,  
 Bot when þey ben assembled into one  
 In wirchinge *and* in forme verrely,  
 Than is it good *and* elles it is none.

(510)

4. So þat þis powere *and* þis suffisaunce,  
 This gladsomnesse, honour *and* nobilité  
 Be right þe same *and* þoo thinge in substaunce,  
 And if þey lakken verray vnyte  
 þere is noght why þey schulde desired be  
 Ne loued, if ȝe þo loken well aboute.  
 "Whilere," quod I, "this haue ȝe schewed perde,  
 Full trewe it is *and* may noght be in doute."

(511)

5. 'Sith so is þan þat goode be þei noght'  
 When dyuersite is founde þeym bytwene,  
 And when þat þey to vnite be broght,  
 Than ben þei goode as euery man may sene,  
 What is þat makeþ hem goode for to bene  
 Ought but ingetyng of this vnyte?  
 "Right so," quod I, "it is right as ȝe mene."  
 'Bot euery þyng þat good is, þan quod sche,

(512)

6. 'Why is it good wilt þou noght graunte this,  
 þat for it haþ particacioun

PROSA XI, STAN. 3.—3. when] *om.* R: oþer] that other T F J. 4. No]  
 Ne N T: full] shall T: goodes] good is N: ne] no T; but De. 6. when]  
 when þat J. 7. wirchinge] workyne P. 8. elles] ell H: [it is] it is N C  
 R P. STAN. 4.—2. This] *om.* P: gladsomnesse] gladnes T. 3 and]  
 and in L h M. 4. verray] of thys P. 5. is noght] nys F. 6. if] if  
 þat D: ȝe T H P] þay all other MSS.: loken] do loke P. 7. this haue ȝe  
 schewed] ye haue shewyd þis H: ȝe I R: perde] me Rl Ba N Dc F J Ch:  
 Whilhere ye quod I haue shewed þis perde T. 8. and] hit P. STAN. 5.—  
 1. so is] tho D: so hyt is P: goode] *om.* T H. 2. is] I D: þeym] *om.* N.  
 3. þey] ther D: vnite C L (*but altered in both to vnite*) N R M h Bb:  
 onched P: be] is D: broght] y brought P. 4. euery] all T: may] *om.* H.  
 5. makeþ] þat makeþ T: for] *om.* N T. 6. Ought] *om.* P: ingetyng] the  
 getyng N P; they gette T; they getyn H: vnyte] vanyte h. 7. Right]  
*om.* T D: quod I it is] hyt is quod I P. 8. þyng] *inserted later* Bb: pan]  
 is þan L Ba R M Bb h, STAN. 6.—1. this] pus Ba Ch.

Lo of this forseid good?' I seide, "3ys."  
 'Than most þou,' quod sche, 'be þe same resoun  
 Lo graunten also þis conclusioun:  
 þat good *and* one bethe o þing<sup>i</sup> † verrely;  
 For þinges likly of condicioun,  
 Noght diuerse in effectes kyndely,

(513)

7. In substance ben þey oo thing<sup>i</sup> *and* no moo.'  
 "Fro þis," quod I, "I may not gone onside."  
 'And knowest þou noght þat euery þing<sup>i</sup> also  
 þat is,' quod sche, 'so longe schall abyde  
 While it is one, and if it so betide  
 þat ony þing<sup>i</sup> forletteþ to be one,  
 Es it noght þen dissolved *and* destroyed?'  
 "And how?" quod I. 'I schal þe telle anone.'

(514)

8. 'Thow seist þi-self<sup>i</sup> þat in a beest,' quod sche,  
 'While soule *and* body ben togidere knyt<sup>i</sup>  
 And so abydeþ in hys vnyte,  
 This wost þou well, a best men callen it.  
 But when þis forseid<sup>i</sup> onhede is ykyt<sup>i</sup>  
 As be þeire bothes separacioun,  
 It is no beest this, wotest þou in þi wit<sup>i</sup>,  
 Bot careyn torned to corrupcioun.

(515)

9. And eke also the body of a wyght,  
 While þat þe membres stond[en] kyndely  
 One in þat forme þat nature hath hym dight,  
 He is a man, þis knowest þou verrely;

PROSA XI, STAN. 6.—3. Lo] ffor N : seide] say Ch: 3ys] yous Ba Ch ; this N T Bb (*but altered to 3ys*). 5. Lo] om. P. 6. good & one] god and good D: bethe o þing<sup>i</sup>] ben one P; bethe and þing<sup>i</sup> be L M; o þing ben Rl Ba F Dc Ch; beith þing h; beth o *inscribed later* Bb. 7. pinges likly] lykly þinges Dc : of] in Rl Ba N C Dc F. STAN. 7.—1. oo thing<sup>i</sup>] om. Dc. 2. I (2)] O H: on side] aside N T D h P. 4. abyde] I abyde J. 5. While] þat Ba Dc F J Ch: if] om. Dc F. 6. onyl] thyss P: forletteþ] that lettes T: letteth M. 7. Es it] It is D F Ch: pen] om. h. [ll. 4, 5, 6 *in order* 5, 6, 4 D.] STAN. 8.—2. soule & body] body & soule Ba Ch: knyt<sup>i</sup>] y knitte F. 3. hys] ther P. 4. wost] knowest P: callen] clepeth T H; callet Ba J Ch. 5. forseid<sup>i</sup>] om. P: ykyt<sup>i</sup>] i knytt T; knytte h: vnknynht Dc F; dyuyded P. 6. be] om. T. 7. no] nought N: wotest] knowest T H: That no best hyt ys hyt is parceyued P. 8. torned] tornyng P: to] vnto T Dc. [l. 1. om. T.] STAN. 9.—1. eke] om. h. 2. stonden] stond L R M D Bb; fonden J. 3. þat] þe F: hym] hemi F.

But if þey be departed sikerly  
 So þat þis vnite be done awey,  
 þat same þing it is not vtterly,  
 Ne verray mannes body sothe to seie.

(516)

10. And in the same wise it stant i-wis  
 Of euery þing to þinken in þi þoght.  
 þe while it ston[deþ] on, þe while it is,  
 And when it faileþ on, þan is it noght,  
 For it is to corrupcioun i-brought.  
 “In sothe,” quod I, “none other can I fynde;  
 Of [euery] creature þat may be soght  
 This moste be soth, be verray cours of kynde.”

(517)

11. ‘Bot wilt þow trowe þat any þing,’ quod sche,  
 ‘Hath þis of naturel þentencioun  
 As to forleten vtterly to be,  
 And lust to turne to corrupcioun ? ’  
 Quod I, “to haue consideracioun  
 To bestes wiche þat hauen of nature  
 Boþe will *and* nyll be free elleccioun,  
 I will not trowe it of no creature,

(518)

12. That bot-if pei be constreyned of wiþoute  
 Theire kyndly beyng will þey noght forgone  
 Ne wilfully be dede, it is no dowte.  
 þerfore it is þat [b]estes euerychone  
 Lo all þaire labour setten þere vppon  
 Theym-selfe for to saue *and* kepe in hele,

PROSA XI, STAN. 9.—5. þey] that H. 8. sothe] þe sothe P: to] for to T. STAN. 10.—2. þinken] spekyn T H. 3. stondeþ T H D P] stont other MSS.: þe (2) þat T H D. 4. when] om. T: it faileþ] fayleþ it T: pan] om. F: is it] hit is F. 5. is to corrupcioun] to corrupcioun is D: i-brought] brought D. 6. none other can I] I can not other P. 7. euery T H] om. all other MSS.: creature] creatures N. STAN. 11.—2. entencioun] contencicoun C L R M Dc F J Ch P. 3. to forleten] for to letten R Dc J. 4. And lust] A life T: to (1)] om. N C: to (2)] vnto Rl Ba N C T H F P. 5. Quod I to haue] To haue quod I P. 6. To] Tho T H. 7. will] of wille T H. 8. I] He T; Hit H. STAN 12.—1. That] om. D: bot] both M: if] om. Dc P: of] om. T: fro F. 3. Ne] Noo h: wilfully] fully Rl Ba N C F Bb (*but wyl inserted later*): dede] in dede Rl Ba. 4. bestes] hestes L h M Bb (*but altered to bestes*). 5. þere] here P. 6. for] om. T D: saue] haue Dc: and] and for to D; and to Dc.

And wilfully to deth ne will þere none ;  
I not who is with deth þat lust to dele.

(519)

13. Bot nevirþelesse yit am I in [a] doute  
Of trees, of plantes, herbes *and* of gras,  
And stone þat vtterly is lyf wiþoute.”  
‘Ther is not why to douten in þis cas  
Sith þou myght see,’ quod sche, ‘before þi face,  
And every day þow hast experience  
That trees *and* herbes wexen in þat place  
As to þeire kynde is most conuenience,

(520)

14. So þat als myche as þeire nature suffiseth  
Thei soffren noght to skorchen ne to drye ;  
For some of hem in faire feldes riseth,  
And some wexen in þe hille[s] hyhe,  
And some done in mareys multiplie,  
And some to þe harde roches clengeth,  
And some þere ben þat in þe sondes drye  
Þat baren ben ful plentevously spryngeth.

(521)

15. And if a wyght þat noght þaire kyndes knoweþ  
Wolde elles-where hem plant, þei [dye] als fast,  
For nature ȝeueth to eueryche þat hym oweþ,  
And laboreth þat, as longe as þai may last,

PROSA XI, STAN. 12.—7. ne] om. Rl Ba D Dc F Ch P: will þere] ther  
wylleþ P. 8. dele] dye T H: with deth þat lust] with lusty deth R.  
STAN. 13.—1. nevirþelesse] natholes D h: yit am I] as yet I am P: in] om.  
H: a] om. L h M Rl Ba D Dc; oon T. 2. of (2)] om. Dc: of plantes] and  
eke of P: herbes and of] of erbis and T. 3. is lyf] lyfe is T Dc. 4. not]  
no Ba J. 5. myght] mayst P: myght see quod sche] myght quod she  
se T; quod she maist se D: þi] pis T. 7. þat] per T; theire D F.  
STAN. 14.—1. as] of M. 2. skorchen] skorken Dc: ne] and T; neyther  
D: drye] dye h P. 4. hilles] hille L C T H R M h Bb; feldys D.  
5. in] in the N T J: mareys] maryces H. 6. roches] roche M h: clengeth ]  
thryngeth T H elyncheth D. 7. sondes drye] floyds drith T; floudis  
erth H: And summe of hem ful plentesfull F. 8. plentevously] plenteuous  
Dc: In places that bareyn beþ springeþ F. [l. 7 om. Rl Ba Dc J Ch Bb (*but inserted in margin*). ll. 7, 8 in reverse order in L, but marked b, a by scribe.]  
STAN. 15.—2. þei] om. Ba N h F Ch: dye T H P] om. all other MSS.: als]  
also Rl Ba Dc J Ch. 3. For] þey dyeth for F: to] for N: eueryche] euery  
N D. 4. þat] om. D: last] reste T; lest H.

They mow not be destroyed ne doun cast<sup>t</sup>.  
 And now what seist þou of þeire cheuysaunce?  
 As þogh þaire mouthes were in erthe i-threst,  
 So be þe rote þei drawen sustenaunce.

(522)

16. And so the kyndly moysture after þis  
 Into þe stok and rynde it sendeth wyde,  
 And yit þis humour þat most þ tendre is  
 Wiþynne forth all-wey it doth abyde,  
 Ageyn þe wedres hard<sup>t</sup> it-self<sup>t</sup> to hyde.  
 Wiþouten hath it sadnesse of þe tree;  
 Wiþouten þat þe barke in euery side,  
 þat may defence aȝeyn þe wedres be.

(523)

17. Here myght þou wel beholde and taken hede  
 How þat nature entendeth besily  
 Eueryche a thyng to norische be his seede  
 þat yere by yere doth waxe and multepleye,  
 Noght only for a tyme sikerly,  
 But þei ben sotil gynnes as it were  
 Wherby to stonden perdurabyly  
 Be generacioun in þat manere.

(524)

18. And þinges þat vnsouled ben also,  
 Ne doth noght eueryche besily entende

PROSA XI, STAN. 15.—5. mow] may T: be destroyed ne] destroyed  
 be nor D: destroyed] y stroyd N: They mow not be] That they be not  
 P: cast] y caste N C T P. 6. þeire cheuysaunce] hem the insaunce T.  
 7. were] om. T: in] in pe De: i-threst] caste N; prast H D. 8. drawen]  
 draw ther P. STAN. 16.—1. And so] Also N: the] om. T H. 2. þe]  
 om. D: it] om. F. 3. þis] his D: humour] moisture N P; honour J:  
 most T H P] moyst and all other MSS. 4. it doth] they do T.  
 5. wedres] wordes Bb (but altercl to wedres); watres N: hard<sup>t</sup> ther T; har  
 H; om. D: it-self to] it doth it N: hyde] huyde H; abyde D. 6. hath it  
 sadnesse] sadness hath it De: it] his D: sadness] sanes T. 7. barke]  
 banke D: in] on Rl Ba N T D De F. 8. aȝeyn] when F. [ll. 6, 7 in  
 reverse order Ch.] STAN. 17.—1. Here] Theyre D; bere De: myght  
 þou] maystow N; mayst thou P. 3. Eueryche] Euery N F T: a] om. Ba  
 N T F J Ch: seede] syde T. 4. yere by yere] perby þere Rl Ba J Ch;  
 they thereby N; þei bi F: doth] mowe N: waxe] cresse P. 5. a] om.  
 T. 7. Wherby] Therby N: Whereby to] That it may: perdurabyly  
 H P Rl Ba M] perdurable all other MSS. [ll. 4, 5 in reverse order T H.]  
 STAN. 18.—1. vnsouled] vnsouled N; withoute soules P. 2. eueryche]  
 euery De: besily] bestly T; bestily H: entende] to entend D h.

To þat his nature apperteneth to ?  
 Why elles doth a flamme of fuyre ascende,  
 Or why doth heuy erthe so descende,  
 Bot for þat eueryche haþ conuenience  
 To certayn place to wiche, as to þaire ende,  
 They meven so þey haue no recistence ?

(525)

19. For euery þing entendeþ sikerly,  
 Als fer forth as it may haue suffisaunce,  
 Lo þinges to conseruen besily  
 With whiche it haþ in kynde his acordaunce.  
 Right euen as þinges of contrariaunce,  
 All þat þey may, corrumpen *and* destroye,  
 Right so han þai þeire kyndely gouernaunce  
 To avoyden all þat harmeþ or anoye.

(526)

20. And stones þat so harde *and* stronge ben,  
 How þei wiþtonde theire particioun,  
 And clyngen faste as euery man may seen  
 To sauе þe partes fro corrupcioun !  
 And þinges þat so flowen vp *and* doun,  
 Bothe eire *and* water, parteþ esely  
 Be violence, fro wiche devisioun  
 To onehede þei retornen kyndely.

(527)

21. But fuyre all suche devisioun refuseth.  
 Of wilfull movyng of þe soule I let  
 To speke as now in þat he resoun vseþ,  
 Bot of þe naturell entent I trete :

PROSA XI, STAN. 18.—5. heuy] to heuy J (to inserted later by diff. hand). 6. for that] that for T: haþ] hap that D. 7. to (2)] om. T. 8. so] so þat T H. [l. 5 om. T D.] [ll. 6, 7 in reverse order D] STAN. 19.—1. Euery] euerych N. 3 Lo þinges to] Tho thynges that T: Lo] Thoo H P. 4. it haþ in kynde] in kynde it hath T. 5 þinges] thyngē T H P: of] that of P. 6. may] om. N: corrumpen] corrupteth H P: corrupten R; corruppe h. 7. þeire] om F: kyndely] kynde F. 8. þat] þat hem F: or] and T: anoye] anoyeth Rl Ba; anoyen N: For to eschewe al thyngē that them noyeth P STAN. 20.—1. stronge] strengthen Ba. 3. clyngen] thynken N. 4. fro] of Dc. 5. flowen] folowe h. 6. Bothel] om. P. 7. fro] bi þe F. [ll. 3-8 om. T: fol. om.] STAN. 21.—1. fuyre] fro D. 2. I let] sete D. 3. in] he N. 4. of] ȝif N.

þat whan [ȝ]e do[n] resayuen so youre mete  
 ȝe swel[wen] it and þere-of ha[n] no þoght,  
 And in ȝoure slepe when all þing[st] is forgete  
 Ye drawen breth and yit ye witen noght.

(528)

22. Noght onely of þe soules wilfulness  
 Thise bestes louen to þ lyuen *and* endure,  
 Bot principally dependeth it expresse  
 Of verray hye principalles of nature ;  
 For ofte it falleþ þat a creature  
 His owne deth will take wilfully  
 Where nedful causes ben perauenture,  
 Whiche þing[st] nature dredeth kyndely.

(529)

23. Ye seen also þat in contrarie wise  
 þe will of man wiþtondep *and* refreyneþ  
 þe lust of verray kyndely couetise,  
 Be whiche all onelicke nature haþ ordeigned  
 þat dedly kynde to kepe *and* be susteyned,  
 þe whiche is fleschly generacioun.  
 So þat þis loue not only is conteyned  
 Principally in youre beestly mocion,

(530)

24. Bot also of entencioun naturele.  
 Forwhy þe souereyn goddes purveaunce  
 Haþ ȝeuen þis as cause effectuele  
 To þinges þat ben of his ordinaunce,

PROSA XI, STAN. 21.—5. ye do P] ȝe down H ; he doth *all other MSS.*  
 6. ȝe H] he J : So *all other MSS.* : swelwen] swolweth N ; swolwyth H ;  
 swolleth C ; swolwen P ; swelleþ *all other MSS.* : þere of han] haueth  
 theron P ; þeynne haueth H ; þerof it haþ D : han] haueth H P ; haþ] *all*  
*other MSS.* 8. yit] om. N : witen] write h ; wetyn it Dc F : knowe P.  
 STAN. 22.—1. Noght] Now H : wilfulness] wilnesse J. 2. louen] leuyth  
 H ; om. D : to H P N C] and Rl Ba R M h L ; so D ; om. Dc F. 3. it]  
 and D. 4. of (2)] in Dc : verray] the P : principalles] principyll H.  
 5. falleth H M D De F J P] failleþ L R h Bb ; fayleth Rl N C ; failleth Ba  
 Ch. 8. The wyche that nature aborreth kendly P. [Stan. om. T : fol.  
 om.] STAN. 23.—1. in] om. N H : wise] om. Dc. 2. of] of a H : and  
 refreyneþ] gresyenisse H ; and refraine H. 4. Be] By þe Rl Ba J Ch :  
 onelicke L h] only *all other MSS.* and P. 5. kynde] synne Ba Ch : kynde  
 to] om. D : to kepe and be] be kept and F : be] to be D : be susteyned] to  
 susteyn h ; to susteyned] Ch. 7. not only is] ys not only P. [Stan. om.  
 T : fol. om.] STAN. 24.—1. entencioun] entent D. 4. his] youre D.

And be a verray kyndely gouernaunce  
 Thei schol desiren all-wey for to be  
 As longe as nature haþ þat suffisaunce  
 To kepe þe parties in theire vnite.

(531)

25. There is noght why þou schuldest doute in þis,  
 þat alle þing<sup>t</sup> ne couteitþ kyndely  
 To kepe it-self<sup>t</sup> in ferme *and* stabilnesse,  
 And be corrupt<sup>t</sup> þei [l]oþen vtterly.  
 “Lo now I moste confessen this,” quod I,  
 “For þinges whiche I doubted of bifore,  
 Now I beholde it wele *and* certanly.”  
 ‘And þing<sup>t</sup> þat so desireþ euermore

(532)

26. To stonde allwey in ferme *and* stabilnesse  
 þat selue þing<sup>t</sup> desireþ for to be.  
 And if þis one be voyded, soth if[t] esse,  
 Than is it noght, þou myght<sup>t</sup> þi-self<sup>t</sup> it see.  
 “Ful soth,” quod I. ‘Than alle þing,’ quod sche,  
 ‘Desireth one?’ Quod I, “þat grant I well.”  
 ‘Bot one *and* good, as þou hast granted me,  
 Ben right þe same *and* diuerse neuere a dele.’

(533)

27. “Right so,” quod I. ‘Than alle þing<sup>t</sup> requireth  
 This one,’ quod sche, ‘þat þus may be descryued:  
 Good is þat þing<sup>t</sup> þat eny þing<sup>t</sup> desireþ.’  
 “Noþing,” quod I, “may sother be contruyed.  
 All þing<sup>t</sup> to noght most elles be deryued,  
 As flowyng<sup>t</sup> evire wiþouten gouernour,

PROSA XI, STAN. 24.—6. for] om. F. Stan. om. T : fol. om.] STAN.  
 25.—1. schuldest<sup>t</sup>] shedest H. 2. ne] om. H P: couteitþ] connectyth H.  
 3. and] om. H P. 4. be] bent H; to be P: loþen Ba N C H F J Ch P]  
 boþen L R l R M h Bb Dc. 5. I moste] muste I P: quod] seide N; that  
 Dc. 6. For] For of R: which I doubted of] that in doute were P. 7. it]  
 them P. [Stan. om. T : fol. om.] [l. 3 om. D.] STAN. 26.—1. ferme]  
 fourme D: ifor to stand in ferme stablenesse P. 3. one] ones F; one  
 þing Ch: voyded] voyde Ba: it] in L R h M Bb. 4. myght] maist N P:  
 it] om. N H. 5. soth] loth N: than] that De: þing] om. J. 6. þat  
 grant I] I graunt yt P. 7. granted] graunte J. 8. neuere] nerc P.  
 [Stan. om. T : fol. om.] STAN. 27.—2. þat] om. F J Ch. 3. eny] all P  
 4. sother] sonner D: sother be] be soþer F. 5. most] om. F: deryued<sup>t</sup>  
 dryved Dc. 6. gouernour] generour H.

Ful destitut<sup>t</sup> and of þeire hede depriued ;  
Then were oure ende bot meschief<sup>t</sup> and dolour."

(534)

28. 'And if þere may be founde þ þere agayn  
O thing to wiche alle oþere ben extended,  
Of alle good þis moste be souereyn,  
As he þat all haþ in hym comprehended.'  
"This conceit," quod I, "may noght be amended.  
'My nory dere, now am I glad i-wys  
The poynt now of þi þoght þou hast extendid  
In myddes right of verray soþfastnesse ;

(535)

29. And lo in þis is schewed the plenerly  
The þing<sup>t</sup> whiche þat whilere þou toldest me  
Thow knew it noght.' "And what is þat?" quod I.  
'What is þe ende of þinges,' seide sche.  
'This same þing<sup>t</sup> lo moste it nedes be,  
þat euery þing<sup>t</sup> of kynde desiren schall ;  
And sith þat þis is good, it semeþ me  
þat souereyn goode moste be þe ende of all.'

(536)

METRUM XI<sup>m</sup>

Quisquis profunda.

1. 'Who so will enserchen soþfastnesse aright  
So þat he be deceyued nevir-a-deele,  
The pure clerenesse of his ynnere sight  
With-ynne hym-self<sup>t</sup> he moste reuolue it wele,

PROSA XI, STAN. 27.—7. þeire] om. D: depriued] be priued F. [Stan. om. T: fol. om.] STAN. 28.—1. if] om. N R: may] om. H: founde] founded L R M h Bb. 2. which] whom P. 4. all hap] hath all N Dc. 5. I] she H P. 7. now] om. D. 8. In myddes right] Right in þe myddest P. [Stan. om. T: fol. om.] STAN. 29.—1. is schewed the] is the shewyd Dc: the] om. D. 2. The] To D: þat] om. N T H D Ch P: whilere pou] pou whilere Ch. 3. knew] knowest N. 4. þe ende] pende R h: seide] quod F. 5. This same þing<sup>t</sup>] þese same þinges F: þing<sup>t</sup> þinges J: lo] om. T. 7. is] om. T H: it] as T M: me] thee Dc. 8. þe ende] pende h. [l. 1 om. T: fol. om.] METRUM XI, STAN. 1.—1. Who so] Who Dc: enserchen] serchen T. 2. So þat he] And wyl not: þat] om. D: be deceyued] deceyued be M: nevir] natt T; noght H. 3. ynnere] inward P. 4. reuolue] resolute N D: it] om. P.

And all his þoghtes trendlen as a whele,  
 Leuyng<sup>i</sup> þis erthely occupacioun,  
 And teche his soule to vndirstonde *and* sele  
 Be doom of good deliberacioun

(537)

2. That all þat evir he sekeþ here wiþoute,  
 So trauallynge thise trowþes for to knowe,  
 How hyd it was, all close, it is no doute  
 Right as tresour wiþynne hym-self<sup>t</sup> bestowe.  
 Po þinges þan þat þere were over-blowe  
 With clowde of errour *and* of ignoraunce,  
 It schall to þe be clere[r], as I trowe,  
 þan is þe sonne *and* more to þi plesaunce.

(538)

3. For-why þe corps þat haþ the soule oppressed<sup>k</sup>  
 As with the wi[ʒ]t[e] of his corrupcioun,  
 Ne hath noȝht<sup>t</sup> all dispoyled ne distressed<sup>k</sup>  
 þe light of vndirstondyng<sup>i</sup> *and* resoun.  
 Pere cleueth ȝit a noble porcioun  
 Wiþ-yn þi soule as an abilite :  
 The seed of trouthe in full possessiou[n],  
 Wiche þat wiþ techyng<sup>i</sup> most enforced be.

(539)

4. How myght ye elles iuggen formally  
 Or answer to demaundes þat ye heere,  
 Bot if youre wit conceyued verrelly  
 A lyuely norisshinge of it as it were ?

METRUM XI, STAN. 1.—5. his] thise N H: trendlen] trenden N C F P;  
 trended T H. 6. Leuyng] And leue P. 7. vndirstonnde] wonderstond H.  
 STAN. 2.—1. he] þat he Ba J Ch. 2. So] om. P: this] þe F: trowþis]  
 wordys D. 3. How] om. P: hyt it was] it was had D: close] closed F:  
 is] was D Dc. 4. self] om. M D. 5. þan] om. T: þere] ere T H; om.  
 F; erst P. 6. With] With pe P: clowde] clowde; T P: of (2)] om. H P.  
 7. to þe be] be to the T: clerer Rl Ba H Dc F P] clere N C T M L R Bb  
 Ch: cliere h. [l. 5 om. R, but written later at bottom of page.] STAN.  
 3.—1. corps] course N T H; body P: the] thy N. 2. wiȝte T H Dc P]  
 wit L Rl C R M D Bb F J Ch; witte Ba N; wytte h. 3. Ne (1)] om. P:  
 dispoyled] disposed Rl Ba J: ne] and T. 4. and] and of Dc F P.  
 5. porcioun] proporcione D. 6. an] om. T. 7. The seed] They saide T.  
 8. Wiche þat] The wyche P: wiþ] by T H P. STAN. 4.—1. ye] om. T H.  
 2. demaundes] demaundyr T; demaunder H. 3. if youre wit] ye T H:  
 wit] hert P: conceyued] conteyned P. 4. lyuely] lyfly N H: of it] om. P.

And yit þat Plato seide in wordes clere,  
 If it be soþ as doþ his bokes trete,  
 None other þing<sup>t</sup> ye done when þat ȝe lere  
 Bot as record<sup>t</sup> a þing<sup>t</sup> þat was forȝete.'

(540)

PROSA xij<sup>a</sup>

Tum ego Platoni.

1. "To Plato," seide I, "must I nede assent,  
 For twyes now ȝe han remembred me  
 Of þing<sup>t</sup> þat first<sup>t</sup> was fro my mynde went<sup>t</sup>  
 As be my bodily contagiouste ;  
 And sen I stode eft-sone in this degree  
 Of heuynesse I had it eke forlorne."  
 'If pou,' sche seide, 'wilt byholde *and* see  
 To þing<sup>t</sup> þat pou hast graunted here beforne,

(541)

2. Thow schalt recorde also to þi science  
 þat þing<sup>t</sup> þat whilere þow seid þow knewe it noght.  
 "And what?" quod I. 'Be whiche gouernementes  
 This worlde,' quod sche, 'is in þis revle i-brought.'  
 "I am," quod I, "remembred in my þoght  
 Of myn vnkunnynge, þat I was be-knowe,  
 And þogh I haue as now conceyued oght,  
 More plenerly yit wolde I lerne of yow."

METRUM XI, STAN. 4.—5. yit] *om.* N; thynge H P Bb (*altered from* yit); though D: in wordes clere] in thy manere P: A thynge that Plato in his wordes T. 6. doþ] *om.* T. 7. None other] No Nother H: No thynge elles do ye when ye lere P. 8. as] as a D. PROSA XII, STAN. 1.—1. I (2)] *om.* N: nede] nedes Rl Ba D H J: assent] consent P. 2. twyes] *om.* D: ȝe han] I haue N. 3. went<sup>t</sup>] y wente N P. 4. bodily] body Rl Ba N C D Bb (*but altered to bodily*) Dc J Ch; bodyes F. 5. sen] sith T H D P: eft] *om.* T: eft sone] eft sones F: in this] to his R. 6. I had it eke] eke I had it R: eke] also h. 7. wilt] wilt now N C H; will newe T. 8. To þing þat pou hast] To things of pe P: þing] þyng; T: beforne] to form D. STAN. 2.—1. recorde also] also recorde T: science] sentence D. 2. þat (1)] *om.* T H P: þing<sup>t</sup>] Thynges P: þat (2)] *om.* D; wyche P: whilere] *om.* T: whilere þow seid] thou seide whilere D P: it] *om.* D. 3. whiche] *om.* T H: gouernement<sup>t</sup>] gouernemense F: gouernementes P. 4. worlde] wordle H: is] *om.* Dc: i broght<sup>t</sup>] broght T D. 6. þat] whiche D. 7. conceyued] perceyued P: oght<sup>t</sup>] nouȝt N. 8. wolde] wyl Dc: lerne] lere C yit wolde I yet F.

(542)

3. ‘Whilere,’ quod sche, ‘þou douted noght at all,  
 Lo þat þis worlde be god gouerned is.’  
 “Nor now,” quod I, “ne nevire here-after schall,  
 As in þat matter ben in dowte i-wys ;  
 And what resoun enduceþ me to this,  
 In schort I schall yow schewe as semeth me ;  
 Now loke youre-self yf I conceyue amys.  
 This worlde,” [quod] I, “þat stant in þis degree

(543)

4. Of partyes dyuerse *and* contrariouse,  
 As euery wight may vnderstonde *and* fele,  
 In suche a forme myght neuere accorde þus,  
 Bot if þat one conioyned euerydele  
 þat so diuerse ben, this wote I wele ;  
 Ne so conioyned myght þey noght endure,  
 But if oo kepere were perpetuele.  
 þe same dyuersitee of þaire nature

(544)

5. So discordant schulde euere apeyre *and* schende  
 And all disioyne, as semeth in my þoght,  
 Bot-if þere were a gouernour of kynde  
 To kepe all þis þat is togidere broght.  
 Ne suche a certeyn ordire myghte noght  
 Of nature so procede in ordinaunce  
 To moven so, bot he þat all haþ wroght  
 Schulde haue it holly in his gouernaunce.

PROSA XII, STAN. 3.—1. Whilere] Wherfore N : douted] doustest Rl Ba N F J : at] atte D. 2. Lo] How D Ch (-w inserted later) : þat þis worlde] what is worde T; þat is wordle H : god] om. D. 3. Nor] No N: Ne H P: ne] ner F: here] om. T. 4. As in] Al yo Ch: ben in doute] neuer be a doughtyd T; neuer be yn doute H. 5. enduceþ F. 6. In schort] þen shall Ch (*but altered by diff. hand to quod shee*). 7. conceyue] perceyue P. 8. worlde] wordle H: quod] þat L h M : þat] om. D : þat stant] standyng P: degre] daunger T. STAN. 4.—2. vnderstonde] consayve T. 4. þat] the T: euerydele] myght þey noght endure Rl Ba J Ch: þat so diuerse ben this wote I wele F. 5. pis] þat T: But þat one conioyned myght þey noght endure F. 6. Ne so conioyned miȝte þey not acorde well F. 7. þe same dyuersitee of þaire nature F. 8. But if oo kepere were perpetuele F. [*l. 4 om. Dc. Part following conioyned in l. 6 mistakenly put after conioyned in l. 4 Rl Ba J Ch.*] STAN. 5.—1. schulde] om. Rl Ba Dc F: euere] ayther T H; om. P: apeyre] empeyре N: schende] shynde Rl. 2. all disioyne] diuysion all Ch: disioyne] disioyned Dc. 3. a] o H; one P. 4. togidere] to gedres H P: broght] y broughte F. 5. ordire] othere T. 6. nature] matir R. 7. all haþ] haþ all H: wroght] brought T H. 8. holly] om. T; hole D.

(545)

6. Theire mouyng is so faire *and* ordynate  
 In tymes, stedes, [sp]ace *and* qualite,  
 And suche effectes causeþ eke algate,  
 þat wonderfull is euery wight to see.  
 þan is þere one þat þis dyuersite,  
 Hymseluen stable, *so* disposeth alle;  
 And who so doth all þis I say þat he  
 Is god; þat vsed name I wil hym calle."

(546)

7. ‘Sith þou,’ quod sche, ‘ might þis bihalde *and* feele,  
 I trowe I schal wiþ litell besynesse  
 Ful hole *and* sound þe maken see full wele  
 Thy kynde cuntre full of blisfulnesse.  
 Bot þat we han purposed here er this  
 Let vs beholde. Haue we noght longe ago  
 Thus seide þat suffisaunce is blisfulnesse,  
 And eke þat god is blisfulnesse also?’

(547)

8. “Right so,” quod I. “And yit hym nedeyt nocht,”  
 Quod sche, ‘unto þis worldes gouernaunce,  
 For if he of wiþouten neded oght  
 He had[de] þan no plener suffisaunce.’  
 “Fro þis,” quod I, “þere is no variaunce.”  
 “Hymself allone all þing<sup>t</sup> disposith þan?”  
 “I may,” quod I, “now make no voydaunce.”  
 “And god is good, as we deduced han?”

PROSA XII, STAN. 6.—1. Theire] That D. 2. tymes] tyme D: stedes] stede D: space P] places Ba J; place other MSS.; space & qualite] and and De. 3. causeþ] caused Dc: eke] also h. 4. is] hyt ys P: wight] om. J. 5. þis] is wiþoute F. 6. so] that so D. 7. I say] seid I J. 8. þat] þis P: vsed] selfe T H: I wil] wol I F. STAN. 7.—1. might] maye D: þis] om. F: þis be-halde] be-holde this T; þis halde M. 3. hole] om. T: þe maken] make þe D: see] and se T; to see P. 4. full] o ful D. 6. we] om. C Bb (*but inserted later by diff. hand*). 7. Thus] om. T H P. STAN. 8.—1. yit] pat N T H. 2. worldes] wordly P. 3. oght] nought N: neded] he needed F. 4. hadde N C h] had L Rl Ba T R M D; hadd H. 5. Fro] For T h. 6. disposeth þan] dispose can D. 7. now] om. N T D; not H: no] non T: voydaunce] avoydaunce T. 8. deduced] endued T [l. 3 om T.]

(548)

9. "And þis I me remembre well," quod I.  
 'Be gode þan he gouerneþ all,' quod sche,  
 'For sith as þou hast' graunted sewyngly  
 He þat is good disposeþ all perde,  
 Hymself allone moste he nedes be  
 Right as it were a rulere or a sterne,  
 Hymselfe stable euer in oo degree,  
 þat all þis worlde incorrupt' doth gouerne.'

(549)

10. "Full well," quod I, "acorde I vnto þis.  
 And lo whilere as be suspeccioun  
 I trowe ye wolde þe same haue seide i-wys,  
 And preued þis in youre conclusioun."  
 'I trowe it well, for þyn inspeccioun  
 Is more ententyf' þan it was afore.  
 As to behold a trouth and good resoun,  
 Bot þat I schal þe schewen furthermore,

(550)

11. As clearer it is *and* open to þi sight.'  
 "And what?" quod I. "þat knownen fayne I wolde."  
 'Sith god,' quod sche, 'if we bileyuen right,  
 So with þis sterne of bounte, as I tolde,  
 Gouerneth all *and* rewleþ as it scholde,  
 Thise þinges all be naturel entent'  
 Ben wilfully subiecte *and* vndirfolde,  
 Obeyinge vnto his gouernement.'

PROSA XII, STAN. 9.—1. And] And me T H: þis] þus D: I me] om.  
 T H : I me remembre] also remembre I : well] will H. 2. þan] þat D.  
 5. allone] om. F: moste he nedes] nedes muste he N C T. 6. it] om. F:  
 rulere] piller D: or] of F P: sterne] sterre T H; stone D. 7. euer] euer-  
 more T H. 8. worlde] wordle H: incorrupt' and corrupt J. [ll. 6, 7  
 om. first N (*inserted later in margin*).] STAN. 10.—3. ye wolde þe  
 same] the same ye wold P. 6. afore] before P. 7. a] om. F: and]  
 or D. 8. þat] yett D. [l. 5 om. h.] STAN. 11.—1. As clearer it is]  
 Hyt is as clere P. 2. knownen] to knowe h ; knownen fayne] fayn knowe  
 H: knownen fayne I wolde] fayne wolde I knowe T : fayne] seyn Rl Ba  
 F Ch ; fay N. 3. if we] that N. 4. So] om. P: sterne] sterre  
 T H : of] and Ba F J Ch: bounte] bounde T. 5. all] om. N: it] he P.  
 7. vndirfolde] vndir floed J. 8. vnto] alway vnto P: gouernement]  
 gouernemence N.

(551)

12. "This is," quod I, "full trewe and necessary,  
 For elles were no blisfull gouernaunce  
 If þat it were a yok to þing contrary  
 þat noȝt obeied to his ordynaunce."  
 'Than is þere noȝt þat doth þaire obseruaunce  
 To kepe itself in ordire of nature,  
 þat may enforcen wiþ contrariaunce  
 Ageyn þeire god?' Quod I, "No creature."

(552)

13. 'What if so þat ageyn þis gouernaile  
 They myght enforcen hem of frowardnesse?  
 Might þay ageyn þeire god in þat availe,  
 Whiche þat be right of verrey blesfulnesse,  
 As we beforne han seid, all-mighti isse?  
 "In sothe þey myght avayle not," quod I.  
 Quod sche, 'Pan is þere noȝting, as I gesse,  
 þat may or will wiþstonden kyndely

(553)

14. This souerayn good, what wilt þi-self suppose?  
 I seyde, "No!" 'This souerayn good,' quod sche,  
 'All þinges then full softly doth dispose,  
 And myghtily all þingi gouerneþ he.'  
 Quod I, "Noght onely it deliteþ me  
 As in þe somme of youre conclusiouн,  
 Bot eke þe wordes whiche þat vsen yee,  
 Wel more þei do me dilectacioun,

(554)

15. In so ferforth þat in myself I schame,  
 And of my foly foule I am confused

PROSA XII, STAN. 12.—1. is] is thus T. 2. elles] h: no blisfull] nobyll T. 3. þingi] thinges T: If no yoke were to thynges contrary P. 4. noȝt obeied] wyl not obey P. 5. þaire] his D F. 6. it] them P. STAN. 13.—1. þat] om. Ba Dc F J Ch: þis] his H. 3. ageyn] om. T H. 4. þat] þat they. 5. beforne han seid] hane saide beforne T. 6. In] ffor H: avayle not] nat avayle T D. STAN. 14.—1. This] That T: what] om. T H. 3. then] ben Rl Ba T H h; om. T: softly] soothly T H h; setelli F; swetly P. 5. it] om. T: it deliteþ] I delyte P. 7. eke] om. P: vsen yee] ye vsen T; ye vse to me P. STAN. 15.—1. In] And T; Evyn Dc: in (2)] om. F Ch: in myself I schame] I may myselfe shame T: myself I] I myselfe F. 2. foly] selfe T.

So hye a thing to reprehende or blame,  
 And þat I haue so masedliche i-mused<sup>t</sup>  
 þat man of god was vtterly refused,  
 And þat he hadde hym noght in gouernaunce.”  
 ‘Suche fables,’ quod sche, ‘han poetes vsed;  
 As þou hast herk<sup>t</sup> þat whilom were geauntes

(555)

16. Whiche wolde haue made þaire way vp into heuen  
 And hyhe hilles gan to bilden faste;  
 Bot god sent doun a þonder or a leuene  
 And all theire werk vpon þeym overcaste,  
 And so þei were wiþstonden at þe laste  
 Lo be þe myght of souereigne god benygne,  
 Whi[ch]e for theym all disposed<sup>t</sup> so in hast  
 As þeire desert<sup>t</sup> was worþy and condigne.

(556)

17. Bot wilt þou now þat we togidres dryue  
 Thise resouns all and into one hem bryngē,  
 And perauenture of þat strook as blyue  
 þere may of trouþe a litel sparke sprynge?  
 “Now sey,” quod I, “as is to youre likyng!”  
 ‘We seyn,’ quod sche, ‘þat god almighty is.’  
 ‘Sith he of all,’ quod I, “is lord and kyng,  
 þere is no wight þat is in doute of this.”

(557)

18. ‘And he,’ sche seide, ‘þat is so full of myght,  
 Is any maner þing<sup>t</sup> þat he ne may?’

PROSA XII, STAN. 15.—3. reprehende] reprevyn Dc: or] and D.  
 4. masedliche i-mused<sup>t</sup>] mased high & mused D: i mused<sup>t</sup>] y missed N C:  
 mused T H Dc. 6. he] om. F: hadde] hath T: in] in hys P:  
 gouernaunce] gouernauntes N. 7. fables] fable D: poetes] portes M h.  
 8. Whilom] som tyme P: were] om. P: were geauntes] was geaunte Dc:  
 That whilom were as thowe hast herde geaunty D. STAN. 16.—  
 1. Whiche] om. M: waye<sup>t</sup> T: into] to Ba N F J Ch. 2. hilles]  
 hill T: bille h: to] they D. 3. or] and C Th: or a leuene] certeyn P.  
 4. And] om. h: theire] om. H: ouercaste] caste T. 5. at þe laste] attalaste  
 Dc: þe] om. h J P. 6. Lo] om. P: of] of our T; of the F J Ch: god]  
 and M 7. Whiche] While L h M Bb: for] from N: all] om. T.  
 8. peire desert<sup>t</sup> was] þei were Dc. [l. 8 om. D.] STAN. 17.—1. now] om.  
 F: togederes] togedre P 2. Thise] The D: resouns] om. D: and] om. Dc.  
 4. sparke] sperkyll T H D F P. 5. is] it es Dc. 6. seyn] seme h.  
 7. of all quod I] quod I of all F: all] al thyng D: quod I D. 8. no  
 wight] noght Rl Ba N C Ch: none F. STAN. 18.—1. sche seide] sheide  
 she Rl: so] om. D. 2. Is any maner þing<sup>t</sup>] Is ther eny thing T P.

"Nōping," quod I. Quod sche, 'Now sey me right.  
 May god do eny euyl?' I seide, "Nay."  
 'Lo þen is evil nōping! I dar wel say,  
 Sith he þat is almighty may it noght.'  
 Quod I, "Wheþer do ȝe skorne or elles play,  
 And haue [me] to þis laberynt ibrought?

(558)

19. Youre resouns weyuen [y]e so wondirly,  
 In maner like þe hous of Dydalus,  
 Full hard for to resoluen *and* vnplye.  
 Youre resouns ben so hyhe *and* curious  
 þat to my wit it is full merveillous.  
 Where ȝe gon out ye entren eft anone,  
 And euene þere as ye haue entred þus,  
 þe same wey ye passen out eftsone.

(559)

20. A wonder compas haue ȝe knet *and* folde  
 Of þe hye devyne symplicite,  
 For þus whiler when ȝe began, ye tolde  
 Of blisfulnesse *and* of felicite ;  
 þat souereigne good was it ye seiden me,  
 And þat also in souereyn good it is :  
 þat god was souereyn good þo seide ye,  
 Also þat he is perfit blisfulnesse.

(560)

21. And for a gift ye took me þis þerto :  
 þat n[o] wight myght haue verrey blisfulnesse  
 Bot yf [h]e were in manere god also  
 Be lyknesse in possessing of þat blisse.

PROSA XII, STAN. 18.—3. Nōping] Nay P : now] om. T H. 4. seide] say N Dc. 6. þat] om H. 7. elles] om T; ell H. 8. haue me T H] haue ye J; have other MSS. : laberynt] labour Rl Ba T H D Dc F J Ch P; labouryng N M h: i broght] it broght Ba De F J Ch P; me brought D. STAN. 19.—1. weyuen] weyen h: ȝe] þe L R h Bb; om. M D. 2. Dydalus] dedalus N F; didalus H h; Dydalous T; didalons J; om. D. 3. for] om. T H D F: and] and to F. 5. wit] reason T: full] to M. 6. ye] entren] yenter T. 7. euene þere] there evyn T: haue] beu P. STAN. 20.—1. haue ȝe] he has T; haue H: ȝe] ys P. 2. þe] þis T H: symplicite] ym plycyte P. 4. and off] that is T H D (*altered from* and of by other hand) P. 5. was it] it was T H: was it ye seiden me] what it es ȝe toldyn me Dc: it] in J. 6. in] my N: good] om. Ch. 7. þo] ye T. STAN. 21.—1. gift] gyse J: took] tolde T; to F: þis] thus H. 2. no] ne L R: haue] om. D. 3. he] ye L R M C Bb: manere] om. T H. 4. Be] In H: Be lyknesse in] In lykenesse & in T; Be likelynesse of P: þat] his P.

And furthermore also þe seiden this :  
 Lo þat þe forme of verrey perfight goode,  
 It is þe substance of þis welfulnesse  
 And eke of god, lo þis I vndirstode.†

(561)

22. Ye seide also, as vnto my conceyt,  
 þat good and on all [o] thingþ schulde be,  
 Whiche euery kynde of þinges most eouoit;  
 þat god eke with þe sterne of his bounte  
 Gouerneth all þe vniuersite,  
 And all moste to his gouernaunce alowte ;  
 þat euel ys noþing also preued ye,  
 Noght sekyng here to resouns of wiþoute,

(562)

23. But wel ye han vnplied þis *and* preued  
 Be skilles þat ben knownen openly,  
 And eueryche makeþ other be billeued,  
 Thei knytten so in compace sotelly.”  
 Sche seide þan, ‘I pley not sikerly,  
 But þat we han whilere of god besought,  
 Now haue I schewed the here þat is so hye  
 And grettest þat in herte may be þoght.

(563)

24. For of substance devyne þe forme is þis :  
 þat he may noght augmenten ne decresse  
 Be no foreyne þyng, þe sothe it is,  
 And all yit he conceyueth neuerþelesse.

PROSA XII, STAN. 21.—5. this] thus D. 6. þe] om. H: verrey] om. T H. 8. of] þe Dc: god] good Dc Bb (*but altered by different hand to god*): lo] om. T: þus] this T: þus I] I thus D: vndirstode] vnderstonde all MSS. and P. STAN. 22.—1. as] om. H: vnto] to T D F. 2. and] in N: o N C F P] om. other MSS.: be] they be P. 3. Whiche] þe which F; That P: kynde of þinges] thyng of kynde D: þinges] þing Dc. 4. eke] also h: eke with þe] with eketh D: sterne] sterre T. 5. all þe] all thys hole P. 7. þat] om. T H: no þing also] also no thyng D. 8. here] om. T: of] fro P. STAN. 23.—1. wel] om. P: vnplied þis] þis vnplied T F P: þis] om. H: preued] y preued P. 3. eueryche] euery T D: be billeued] to be leyyd T: to be beleued D F P. 5. sikerly] securly T H. 8. þat in herte] in herte þat T: þoght] soght h. STAN. 24.—1. of] in T. 2. may] ne may T H: ne] om. J: decresse] decreee T; om. J. 3. þe] þat N T D. 4. yit he conceyueth] conceyveth yett he T: conceyueth] conteyneth F P.

Bot right [as] seide Perymenides :  
 þe rounde wheele of þinges all aboute  
 He meveþ, zit hym-selfen is in pees,  
 And meveþ noght at all, it is no dowte.

(564)

25. If I haue þe schewed skilles goode *and* mete  
 Noght fro withouten forth, but verrely  
 Wiþynne þe þinges where of þat we trete,  
 To wonder now þou hast no cause why.  
 For þou hast herd *and* red, as suppose I,  
 This sothfast sentence, Plato seide it lo,  
 þat wordes moste be cosyns kyndely  
 To þinges whiche þei ben referred to.

(565)

METRUM xij<sup>m</sup>

ffelix qui potuit.

1. ' Full blisfull is þat man þat may beholde  
 þe brighte welle of verrey blisfulnesse,  
 And wel is hym þat may hymself vnofolde  
 Fro bondes of þis worldly wrecchidnesse.  
 The poet Orpheus wiþ heuynesse  
 Hys wyfes deth haþ [w]eyled wepyngly,  
 And wiþ his songes full of drerynesse  
 Made wodes for to renne wonderly.

(566)

2. He made stremes stonden *and* abyde ;  
 The hynde fered not of houndes fell,

PROSA XII, STAN. 24.—5. Bot] But yett D : as T H F P] so Dc ; om. *all other MSS.* : seide] om. D : Perymenides] Pyramenides Rl Ba F J Ch ; Perymonides N. 6. wheele of þinges] thynge of whelys D. 7. is in] in his T : in] in þe Dc. STAN. 25.—1. If] om. D : þe schewed] shewed þe P : skilles] skylle Dc. 2. forth] soughte T H P : but] om. Rl Ba N C Dc J Ch Bb (*but inserted later by different hand*). 3. Wiþynne] But wiþ in F : þat] om. T. 6. This] Sith H : seide] seith D : lo] so T. 8. whiche] om. T H. METRUM XII, STAN. 1.—3. may] may so H. 4. Fro] For T : pis] om. D : worldly] wordly D Dc P. 5. wiþ heuynesse] with a heuy herte T. 6. weyled] veyled L C R Bb ; wayled Rl Ba N T H M D h Dc F J Ch. 7. drerynesse] carefulnesse P. 8. wodes] wordes N : renne] ryng T : wonderfully] wonderfully T H ; ful wonderfully P. STAN. 2.—1. stonden] to stonde T. 2. fered] ffery T : fell] fele H : The hynde also fered of no perel P.

Sche lete þe lyoun lyen by here syde ;  
The hare also ne dred[de] noght a-dell  
To see þe hound, hit liked hym so wel  
To here þe songes þat so lusty were ;  
And boldely they dorste togidres dwell  
þat nevire a beste had of otherfe feere.

(567)

3. And when þe loue gan brennen in his brest<sup>t</sup>  
Of Erudice moste hote *and* feruently,  
His songes þat had so many a wylde best<sup>t</sup>  
So meke made to lyuen comynly,  
They myghte hym not conforten vtterly.  
Of hyhe goddes gan he to compleyn,  
And seide þei deden wiþ hym cruelly  
That þei [ne] sent hym noght his wyf ageyn.

(568)

4. He wente þan to houses infernall  
And faste his strenges þere dressed he,  
And sowned out þe swete songes all  
þat he had tasted<sup>t</sup> of the welles thre,  
Whi[ch]e þat his modres [w]ere, Calliope  
þat is goddesse *and* chief of eloquence,

METRUM XII, STAN. 2.—3. Sche lete] But suffered P: lyen] to lye P:  
But stille abode bi here side F. 4. ne] om. T M Dc F: dredde] dred L R  
M Bb: Nether the hare dreded nere a dele P. 5. hound] hounde; T Dc:  
hit liked hym] hym lyked it D: hyn] theym P. 6. þe] þes P: songes]  
soundes T; sownde H. 7. boldely] bodily F J: they dorste togidres]  
to-gedere; durste they T H: togidres] to geder Rl Ba N D F Ch. 8. þat  
nevire a beste] that maner of bestys D: a] om. T H: had] so hadd H; then  
had P. [l. 3 om. Rl Ba Dc J Ch Bb (*inserted in margin in other hand*).  
F (*line of scribe's own inserted*).] [*In Ba J Ch pat joyful song may no tongue  
telle written at end of stanza to make up number of lines.*] STAN. 3.—  
1. when] then T H: brennen] kindle P. 2. Erudice] Eurduredice T H;  
his wife P: hote and feruente] feruente & hotely T. 3. had] herde F.  
4. Se meke] So tame meke T H: So meke made] Made so meke P. 5. hym  
not conforten] it conforte D. 6. hyhe] his N: gan] and h: he] hym Dc  
to] then P. 7. deden] deled P: wiþ] to D. 8. ne H] om. *all other  
MSS. and* P: sent hym] hym senten N; did send hym P: noght] om.  
T H: wyf] om. M. STAN. 4.—2. þere] om. T; þan M. 3. þe] of  
the C: swete] om. Dc. 4. welles] wele T H; well h: thre] cliere h.  
5. Whiche N C T H] While L R Ba M D h Dc Bb; Whiles Rl J Ch:  
modres] modre M D: were T H] dere *all other MSS.*: Calliope] Thalyope  
D: Of his moder dere Caliope P. 6. þat] Whiche D: is] is a Dc:  
chief] wel D.

To wordes þat most piteous might be,  
As sorwe had toght hym be experiance,

(569)

5. And loue also þat doubleth heuynesse.  
To helle began he his compleynt to make,  
Askyng mercy þere with lawenesse  
At þilke lordes of the schades blake.  
And Cerberus þat woned was to wake,  
Wiþ hedes thre *and* helle yates kepe,  
So hadden hym þese newe songes take,  
The swetnesse made hym for to falle on-slepe.

(570)

6. The fur[ie]s þat ben vengoures of synne  
And surfetoures smyten so wiþ feere,  
For heuynesse þat þis man was ynne,  
They gan to mourne *and* weped many a tere ;  
Ne þo þe swyfte wheel had no powere  
To torne abowte þe heed of Y[xi]oun ;  
Ne tantalus, for thryst all-pogh he were  
Forpyned longe, wattere wolde he none ;

(571)

7. The gryp þat ete þe mawe of Tycius  
And tired on it longe tyme before,  
This song to hym was so delicius  
He left it of *and* tired it no more.

METRUM XII, STAN. 4.—7. To] With T: most piteous might] miȝte  
moste piteouse F: piteous] preciouse N. 8. sorwe] sore N : toght hym be]  
geuen hym full P: taght] caste T: be] wiþ F. STAN. 5.—1. Loue] om  
Dc: doubleth] dulleth T. 2. began he] he began Dc F: began] gan D:  
he] om. D: his] is H: to] om. F. 3. lawenesse] lowlynnesse N T H M  
D P; lawnesse R. 4. þilke] Theke] T; the P: the] thes P: schades]  
shadowe; T D; shadwis H; shadowis P. 5. Cerberus] Cerabrus D: woned]  
wont N: woned was to wake] was wonte for to take T. 8. The] That  
the: hym] theyme D: for to] om. P: for] om. T H F: on slepe] a slepe D  
h F; and slepe J. Ch. [ll. 4-8 om. Rl: fol. om.] STAN. 6.—1. furies  
N H] ffuryous T; fuyres other MSS.: þat] whiche D: ben] be the T:  
vengoures] vengerous Ba N Ch vengerousses H; vengeresse P; venierours  
F. 2. so] soore T; se D: wiþ] om. D. 4. weped] wepe D Dc; kepe J.  
5. Ne] And P: po] om. N; to T H D: wheel] wheles F. 6. heed] he N:  
Yxioun] Ixion N; Ixyon P; Yoon h; Iaoun Dc; Yaoun all other MSS.  
7. all] om. T: all pogh] he þought H: þogh] ȝif N; þoght J. 8. For  
pyned] Y peyned P: wattere] yet water P. [Stan. om. Rl: fol. om.]  
STAN. 7.—1. Tycius] Tucius T Dc. 2. on] om. M: on it] vnhit F: on it  
longe tyme before] longe tyme on hute afore T: tyme] ther P. 3. to hym  
was] was to hym T H Ch. 4. it (1)] om. T H; there D: it (2)] on hit T H.

And when þat Orpheus had mourned sore,  
Than seide þe juge of helle peynes strong<sup>i</sup>,  
“ Pyte me haþ [con]uy[er]t, I will restore  
This man his wyf þus wonnen wiþ his song<sup>i</sup>.

(572)

8. Bot with a lawe þis gift wil I restreyne,  
þat vnto he thise bondes haue forsake,  
If he beholde vpon his wyf ageyne,  
Hys wyf fro hym eftstone will we take.”  
Bot who to louers may a lawe make,  
For loue is rather to hym-self a lawe !  
When he was neygh out of þe bondes blake,  
He turned hym and Erudice he sawe.

(573)

9. Allas he lost and left his wyf behynde.  
This fable lo to ȝow perteyneth right;  
For ye þat wolde liften vp youre mynde  
Into þe hyhe blisfull souereyn light,  
If ye eftsones turne doun youre sight  
Into þis foule wrecched erthely dell,  
Lo all þat evire youre labour haþ yow dight  
Ye loose it when ye loken into hell.

Explicit liber tertius Boecij de consolacione philosophie.

METRUM XII, STAN. 7.—6. Than] To H: peynes] peyned Ba F Ch.  
7. conuyct] convicte D P; cōmytt T H; quyt all other MSS. 8. þus]  
þis H: wonnen] wan he N T P; woman D: wiþ his] ys wiþ Dc. [Stan.  
om. Rl: fol. om.] STAN. 8.—1. wil I] I wylle D; restreyne] refrayne T  
H P. 2. he] hygh T H; om. h; hure Dc. 4. fro hym eftstone] eft  
sonys from hym D: eftstone will we take] eftsones wyll frome hym be take  
T H: eftsones shall be take P: eftstone] eftsones Ba Dc F J: we] he Ba J Ch.  
8. Erudice] euery Diche T; eure diege H; Erudis P. STAN. 9.—1. Allas  
he lost and left] And att the laste he lefte T: left his wyff] his wyff lefte D.  
2. to ȝow perteyneth right] pertayneth to you by righte T. 3. wolde]  
wil D: vp] vpon H. 4. hyhe] om. D: blisful souereyn] souereyne blisse  
T H. 5. sones] sone Ba D Bb: doun] adoun N. 6. wrecched erthely]  
erthely wrecchyd T H: wrecched] and fals D: erthely] erthe Dc. 7. evire  
youre] your evere Ch. 8. loose] losen N; leesyn Dc: it] om. T H. [Stan.  
om. Rl: fol. om.]

## PREFACIO TRANSLATORIS IN LIBRUM QUARTUM ET QUINTUM

(574)

1. O hyhe *and* riche tresour of science  
And wisdom which in god eternally  
Conceyued is, so þat his iugementes  
Ne mowe not be enserched certanly,  
Neither þe wey be knownen vterly  
Be whiche this wonder worldes gouernaunce  
He kepith in suche a certeyn ordenaunce !

(575)

2. Who wist his wit when he þis world began ?  
Or who was he þat was his conseillour ?  
When noþing was, who was þat gaf hym þan,  
To whom he is in daunger as dettour ?  
Of hym is all, for he is creatour,  
Be hym it is þat all þing is susteyned,  
In hym is all þing kyndely conteyned.

(576)

3. Lo of so hye a mater for to trete  
As after þis myn auctour doth pursue,  
This wote I well, my wittes ben vnmete  
The sentence for to sauie in metre trewe.  
And noght-for-thi I may it noght eschewe,

PREFACE IV, V.—STAN. 1.—2. And] Of Ba: in god] om. T H. 3. Con-  
cleyued] Conteyned P: iugement;] iugementce Ba; iugentes F; iugementes P.  
4. ne mowe not] ffor now noght N: ne may not T; may not P: enserched]  
enserched C: certanly] vterly Dc. 5. Neither] Noþer F: þe wey] thay  
T H: be] ne N: knownen] founden P: vterly] verily D: Be whiche men  
knowyn the way certaynly Dc. 6. wonder] om. T H; wonders P: wonder  
worldes] worldes wonder Dc: worldes] wordles H; wordly P. 7. certeyn]  
om. N. [Stan. om. Rl: fol. om.] STAN. 2.—1. wist his wit] will it  
wete T: wit] wille D: þis] þe F: world] wordle H. 3. who] he: was  
þat] om. F: þat] he þat T. 4. he is] is he T: is] was N D: as] or F P:  
dettour] doctour h. 7. þing] om. N T. [Stan. om. Rl: fol. om.]  
STAN. 3.—1. Lo] ffor M; om. P: mater] mater D. 4. The] This Ch: in]  
om. R. 5. noght-for-thi] Yet for that P: it] om. T.

Ye ben þe cause why I mote don thus  
And schewe myseluen here presumptuous

(577)

4. Of hap of fortune *and* of destine,  
þat marred hap full many a mannes mynde  
Supposyng' þat oure kyndely liberte  
Thus to *and* fro must allwey turne *and* wende,  
So þat oure werkes to a certeyn ende  
Constreyned ben wher þat we will or noght,  
So þat none oþer-wise þey may be wroght.

(578)

5. To speken of devyne purveaunce  
þat all þing' knoweth or it be bygonne,  
No worldly wight may haue þat suffisaunce  
With all þe wit *and* clergie þat þei konne,  
No more þan perce þe myddes of þe sonne  
As wiþ þe litell vigour of þaire sight' ;  
Well myche more it passeth mannes myght.

(579)

6. And þat we stonden in oure arbetrie,  
As fully set in verray liberte,  
So þat we mowe chesen wilfully  
Bothe good *and* euel, bothe wel *and* wo to be ;  
And yit þat god is his eternyte  
So knoweth all þat evire schal betide ;  
Who can thise two compownen *and* devide ?

PREFACE IV, V, STAN. 3.—6. þe] om. N : why] why þat H: mote] muste N C T. 7. seluen] self N : here] om. Ba J. [Stan. om. Rl : fol. om.] STAN. 4.—1. Of (1)] O N : hap] schap Dc : of (2)] om. Ba T J Ch. 2. full] om. F J Ch : mannes] om. D. 3. Supposyng'] Wenying P : kyndely] kynde F. 4. Thus to & fro must] Muste to & fro N : and] om. T H : wende] wynde N ; om. T H. 6. wher þat] whether T F ; wheþer þat H D : we] they T ; om. H. 7. may] om. T : wroght'] brought N. [Stan. om. Rl : fol. om.] STAN. 5.—1. speken] speke now P. 2. þing] om. D : be] om. T Ch. 3. worldly] worldly T H Ch P. 4. and] and the M ; of F J. 5. myddes] middel F. 6. As] om. P : þe] a N. 7. it passeth mannes myght] that passeth yet ther mygth P. [11. 1, 2 om. Rl : fol. om.] STAN. 6.—1. þat] þan D : we] om. R. 2. fully] full N : And fully ben y put at liberty P. 3. mowe] may T P : wilfully] willingly P. 4. euel] ylle T ; wo P : both (2)] om. T. 6. So] om. P : evire] om. T. 7. com- pownen] compounde T.

(580)

7. It is noght elles bot þat oure desire  
 Wolde kyndely þat conseyt comprehendē;  
 Right as we seen a litell flaumb of fuyre  
 How scharp it makeþ it seluen to ascende,  
 And noght-forpi it failleþ of his ende,  
 And is full fer fro theder þat it scholde,  
 So may we þinke or telle what we wolde.

(581)

8. Bot fuyre right of mouynge of nature,  
 Beholde how scharp it makeþ it *and* light,  
 And also ferforth as it may endure,  
 How it enforceth for to stye vp-right.  
 Bot we wolde haue noght elles but a sight,  
 And knowe the height of goddes priuete,  
 And will oure-self all-wey in erthe be.

(582)

9. To þe þat art þe welle of sapience,  
 All-myghti lord, þis labour I comyt;  
 Thogh I be fer fro craft of eloquence,  
 Enforce þou my connyng *and* my wit  
 This matter for to treten so þat it  
 Be to þi honour *and* to þi plesaunce;  
 So take it lord in-to þi gouernaunce.

PREFACE IV, V, STAN. 7.—2. comprehendē] reprehende T H. 4.  
 makeþ] shappeth P: it seluen] hymself H. 5. noght forpi] neuert heles P.  
 6. fer fro theder] suer to thyder T H: þat] as D: it] ȝe N. 7. we] þe Rl;  
 ye F: we þinke] þenken we M: þinke] þenken Rl Ba R J: þinke or telle]  
 telle or þenke F: or] and P. STAN. 8.—1. fuyre] suere T; syre Dc: of]  
 of the H P; om. F: mouynge] tellyn T: of (2)] hye D. 2. Beholde] Loke  
 P: it] hyt self P: &] a N. 3. also] so Ba F J Ch; as N. 4. How]  
 om. P: stye] ffe T H; stere F. 5. we] om. N: wolde] om. M; wol D:  
 haue noght elles] nat ellys haue T. 7. will] whyle H. STAN. 9.—  
 1. þe (2)] om. Ba F J Ch H. 2. labour] mater Dc. 3. craft] caste T.  
 4. my (1)] me with T; me H: my (2)] with T. 5. for] om. T: treten]  
 entretyn T. 6. to (2)] om. D.

## INCIPIT LIBER QUARTUS

(583)

[PROSA ja]

1. And when my maistresse philosophie,  
Kepyng<sup>i</sup> alwey hire sobirnesse of þ chere,  
This song<sup>i</sup> had songen wonder lustelye,  
So þat full sad alwey hire wordes were,  
I gan to speke *and* seide in þis manere ;  
Noght all forgetyn myn oppressioune,  
I made hire make an interrupcioun.

(584)

2. "O soueraigne gidoresse of verrey light,  
Youre reson<sup>s</sup> ben so myghti and so fyne  
Anon to þis, and open to my sight<sup>t</sup>  
As in þaire speculacioun devyne,  
Whiche as ye seide, for anger *and* for pyne  
Forgetyn was *and* fall out of my þoght<sup>t</sup> ;  
Bot ȝit beforne vnknownen were þei noght<sup>t</sup>.

(585)

3. Bot þis is most my cause of heuynesse :  
So good a gouernour as hauen we,  
How þere may ben so myche wickednesse  
And suffred so vponysched to be.  
How wonderfull is þis, now deme ye ;

PROSA I, STAN. 1.—1. my] *om.* R. 2. Kepyng<sup>i</sup>] Kepeth T : hire] the N : of H P] and T D ; and hire other MSS. : chere] chiere Rl Ba. 3. wonder] *om.* T ; right H. 4. alwey] *om.* T. 6. Noght<sup>t</sup>] Now T : myn] of myne] T. STAN. 2.—1. O] *om.* N : gidoresse] gaderers T H ; gederesse P. 2. reson<sup>s</sup>] sesouns M. 3. Anon] Al on P : to (1)] *om.* D. 4. speculaceoun] spectatyon H. 5. anger] anguishe P : for (2)] *om.* J. 6. and fall] for and all R : fall] full N ; fallyn Dc : my] youre T. 7. Bot] Ben H : ȝit] ȝif Ch ; *om.* P : vnknownen] beknowen Rl Ba N Dc J Ch Bb (*but altered to vnknowen*) ; we knownen R : onbeknownen F. STAN. 3.—1. most my cause of] the cause of my moste T D. 3. wickednesse] hevinesse T H. 4. to] for to D P. 5. is þis] this is T : þis now] now þis h : now] as N ; *om.* T H : deme ye] demeth me H.

And þis wel more encresēþ my doloures,  
þat wickednesse regneþ in his floures.

(586)

4. And now noght onely vertu wanteþ mede,  
Bot felons han defouled it *and* schent,  
And in þe stede of synne *and* cursidhede,  
Now vertu bereth peyne *and* ponymouschement.  
Bot in þe rewme of god omnipotent  
þat seeth all þis *and* onely good he will,  
I may compleyne *and* wonder well be skill."

(587)

5. Than seide sche þus : ' A wonder þing' it were,  
Abhominable *and* verrey monstruouse  
If as þou feynest *and* supposest here,  
In a so well disposed lordes house,  
If vesselles þat ben riche *and* preciouse  
Schulde so despysed *and* defouled be,  
And foule vessel be made in preciouste.

(588)

6. Wot sikerly,' sche seyde, 'it is noght so,  
For if þo þinges stondeth fermelye  
That we before þis haue consented to,  
Now by the helpe of souereyne god on hye,  
Of whom † we speketh here ententyflye,  
Thow schalt here-after fully knowe *and* seen  
þat goode folkes all-wey myghty been,

(589)

7. And wicked folkes vnmyghti þere ageyne,  
Ne mede may fro vertu noght disseuere ;

PROSA I, STAN. 3.—6. wel more encresēþ] encreseth wel more D : my] our T. 7. wickednesse regneþ] wikked men reigne D : floures] foloures C. STAN. 4.—1. now] om. N. 2. felons] felenyes N ; felowe; T H : han defouled it & schent] hath devouryd and shedd T : defouled] defended D : it] om. H. 4. peyne] þe peyne T H P. 6. seeth] settyth T : onely] om. T H : will] wys T. 7. and] om. T. STAN. 5.—1. þus] om. T F. 2. Abhominable & verray] fful horrible and ful P. 4. a so well] so well a h : a so] also N C (l inserted later) : disposed] a disposed T. 5. vesselles] vessels T: riche] se riche T. 6. so] om. P: despysed] disposed Rl Ba N : defouled] fouuled T. 7. vessel] vesselles h Dc F: made] had N C T H P : preciouste] preciouuse Ch. STAN. 6.—1. Wot L R F J Bb] But Rl Ba N C T H M h Ch P. 2. þo] two N ; that tho D. 3. þis] om. T. 4. on] in T ; om. Dc. 5. we speketh here T H P] here we speketh *all other* MSS. 6. fully] om. F. 7. goode] goddes F. STAN. 7.—1. folkes] folke T D.

And þat þere is no vice wiþouten peyne,  
 And goode folk of welþe failen nevire,  
 And wicked folk ben infortunat evire,  
 And myche þing<sup>t</sup> þat to þin hertes ese  
 Avaylen schal and thi compleynt apese.

(590)

8. Now here beforne I haue þe schewed<sup>t</sup> expresse,  
 As þou hast herde *and* seen it plenerly,  
 Wiche is þe forme of *verray* blisfulnesse  
 And where þou schalt it fynde verraly.  
 Lo all this ouerpassen now will I,  
 Wiche þat we moste ouer-passe nede,  
 And to my purpose faste I schal me spedē.

(591)

9. Unto þi home I schall þe schewe a way,  
 And pennes schal I pycche into þi mynde  
 þat it arisen into heighth may,  
 Al heuynesse laft *and* put behynde.  
 And cariage my-self<sup>t</sup> I schal þe fynde.  
 My path I wil þe lede be þe hand<sup>t</sup>  
 All hole and sound in-to þyn owne land<sup>t</sup>.

(592)

METRUM j<sup>m</sup>

Sunt etenim penne.

1. 'Full swifte been my fetheres in þaire flight,  
 þat stieng<sup>t</sup> into hyhe heuene ariseth,

PROSA I, STAN. 7.—3. þat] *om.* N: is] *om.* h: vice] synne T H. 4.  
 folk] folkes H: welþe] welthys T H P: failen] fele N; ne fayle h Dc.  
 5. infortunat] i fortunnyd T; y fortuned H. 6. And] That N: þat] *om.*  
 T: þeyre T: hertes] hert is H: ese] yese F. 7. compleynt] complainent T H. STAN. 8.—2. herd] saide T: seen] tolde T; seyen F.  
 5. Lo! Now Rl Ba N Dc F Ch: all] as T: now] laten N; all h. 6. moste  
 ouerpassen] overpasse mot D. 7. faste I schal me] I shall me faste J:  
 faste] as faste T: schal] will T. STAN. 9.—1. þi] mine D: home] howse  
 T H: a] þe P. 2. pennes] pennus N; pennys T: schal I pycche] picþ  
 Rl P; put T: into] in F. 3. arisen into heighth] shall aryse into lyght  
 D: heighth] heighg Rl Ba J Ch; hyh T; hit H; the hight h; hye F. 4.  
 laft] lassid Dc; last Ch; behynde] oute of thy mynde T. 6. lede] lede yn  
 T. 7. into] in N; to h: land] londe bringe F. [ll. 5, 6 in reverse order L  
 Rl Ba N C H R M h Bb F J Ch; in correct order T D Dc P.] METRUM I,  
 STAN. 1.—1. swifte] briȝte F: my] theire D. 2. stieng<sup>t</sup>] stinghe D: into]  
 and to P: hyhe] *om.* Dc ariseth] ryseth P.

And when þey be into a mynde i-pight<sup>t</sup>  
 þe erthe þen it hateþ *and* despiseth  
 And settetþ all at noght as he deviseth.  
 The speere of eyre he passeth all aboue,  
 Behynde hys bak he seeth þe cloudes houe.

(593)

2. That mynde also þe spere of fuyre transcendetþ  
 þat is so hoot be mouyng<sup>t</sup> of the heuene,  
 And to þe sterred places he ascendeþ,  
 Thurgh-out þe speres of planetes seuene,  
 And with þe sonne his wey he ioyneth euenene,  
 So att þe laste he meteth wiþ þe olde  
*Saturnus* whos effectes ben so colde.

(594)

3. Lo is this sotill mynde made a knyght<sup>t</sup>  
 Of god þat is the souereyn sterre clere,  
 And so the cercle of the sterres bright  
 þe whiche ye may beholde on nyghtes here,  
 With his recours he passeth all inferne,  
 And in theire speres [he] byholde[þ] wele  
 þe maner of þeire mouyng<sup>t</sup> euerydele,

(595)

4. And wel he wot þat goddes ben þei noght.  
 The hyest heuen he leueth hym behynde  
 Til þat he haue arayseed vp his poght<sup>t</sup>  
 A-none to hym þat auctour is of kynde.  
 This worthy light<sup>t</sup> he putteþ in hys mynde,  
 þat of þis rounde world<sup>t</sup> is lord *and* kyng,  
 þat keþeth *and* gouerneth alle þing<sup>t</sup>.

METRUM I, STAN. 1.—3. And] Wich P: into] in D: ipight<sup>t</sup>] pight T H  
 D. 4. it] he T 6. eyre] fyre T H; thayer D; erthe J. 7. seeth]  
 setteth N; sett H; sestis T. STAN. 2.—1. fuyre] feer Dc. 2. hoot]  
 grete D. 3. to] in T: places] place T D. 4. Thurgh] poruh Rl Ba:  
 Thurgh out] By P: out] om. T.: speres] spere T D: of] eke of Dc. 5. he]  
 his Dc: his wey he ioyneth] he ioyneþ his way F. 6. att] atte D: olde]  
 holde T. 7. *Saturnus*] Satourne N. STAN. 3.—1. is] it D. 2. þat]  
 whiche D: souereyn] suffereyn C. 3. cercle] cereles N: serche T; cerche  
 H. 4. þe] om. T H: here] so cliere h. 5. his] om. T H: in fere] yfere  
 N H P. 6. he beholdeþ T H P] beholden *all other MSS.* STAN. 4.—  
 2. heuen] om. T: hym] hem Dc. 3. arayseed<sup>t</sup>] raysyd T. 4. auctour is]  
 is auctour F: is of] of his J. 5. light<sup>t</sup>] knyght N. 6. þis] the P:  
 world<sup>t</sup>] wordle H.

(596)

5. The swyfte cours of sterres meveth he,  
 Juge of thinges bright *and* souereyn,  
 Hym-self stedfast evire in oo degré.  
 If þi wey may reduce the ageyn  
 Vnto þis place, þou schalt þi-self seyn,  
 " Lo here it is þat I so longe haue soght  
 My cuntry, *and* til now I knewe it noght;

(597)

6. Fro hennes I come *and* in þis place right  
 I þynke to abyden *and* to dwelle."  
 And if þe lust to casten doun þi sight  
 Into þis foule derke erthely selle,  
 Behalden myght þou þere tyrantes felle  
 Wiche þat of wrecches ben i-dred full wyde,  
 Out of þis lond exiled for theire prydē."

(598)

PROSA ij<sup>a</sup>

[Tum ego.]

1. Tho seide I þus, "O maistres[se] swete  
 Ful grete þinges ye behoten me,  
 Ne I ne doute it noght þat ȝe be-hete  
 Ye may performe, what-so-euer it be.  
 Now þat ye han of youre benignite  
 Begonne þus *and* to þis poynt i-broght,  
 Holde on youre processe *and* ne tarie noght."

(599)

2. 'Lo first,' sche seide, 'þou schalt conceyue *and* take  
 þat goode folkes alwey myghti ben,

METRUM I, STAN. 5.—1. cours] couſ H.      2. of] of all P: thinges]  
 kyngys D.      3. oo] one P.      5. þi-self] myselfe T H.      6. so longe haue  
 haue so longe T H: soght] y sought H F.      7. and til now] vnyll and now  
 T; vnyll now H: knewe] know J Ch.      STAN. 6.—1. hennes] hens H;  
 whens D; heuens J P: come] came P: right] a righte T.      2. abyden]  
 byden R.      3. to] om. h: casten down] cast a doun R; canſt adoun h:  
 þi] þi selue T.      4. derke erthely] erthly derke T.      5. myght] myghtest  
 P: myght þou] maystow N; þou myȝte F: myght þou þere] þere myght þou  
 T.      6. Wiche] om. P: i-dred] dred T F.      7. lond] place N: exiled] ex-  
 clude T H: pryde] bryde H. [ll. 5-7 om. J: fol. om.] PROSA II, STAN. 1.—  
 1. O] ou P.      2. behoten] beheyten Rl Ch; behighete D Dc F.      3. ne (2)]  
 om. H F: it] om. D.      4. so] þat P.      5. þat ye han] syth ye haueþ P.  
 6. Begonne] Styred P: þus] this T: to þis poynt] in this sentyth T.      7.  
 ne] om. T H F P: ne tarie] tarye ye D. [Stan. om. J: fol. om.] STAN. 2.  
 —1. Lo] So T: conceyue] perceyue P.

And wicked folk vnmyghti *and* forsake ;  
 þat on þow myght lo be þat other seen.  
 For sith þei be contrarious hem bytween,  
 Bothe good *and* euell, þou myght conceyue it wele,  
 If goode haue myght, þe evell hap nevir a dele.

(600)

3. And if so be it þat þe febilnesse  
 Lo of þe wicked man to þe appere,  
 Thow myght noght douten of the myghtinesse  
 Than of þe goode folk in no manere.  
 Bot þat my sentence be byleued here,  
 Be bothe waies þinke I to procede,  
 And to my purpose first I schall me spedē.

(601)

4. The full effecte of mannes werkes alle  
 Stondeth onely in þinges two,  
 Lo will *and* myght; *and* if it so befalla  
 þat eyther want, þere may noþing be do.  
 What schal he do þe wight þat will is fro?  
 It is a feble werk þat schal be wroght  
 Of hym þat wiþ his will ne doth it noght.

(602)

5. And what of hym of whom is myght away?  
 As to þe werk þe will may not avayle.  
 Right so as þou myght beholden euery day  
 Men wolden myche þing of whiche þei faile;  
 Who so wanteþ of effecte of his trauayle,

PROSA II, STAN. 2.—3. folk] folkes N. 4. þow myght lo] thou mayst  
 lo P; maystow lo N; lo thowe myghti F: seen] y sene F: That oon by  
 the othere thou myȝte sene T. 5. sith] sothe T: hem] om. N. 6.  
 euell] eruell T: myght] mayst N P: conceyue] perceyue P: it] om. T. 7.  
 myght] noughe D: evell] devyll T H: neur a] no T H; ner a P. STAN.  
 3.—1. so be it] hyt so be P: it] om. N T H D. 2. man] om. T: to] om.  
 De. 3. myght] mayst P: noght] om. M. 4. Than] om. P. 6.  
 þinke I] I thinke thus D. 7. first] fast T H. [Stan. om. J: fol. om.]  
 STAN. 4.—1. effecte] effectes T H D. 2. onely] allonly D; holly P:  
 in] in thise T H. 3. Lo] om. P: it] om. Ba. 4. pat] þe T. 5.  
 What] That Ch: he] be Rl Ba N H De F: do] done H: þe] ne Rl Ba F Ch;  
 no N; þat] þe D: is] vs T. [Stan. om. J: fol. om.] STAN. 5.—1. of  
 (2)] fro C P: is myght] is myght is T: his myghte is D. 2. werk] value  
 T: will] myghte D h. 3. so] om. C T H: myght] mayst N P. 4.  
 wolden] welden Rl Ba; wolde do D whiche] þe butt T. 5. of (1)] of the  
 N; the T H D F: effecte] fete T.

And may not haue ne wynne þat he wolde,  
þat man vnmyghti most þow nedes holde.'

(603)

6. "And þis," quod I, "is to me clere i-now;  
Full trewe it is þere may no man denye."  
'Bot of þat other,' quod sche, 'doutest þow,  
þat what he will he doth it spedily,  
Is he noght myghti?' "Yis, in sothe," quod I.  
'Than euery man is myghti þere he may,  
And þere he may not, weyk it is no nay.'

(604)

7. "This graunt I wel," quod I. Sche seide þan,  
'Haue we noght here beforne concluded this,  
þat of þe hole entenciou[n] of man,  
Excited so to dyuers besynes,  
The naturel entent is blisfulnes?'  
"And þis," quod I, "record I in my wit;  
Be demonstracioun ye preued it."

(605)

8. 'Myght þou,' sche seide, 'also remembre þe,  
Of blisfulneese and good when þat we speke,  
How he þat wilnep to felicite,  
This verray good so he desireþ eke,  
And so þat euery wight þis good doth seke?'

PROSA II, STAN. 5.—6. And] He T: ne] þe Rl Ba Dc F D P; and N: wynnen] biluyng D; wynnyng Dc F: þat] as T: he] þay Rl De Ch. 7. powl be N; the C. [Stan. om. J: fol. om.] STAN. 6.—1. quod] om. R: is to me] to me ys P: i-now] I knowe H: And þis to me quod I is clere I know T. 2. Full trewe it is] that hyt is soth P: denye] it denye T. 3. þat] þe P: þat other] the toother D. 4. it] om. T: spedily] spedfully P. 5. he] om. TH: myghti] myghti thann h: yis] þys T; þis R Dc. 6. þere] ther pat T. 7. And] om. TH: weyk] wyrk Rl Ba Ch; myghti Dc; werke TH; werk h; wirke feble F. [l. 7 om. D; ll. 4, 5 in reverse order Dc. Stan. om. J: fol. om.] STAN. 7.—2. here] om. D; eke F: befor[n] tofore D: this] thus D P. 3. Of þe hole entenciou[n] al thentencioun hole h; all þe hole entenciou[n] all other MSS.: of (2)] of a Dc. 4. Excited] Styred P. 5. entent] enten R: blisfulnes] besynesse h. 6. record] recorded F. 7. ye] for ye D: preued] prene T h. STAN. 8.—1. Myght þou] Maystow N: also] om. N; yet P: remembre] gourerne D. 2. and] of h: when] men T H; what D: þat we] we did P. 3. wilnep] wylleþ F P. 4. so he desireþ] theye desiren D: so] om. F: so he] also P. 5. And] om. D: þis] þis þat F.

"Of þis," quod I, "I remembre wel þe nocht,  
It is full faste empresso in my þoght."

(606)

9. 'Than euery man,' quod sche, 'boþe good and ille,  
This is þaire purpos, all indifferent  
This good to wynne.' Quod I, "Unto ȝoure skille  
I moste accorde, it is so consequent."  
'Bot he þat wilneþ after his entent  
This verrey good, is he not good?' quod sche.  
I seide, "Yis, þat moste he nedes be."

(607)

10. 'The good han geten þan þat þei desire?'  
I seide, "So it semeth certanly."  
'And ȝif þe wicked myght, as þey require,  
This same goodacheuen verrailly,  
They myght not þen be wicked?' "No," quod I.  
'Sith either þan doth þeire besynesse  
To haue þis good, þan sueth it expresse,

(608)

11. Sith þiseacheuen þat þei ben aboute,  
The bad of þeire ententes ben deceyued:  
The goode are myghti þan, it is no doute,  
Lo and þe bad, þeire myght es theym bereued.'  
"This is," quod I, "full playn and fully preued  
To hym þat hap consideracioun  
To kynde of thinges and to good resoun."

**PROSA II, STAN. 8.—6.** I remembre wel L M N Bb] I me remembre Rl Ba C Dc F Ch P; I remembre me T H; remembre we R; remembre wel I D; I remembre wyll h: noght] y noght L M h Bb; oght C. [ll. 3, 4, 5 om. T. Stan. om. J: fol. om.] STAN. 9.—1. boþe] dothe D. 2. is] om. C. 3. good] goode wille T H: I vnto] ye to H. 5. wilneþ] vnnethe T; wynneth H P. 6. is] ye Dc: is he not good] is noughe T H: not good quod sche] om. M: good (2)] myghtie D (*inserted by different hand*). 7. yis] this T H: he] om. Dc: he nedes Bl (but altered by different hand to he nedes). [Stan. om. J: fol. om.] STAN. 10.—þat þei] ther Dc. 2. it] me T: semeth] semeth me H. 4. achenue] escheve D: to obtayn P: verrailly] certeynly Dc (but altered by later hand to verrailly). 5. not] om. H: be wicked] om. h. 6. þan doth] þey done N: besynesse] blisfulnessse Bb (but altered by different hand to besynesse). [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 11.—1. achenue] atteynen P. 2. ententes] entente P. 3. are] ben P. 4. Lo] and lo D: paire myght es theym bereued] her myghtes be hem berevid T H P; is theire myghte bereued D: theym] they N. 5. fully preued] wele y preuid T H P: fully] full F Ch, 7. to (2)] om. T. [Stan. om. J.]

(609)

12. 'But yit,' quod sche, 'this case now I suppose :

þat þere be two men wiche þat kyndely  
Of certayn þing<sup>t</sup> to done haue oo purpose,  
And þer-to þey entenden besily.  
þat one perfourmeþ well and perfightly,  
þat oþer may not done it as he wolde  
Be kyndely menes þat he vsen scholde,

(610)

13. Bot lafte þe verray processe naturele ;

This same werk he þinkeþ to assay,  
But as he schulde he may not done it wele,  
Bot so he counterfeteth as he may.  
Now whiche is here moste myghti, wilt þou say ?'  
"Thogh I coniecte it," seide I, "well i-now,  
More plenerly yit wolde I lere of yow."

(611)

14. 'Sith þat it is of kynde a man to meue,

Will noght his nature þat he scholde go ?'  
I seide, " Yis,† in sothe, as I byleue."  
'Than muste he,' quod sche, 'kyndely for to do,  
Meue hym vpon his feet ?' "Hym muste [s]o."  
'This on his feet may walken as hym oghť,  
This oþer nay, for-why he haþ hem noght,

(612)

15. And on his hondes crepe he will þerfore.

Who is of thise þe strengere, wilt þou seyne ?'

PROSA II, STAN. 12.—1. quod sche this case] this case quod sche T H : now 1] I now N D F: now] om. T. 2. þere] here P. 3. þing<sup>t</sup>] thynges T: to] do H: haue] & haue T H. 4. entenden] attende h. 7. þat] as T. [Stan. om. J.] STAN. 13.—1. þe] þis T H: But leuyng then the processe naturall P. 4. so he] he so F. 5. here] om. T H. 6. I coniecte it] ye consayve it T H: coniecte] coniecte D: seide] quod H: well] wole N; will R J: i now] nowe h. 7. plenerly] playnly h: yit wolde I lere] wolde I leryn yett T; I wold hyt here P: yit] om. h: lere] lerne N H Dc. STAN. 14.—1. þat] om. H; at J: a] of F. 2. Will] Wolde T. 3. I seide yis] Yes quod I P: in N H F P] this in L Rl Ba T R M h Bb Dc J Ch; this is C D: sothe] sothe quod I F. 5. hym (1)] om. D h P: his] hit M: feet] effecte N: hym muste] he most H D P: so] go L M Bb. 6. This] Thus R; Than h: on] vppon h: feet] effecte N: walken] walkyng T H. 7. nay] maye not D: nay for why] may not for P: why] om. T. STAN. 15.—1. on] vppon h. 2. thise] om. T H; thilke D: wilt þou] will ye T.

“Hold on,” quod I, “youre processe forthirmore.  
 No wight may doute of this I am certeyn,  
 Bot þis man whiche haþ his lymes tweyn  
 þe strenger is þan he þat wanteth bothe,  
 He moste confessen þat will sey þe sothe.”

(613)

16. ‘Bot then þis verrey souereyn good,’ quod sche,  
 ‘To whiche þey hauen bothe affectiou,  
 The goode *and* badde, *and* boþe þey stonden free  
 To wynne it be þaire trewe elecciou,  
 þe goode it wynneth be perfecciou  
 Of vertu whiche is mene kyndely  
 þat souereyn goode schulde be wonne by.

(614)

17. The þ badde it seken in a wrongfull wise,  
 And for þat skill þey wynne it noght a-dele  
 Be sondre lustes of þaire couetise  
 Whiche ben no verrey menes naturele  
 Wherby þis good þei schuldeacheuen wele.  
 Whethir is it þus, or elles demest þow ?  
 “To nayen þis, wot I not why ne how.

(615)

18. Of þat we han concluded vs bytwene,  
 It is full clere *and* open to my sight  
 þat goode folk schulde alwey myghti bene,  
 And badde men despoyled all of myght.”  
 ‘Now þou before [m]e,’ quod sche, ‘rennest right’

PROSA II, STAN. 15.—4. may doute of this] of this may doute H : of this] *om.* T : I am] *om.* h. 5. whiche] þat T H P. 6. þe] More P. 7. confessen] confessyn it T : þej y R. STAN. 16.—1. verrey souereyn good] souerayne and very goode T H : good] *om.* R. 2. hauen bothe] bothe haueth P : bothe] noon Dc. 3. and (1)] and þe Rl F J : and (2)] to F. 7. þat] whiche D : schulde] so shulde N P. STAN. 17.—1. The] They L R M Bb. 3. þaire] *om.* T. 4. no] *om.* D. 5. acheueyn] enchevyn T H ; atteynen P. 6. Whethir] Wher J : þus] this T : elles] ell H ; els not D : Is this now true or otherwise demest thou P. 7. nayen] vayen H : To wayen þis for voyce I nott why nor how T. STAN. 18.—3. folk schulde alwey myghti] folkes alwe shulde myghty T : That alway the good myghty ben P. 4. badde] had R : men] *om.* T H : despoyled] dyspysed J : And the bad clene withowten myght P. 5. befor me H P] be forme L C R h M Bb ; before T D ; forme Rl Ba De F J Ch ; byform N : quod sche] *om.* T H : rennest H P] ; then rynnyst T ; remeuest other MSS.

So þat of the I take a iugement  
As doth a leche be his pacient.

(616)

19. When þat nature is reyseð and redressed  
So þat it may wipstonde the maladie,  
He hopeth þan the langour is repressed  
And þat he may be cured esily ;  
Of the same iugement haue I.  
To vnderstonden now I see þe prest,  
I schall þe forthire ledien ar I rest.

(617)

20. Beholde and see þe grete febilte  
Of tho þat vice han in affeccioun,  
þat þay may noght atteyne in no degree  
Wherto þat naturell entencioun  
Well neighe compelleth theire inclinacioun.  
What woldest þou trowen if it so befell  
þat þis nature þat helpeþ hem so well,

(618)

21. Whiche may vnneþis be wiþstonded oght,  
What if it schulde forsake hem euyerdele ?  
Lo then in soth þey myghte do right noght,  
Neither evill ne good, now vndirstonde me wele.  
Considre now and in þy wittes feele,  
þe cursed men þat lusten all in synne,  
How myche vnmyght þei bringe hemself[en] inne.

(619)

22. It is no litell þingþat þey requiren,  
Ne iape of noght of whi[ch]e þey faile so ;  
þe souereigne height of þinges þei desiren,  
And ȝit atteyne may þey noght þerto ;  
And þat effecte þe wrecches faileth fro,

PROSA II, STAN. 18.—6. take] make Dc. STAN. 19.—4. be] om. H.  
[l. 7 om. D.] STAN. 20.—1. febilte] deblyte P; felicite H. 3. may]  
om. T. 4. entencioun] condycioun T H. 6. so] om. F. 7. so] om. M.  
[l. 1 om. T.] STAN. 21.—1. Whiche] þat P: wiþ stonded] wip slonden  
Rl Ba N D Dc F 2. if] om. D. 3. þey] he F. 5. ffele] felle H.  
7. self] seluen N; selfen P; om. D. STAN. 22.—2. of (2)] om. Dc F;  
the T: whiche] while L M h. 3. þe] To T. 4. ȝit] lo P: may þey]  
om. T: noght] no thyng T. 5. effecte] affecte D: þe] om. T: faileth]  
faileth H P.

For whiche þey laboren þoþe day and nyght;  
 þe gretter good forlorn), þe lesse myght.

(620)

23. In whiche þing it may be seen on-oon  
 How myghti ben the gode, it is no nay.  
 For right as he þat on his feet may goon,  
 Trauallen w[i]ll in-to so fer he may  
 Till þat he fynde þat forþer is no way,  
 þat man a myghti walkere wilt þou deme;  
 And in þe same wise so wolde it seme

(621)

24. That he whiche may so hyhe a þing achieue,  
 Aboue whiche may noght desired be,  
 Me þinke I may be verray resoun preue  
 þat vtherly a myghti man is he.  
 þat other syde þan esy is to see,  
 For there ageyn lo will it sewen thus :  
 þat myghtless ben þe bad[de] vicious.

(622)

25. And wherfore is it þat þei sewen vice,  
 All vertu so forlet[ying] vtherly,  
 Bot for þei ben vnkonnynge and vnwise,  
 And good þei konne not chesen verrely.  
 No thing is lesse of myght, as suppose I,  
 þan is þe blynde vice of ignorauunce  
 þat many foles bringeþ in myschaunce.

PROSA II, STAN. 22.—6. boþe] om. T.      7. gretter good] grete god T;  
 gret gode H: forlorn] y lost P.      STAN. 23.—1. þing] myght T.      3. he] om. N: on] om. N.      4. will] wole N; may Dc; well other MSS.: into] in  
 D: he] as he H: Trauailen vnto ferre as wele as he may T: Trauelyn so  
 far as he wel may P.      5. þat (2) no D.      6. wilt] woldest P: wilt þou  
 pou wilt T.      7. so] om. h.      STAN. 24.—1. whiche] þat T H P.      2.  
 whiche] that D: may noght] nat may T.      3. þinke I] þenkyth he H;  
 thinketh þat he T.      5. is] it is F T H.      6. For there] Further N: lo  
 om. D; then h T: will] wilt J: sewen] shew T.      7. þe] om. N: badde]  
 bad H L R M D Bb F Ch; badde and N J.      STAN. 25.—1. is it] hit is F:  
 it] om. Dc: þat þei sewen vice] þat it sheweth thusse vice T: þei] we D.  
 2. so] om. h Dc F: forletyng D] for to leten Dc F; for leten other MSS.;  
 All vertu so forri lettyn by vneconyng & nat wyse T: All vertu so forletyng  
 beth vnkynnyng & vnwise H.      3. vnkonnynge] vnkynnde R; vnbuxom D.  
 5. as] om. T H P.      6. blynde vice of] vice of blynde T.      7. in] to N D  
 Dc. [ll. 2 and 3 confusedly combined T H.]

(623)

26. And if so be þei vnderstonde *and* knowe  
 That louen vertu schulde a creature,  
 Bot so þaire lustes han hem overþrowe,  
 Than is [it] so þat theire vntemperure  
 Is cause why þat þey may not endure.  
 So freell thei ben, theire lustes for to lete  
 Thei ben full loth, þei semen hem so swete.

(624)

27. And what if be þeire wytting<sup>t</sup> *and* theire will  
 Thei louen vice *and* vertu fallen fro<sup>t</sup>  
 Then will it seme be þe same skill,  
 Noght only þat þei ben vnmyghti tho,  
 Bot þat þei failen for to been also.  
 For tho þat haue for-lete þe comyn ende,  
 Thei failen for to be by verrey kynde.

(625)

28. To many men a wonder will it seme,  
 Sith þat so many wicked folkes be,  
 Theym for to be noght, þat I wolde þeym deme ;  
 And neuerþeles ȝit is it so perde,  
 þat men þat badde ben, þis graunte I the,  
 þat þei ben bad[de] I will it noght denye,  
 And [yit] þei ben noght, pure *and* simplelye.

(626)

29. As if þou sawh a mannes dede careyn,  
 Now woldest þou iugen þat a man it is ;  
 Bot þat it is a dede man wilt þou seyn,  
 And noght a man sympliciter i-wys.  
 And in þe same wise I graunte this,

PROSA II, STAN. 26.—1. vnderstonde] vnderstode T H: knowe] knewe  
 H. 3. han] om. T; of H. 4. is it so T H D Dc F J Ch] is so L Rl Ba  
 C R M h Bb P; is so so N. 5. þat] om. F P. 6. thei] þe Ba: freel] freely T: for] om. T. 7. so] ful T. STAN. 27.—1. be þaire wytting<sup>t</sup>] they her whetyng T H. 3. will it seme] hyt semeth P: seme] wene T.  
 4. Noght] That T H: þat] om. D: tho] to T H. 6. tho] they P: forlefe] forloryn T H. 7. failen] fallen T. STAN. 28.—1. wonder will] wondreful  
 D: will] wolde N. 2. Sith þat] Sith at J: folkes] folke D. 3. þat] om. Rl Dc F: þeym (2)] of hem N. 4. neuerþeles] nethenes h: is it] it is T H. 5. þat] þo H: þis] þus T. 6. will] wolde N: it] om. D. 7. yit T H] om. all other MSS. and P: simplelye] simpelly Rl Ba D: simplie  
 Dc. STAN. 29.—1. mannes] man N: careyn] certeyn N. 2. Now] om. P: iugen] demyn De. 3. þat] om. P: wilt þou] thou wyll T.

BOETHIUS.

Q

þat vicious men ben full of wickednesse,  
Bot absolutly ben þei noght expresse.

(627)

30. The þing þat keþeth þe ordire of þis ende  
Is verrely, *and* if it þat forlete,  
To ben also whiche is hys verray kynde,  
As sewyngly hym moste also forfete.  
So cursed vice theire nature doþ defete.  
But now þou seist me þat þe wicked may  
Doon wickedly; þerof I sey not nay.

(628]

31. Bot þis power dependeth noght of myght,  
Bot of vnþrifty wrecched febulnesse;  
For wickedly may done a cursed wight,  
Whiche if he wolde abyden in goodnesse,  
Than schulde he noght mow do þat wickednesse,  
Forwhi þis wrecchid possibilite  
May noght at all, as þou myght knowe *and* see.

(629)

32. And as we han a litell whiles go  
Assembled here þat wickednesse is noght,  
If wicked men may wickedliche do,  
Than is it noght þat of hem may be wroght.  
And þat [þou] vndirstonde [hit] in þi þoght,  
Whiche is þe strengþe of power *and* of myght,  
Lo þus we haue diffyned now here right:

(630)

33. There is no þing<sup>t</sup> so myghti ne so strong<sup>t</sup>  
As is þis souereyn good.' "Right so," quod I.

PROSA II, STAN. 29.—6. men] *om.* N: wickednesse] wrecchidnesse T.  
STAN. 30.—1. þis] hys C (*thys at first, but altered*) H h. 2. it] he Dc F;  
it þat] þat it D. 3. hys] *om.* Rl Ba F J Ch. 4. hym] he NT H;  
hy D: moste] *om.* J. 5. defete] forfete N. 6. me] *om.* T: þe] *om.* Dc.  
7. þerof] therto P: say] seide N T. STAN. 31.—1. myght] ryght T. 2.  
febulnesse] pevishenesse T. 3. a cursed] a cused D. 4. Whiche if he  
wolde] That if he myght P. 5. mow] may T. 6. wrecchid] wrecches Rl  
Ba F. 7. myght] mayst NP; may Th: knowe *and*] *om.* P. STAN. 32.—  
1. whiles] whyle is Rl Ba; whyle T F J P: go] ago F J P. 4. it] *om.* T.  
5. þou T H P] one other MSS.: hit in H P] in other MSS. 7. diffyned]  
defenyȝte T: now here] here now Rl Ba N C H D Bb F Ch; anon T; now  
ther h. STAN. 33.—1. þing so myghti ne] so myghty thyng and T: ne] nor  
D; and F P. 2. is þis] the the N.

' But soueraigne good may do no maner wrong ? '  
 " I may it noght de[nyen] sikerly."  
 ' Bot who is it þat weneþ folily  
 þat ony man may alle þinges doon ? '  
 " Bot he be wood," quod I, " so weneth noon."

(631)

34. ' Yit mowe þey worchen harm *and* wickednesse.'  
 Quod I, " God wolde þei myghte noght a deele."  
 ' But sith þat he whi[ch]e only myghti is  
 To worche good, all þing[er] he may do wele,  
 In hym all myghtynesse is naturele ;  
 Bot þo þat hauen myght to worchen ille,  
 They may not worchen all þat is þaire wille,

(632)

35. Than is [it] pleyn *and* clere i-now to seen  
 Thise wicked men þat wickedliche may,  
 Full lesse of power *and* of myght þei been.  
 Do þis þerto þat I schal after say :  
 Sith myght is such a þing[er] þe wiche alway  
 Oweth for to be coueit[ed] *and* desired[  
 And euery þing[er] þat is to be required[

(633)

36. To good it moste be referred nede  
 As to þe soueraigne hed and principall,  
 Bot power for to worchen wrecchidhede  
 To good referred may not be at all,  
 It is noght þan þat be desired schall.  
 Bot power schall desired be by right,  
 Than power of þe wicked is no myght.

PROSA II, STAN. 33.—3. maner] *om.* F. 4. denyen] devyne L C R M h  
 Bb. 5. who] lo T H : it] *om.* D Dc J Ch : weneþ] wlyneth h. 6. þinges]  
 thyng T. 7. weneth] semeth F. STAN. 34.—1. mowe] wolde D ; may  
 P : þey] *om.* T. 2. noght] neuer P. 3. sith þat] sith at J : whileh  
 while L M h ; þat P : only] oneli þat F. 4. To worche good] Do worth in  
 goode T. 6. hauen myght] myght han N : ille] all h. STAN. 35.—1.  
 it] *om.* L N R h M Bb. 4. Do] Set N C T H : þis] þus D : þerto] to that  
 T : I schal after] after I shalle the D. 5. Sith] Suyche D : is] þe T : þe]  
*om.* D. 6. oweth] ought P ; oon D : for] *om.* Rl T Dc F J P : coueited]  
 coueit L R h M Bb C. 7. is] as Dc. STAN. 36.—1. It muste be referryd  
 to goode nede T. 3. wrecchidhede] wikked hede Dc. 4. referred may  
 not be] may not be referryd T H D Dc ; may not referred ben P. 6. schall  
 desired be] shal be desyryd T. 7. þe wicked] wickedhede T ; whiced H :  
 myght] wighte D.

(634)

37. Lo of all this it wole appere wele  
 þat myghti ben þe goode folk allone,  
 And wicked folk ben myghti neuer a dele,  
 But wicked *and* myghtles ben þei euerychone.  
 The sentence þan may be conceyued sone  
 Where Plato writeth in þis same wise :  
 Doon þat hem liketh onely may the wise.

(635)

38. For wicked men don werkes þat hem lyst<sup>t</sup>  
 Bot thaire desire may þei noght fulfille ;  
 What þey† desireth þat þeym likeþ best,  
 Forwhi þey doo it be it never so ille.  
 To þaire desire ne may [þei] neuere tille,  
 þe whiche þei seek in lustes *and* delice,  
 For blisfulnesse may not be had be vice.'

(636)

METRUM ij<sup>m</sup>

Quos vides sedere celos.

1. 'Thise grete kynges full of cruelte,  
 So schynynge in þaire purpure really,  
 Sittyng<sup>t</sup> on hyhe in heightes of þaire see,  
 With wylde wordes thretyng<sup>t</sup> cruelly,  
 With blastynge wo[o]d[n]esse of þaire hertes hy,  
 With myche wrecchid wepen be þaire side,  
 Who so wolde fro þise princes full of pride

(637)

2. Dispoyle hem of þaire wrecched veyn array,  
 Beholde *and* see [well] what þey be wiþ-yne ;

PROSA II, STAN. 37.—1. of] for T H : wole] wold J.      2. þe] om. R : folk] folkes D : allone] aboven.      3. wicked] myghty T H.      4. wicked] weke T H P ; evil D.      5. conceyued] perceyued P : The sentence of theyme consayvid may be son T.      6. Where] Where þat P : pis] þe T D : same] om. R.      [l. 7 om. D.]      STAN. 38.—1. þat] what T ; as D.      2. thaire] this h : may] þei noght] they may not yet P : may] ne may N : þei noght] not yay R.      3. þey Rl Ba D F] þeym other MSS. : desireth] delithet T H P : þeym] theye D : likeþ] semetþ P.      5. ne] om. H D h F ; yet P : þei] om. L M R h Bb : neuere] natt T H P : tille] telle Ch.      6. þei seek] þe seken N : and] and in J : delice] delyȝte T ; delites P.      7. not] om. N : had] hidde h.      METRUM II, STAN. 1.—2. purpure] purpull h.      3. on hyhe] om. P : in] in the P.      4. thretyng<sup>t</sup>] thretynge N.      5. woodnesse N C P] wordes all other MSS.      6. wepen] wepyng N T H P.      STAN. 2.—1. wrecched veyn] verry wrecched D: Dispose hem frome her rich aray T. 2. see] see well N H P : þey] þise R.

Though þise ben lordes wonder stout *and* gay,  
 In streyte cheynes ben þei bounde of synne  
 Whiche þat þey may noght fro þeym-seluen twynne.  
 This one lo ledde hys lyf in leccherie  
 þat all þe world hym spekeþ vilanye;

(638)

3. So is he troubled be þis passiouȝ,  
 With wreþþe hys mynde is beten *and* opressed;  
 Or heuynesse haþ drawen hym adoun,  
 Or slipper hope hym elles haþ distressed.  
 Lo suche an hede I trowe is euell i-blessed;  
 þat is encombred with so myche vice;  
 His myght is to be set of litel price.'

(639)

PROSA iiȝ<sup>a</sup>

1. 'Ne sest þow noght þe foule vicious,  
 What filthe hem haþ defiled *and* vnheight,  
 And eek þe goode folk *and* vertuous,  
 How worþely þey schyne faire *and* bright?  
 Of þis it may aperen to þi sight  
 þat wicked folk ne failen neuere of peyne,  
 Ne goode folk þeire mede there ageyne.

(640)

2. That same þing þat meueþ any wight  
 As for to done or worken any dede,

METRUM II, STAN. 2.—3. þise] they N T H P: wonder] *om.* h. 5.  
 Whiche] Fro wyche P: þat] *om.* T H h P, inserted later R: twynne] wynne  
 P. 6. one] *om.* P: lo] inserted later R: ledde] he ledith T: in] on T.  
 7. þe] pys T. STAN. 3.—1. So is he] This so is F: pis] his D. 2.  
 wreþþe] wreche Rl Ba F Ch: wreþþe hys mynde] wrecched mynd he H:  
 beten] bete D; troubled h; letten J. 3. haþ drawen] draeth P. 4. hym  
 elles haþ] elles haþ hym T: distressed] depressed N. 5. euell] ille T:  
 i-blessed] blessed N H D. 6. þat] Whiche D: vice] a vice R. 7.  
 myght] witte; of] at a Rl Ba J Ch; at N C T H h Dc F. PROSA III,  
 STAN. 1.—foule] soule D. 2. defouled] defouled H F: hem defouled D.  
 3. cek] *om.* P. 5. of] and of H: may] *om.* T: to] into T: þi] the  
 D. 6. þat] þat þe P: ne] *om.* P: of] no Rl J Ch; ne F. 7. Ne]  
 Ne the P: peire] of paire D: there] that D. STAN. 2.—2. worken]  
 worchyen T.

þat same þing, I may it say be right,  
 Lo of þe same work it is þe mede.  
 This schall I preue if þou wilt take[n] hede :  
 For rennyng lyeth a garlonȝ for þe game,  
 And he þat renneþ best schal haue þe same.

(641)

3. Bot souereyn good is verrey blisfulnesse,  
 And þat is verray ground and cause why  
 þat any manere þing purposed is.  
 As for to speke of purpose kyndely,  
 Then is þis good purposed comounly  
 For mannes work, a mede for his trauaile :  
 For goode men þis mede may not faile.

(642)

4. Who so lakkeþ good, as semeþ in my þoght,  
 Be called good of right ne may noght he.  
 þe goode then of mede ne faileþ noght  
 Sith þat þeire mede is verrailly bounte.  
 Thogh wicked folk ben wood in cruelte  
 And vsen all þe malice þat þei mown,  
 þe wyse man ne leseþ noght his crown ;

(643)

5. For-why þere is no foreyn wickednesse  
 Of men þat ben so perilouse and proude,  
 þat may bereue þe kyndely worþiness  
 þat longeþ to þe good, it is no doute.  
 Bot if þey hadde it wonne[n] of withoute  
 An other þan myght it take away,  
 Or he þat gaf þat good, it is no nay.

PROSA III, STAN. 2.—3. I may it say be right<sup>1]</sup>] I may sayen bryght T.  
 4. þe same] that P: þe (2)] om. T H; noo Dc; þe very P. 6. lyeth] om.  
 T H: garlonȝ garlong Rl. 7. best] om. F: same] game R. STAN. 3.—  
 2. þat] om. H R: is] is pe H; þis R. 3. þing] work P. 5. pis] it h:  
 good] om. T H F. 6. a] and Rl Ba F J Ch. 7. For] Fro H: may]  
 mowe N. STAN. 4.—2. ne may noght he] he may not be N: he] be M D.  
 3. ne] om. N T H P. 4. þat] om. P: þeire] þe T: his H: verrailly] verrai  
 F: bounte] boughten T; bonate H. 5. folk] om. M: in] and R. 7.  
 þe] Yet þe P: ne] om. Rl R F J Ch P: leseþ] liketh N: crown] gowne T.  
 STAN. 5.—1. foreyn] souerayne T. 2. and] and so h. 3. may] om. N:  
 bereue] bere h. 4. þe] om. N. 5. pey hadde it wonne] it the had  
 wonne M: it] om. N: it wonne of withoute] wonyn it of wonte T H: wonne]  
 won D. 6. it take] taken it N; take it F.

(644)

6. Bot sith þe goodnesse of a worthi wyght  
 Of goode maneres moste be caused nede,  
 When he forleteþ hem, þan is it right  
 þat [he] scholde be despoyled of his mede.  
 Bot forthire in þis matire to procede :  
 Sith alle medes þat desired bene,  
 It is for þei ben goode or as þey wene,

(645)

7. Of hym þat hath þis good [who] will it seyn  
 þat he his mede lakkeþ vtterly ?  
 No wight þat resoun haþ, I am certeyn.  
 Bot what [þing] is this mede verrelly ?  
 þe beste þing and fayrest sikerly  
 þat may be had or herte can devise,  
 This is þat is disposed for þe wise.

(646)

8. A corilare hye and precious  
 þat I the ȝaf whilere remembre the,  
 Whiche all and som þou schalt assemblen þus :  
 Lo sith þat god is this felicite  
 Whiche makeþ folkes blisful for to be,  
 Lo alle tho þat goode werkes vsen  
 And wrecchid vice will vtterly refusen,

(647)

9. And þo þat blisfull been, ȝe vndirstoode  
 As in [a] manere goddes þat þei were.

PROSA III, STAN. 6.—1. Sith] sothe F; sight Ch: þe] om. T H. 2.  
 nede] mede Ba J Ch. 3. hem] it N; þan] þat Dc: is it] hit is F: it]  
 om. N. 4. he] om. Rl C M R Bb P. 6. medes] nedes Rl Dc. 7. as]  
 om. D. STAN. 7.—1. hym] om. N: who P] he all MSS. 3. No  
 wight] None P: þat] om. T. 4. þing D N C T H P] om. Rl Ba R M h  
 Bb De F J Ch L: mede] me N T. 5. and] and þe M. 7. is (1)]  
 is hyt P: disposed] despysid Dc: for þe wise] fro the vice h. [ll. 3, 4 om.  
 D.] STAN. 8.—1. hye] hight T. 2 ȝaf] gan N: remembre] remem-  
 bred H. 3. and] in P: som] om. Dc; summe P. 4. þat] om. T F;  
 this] om. T. 5. Whiche] which þat F J Ch P: folkes] folke T H; om. P:  
 for] om. T. 6. Lo] om. P. 7. vice] vices N T H. STAN. 9.—  
 1. been ȝe] arte þou T; were ye h: ȝe] þou H D P. 2. as] þat T; om. P:  
 in] a N; yn a H D P.

Than is þis gifte þe mede of alle goode,  
 þat no day may consume in [no] manere,  
 Ne anentes it may þer no powere,  
 Ne d[y]m[m]en it another mannes vice,  
 þogh wicked folk purpose it of malice.

(648)

10. Sith it is so, it is wiþouten drede  
 þe wicked may not be wiþouten peyne,  
 For sith þat euel *and* good, lo peyne *and* mede  
 Contrarious ben, þan is it clere *and* pleyne,  
 Sith good is sure of mede, *and* full certeyne  
 þe bad is sure of peynes *and* of wo ;  
 If one be sothe þat oper moste also.

(649)

11. Than is þe goodness of þe goode wight  
 þe reward *and* þe mede of his goodnes ;  
 And to þe wicked be þe same right,  
 Theire peyne is eek þaire propre wickednes.  
 What-euer it be, þan sueth it expresse,  
 þat with such peynes is disesed oght,  
 Wiþ euell he is enfekte, it faileþ nocht.

(650)

12. For ȝif þe wicked wolde þeim-seluen seen,  
 Might þei supposen, as it semetþ the,

PROSA III, STAN. 9.—3. Than] This H: Than is þis] This is þe T: þe] om. De. 4. may consume] consume may F: no D De F P] om. all other MSS. 5. Ne] Nor D: anentes] anyntice N; a nemptes De; amenusser T H; ayenste D; dynymnue P: it] om. J: may þer] þer maye be D: þer] om. T H P. 6. dymmen P] demen Rl Ba N C M h F J Ch Dc Bb (but altered by diff. hand to lassyn); demynt L; lassyn R (*put in space which was apparently left for it*); damnen T; dampnen H: another] ne other T; no other P: Ne deme lasse syn as a nother mannes vice D. 7. purpose it of] hyt wold of ther P. STAN. 10.—3. sith þat] shuche T H. 4. clere] right cleer Dc: and pleyne peyne D. 5. is] is full T: mede] om. T H: and] in T H. 6. peynes] peyne F J C H: of (2)] om. Ch. 7. one] the oon T; þat on H: sothe] sure h: þat oper] the other D; the other P: þat oper moste] the other is T: moste] moste be F. STAN. 11.—2. þe (2)] om. T F: his] this Ch. 3. to þe] vnto T: wicked] wickednesse Ch. 4. peyne is] peynes Rl Ba D F Ch: eek] also h: þaire (2)] of he N; of theire C F Ch 5. it (1)] he N C T H P: it (2)] om. T. 6. is] ys he P: oght] ofte P. 7. enfekte] effect De. STAN. 12.—1. wolde] wole N; will C F C h Bb (but altered by diff. hand to wolde): peym] hym N H: seen] synne T H. 2. supposen] trowen P: it] om. h: the] me Ba N.

þat þei wiþoute bitter peynes been,  
 Whan lo þe vttermeste extremyte  
 Of alle wickednesse *and* cruelte,  
 Noght only haþ affected grevously  
 Bot eke hem hath e[n]fected hugely ?

(651)

13. Bot now be-hald þat oþer part vpon,  
 If any peynes han þe good agreued.  
 Hast þou not lered all þat evire is oon  
 Is good also, as I haue the discreued ?  
 Lo consequently þan it may be preued,  
 As semeþ well, þat euery þing þat is,  
 It most also be cleped good i-wys.

(652)

14. I may concluden þan þat alle tho  
 þat faylen fro þis good rehersed here,  
 They faylen þan for to been also ;  
 þe wicked þan ne be noght þat þey were,  
 For þogh þou see þat mannes body þere,  
 Ful sothe it is, a man he was beforne ;  
 Be wickednesse his kynde he haþ forlorne.

(653)

15. Bot sith þat only vertu *and* goodnessse  
 Abouen manhode may a man arayse,  
 In certeyn þan, who so vseþ wickednesse  
 Benethen manhode doun he doth hym payse.  
 And þogh so be þat many oon hym prayse,  
 Whom þou seest transformed into vice  
 Thow haldest noght a man if þou be wise.

PROSA III, STAN. 12.—3. bitter] better H. 4. Whan] Whome T H :  
 þe] om. T H : vttermeste] vttremust h. 6. Noght] Now H : affected]  
 infected T P; infected M. 7. infected N C M F] infecte T; ynfct H;  
 infected P; effected L Rl Ba h R Bb Dc J Ch. STAN. 13.—1. Bot] hoo b;  
 þat] þe T : vpon] oopen h. 2. han þe good] the good hath T. 3. not]  
 om. Rl Ba. 4. haue the] the haue h: the] om. Rl T F J; hyt P. 5.  
 be] om. h. 6. þat (1)] as T; om. Dc. 7. cleped] om. P: good] so N:  
 i wys] hyt ys no nysse P. STAN. 14.—1. may concluden] am concludyd  
 T. 4. þan] om. T : ne] om. DF; they P. 5. see] saide T; seid H;  
 þat] a F. 6. a man he was] he was a man h: Be] om. N. STAN. 15.—  
 1. goodnessse] gladnes D. 3. who so] whos F: vseþ] loueth T. 4. doun]  
 then T: he] it N H. 5. so] it so H: þat] om. T: hym] doeth hym T.  
 6. whom] whom that H P: transformed] transported N: vice] wyse T.  
 7. haldest] holdest him H P. [l. 7 om. T D.]

(654)

16. Whos lustes brennen all in coueteise  
 And reuen men theire good be violence,  
 I-lyk a wolf þou myght hem wel devise.  
 He þat is so fiers *and* spareþ none offence,  
 Ne what he seith, þat haþ no þ conscience  
 To make stryues *and* discencioun,  
 He is an hound as be comparisoun.

(655)

17. And he þat will awayten pruely  
 Foreyne goodes how he may be-reuen,  
 A fox þou myght hym clepe skilfully ;  
 And whom þat cursed ire doth ameuen,  
 A lyoun as in þat þou myght hym preuen ;  
 He þat is ferd *and* fleeþ wiþ-outen need,  
 An hart þou myght hym calle, it is no drede ;

(656)

18. And he þat vseþ sleuthe *and* ydelnesse  
 And will noght done no werkes profitable,  
 Thow myght hym calle a verrey asse expresse ;  
 And he þat is inconstant *and* vnstable,  
 To foules myght þou holde hym comparable ;  
 And he þat ledeth his lyf in lecherye,  
 A swyn þou myght hym calle skilfullye.

(657)

19. It semeth þan þat he wiche haþ forlete  
 þe lyf of vertu *and* [of] honeste,

PROSA III, STAN. 16.—1. Whos lustes brennen all] Whom lusteþ all  
 brenne F: lustes] luste T: brennen] bryn D. 2. men] *om.* M. 3. I-  
 lyk] Lyk to N; Lyk DF: hem] him F; devise] a wyse D. 4. so] *om.* N  
 T H F P: fers] free D; fiers Bb. 5. þat] he T P: no] none L M T H F  
 J Ch. 6. stryues] stryf N: and] and eke N. STAN. 17.—1 he þat  
 will] he wull þat H: awayten] aueynte N. 3. myght] mayst N: hym  
 clepe] clepe hym T D: clepe] callen P; calle hym h: skilfullly] wilfullly T H  
 5. hym] *om.* M. 6. is] *om.* N: ferd] aserd Rl J. 7. myght] mayst N:  
 it] per T H. STAN. 18.—2. noght] *om.* H: myght] mayst N. 5. myght  
 þou] maistow N: myght þou holde] thow myghte holde T. 6. he] *om.*  
 Ch: in] by N. 7. hym calle] calle hym h: skilfullye] sykerly  
 Ch. STAN. 19.—1. semeth] senen N: þan] wele T: þat] *om.* D: wiche]  
 þat P: haþ] þat D. 2. of (2)] *om.* L Rl Ba C R M h Bb Ch: honeste]  
 honestite C.

To ben a man in þat he [ha]th forfete,  
 And skilfully forlorn þat dignite ;  
 And þere he myghte a god in manere be,  
 Or like to god in lyuynge atte laste,  
 Now is he chaunged to a rude beste.'

(658)

METRUM iij<sup>m</sup>

Vela naricij du[ci]s.

1. 'The south west wynd þat bloweth boystously,  
 The sayles of þe duk Naricius  
 In-to þat ile he blewh full sodenly  
 þat was to hem full hard and perilus,  
 Where þat þe goddes faire *and* vicius  
 þat highte Circes dwelled, as clerkes seyn,  
 Whiche was þe sonnes doghter as þey feyn.

(659)

2. This same Circes to hire gestes newe  
 Sche gaf suche drinkes of enchauntemet  
 So were þei chaunged bothe hyde *and* hewe,  
 As outward vnto mannes iugement,  
 Lyke vnto bestes kyndely different.  
 Lo this in visage was a bore i-lyk ;  
 And þ[i]s lo to a lyoun [m]armoryk

(660)

3. With teeþ *and* clowes waxen out of-long<sup>t</sup> ;  
 And this y-lyk vnto a wolf in sothe,  
 And when he wolde be-wepen all his wrong<sup>t</sup>  
 He gan to yelle as other wolfes doth ;  
 And this full mekely into house goth

PROSA III, STAN. 19.—3. man] may Ch : hath P] doth *all MSS.* 4. for-  
 lorn] forlorn he hath Dc ; hath forloren F. 5. a god in manere be] a gode  
 man be H : in] om. T. 6. to] ton Ch. 7. to] into T H. METRUM III,  
 STAN. 1.—1. boystously] bustly; stoutly R ; soubdeynly D ; boisterly F.  
 2. duk] duk of h : Naricius] Narrycious T. 3. þat] þis T ; the D : blewh]  
 bleugh M : full] them P. 5. goddes] goodes h : 6. þat highte] om P :  
 Circes] Sertez; T ; Cirtes H F Ch: dwelled] om. T H : clerkes] poetes T H :  
 thes clerkes P. STAN. 2.—1. Circes] Cirtes H F Ch. 2. suche] them P :  
 drinkes] drynke D : of] and D. 5. Lyke] om. P. 6. this] thus T : a] to a  
 h : i lyk] lyke RI Ba T H D h J Ch. 7. þis RI N C H D Ch] þese F ; þus  
 Ba T R L M h Bb De J P : lo] lyke T D ; om. h : to] om. D : marmoryk] in  
 armoryk M D R Bb L. STAN. 3.—1. clowes] cleis T H ; nayles P : waxen]  
 worin D : of long] a long N T H D h F P. 2. ylyk] lyk D : unto] to H :  
 in sothe] forsoth T. 3. he wolde be-wepen] he bewreye wolde D : his] pis  
 T. 4. to] om. P : yelle] yolle C. 5. into] in T H.

Full like a tygre of þe lond of Ynde,  
No-þing wiþ mekenesse of þat bestes kynde.

(661)

4. And when þis noble Naryce Vlixes  
Thus was be-set wiþ meschief<sup>t</sup> and dolour,  
Mercurie ȝit hym taghte neuerþeles  
How he schulde sauē hym-seluen with a flour,  
And so hym sauēd fro þis parelouse schour.  
So rewed he þis duk in his distresse,  
He halp hym fro þis perilouse hostesse.

(662)

5. And þogh þat he were holpen of þis hap,  
Hys meyne of þat drynk had take tast,  
Þat some were like to sowes as in schap ;  
Wip swyn of acornes made þei paire past<sup>t</sup> ;  
And all þo were transformed<sup>t</sup> so in hast<sup>t</sup>  
Þat mannes schap and voyce was hem byraft,  
Bot mannes mynde was in hem bylaft.

(663)

6. They weyed of paire transformacioun.  
Bot how þis hond of Circes was ful light<sup>t</sup>  
And we[i]k for all here transmutacioun !  
And eke here herbes of full litel myght,  
Þat chaungen myght þe membres of a wyght !  
Bot þat þe hertes myght [sc]he chaunge noght,  
Theire manly myght<sup>t</sup> was hid wiþ-yinne paire þoght.

METRUM III, STAN. 3.—7. No þing] But not P. [ll. 4, 5 om. D.]  
STAN. 4.—1. pis] the D : noble] worthy T H : Naryce] nory T H : varice h ;  
Narys P. 3. ȝit hym taghte] hym taught yett T : taghte] thought D ; yit  
he taght him R. 4. sauē] haue T H D. 5. sauēd] sauē D : þis] his Dc :  
schour] sence T ; shene H. 6. rewed] revid T : þis] þe N T. 7. halp]  
helpyd T : þis] his H. [ll. 5, 6 in reverse order D.] STAN. 5.—1. of] fro  
H : of þis hap] frome this vnhappe T : þis] his J. 2. pat drynk] the duke  
T : take] tane a Rl Ba J Ch ; tan Dc ; take a h ; taken a F. 3. like to]  
leken P : as] om. D. 4. acornes] acres T H : akerns P : made] had D :  
past<sup>t</sup>] repast Dc. 5. all þo were] all pow þei were Ba (þo altered to pow  
þei by different hand) : were transformel<sup>t</sup>] transformed were Dc : transformed<sup>t</sup>  
transported N. 6. schap and voyce] woyce and shapp T H D : was] was  
in J. 7. was] yet was P : was in hem bylaft] was hem in lafte F : bylaft<sup>t</sup>  
lafte Ch ; ylefte P. STAN. 6.—1. They weyed] Weylyng P. 2. how]  
ow N ; oughte T : Circes] eurys D : ful] om. T. 3. weik] werke Ba M F J ;  
weke P ; werk other MSS. : for] fro N ; of Ch : here] thys P : transmutacioun]  
transformacioun h. 6. pat] om. P : sche] he L R M h P : sche chaunge]  
be chaunged D. 7. wiþ-yinne] om. F. [ll. 3, 4 om. T H ; 1. 7 om. H—  
MS. damaged.]

(664)

7. Bot lo þis venym of vnworthi vice  
 Is myche wors incomparab[e]ly ;  
 They drawen men be lustes *and* delice  
 All hole into þeym-selfe vtterly.  
 So scharp it is, it perseth inwardly ;  
 Thogh no defaute be in þe body founde,  
 Wiþ-inne þe saule it makeþ a perilous wounde.'

(665)

PROSA [iiij<sup>a</sup>]

Tum ego fateor.

1. Then seide I thus. " þis will I wel confesse,  
 þat thise folk þat lyuen viciously  
 And hem deliten all in wrecchidnesse,  
 þogh mannes schap þei hauen noght-forþy,  
 It may be seide well *and* rightwisly  
 As in þaire inward<sup>d</sup> gostly qualite,  
 To verray bestes þat þey chaunged be.

(666)

2. Bot þise þat ben so cruell of þeire will,  
 All goode men to harme þey reioysen,  
 I wolde þey myghte þaire malice not fullfill,  
 Ne so be suffred<sup>d</sup> vertu to destroyen."  
 'In sothe,' quod sche, 'þey may hem noght anoyen ;  
 þat schal I preue by resoun consequent  
 In place here after[ward] conuenient.

(667)

3. The licens whiche þei han as semeth þee,  
 If god þeym schulde be[r]eu[n] or restreyne,

METRUM III, STAN. 7.—1. of] *om.* D: vnworthi] vnthrifly N C T H P : incomparably] incomparably L R N C M. 2. Is] In N C D J. 3. lustes] loues D: delice] delyȝte T. 4. All] of D: hole] *om.* P: in] *om.* N. 5. it (2)] *om.* R. 6. defaute] defence N: þei] thy D; *om.* h. PROSA IV. Prosas iiii<sup>a</sup>] prosa va L. STAN. 1.—1. thus] this F: þis will I wel] I wolde this wel D. 2. folk] folkes Dc. 3. all in] in here Dc. 4. hauen noght] haue not yet D: noght forþy] yet verrely P. 5. well] full well C T H P: rightwisly] rightfully h; rightuously P. 6. inward] worde J. 7. To] Into P: bestes] *om.* P: þat þey chaunged] choynged that they T. STAN. 2.—3. paire malice not] not þeire malice Rl Ba D T J: not] *om.* T. 4. vertu] vertue; T. 5. sothe] pouȝt Ba F Ch: sche] *om.* N: hem noght] nat hem T D F. 7. afterward N C T H P] after L R M h Bb D; after therto Rl Ba Dc F J Ch. STAN. 3.—1. þei han] *om.* T: han as] *om.* H: as] þat T: þee] me Rl Ba N h F Ch. 2. bereuen] releue N; bereue F P; hem be reuyn T H; beleuen other MSS.

Than he releued hem by liberte,  
 Relesyng<sup>t</sup> þaym a parcell of þaire payne.  
 And þerfore this oo þing<sup>t</sup> dar I seyne  
 þat no man may vnneþes well beleuen,  
 The whiche I schall be open skilles preuen :

(668)

4. When þat þe wicked<sup>t</sup> han þaire wille i-wroght,  
 Then ben þey more wrecches sikerly  
 Than þey had ben if þat þey myght it noght.  
 For sith þat he whiche wilneth schrewdely  
 In þat a wrecche † is halden skilfully,  
 A more wrecche is he þat may fulfille  
 In full effecte þe malice of his wille ;

(669)

5. For wrecchid will þat is wiþouten myght<sup>t</sup>  
 As in effecte ne may noþing<sup>t</sup> expresse.  
 And sithen þat [in] euery wrecchid wight<sup>t</sup>  
 Is verrailye his owne wrecchidnesse,  
 For whom þou seest<sup>t</sup> sett all in cursednesse,  
 þat will, and may, and doth it as hym lyst<sup>t</sup>,  
 With threfold<sup>t</sup> infortune he is betwyst.

(670)

6. “To þis,” quod I, “I may consenten sone.  
 Bot þis desire so gretly moueth me :  
 This infortune wickedly to done  
 I wolde þey lakced possibilite.”  
 ‘They schall it lakken hastily,’ quod sche,

PROSA IV, STAN. 3.—3. releued] releueth Rl Ba F J Ch ; relevyng Dc : by] om. R. 4. þeym a parcell] a parcell to them h: a] in D: parcell] party N. 5. þerfore this] furdermore T. 6. may] om. H: well] om. T; well may H. STAN. 4.—1. þat] om. Rl J: i wroght] wroght T H D h. 3. þat] om. T: þat þey] þey had Dc: noght] myght h. 4. þat] om. F: whiche] þat T Dc P; whiche þat h; þe whiche F. 5. a wrecche T H P] he worcheþ all other MSS.: is] his Rl; he is T H: halden] had T. 6. is] than D: he] om. T H. 7. effecte] effectes T; his] theire D. STAN. 5—2. effecte] effectes T: ne] om. H; hit P. 3. in N C T H P] om. all other MSS. 5. all] om. T. 6. and (1)] om. P: may and doth] may do N T: it as] what T. 7. infortune] fortune T: he is] they ben P: betwyst] vnbetwiste T. [ll. 5–7 om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 6.—1. quod] seid Dc: sone] some h. 2. so] loo P. 3. This] Thus T: wickedly] so wickedly P. 4. þey] þat þei Rl Ba J; þem P. 5. lakken] wanten P.

'Perauntre sonner þan þou woldest it seene,  
And eke well sonnere þan hemseluen wene.

(671)

7. For in this brutel lyf þer is right noght  
þat in so schorte termes is constreyned,  
þat of a soule immortale schulde be þoght  
As longe to ben abyden or susteyned.  
þe grete hope of myght in hem bot feyned,  
And all þeire gyves of þeire felonye  
Schal be destroyed vñwar and sodanlye,

(672)

8. And þus schal myschief ende þeire wrecchidnesse.  
Sith þey ben wrecches for þeire cruelte,  
þe lenger þat þey laste in wickednesse  
þe more wrecches moste hem nedes be ;  
And more wrecched ȝit as semeth me,  
Be twenty þowsand fold at my devise,  
If deth ne scholde noght enden þeire malice.

(673)

9. And [ȝif] so be we haue concluded wele  
As of þe infortune of wickednesse,  
If þat þeire malice were perpetuele,  
Than endeles moste be þaire [wrecchid]nesse.'  
I seyde þan, "A wonder þing is this,  
And wonder hard it is to graunten it.  
Be verray force it muste be graunted yit,

PROSA IV, STAN. 6.—6. þou] om. N: perauntre] peraunture T P; sonner] rather T: þou woldest] they wolde D: woldest it] wenest it to T. 7. þan] þen þey F. [Stan om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 7.—3. soule] foule D: in mortale] mortell Rl Ba N Dc F J Ch Bb (but in inserted later by different hand). 4. as] om. P; or] and N; as T; om. D: susteyned] commeyned Rl Ba Dc F J Ch: constreyned (but altered by different hand to susteyned) Bb. 5. hope] hepe J: bot] om. N; be T; for to be h. 6. þeire gyves] the engins P: þeire (1) the D: of] and F J: And all thyng is of thayre falce felonye T. 7. Shul soon de distroyed and sodenly. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 8.—3. laste] dwelle T; liste D: wickednesse] wrecchidnesse R. 4. hem] they T F P. 5. wrecched] wrecches Ba Dc J Ch: ȝit] om. Dc. 6. twenty þowsand] an hundred P: my devise] myderis T. 7. If] If that P. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 9.—1. ȝif] om. L N C R M D h Bb: be] by this N. 2. infortune] informes D: wickidnesse] wrecchidnesse R. 4. moste be] were P: wrecchidnesse T D P] wickednesse all other MSS. 5. is pis] it is N. 7. it muste] host moste F. [l. 7 om. T: Stan. om. H: fol. om]

(674)

10. For to þat I beforne haue graunted now  
 I know it well it is conuenient.'"  
 'Full right,' sche seide, 'and sothely demest þow.  
 Full hard it is to graunten verament,  
 Bot if þou kannest noght verrely consent'  
 As for to graunten þis concluciou[n],  
 Let see ȝit make thy replecaciu[n].

(675)

11. If þou haue graunted any þing amys  
 þat may be founden fallace *and* vntrewe,  
 Or any oþer þing purposed is  
 Whiche þat of verrey resoun will not sewe,  
 Wherby þou myght þis consequent eschewe ;  
 And yf þou kannest noght schewen skilfully,  
 This consequent ne may þou noghte denye.

(676)

12. For [þat I] schal enducen forthirmore,  
 As wonderfull it is wiþouten drede,  
 Bot of þat we han graunted here before,  
 As necessary moste it † sewe nede.'  
 I asked, "What?" Quod sche, 'Now take good hede :  
 More welefull are þe wicked in þeire peyne  
 Than if þey scholde none at all susteyne.

(677)

13. Bot þis is noght my conseyt principally,  
 þat comynly men han in þeire devise :

PROSA IV, STAN. 10.—1. to þat I beforne haue] y to beforne that y haue F: to] om. N T: þat I] I that N: I beforne haue graunted] here before I graunted D. 2. it (1)] om. D. 5. kannest noght] cannat T D: noght verrely] veraly noght M. 6. graunten] graunta to D h. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 11.—2. fallace] ffaſe T D. 4. whiche þat] The wyche P: þat] om. Rl Ba F J. 5. myght] mayſt P: þis] þe D: consequent] consequence F. 6. yf þou] yit Ch: kannest noght] cannat T: noght] om. Rl Ba (*inserted later*) De F: schewen] sue h. 7. ne] om. N M F Ch; then P: may] myght T; mayſt P: may þou] þou may Ch. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 12.—1. þat] all h M L: I P] om. all other MSS. 2. wonderfull] wonderfully Rl Ba F Ch: it is] om. De. 3. of] if D: here] hem Rl Ba Dc F. 4. moste it] it must D: sewel] schewen L R M h. 5. asked] aske D: quod sche now take] now take quod sche Rl Ba Dc F J: quod sche] om. N Bb (*but inserted later by different hand*): good] om. T D. 6. are] ben P: þe] þeye D: peire] the D. 7. none] not T D; at] om. D. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 13.—1. noght] now Dc. 2. men han] haue men T.

þat † wicked folk so peyned rightfully,  
 þere-by þey ben corrected of þeire vice  
 And drede of peyne appeseth their malice,  
 And þat exsaumple vnto oþer mo  
 Withdrawen hem of þat þei wolde do,

(678)

14. Bot in anoþer manere wise I mene.  
 þe bad[de] folk with-oute punicioun  
 Full more vnwilfull sekerly þei ben,  
 Than if þei suffred none affliccioun,  
 Noght hauyng' reward to correcciooun,  
 Ne to exsample, ne to drede of peyne  
 þat myche myschief ofte doþ refreyne.'

(679)

15. Quod I, "What manere wise may þis be  
 Dyuerse fro þis þat ye haue told before?"  
 'Lo haue we not confessed here,' quod sche,  
 'þat goode men ben welefull evirmore  
 And wrecchid folk ben wrecches and forlore?'"  
 "Right so," quod I. Quod sche, 'Now sey me þis.  
 What if þat vnto suche a wrecchidnesse

(680)

16. If any part of good were added to,  
 Ne were not he more welefull, wilt þou say,  
 Than he whiche stondeþ all in myschief so,  
 Fro whom all manere good is raft away?  
 Quod I, "It semeth so, it is no nay."

PROSA IV, STAN. 13.—8. þat N M D P] þat þe F; þat þat L Rl Ba C T R h Bb Dc J Ch: wicked folk] wickedly Dc: so peyned] y peyned F: rightfully L M h] rightwysly Rl Ba N C T R D Bb Dc J Ch; rightnously P. 4. þey] om. N: of] for T. 6. vnto] to D. 7. of] from T D P. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 14.—1. manere] om. Dc Ch: wise] om. T. 2. badde] bad L Rl Ba T R M h Bb: with] whiche Ch: punicioun] pouynschement D. 3. vnwilfull] wonderfull J. 4. none] om. F. 5. reward] regard P: to] to no D. 6. ne (2)] nor D. 7. That] The D: myche] om. D: ofte] ofte it D: refreyne] restreyne N D. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 15.—1. manere] manere of T: þis] it D. 2. ye] I Rl J Ch: Other than ye tolden here before P. 5. wrecchid] wickyd T: folk] men D: wrecches] wrecched D. 7. þat] om. F. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 16.—1. If] þat Rl Ba F Ch: of good] om. F: were] be T. 2. Ne] om. P: not he] he not F J: he] he then P: welefull] wilfull N: pou] om. Ch. 3. whiche] that T D P: all in] in all J: in] om. N. 4. manere] om. T.

'And what,' quod sche, 'if to þis wrecchid man  
Fro whom all manere goodnes lakkeþ þan,

(681)

17. Another harme were ioyned *and i-knet*

Aboue þe meschief whiche h[ym] haþ oppresseþ;  
Woldest þou not deme hym more vnwelfull yit  
Than [i]f his meschief somwhat were relesseed,  
And so be perteynyng[e] of good repressed?  
Quod I, "How schulde it oþerwise be?"  
'Than han þe wicked certanly,' quod sche,

(682)

18. Somwhat of good, when þat þey ben in peyne,  
Annexed þan vnto þis wrecchidnesse  
When þey ben pun[ys]ched so; þat is to seyne,  
The same peyne þat for þeire wickednesse  
They suffre, whiche because of rightwisnesse  
Wherby þat peyne is ȝif, it is no nay,  
Þat selue peyne a good be cleped may.

(683)

19. And when þat þey be spared of turment  
Than haue þey of þis euell somwhat more:  
Þat is þe fauere of vnpunyschement,  
Of rightwis peynes þat þey be forbore;  
þe whiche as þou hast graunted here bifore,  
Sith peyne is dewe reward of felonye,  
Vnpunyschement is euell sikerlye.'

PROSA IV, STAN. 16.—7. manere] *om.* T: goodnes] goodys D. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 17.—1. Another] In other h: ioyned] y ioyned h: i knet] knet D F J Ch. 2. Aboue] Aboute T: hym haþ F] haþ hym T D P; he haþ *all other* MSS. 3. hym] *om.* T: vnwelfull] vnhefull Rl Ba N C Ch; wilful T; vñwilful R: yit] *om.* D. 4. if N] of L Rl Ba C R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch; and T: his] this N h: somewhat] somthing N. 5. so] *om.* Ch; perteynyng[e] perseyyvng T; perceyyuunge P. 6. oþerwise] oþer T. 7. han] *om.* N: wicked] wrecchid R: certanly] sikerly D. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 18.—1. þat] *om.* F. 3. ben] *om.* Dc: punysched] punched L R Bb: is] it is T. 5. whiche] for T: rightwisnesse] rightuousnesse P. 6. wherby] wherfore by T: is] *om.* N: ȝif] ȝene Rl Ba F; youen D; *om.* N. 7. selue] same N: a] ys P: be cleped may] cleped maye be D: I dare wel say P. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 19.—1. þat] *om.* T. 3. fauere] sauer h Ch F Bb. 5. þe] In h. 6. dewe] due and T. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.]

(684)

20. "I may noȝt þis denyen þogh I wolde."  
 'þe wicked þan, vnponysched so wiȝ wrong,  
 Lo more vnsely be þey many-folde  
 Then when be right-wis dom þei vnderfong  
 Vengeance for theire synne *and* sorwes strong.  
 Sith rightwisnesse turmenteþ trespassours,  
 Than is it wrong to sparen surfetours.'

(685)

21. "Denyen þis," quod I, "þere may no wight."  
 'May any man,' quod sche, 'denye this:  
 þat all is good þat evire is don of right,  
 And all þat euer is wrong is wickednesse ?'  
 "And þus," quod I, "is consequent i-wys  
 To þat we haue concluded lo whilere.  
 Bot now, I prey you, of oo þing sey me here.

(686)

22. When þat þe corps resolued is be deth,  
 Schal þan þe soule soffren any peyne  
 When þat the soule out of þe body geth ?"  
 'Full huge,' quod sche, 'beleue it in certeyne,  
 For s[om] full bitter peynes schall susteyne,  
 And some schall be purged all wiȝ grace.  
 To treten here of þis haue we no place.

(687)

23. Bot I haue vnto þis þat is in me,  
 Full do my devire þat þou schuldest knownen

PROSA IV, STAN. 20.—1. þis] om. N : denyen] devyne D. 2. so] om. T.  
 3. vnsely] in foly T : manyfolde] many a folde P. 4. be rightwisdom þei ]  
 þei be rightwisdom T : rightwisdom] righteous dome P. 5. synne] sorew  
 Rl F J Ch ; sorowe Ba ; for sorwes D. 6. trespassours] fforfetoures T.  
 7. surfetours] trespassoures T. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 21.—1.  
 Denyen Devyne D. 2. man] om. F: denye] devyne D. 3. is (1)] þis  
 Ba J : euire] all R: of] om. Rl Ba C De F J Ch : by P. 4. wickednesse]  
 wrechidnes D. 5. þus] þis N h: consequent] cause quent M. 6. we]  
 ye T P: lo] om. T ; so D h. 7. of] om. T P: sey me here] ye seye and here  
 T. [ll. 3, 4, 5 om. T. Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 22.—1. corps] body  
 T P. 2. þan] om. P. 4. huge] longe D; hugy P: beleue] leue T;  
 take P: certeyne] certeyn tee Dc. 5. som full C T D P] synful L Rl Ba  
 N M D h Bb Dc F J Ch ; sorfull R. 6. wiȝ] wiȝout h. 7. treten]  
 certeyn T: here of] therof T: here of þis] of this here D: þis] þus T: we]  
 om. T D: place] space h. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 23.—1. in]  
 om. T. 2. Full] fully h: do] done N: devire] deuoyre Rl Ba Bb: never  
 N h: þat] om. T.

þe myght of schrewes whiche, as semeth þe,  
In theym is full vnworþily bestowen.

It is no power verrely to trowen.

And þere as þou compleynest in þy þowght  
þat wicked folkes ben ponyssched noght,

(688)

24. There myght þou seen þe wicked for þeire synne  
To fayle neuer of peynes sikerlye ;  
Bot þat þey may þeire wicked purpose wynne  
With licence for to worchen wickedlye,  
Thow preidest to ben ended hastyflye ;  
And I have made þe clerly for to knowe  
þat it ne lasteth but a litel þrowe,

(689)

25. And þat þe lenger þat endureth tho,  
þe more wrecches ben þey, I the tolde,  
And if þey schulde evire endure so,  
Than were [þ]e[i] worse be a þowsand folde ;  
And more wrecches eke þou myght hem holde  
When þey with wronge of peynes ben relessid,  
Than when þey been with rightwys peynes oppressed.

(690)

26. And over þis ȝit schal I forthire seyne,  
Lo of þis sentence sewep consequent :  
Than are þe badde in most despitous peyne  
When þat þey seme þey haue no punyschment.  
I seide þan, "When I wiþ hole entent  
Behold youre resouns how ye don hem preue,  
Noping is sother seid as I bileue.

PROSA IV, STAN. 23.—3. whiche] þat D; om. J: þe] me T. 4. vn-  
worþily] vnworthy to T; worthely D F; vnworthy h. 6. in þy þowght] om.  
RI C; oght N Ba De F J Ch Bb (*but altered to* in þy þowght *by later*  
*hand*). 7. folkes] om. T; folk F h: ponyssched] y punysshed N P: noght  
ought N. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 24.—1. myght þou] maistow  
N: for] of F. 3. þey] þat N. 5. preidest] dyst pray F: ended] endited  
N: hastylye] hastily P. 6. made þe] þe made h. 7. ne] om. T:  
lasteth] hasteth Ch. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 25.—1. lenger]  
long T: þat (2)] it T. 2. ben þey] theye be D. 4. þei] ȝe L C R h Bb:  
worse] om. F: worse bel] wrecches more P. 6. ben] þey ben T. 7.  
rightwys] rightfull D; righteous P: peynes] peyne D F P. [Stan. om. H:  
fol. om.] STAN. 26.—1. over þis] þis over Ch. 2. sewep] followeth T:  
hit sewep F. 3. are þe badde] arne þei F. 4. seme] se D. 5. when:  
whom T. 6. Behold] Behelde Ba: don] om. T. 7. seid] seid I F.  
[Stan. om. H: fol. om.]

(691)

27. Bot to þe iugement of mannes wit  
 þat is not meved̄ be suche evidence,  
 Who is þat man þat will beleuen it,  
 Or deme it worthy any audience?  
 They trowen no þing bot experience.”  
 ‘As þou hast seid,’ quod sche, ‘right so it is.  
 For yhen þat ben vsed to derknes,

(692)

28. The lyght of trowthe mowe þei noght beholde.  
 As foules þat ben woned to fleen on nyght,  
 For to be seen on day þey ben noght bolde,  
 For-why þe day is blyndyng to þeire sight,  
 Bot nyghtes derknes makeþ þaire eighen bryght,  
 So men enfecte wiþ lustes and likynges  
 Han no reward to þe ordinate þinges.

(693)

29. For þei supposen þat [suche] sufferaunce,  
 Or vnponyschement of cursedhede,  
 Schulde every man to wilfulness avaunce.  
 Bot in þe lawe eternall myght þou rede:  
 If þou do wel þou hast no manere nede  
 To aske a iuge for þi recompense,  
 For þou hast set þi-self̄ in excellencē.

(694)

30. And if þou haue þi-seluen wilfully  
 Enclyned into synne and wrecchidnesse,

PROSA IV, STAN. 27.—2. evidence] obedience h. 3. þat] þe N: will ]  
 wolde N: it] jit N. 5. trowen] trowe it N. 6. quod sche right so it is] ryght so it is quod she T. 7. yhen] they N D; theyme T; yeess P: ben vsyd] vsyd ben T; vsen F. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 28—1. mowe] may T P. 2. woned] wont N: to fleen] flen to Ba J: on] be D P; a h F. 3. on] on þe Rl J Ch; by h; a P: Whiche on the day dar not be so bolde F (*in margin in different hand with reference mark indicating omission from l. 3*). 4. to] of D: ffor to be seyen is blyndyng to peire siȝt F. 6. lustes and likynges] likyng lustynesse N: lustes and] lusti F. 7. reward] regard P: þinges] expresse N. [ll. 2, 3 confusedly combined F. Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 29.—1. suche T P] om. all other MSS. 2. vnponyschement] pounisshement D: cursedhede] cursed dede D. 3. wil fulness] cursed hede T: auance] brynge D. 4. myght þou] maystow N: may þou D. 5. doo] wilt don N: maner] om. N. 6. iuge] þinge M: for] of Rl Dc J Ch. 7. set þi self̄] thyse selfe set D. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 30.—1. wilfully] wyllyngly P.

Seke þow no vengour of þi felonye  
 With-oute þi-self, þe nedeth noght i-wis,  
 For þow hast broght þi-self in [wicked]nes,  
 And made þe like vnto a rude beste,  
 Puttyng' þi-self to peynes alther-meste;

(695)

31. Right so as þou woldest cast þi sight abouthe,  
 Now doun to grounde *and* to heuen light,  
 All other causes cesseth of wiþ-oute  
 Because of thyn vnstabilnesse of sight;  
 Now woldest þow seme wiþ þe sterres bright,  
 And now eft in þis muddy ground to be.  
 But commun peple þis ne cun noght se.'

(696)

32. I asked þan what þis schulde be to mene.  
 'Schulde we,' quod sche, 'assenten vnto þise  
 Whiche we haue schewed þe like to bestes bene?  
 If oon of hem whiche þat þe lust devise  
 Had all forlorn his sight in any wise  
 All vtterly, *and* also furthermore  
 Had all forgot þat evire he sawh before,

(697)

33. And weneth hym wanteþ noþing vtterlye  
 Of mannes naturell perfeccioun;  
 Now we þat þis beholden verrelye,  
 Schulde we accorde to theire entencioun,  
 And noght byleue oure ouene inspeccioun?

PROSA IV, STAN. 30.—3. no] ne N. 4. þi] þei J : þe] hyt P: noght] om. F. 5. broght] set P: wickednesse P: wrecchednes *all MSS.* 6. a] om. Ba J. 7. to] in Ba J: And put the in peynes that euer shal leſt P. [ll. 3, 4, 5 om. T. Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 31.—1. so] om. P: woldest] wonste T: sight] self N M. 2. light] highte D. 3. other] om. T: causes] cauſeth N; om. F: cesseth] sesesygng T; cessyng H P: of] om. D. 4. thyn] her T. 5. seme] seyn Rl Ba F J; om. R: sterres] sterre h. 6. eft] right P: þis] þe D: muddy] muddyd De. 7. comun] comyng J: ne cun noght] can they not P: noght] theye D. [ll. 1, 2 om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 32.—1. what] what all F J Ch: beþ. om. P: to] om. N P: mene] me T H. 2. Schulde] Shull Rl C T H R: assenten] consente T H P: vnto] to T H. 3. we] I N; as we D: þe like to] to the like T H; like as D: to bestes] beestes to bene F. 4. of] om. T H: þe] ye R; theye D: lust] lus N. 6. also] so H: also furthermore] so ferforthe T. 7. forget] forged h: evire] om. T. STAN. 33.—1. hym] he Dc: hym wanteþ noþing] nothing that he wanteth T; no þyng him wantith H. 4. Schulde] Shull Rl N R Bb Dc: theire] this D. 5. oure] vpon oure h.

Schal we not trowe þat suche men ben blynde,  
And well þe blyndere for þeire mased mynde?

(698)

34. And thinges þat as likly may be preued  
Be resouns of als myghti fundament,  
Of suche folkes may not be bileued:  
Þat suche wicked men and violent,  
When þey diseise a symple innocent,  
Wel more vnseyl ben þei in the dede  
Than þo þat suffre all þat wrongfulhede.'

(699)

35. "The reson," seide I, "wolde I here fayne."  
'Lo euery wicked schrewed man,' quod sche,  
'Wolt þow denye hym worpi care and peyne?'  
"Nay, Nay!" quod I, "þat haue ȝe noght of me."  
'Than more vnseyl must þey nedes be,  
Tho þat þeire lyues ledens cursedly.'  
"Right as ȝe seyn, right so it is," quod I.

(700)

36. 'And tho,' quod sche, 'þat worthi ben torment,  
Wolt þou not deme hem wrecches in þat cas?'  
I seide, "Yis, it is conuenient."  
Quod sche, 'If þou scholdest iuggen in þis place  
And myghtest do vengaunce or elles grace,  
Whom woldest þou demen worthi for to hong,  
Wher hym þat doth or hym [þat] suffreþ wrong?'

PROSA IV, STAN. 33.—6. Schal] Shulde T Ba J P; þat] om. T. 7. for]  
þat T H D. [ll. 2, 3 om. T.] STAN. 34.—1. so] ben D. 2. myghti]  
myghty a T. 4. men] folk D. 6. the] her N; ther T; om. D h Dc.  
7. þo] om. N; þey T F: all] om. N h: þat (2)] with Ba Dc F J; her H;  
suche h. STAN. 35.—1. seide] quod Rl Ba J: I (1)] he T; ye H: wolde  
I] I wolde T: I (2)] om. D h. 2. Lo] om. P. 3. Wolt] Will T: worpi]  
om. F. 4. Nay (1)] om. D F P: quod I] om. T. 6. Tho] Ho H; So  
D: peire] he T: lyues] lyf Dc: Suche that ledeth ther lyffes cursedly P.  
7. as] so as T. STAN. 36.—1. worthi] vnworthi J Ch. 3. I seide yis]  
Yes quod I P: yis] this Th: conuenient] right conuenient T. 4. þou  
scholdest] I shulde T. 5. do] to T H; þou do F J: or elles] and to T;  
or to H. 6. woldest] wilt D: for] om. T. 7. hym (2)] om. T h; elles  
hym D: þat (2)] om. L Rl Ba N T. [ll. 5, 6 in reverse order L C R M  
h Bb.]

(701)

37. "To hym," quod I, "that haþ suchē wronges done  
 I wolde adiugen suffisaunce of peyne;  
 þe pacient so schulde I vengen so[ne]  
 þat he scholde haue no mater to compleyne."  
 'More wrecched is þe worchere, wilt þou seyne,'  
 Quod sche, 'þan he þat suffreþ suchē distresse ?'  
 "In sothe," quod I, "so sueth it expresse."

(702)

38. 'Of thise causes and of oþere mo  
 þat of þe selfe roote sewynglye  
 Enforced ben, it wolde appere lo,  
 þat verray filthe of synne kyndely,  
 Right of þe selfe synne properlie,  
 Po men þey maken wrecches for to be  
 þat vseþ vice and dishoneste.

(703)

39. And wrong<sup>i</sup> also is noght þe wrecchidnesse  
 Of hym þat suffre[þ] harmes *and* greuaunce ;  
 In verray sothe þe wrecchidnesse is his  
 þat wrongwisly han done hym a noysaunce.  
 Bot pletours done in this contrariaunce,  
 þat so þe iugges vnto mercy meven  
 Anentes þeym whom wronges doth agreuen ;

(704)

40. For sikerly þe pitee longeþ more  
 To hym þat hath vnthriftily i-wroght.

PROSA IV, STAN. 37.—1. haþ] *om.* T H ; had P ; suchē] þe P : wronges] wronge T : done] do N. 2. wolde] wil D : of] and D. 3. so] þan N D : I veugen] be avenged P : sone] so L N C R M h Bb : The pacience so venge shulde I so T H. 4. scholde haue no mater] no matere shulde haue H : matere shuld haue T : no] *om.* T D. 6. suchē distresse] euery dele P. 7. so sueth it expresse] ryght so hyt sueth wele P. STAN. 38.—1. thisē] thy N : of (2)] *om.* T F. 3. wolde] wyll T H D P : woll h. 4. of synne] on sum T H ; of hym D ; of synnes P. 5. þe] *om.* T H : synne] synnes P. 6. po meu] *om.* Rl Ba N C Bb (*but inserted later by diff. hand*) F J Ch ; them T. 7. vseth] seweth T ; sethe H ; vice] vices P. STAN. 39.—1. And] The P. 2. hym] hem Ba N Dc Ch ; theyme D : suffreþ] suffren L : harmes] harme R D. 4. wrongwisly] wrongfully T ; wrongosly Dc ; wrongesli F : a] *om.* D : noysaunce] noysaunces D. 5. contrariaunce] contrariauncys D ; coutarie h. 6. þat so] To see H : vnto] *om.* T. 7. Anentes] Anempste h : þeym] hym D : whom wronges] hos werkes Dc : whom] þat P. STAN. 40.—2. vnthriftily] vterly D ; vnrightfully Rl Ba F J Ch : i wroght<sup>i</sup>] wrought N C T D h Dc P.

And as þe seke a leche is layde before,  
So schulde he be bifore þe iuges broght  
Of pytous delatoures *and* wreth noght,  
þat with þe peyne as wiþ a sotill gynne  
Kouthe kytte away þe maladye of synne.

(705)

41. And þus þe besynesse of advocates  
Schulde be forleten *and* men schulde it refusen ;  
Or if þey wolde appreuen men algates,  
All oþere-wise þei scholde þeire office vsen,  
And þo þat so mysdone alwey accusen ;  
And if þise wrecches also firthermore  
Myght seen þe vertu þat þey haue forlore,

(706)

42. Sith þat bounte be peynes may be hade,  
And filthe of vice ben vtterly for-done,  
To suffre peynes schulde þey ben full glade,  
Ne peynes sothlye schulde þey holde hem [none].  
His aduocate schulde he forsake sone,  
And to þe juge schulde hym-self betake  
þat myght hym hoole *and* all his vices make.

(707)

43. Than is it so, þat is, anentes þe wise  
Es left no place of hate, it is þe sothe.  
Who will þe goode haten or despice ?  
None but a foole þat wot not what he doth.  
And þogh þe badde be to yow full loþ,

PROSA IV, STAN. 40.—3. And] *om.* T: þe] *om.* R: a] the h Dc: layde] broughte T; ledde H; lede J P. 4. be bifore þe iuges] before þe juge be D: be] *om.* Th: iuges broght] iuge i-brought H P: iuges be broght h. 5. pytous] piteouse R P: delatoures] debatoures R; accusours P: wreth] wrought N; wroth T H. 6. sotill gynne] lytyll I gynne T; litell gynne H. STAN. 41.—2. it] *om.* Rl F J Ch. 4. vsen] vsee h. 5. so] done T H: mysdone] mysdome C; mysdoeis T; dysdonere H. 6. wrecches] *om.* T H. 7. forlore] forbore D; ylore F. STAN. 42.—1. be] with Dc P. 3. schulde] than shulde D: þey] *om.* F; he P: full] *om.* D. 4. þey] ȝe Rl Ba N R Dc Ch; he H: hem] hym H: none] *om.* L R M h Bb. 5. aduocate schulde he forsake] aduocates forsaken schuld be P: he] be N Ch. 6. schulde] he shold H P. 7. hoole] hele D: and] of C T D Dc: vices] synnes P: make] hym make T. STAN. 43.—1. it] *om.* F: is (2)] *om.* T; as H Dc F P: is anentes] Jugementes D. 2. is] *om.* H: þe] full T H P. 3. goode] goode men h: despice] despyte P. 4. None] *om.* P: foole] foule J. 5. And þogh] Though þat D: þogh] now T: þe] he Rl Ba D J Ch: badde] had Ba D J Ch: yow] þe P.

To haten hym  $\exists$ it haue  $\exists$ e no resoun,  
But rather haue of hym compassioun.

(708)

44. For as siknesse  $\beta$ e body doth distresse,  
Right so is vice a manere maladye  
 $\beta$ e whiche a mannes soule doth oppresse.  
And as we schulle not demen skilfullye  
Hym worthy hate  $\beta$ at seek is bodelye,  
Bot rewe rathire on his peynes sore,  
Then gostly langour schulde vs greuen more.

(709)

45. Hit longe $\beta$  noght to haten ne pursewe  
 $\beta$ e soules  $\beta$ at oppressid ben wi $\beta$  vice,  
Bot rather on theire bitter peynes rewe.  
And who  $\beta$ at couthe, noght meved wi $\beta$  malice,  
 $\beta$ at man amenden with $\beta$  right good avice,  
Thogh  $\beta$ at he put hym to full bitter peyne,  
Of cruelte  $\beta$ er may no wight compleyne.'

(710)

METRUM iij<sup>m</sup>

Quid tantos inuat

1. ' What helpe $\beta$  it to meven or excite,  
Wi $\beta$  propre hond $\beta$ , youre happes besily ?  
For if ye seken deth it nedeth lyte,  
For he schal come hymseluen wilfully.  
He tarieth noght, he spedet $\beta$  hym hastely.  
Lo serpent, leoun, tigre, bore and bere,  
Thei seken yow to racen and to tere ;

PROSA IV, STAN. 43.—6. hym] hym to h ; hem Ch P :  $\exists$ e] om. h. 7.  
of] on N : hym] hem Dc J P. STAN. 44.—1. distresse] greuaunce P.  
3. a] om. Rl Ba :  $\beta$ e wyche the soule oppresses with noyaunce P. 4. schulle]  
shulde Rl Ba Dc F J Ch P : not] om. Rl N T H Bb (but inserted later by  
diff. hand) Dc F J Ch. 6. rewe rathere] rynnen euer T : on] vpon h :  
his] her T ; per H. 7. greuen] meuen P. STAN. 45.—1. Hit longe $\beta$   
noght] Hyt is not conuenient P: ne] and T : nor to D ; ne to h F J Ch.  
3. on] vpon h : bitter] om. M. 4. meved] be meued N H D ; meued be  
Rl Ba Dc F J Ch. 5.  $\beta$ at] mighte  $\beta$ at D : man] may T : right] ful P.  
6. Thogh  $\beta$ at hymselfe be putt in bitter peyne; T. METRUM IV, STAN. 1.  
—it] om. F: or] or to Ba F J Ch. 2. hond $\beta$ ] hondes N P. 3. ye] the  
D ; y h : deth] om. T : it nedeth lyte] it you nedeth no lyght T. 4. wil-  
fully] besily N ; willingly P: He taryeth not but he spedeth hastily D.  
5. hym] hymselfe T : Siknes and slaughter to every siknes the spy D. 6.  
leoun tigre] tygre lyoun D : Lo tigre serpent leon boor and bere Dc.  
7. racen] rauen Ba T H F Ch : to (2)] om. M.

(711)

2. And ye wiþ swerd eche oþer doon assaile  
 For cause þat youre maners ben dyuerse ;  
 Vnrightwisly so moven ye þe bataile  
 Wiþ enterchaungyng darteres for to perce.  
 Youre cruelte all resoun doth reuerse.  
 Wilt þou þat euery man his meryt hadde ?  
 Lo loue þe goode *and* rewe vpon þe badde.'

(712)

[PROSA V<sup>a</sup>]

1. "In this," quod I, "perceyue I euerydele  
 The meschief *and* also þe wilfulness  
 As for þe mede of hem þat worchen wele  
 And eke of hem also þat done amys.  
 Bot noght-forþi al-day I see well þis :  
 þat of fortune of whiche þe puple hedeþ,  
 Boþe good *and* euell full ofte-tyme procedeth.

(713)

2. Nethire þere is no wyse man as I gesse  
 þat rathire wolde be pore *and* namelesse  
 And in exile, þan flouren in richesse,  
 In pouer *and* in honour to encresse,  
 And in þis citee for to dwelle in pesse.  
 This is þe beste way, as I deuyse,  
 To profiten bi þe office of þe wise :

(714)

3. So may þaire blisfulness, it is no doute,  
 As be þe vertu of thaire gouernaunce,

METRUM IV, STAN. 2.—2. maners] meanes h.      3. Vnrightwisly] Vn-rightfully N h : ye] ye þe L C R h Bb ; thee þe M ; ye your T: þe Dc.      5  
 all] your P.      6. þat] om. F: meryt] reson Dc.      7. þe goode] þi god h :  
 vpon] om. T.      PROSA V, STAN. 1.—2. also] om. P: wilfulness] welful-  
 nessse Rl Ba N H J.      3. As] And Ba N Ch: of] for h.      4. also] om. T H.  
 5. noght forþi] neuertheles P: I see] se I T.      6. of (2)] þe Ba T J ; of þe  
 H ; om. D ; to P: þe] om. T: hedeth] hydeth T; ledyth D.      7. full] om.  
 N T H R (*but inserted later*).      [ll. 2, 3 om. T.]      STAN. 2.—1. Nethire]  
 Nor D ; Ne P.      2. be] om. Dc: and] then T.      3. þan] theme T ; but  
 F: in (2)] and J.      4. in (2)] om. T H h.      5. in] om. N: þis] his N C :  
 for] om. T h.      6. as] that T.      7. þe (1)] om D.      STAN. 3.—1. is]  
 om. h.

Be well transfounded<sup>t</sup> in-to folk aboute  
 þat ben committed to þaire ordenaunce.  
 But þan þis myn herte doth greuaunce :  
 Sith it is so þat lawefull punyschement,  
 Dyuerse i[uys]es, peynes *and* torment<sup>t</sup>

(715)

4. For [wicked] folke were ferst<sup>t</sup> ordeyned<sup>t</sup>,  
 As vnto þeym belongeþ skilfullly,  
 Whi is it þan þat goode men ben peyned<sup>t</sup>  
 And in þeire stede oppressed<sup>t</sup> greuously,  
 And mede þat to vertu propirly  
 Of verrey right<sup>t</sup> is pertinent *and* due,  
 Thise medes han þe wicked *and* vntrue ?

(716)

5. What is þe skyll of þis confusiou[n]  
 þat so vnrightwys semeth for to be,  
 Of yow wolde I haue enformacioun.  
 For lesse mervell schulde it be to me  
 If alle þinges stood in þis degree,  
 Also commixt wiþ fortune *and* wiþ chaunce,  
 And had at all none oþer gouernaunce.

(717)

6. Bot god þat is [þe] gouernour of all  
 Lo makeþ me astonyed in þis :  
 Sith ioye *and* welthes often doth befalle  
 To goode folk, *and* often-tyme, ywysse,  
 þe wicked ben in care *and* heuynesse,  
 And often-tyme þe badde þere ageyne  
 Ben in þeire lustes *and* þe good in þeyne,

PROSA V, STAN. 3.—3. well] we Ch : transfounded] transfounden Rl Ba Ch : folk] all folk h. 6. punyschement] prisonment T H P. 7. iuyses] I wis Dc ; ywes Rl ; iwis R ; iewesse D ; iewes Ba J Ch ; iswys N ; juesse h ; Renewes T ; iewesses H ; Ieweys F ; Ingynnes P] iwes *all other MSS.* : torment] turmentes T. STAN. 4.—1. wikked N C T H P] dyuers *all other MSS.* : folke] folkes N H. 2. belongeþ] hit longeth P. 3. þat] om. R : ben] be so D. 5. to] om. Rl Ba ; no N ; vnto D. 7. and] and the Dc J Ch. STAN. 5.—1. skyll] skylful Dc. 2. vnrightwys] vnrightuous P. 3. wolde I] I wolde P. 4. schulde it] it shulde T H. 5. þis] his T. 6. also commixt] meddled al P : commixt] commy H. STAN. 6.—1. is] is þe C. 2. makeþ] om. T H : astonyed] astonyed gretly T. 3. often] om. F : befalle] falle h. 4. tyme] om. T H ; y wysse] amys Rl Ba Dc F J Ch.

(718)

7. Bot if þer be som skill or evidence,  
 Why god rewardeth folk in þis manere,  
 As þinketh me þere is no difference,  
 Bot hap *and* fortune rewleþ all infeere.”  
 ‘Of þis,’ quod sche, ‘merveile y noght as here,  
 Sith þow knowest noght þe skill of ordynaunce,  
 Pogh þow merveile vpon þe gouernaunce,

(719)

8. And hold it foly *and* confusioun.  
 Bot þogh to þe the causes ben vnkawē  
 As of so hyhe a disposicioun,  
 Wha[n] so hym lust to setten hye or lawe,  
 Sith he is good, as þow moste nedes trawe,  
 þat alle gouerneþ, take it for a soth,  
 þat all is rightwys what-so-euere he doth.’

(720)

METRUM V<sup>m</sup>

Si quis Ar[ct]uri Sidera.

1. ‘He þat ne knoweth not þe causes why,  
 Ne for what skill it is in full certeyne,  
 þat ilke starre Arcturus goth so nyhe  
 Mevyng aboue þe poole souereyne ;  
 And why boetes resteth noght his weyne,  
 And he his flambes plongeþ doun so late ;  
 And why so sone he riseth eft algate ;

(721)

2. It is no dowte he schal be stonyed sone  
 As of þe lawe of hyhe heuene bright.

PROSA V, STAN. 7.—1. or] and D.    2. folk] theyme T.    4. in feere]  
 yfere RI Ba.    6. Sith] Sight Ch: pow] ye P: noght] om. Dc.    STAN. 8.—  
 2. pogh] pogh þat T: to þe] om. R: the] om. M Dc J: causes] cause D.  
 3. disposicioun] disposioun Ba.    4. whan] wham L C; whom H: hym] he  
 T; thowe D.    5. trawe] know T H h.    6. it] thys P: a] om. T H.  
 7. so] om. T; þat P.    METRUM V, arcturi] arituri. STAN. 1.—1. ne] om.  
 T P: not] om. Ba J Ch.    2. it is in full certeyne] he is full vncertayn T:  
 in full] full yn H: full] om. N h: Ne how hyt is / in sothe he can not sayn P.  
 3. þat ilke] thylke T; þat þe P: arcturus] arcuse T.    4. poole] puple M.  
 5. why] why not T H: boetes] boetes T; beetes Dc : noght] om. T H.    7. so]  
 om. M: riseth] rayseth T.    STAN. 2.—1. schal] om. T H.    2. As] And  
 as F: hyhe] om. T H F.

Why þat þe hornes of the fulle mone  
 So [be] effected with þe derke nyght,  
 Be-com[en] pale, *and* þe sterres light  
 Whiche þat sche hid wiþ hire bemes clere,  
 Discoveryng hem sche makeþ to vs appere.

(722)

3. And open errour maketh folkes blynde,  
 þat beten bras þe mone to rescowen.  
 Men wonder noght vpon þe storme wynde  
 þat maketh þe see so fersly for to flowen,  
 þat doth þe brinkes bete *and* overþrowen ;  
 Ne þat þe colde frosyn clottes grete  
 So ben resolued þt be þe sonnes hete.

(723)

4. The cause of þis is esy to be feld ;  
 This othire hid, forthy ye wondren so ;  
 For all þat falleþ sodenly *and* selde  
 Thus wondreþ þise meueable folkes so.  
 And if þis clowdy errour passeþ hem fro  
 So þat þey may þe verray causes see,  
 They schall not seme merveillous to be.'

(724)

PROSA VJ<sup>a</sup>

Ita est.

1. "Right so," quod I, "this will I not reuerse.  
 Bot lo þis gift is youres sikerlye :

METRUM V, STAN. 2.—4. So be T H] So is other MSS.; So P: effected] infected N F P; ynforcid T H. 5. Becomen] Becometh all MSS.: pale] passe J: light] bryȝte T. 7. sche makeþ to vs] to vs sche maketh T: to vs] vs to D. STAN. 3.—1. And] An h: open] vpon N: folkes] foles N P; soules H; folke D. 2. mone] mony T: rescowen] resawen N. 3. vpon] of T H: storme] stormy Rl Ba T Dc F J Ch F; sterne D: wynde] wyne N. 4. þe see so fersly for to flowen] the ffarce see to flowyn T: fersly] freshli F J. 5. brinkes] bryanke T H: bete] breken N; om. Dc. 6. Ne] Nor D: colde] grete N; om. T. D: frosyn] om. Rl Ba Bb (*but inserted later by different hand*) Dc J Ch: froost R: foosen h: clottes] cloudes Dc. 7. be] so be L R M h Bb. STAN. 4.—1. þis] þus D: to be feld] for to felde T H: be] om. N. 2. hid] wonderis hidde N; ar hid P: forthy] therfore P. 3. pat] om. Ch. 4. Thus] This h: so] lo P. 5. if] om. T H: clowdy errour] errour cloudy Ch. 6. may] myght P: causes] cause T: So that the very causes D. 7. seme] seure H: merveillous] wonderful P: They shulde nat sure melouse to be T. [ll. 3, 4 om. T.] PROSA VI, STAN. 1.—2. lo] so J: youres] youre T.

Thise priue causes whiche þat ȝe þreherse,  
 And resouns hid in cloudes mystilye,  
 To maken clere this o thing<sup>t</sup> couet I.  
 It is a thing<sup>t</sup> þat troubleþ most my mynde  
 þat þus wiþ merveill marred I me fynde."

(725)

2. Sche gan to smyle a litel and seid þan,  
   ‘ Of me þou askest now a questioun  
   Lo of þe hyest þing<sup>t</sup> þat any man  
   May asken at myne estimacioun,  
   Or may consevye be clere entencioun,  
   To whiche vneþis may þere oght suffise  
   Of any word<sup>t</sup> þat I can the devise ;

(726)

3. Sith þe matir whiche we ben aboute  
   þat for to knownen þow desirest so,  
   þat when we ben delyuered<sup>t</sup> of a doute,  
   Wiþouten nombre soone arisen mo,  
   þat ben well nyhe as hard to voyden fro  
   As hedes þat on Ydra gan encrese,  
   þe serpent þat was slain of Hercules.

(727)

4. Ne in þis matere is none oper ende  
   Ne wey thise grete doutes to repressen,  
   But pray to god [þat] he vs grace sende ;  
   For other-wise þou myght hem noght expressen  
   Where-by þou myght þyn owne self<sup>t</sup> redressen.

PROSA VI, STAN. 1.—3. whiche] om. F: ȝe N C T H D F P] þey Rl Ba L R M h Bb Dc J Ch.     4. mystilye] myschefously T: mystically P. 6. troubleþ most] most troubleþ F J Ch: my] in T H h.     7. merveill] meruely J: I me fynde] thus my meende Dc.     STAN. 2.—2. Of me þou askest now] Thou askest now of me P.     4. at] of D.     5. consevye] percevye P.     6. To] To the T: vneþis] vnes R: may þer oght] per ought may T.     7. the] om. F.     STAN. 3.—1. Sith] Sith is T H; Suche is P: whiche] om. T; that P.     2. þat for] The wyche P.     3. of a] oute of R Dc.     5. ben] we be D: ben well nyhe] wele nyghe be T: voyden] parte D. 6. on] yppon h: on Ydra gan encrese] one dragon encresse P.     7. þe] om. T H: Hercules] Ercule; T D; Arcules J.     STAN. 4.—1. Ne] Nor D: in] to Dc: matere] matier D.     2. Ne] Nor D: wey] how P: to repressen] the redressen P.     3. to] om. Ch: that he Dc] he other MSS.: But þat a lyfely fure [of P] manneȝ mynde T H P.     4. myght] moist N: hem noght] not hem F Ch: Mutte myghtly hym restrayne and repressen T H P. 5. þyn] theire h: ffor other wyse thou myght hem not expressen T H P.

For lo in þis men vsen to enquere  
Thus feele, as I schall þe rehersen here:

(728)

5. First of þe hye wonder simplicite  
Of the full hye dyvyne purveaunce,  
Of fatum þat men calleþ destyne,  
Of hap of fortune *and* of sodeyn chaunce,  
Of knawynge eke of goddes ordynaunce  
þat clepid is predestinacioun,  
And eke of fredom of eleccioun.

(729)

6. How brigous is þis mater wiþ to dele  
Full well þou wotest þi-self, it is no nay.  
Bot sith it apperteneth to þyn hele  
To knownen it, I schal do what I may.  
Though þat þe tyme be schort I schall assay;  
Sith I haue seide þe somwhat here bifore,  
I schall myself enforcen forthirmore.

(730)

7. And þogh so be þat musik þe delite,  
And metir is full lusty to þy ere,  
As for a tyme þat lust must þou respite  
þe while þat I in ordre knyt in-fere  
My resouns whiche I schall þe schewen here.  
“Right as þou lust,” quod I; *and* sche began  
Right as it were † an-other processe þan.

PROSA VI, STAN. 4.—6. men] meane h. 7. schall þe] the schalle D : schall] om. T H : þe] om. N M R (*inserted later*): þe rehersen] rehersyn the T. [ll. 3, 5 om. C.] STAN. 5.—1. hye] om. T H P: wonder] wonderfull T H P: simplicite] felicite N: First of the ful high devyne purveaunce D. 2. full] om. T P. 3. men calleþ] ben called Ch. 4. chaunce] case T H : of fortune that ys called soden chaunce P. 5. eke] and P. 6. clepid is] called is h; ys called P. 7. of (1) the Dc: of (2)] and eke R. [ll. 1, 2 confusedly combined D]. STAN. 6.—1. brigous] bygous T; hugyous P. 2. Full well pou wotest] Thou knowest hyt wel P. 3. apperteyneth to] ys a parcel of P: þyn] hygh T H. 4. it] þus T; this H P. 6. seide] om. T H : here] om. F. 7. enforcen] enfore D. STAN. 7.—1. so] it so R F: þat] om. T: þe] be D. 3. lust must pou] thowe luste D: must þou] pou muste T J. 4. þe] Tho T: þat I in ordre] in ordre that I T: in fere] no fere T. 6. þou] ȝow RI Ba N H; ye T D P: quod I and sche] quod she and I h. 7. Right] om. T H: another D] all another L RI Ba N C T R M Bb Dc F J Ch P: on another H; all in another h. [l. 5 om. D.]

(731)

8. ' Lo euery kyndly generacioun  
 Of alle þinges, be þei more or lesse,  
 And euery naturel progressioune  
 þat in his beyng haþ chaungeablenesse,  
 And what-so-euer it be þat moved isse,  
 Theire ordire, fourme *and* causes forth he broghte  
 Lo fro þe stable, hye, devyne þoght.

(732)

9. This souereigne þough[t] þat all doþ so devise,  
 Set in the toure of hyhe simplicite,  
 Haþ ordeyned many dyuerse maner wise  
 To þinges þat ben done, lo wilt þou see ;  
 And if þis same wise referred be  
 Vnto þe pure devyne intelligence,  
 Than is it purveaunce or prescience ;

(733)

10. But when þis same wise referred is  
 To þinges þat ben moved *and* gouerned,  
 As olde men han cleped it or this,  
 Than is it destene as I haue lerned.  
 Full sone is þis dyuersitee descerned  
 Of hym þat seeth þe myghtes of hem boþe,  
 And esely he schall well se the sothe.

(734)

11. For purveaunce lo is þat resoun hyhe  
 Of god over all oure prince souereyne,  
 Be whiche all he disposeth myghtilye.  
 Bot destene, þe verrey soth to seyne,

PROSA VI, STAN. 8.—1. Lo] O T : kyndly] kynde by D. 2. þinges]  
 thyng D. 4. beyng] lyvynge T H. 5. what om. Ch: so] þat P: it  
 be] om. D. 6. ordire] om. T H: fourme and causes] causes and forme h:  
 he] be C Bb; om. T. 7. fro] for N. STAN. 9.—1. þough] þough L R M  
 C Bb; resoun D: all doþ so] also doeth T H F. 2. Set in] See it in D:  
 simplicite] felicite h. 3. maner] maners H; om. D h. 5. þis] þe T:  
 same wise] maner of disposition P. 6. þe] om. Dc: pure devyne] righte  
 pure D. 7. is it] it is h: or] of N M. STAN. 10.—þis] þe N T; wise]  
 maner P. 3. men] om. Dc: cleped] called P: it] om. T H. 4. destene]  
 om. h. 5. þis] om. D: descerned] discrened h. 7. well se] se well T:  
 se] say N: the] them h. STAN. 11.—1. lo is] is of T; is H; is lo D:  
 þat] om. Rl Ba T F Ch. 2. over] owre C: over all oure] our auctor and  
 T; our all-ther H; our aller P. 3. all he] he all H: all he disposeth] he  
 disposeth all T; he disposed all D. 4. þe] om. Rl F N J Ch: to] for to h.

Lo is þat dispositioun certeyne  
 Whiche þat þese þinges is annexed to  
 þat of thaire kyndes ben meuable so,

(735)

12. Be whiche þe hye devyne *prescience*  
 All þinges in þeire ordinaunce enlaceth.  
 This purveaunce haþ this excellencie :  
 That alle þing at ones he embraceth.  
 Fro his *presence* þere is noþing þat paseth ;  
 Thogh þey be infinit and endeles  
 Yit all he comprehendeth neuerþeles.

(736)

13. Bot destyne in certeyne tyme *and* space  
 Singulerly devideth euery-dele,  
 Disposyng it in mouynge, tyme *and* place ;  
 And when þis disposynge temporele  
 Rewarded is, *and* so referred wele  
 As oned into goddes gouernaunce,  
 Than is it sothely cleped purveaunce.

(737)

14. Bot for to haue consideracioun  
 How þei digest in dyuers tymes be,  
 þe ordre of þis dispositioun  
 Than is it cleped *fatum* destyne ;  
 As, þough þei haue suche dyuersite,  
 Yit noght-forþi þere may no þing be sother  
 þat oon of hem dependeth on þat other.

PROSA VI, STAN. 11.—5. þat] þe J ; þis Ch. . 6. þat] om. P: þinges om. N: is] ben N P: annexed] conexid T: to] vnto T. . 7. þat] There H: kyndes] thynges Dc. STAN. 12.—1. hye devyne] dyuyne high T. 2. þinges] thyng D: peire] his D: en[aceth] laceth h. . 3. hap] loo hath P: this (2)] his D. . 4. That] Tyll Rl ; at J: þing] thinge; T H D: at ones he] he at ones D: embraceth] enlaceth D. . 5. Froj For N: þere] om. P: þat paseth] passid T H. STAN. 13.—1. But certeyn tyme is distanye and space Dc. . 3. tyme and place] om. D: place] space N D. 4. þis] þat þis T H P. . 5. Rewarde] Rewardes h: Is comprehended and referred wel P. . 6. As oned] at oones Ba Ch; As onehed M; as couyd D; as oonehd h Dc: Vnto the onehed of goddes gouernaunce P. . 7. cleped] called h. STAN. 14.—2. þei] her N: digest] dynyded P. . 3.] þat self P. . 4. cleped fatum] hotly called P; Than is Fatum cleped destane D. . 5. As] And Ba. . 6. noght] om H D: noght-forþi] neuertheles P. 7. þat] pen F; pan þat P: of] om. h: on] of H P: þat other] the tother D; the other P. [Stan. om. T.]

(738)

15. For fro simplicite of purveaunce  
 This ordire fatal certeyn doth procede ;  
 Pere is þe forme of all þat ordinaunce.  
 Right as a crafty man þat wil hym spedē  
 A werk to maken, ferst þe takeþ hede  
 And all þe schap disposeth in his mende,  
 And sith [þ]effepte he bringeþ to þe ende ;

(739)

16. As he haþ first devised euery dele,  
 And in his þoght presentid simpillye,  
 He bringeþ forth be ordir temporele ;  
 Right so god all purveith singulerlye,  
 And to be done disposith stabillye,  
 And when it fully is disposed so  
 Be destyne he makeþ it to be do.

(740)

17. And whethir þis excersise destinale  
 Be any spiritis of the heuene on hyhe  
 That to þis purveaunce entendeth all,  
 Or if þe soule doth it verrelye,  
 Or elles nature doth it kyndelye,  
 Other þe mevyng of þe sterres bright,  
 Or elles aungels of þe heuene light,

(741)

18. Other elles be fenes besynes,  
 Be sum of thise, othere be all in-fere,  
 This ordre destynall parfomed is ;  
 Yit lo þis is full open and full clere

PROSA VI, STAN. 15.—1. fro] of þe P.      3. þe] no h: þat] the N D : om. M.      4. crafty] Cristen D.      5. ferst] ferst or L R M D h Bb Dc : he takeþ] he will take T H : he toke D.      6. þe schap disposeth] disposeth þe shappe F.      7. sith] seeth D : pfecte] effepte] effecte Rl Ba C L R M Bb Dc J Ch ; the effecte T D F P: he] om. T. [l. 1 om. T.]      STAN. 16.—1. As] And N : haþ] had F.      2. presentid] pretendl F; enprented P. 3. bel] þe Ba N De F J Ch.      4. all] om. R: all purveiþh] perferryth all T: all porvereth H; purveith all h.      6. when] om. T: disposed] disposed stabelie h.      7. to] om. N.      STAN. 17.—1. þis] the T.      2. spiritis] spirit N: heuene on hyhe] hevyns hy D.      3. þis] his h: entendeth] extendyth T.      5. elles] ell H.      6. Other] Other of T.      7. elles] ell H h : aungeis] aungell F: heuene] hevyns D.      STAN. 18.—1. elles] ell H h : be] by the T P: fenes] fenes of P.      2. othere] or N H: in fere] yfere Rl Ba F.      4. is] om. Rl Ba F J: full] om. F.

And nedes it moste be so in all manere,  
 That the stable *and* þe simple ordinaunce  
 Of þing<sup>t</sup> to þ don is called purveaunce ;

(742)

19. Bot lo þe processe of successioune  
 In whiche þe[þ] ben performed sewynglye  
 So by þe simple disposicioun  
 Forseyen of god beforene eternallye,  
 Lo destyne is þ called sikerlye.  
 So all þat euer is vnder destyne  
 It moste eke vnder purveaunce be,

(743)

20. As þ is þis selue destine also.  
 And to þis same purveance bothe,  
 Som þinges ben subiecte þat ben i-do,  
 And after þis I schal declare to the,  
 Whiche þat wiþstondeth destyne forsothe ;  
 And som to gode aprocheþ so by loue,  
 þat ordire destinall þei passe aboue.

(744)

21. As dyuers cumpaces þ on a poynþ yþight  
 Vpon þe centre turnyng all aboute,  
 þe innermeste compace to þi sight  
 The whiche anext þe centre is wiþoute,  
 A centre wil it seme it is no doute,  
 For þou schalt see it moue noght a dele  
 Aboute whiche so moueth all þe whele ;

PROSA VI, STAN. 18.—5. nedes] nede C H. 6. þe (2)] om. N H J P :  
 ordinaunce<sup>t</sup>] purveaunce T. 7. þing<sup>t</sup>] thinges T: to C T H P] þat other  
*MSS.*: is] om. h: done] om. Dc. STAN. 19.—1. þe] þis Ba F J. 2. þey]  
 þen L Rl R M h Bb: sewynglye] newyngly D. 4. beforen] om. Dc.  
 5. is called] men call it T H P; ben called all other *MSS.* 6. is] be  
 D. 7. It moste eke] So must hyt P: eke] of nede N. [l. 6 om. T H.]  
 STAN. 20.—1. As P] and other *MSS.*: is þis] ys the self P: This the selue  
 distene also T H. 2. þis] þe Rl Dc Ch; om. T; þat P: same] fame D;  
 self P. 3. ido] do D. 5. Whiche þat wiþstondeth] That ageyn stondeth  
 P: wiþstondeth] which stondeþ Ch: destyne] om. h: forsothe] ther forsoth h.  
 STAN. 21.—1. cumpaces] compace Rl Ba J Ch P: compas] N D Dc: on T P]  
 vpon other *MSS.*: a] one P. 4. anext þe centre is] annexed is the centre  
 h; is nexte the center T: anext] as next H; next D P: þe] to þe P.  
 5. wil it] it will T. 6. see it moue noght] natt se it meye T: noght] neuere  
 N h: and semelih as hyt meyeth neuer a dele P. 7. whiche] the which h:  
 so] om. D: all] om. h: whele] whyle P.

(745)

22. Bot lo þis vttermest circumference  
 þat to þi sight is largest in cumpace  
 And ferþest fro þis poynt in difference,  
 So moste he mouyn in a larger space ;  
 (As for to knowe it be experiance)  
 And whiche þat neigheth to þat myddel place  
 (Of þe centre in his trewe compace)  
 Compressed next to þat simplicite,  
 He meueth not a dele as semeth the.

(746)

23. Be likly resoun he þat ferrest flitteþ  
 Out fro þe souereyn thoght of god on hyhe,  
 To destyne þe fa[st]er he hym knytteþ ;  
 And he þat can *and* will approche nyhe  
 This souereigne centre god ententify,  
 þe more he stondeþ in fredom *and* in ese,  
 þat destyne schall litell hym disese.

(747)

24. Right as discours ne may noþing be mete  
 Vnto þe intellecte of mannes mynde,  
 Ne þing þat is to þing þat is begete,  
 Ne a litell stound to tyme wiþouten ende,  
 They ben not lyk in worthiness of kynde  
 Bot as þe poynt [to] þe circumference,  
 Bytwene theym ys an huge difference,

PROSA VI, STAN. 22.—1. lo] so T H ; om. P.      5. to] om. h.      8. Com-  
 pressed] Compresseth Ch Ba.      9. He cessest for to meuern as semeth þe P :  
 the] me D. [ll. 3, 4 om. Rl Ba N C M h Dc F J Ch Bb (*but put in marg. in  
 other hand*).      1. 5 om. N, *but* ll. 5, 7 *put in marg. by other hand*. ll. 5,  
 7 om. C T H P; retained all other MSS.      9 lines L R D Bb (*corrected*).  
 STAN. 23.—1. Be likly] In like h.      2. thoght] om. T H : of] fro N ; om.  
 T : on] of N.      3. faster] ferther D ; fader L M h : he] om. h      4. can] cany H : approche] appere T.      5. This] To his T : ententify] in hevyn  
 lytyl D h.      7. That] The D : schall litell] litill shall T : litell hym] hym  
 STAN. 24.—1. Right] Like T : ne] om. T H ; per F : no þing] not  
 yete P.      3. þat (2)] om. D : Ne thing that so is be gett T : begete] not  
 be P.      4. to] in N : tyme] þing Rl Ba F.      5. They ben not] May not  
 be P.      6. þe (2) om. D Dc : to P]. of all MSS.      7. ys] as N : huge]  
 hugey P. [l. 4 om. T.]

(748)

25. Right so þis fatal mutabilite  
 þat all-wey is so full of variaunce  
 Referred [is] to the hye simplicite  
 Of þe stable souereyn purveaunce  
 Whiche þat þe heuenes haþ in gouernaunce.  
 He moueþ sterres, tempereth elementes  
 [Transformyng theym be enterchaungementes].

(749)

26. And all þat nature doth on erthe brede,  
 Whiche þat be deth schal turne doun eftsonne,  
 Renuyng hem be fruytes *and* be sede.  
 He seeth also þe werkes þat ȝe done,  
 And fortunes he gouerneþ euynchone,  
 Constreynyng wiþ an insolible bonde  
 Of causes whiche þat mowe not be wiþstonde.

(750)

27. And sith þese causes passen fro so hye  
 A ground [a]s purveaunce vnuariable,  
 Then may I seye full well *and* sothfastlye  
 þat nedes moste it be vntransmutable.  
 þat gouernance moste be profitable  
 When þis simplesse of devyne þoght  
 Ordeyneth causes whiche þat faileþ nocht,

(751)

28. Thus in a certeyn ordre, soth to seyne,  
 þat stedfast is *and* may not fayle neuere ;  
 And bot þis ordre gouerne *and* refreyne  
 Thise worldly þinges whiche þat chaungen evire,

PROSA VI, STAN. 25.—1. fatal] fatale N.    2. so full of variaunce] full of this variaunce T.    3. is] om. all MSS. and P.    4. souereyn] and souereyn P.    6. tempereth] he tempereth H P; and tempreth Ba N F J.    7. Transformyng] Transformed R: theym] om. T H. [l. 7 om. L M h.    Inserted from Bb into text].    STAN. 26.—1. on] or Ba F; yn H.    2. doun] om. h: And so by deth shall fallen downe eft sone P.    5. fortunes he] fortune she F.    6. wiþ an] theyme by a T.    7. causes] om. T H: mowe] may T P.    STAN. 27.—1. sith] sithe pat H h: passen] meve D: fro] om. T: so] so farre h.    2. as C T H F Ch] is L Rl Ba N M R h Bb De J: vnuariable] in euerable T H.    3. sothfastlye] stedfastly T.    5. moste] must most N C: moste be] and most P.    6. When þis] Where þe Dc: simplesse] symplycyte P: of] of the Dc.    7. Whiche] om. T. [l. 5 om. T H.]    STAN. 28.—1. Thus] This is N; This H: a] om. T: soth] the soth T.    2. þat] Whiche D: and] and hyt P: not] om. P.    3. gouerne] shulde kepe D.    4. worldly] wordly H: whiche] om. T.

Full sone þei schall dissoluen *and* disseuere,  
 fflittyng right as a thing<sup>i</sup> of no valour,  
 And wauerynge so with-outen gouernour.

(752)

29. And þogh so be þat we may not be-holde  
 þe causes of this disposicioun,  
 Ne see þe skilful ordire as we scholde,  
 For-why we ben in perturbacioun  
 It semeth vs errour *and* confusioune,  
 Yit is it dressid if we vndirstode,  
 And wel disposed euerydèle to goode.

(753)

30. Because of euel is no þing verraly  
 Performed<sup>k</sup> of þeworste man þat is,  
 For as I haue declared plenerly,  
 They seken good but þey ben led amys  
 Be errour of th[eir]e owne wrecchidnes,  
 For-why þat ordre whiche þat doþ procede  
 Fro souereign good ne may hem not myslede.

(754)

31. But vnto þis peraeuture wilt þou say,  
 “ What confusioune may þere worse be,  
 Sith go[o]d [and] bad in-different alday  
 Now haue þei welthe *and* now aduersitee,  
 Now þat þai loue now þat þai wolden flee ? ”  
 But wilt þou trouwe þat men be now so wise  
 þat euery þing<sup>i</sup> moste be as þei devise,

(755)

32. As whom theym lust to iuggen good or badde,  
 Of verrey force it muste be nedes so ?

PROSA VI, STAN. 28.—5. schall] shulde D. 6. a] om. Rl Ba T H D h.  
 STAN. 29.—1. þogh] om. T H. 3. Ne] Nor D: we] they T. 4. For-  
 why] Ther fore P. 6. dressid] distressed H: vndirstonid] T M.  
 7. dele] thyng D. STAN. 30.—1. Because] for cause P: is] ther is T H.  
 2. worse] best T. 4. but] pauȝ F. 5. theire] thyne L Rl Ba C R M  
 Bb Dc F J Ch. 7. good] om. T H: ne] om. H D; men J: ne may hem  
 not] hyt may no wyght P: may] may not D: hem] thay T H: hem not] not  
 hem F. STAN. 31.—1. wilt þou] thou wilte T. 2. What] That T.  
 3. and] an L Rl Ba R M Bb Dc F J Ch. 4. þei] theire C T H.  
 5. now] and now T: wolden] om. h. STAN. 32.—1. whom] whan D:  
 whom theym] when hym T: good] om. h. 2. verrey] fery R: force] forth  
 J: be nedes] nedes be D; nede be F: so] om. h.

In mannes dome discord full ofte is hadde,  
 For of this o man men will demen † loo  
 Pat he is worthy myche peyne *and* woo,  
 And þis wil deme hym worthi þank *and* mede,  
 Bot yit þe ton moste be deceyued nedē.

(756)

33. Bot late vs granten here þat any wight  
 þat good *and* badde may verrailly discerne,  
 Now trowest þou þat þei ben of suche a myght  
 For to enserche þe innermoste herne  
 Of mannes soule *and* all his þoghtes lerne?  
 And clerly iuggen there of euery doute  
 As þey ben woned of bodies here wiþoute,

(757)

34. As for to iuggen theire attemperure  
 Or dyuersitee of theire complexiou? *?*  
 As gretly wondreth euery creature  
 þat knoweth noght be clere inspecciu? *?*  
 þe kyndes ne þe dispositio? *?*  
 Why þis accordeth well wiþ þinges swete,  
 This oþre must [haue] soure *and* þat forlete.

(758)

35. And seke folkes se we cured ofte,  
 Sum one wiþ scharpe þinges sikerlye,  
 And þise be thing? þat esy is *and* softe;  
 But þis þe leche knoweþ verrelye  
 þat seeth þe maner of þe maladye,  
 Theire temperour *and* manere of þeire hele;  
 Of þis discord he wondreþ noght a dele.

PROSA VI, STAN. 32.—3. discord full ofte] ful of discorde D; discorde muste nedes be h. 4. men] thes P: demen] denyen L N C T R M Bb h F J Ch. 5. he] om. h. 6. pis] þus Ch: wil] om. h: hym] theyme D: worthi] moche Dc. 7. þe ton L R Bb Dc] þat one Rl Ba N M T H D h F J Ch; þe one P. STAN. 33.—2. þat] Which D: and] or J Ch: may] om. T: verrailly] werkly T: discerne] disseuer T. 3. þat] om. D: suche] om. Rl Ba Dc F J Ch: a] om. N T; oo Dc. 4. herne] thought P. 5. Of mannes gost and all that he hath wroght P. 6. clerly] cleren T. 7. woned] wont N T H P. STAN. 34.—1. attemperure] temperure R. 4. be] the Dc. 5. kyndes] kynde D: ne] nor D; of Ch. 7. haue T H P] om. all other MSS.: þat] swete P. STAN. 35.—1. seke] suiche D: se we cured] ben y cured P: se] so Ba F: and sike folke curid so full ofte T. 2. one] om. P. 3. pise] om. T H; somme P: thing?] thinges N D: is] ben N D. 5. seeth] knoweth P. 6. and] and the T; their H. 7. he] om. D: noght] neuere F P.

(759)

36. And what may be þe helpe of thi corage  
 Bot honeste *and* vertu most of price?  
 What sikenesse may þi soule do domage  
 But vnþrift lo *and* cursednesse of vice?  
 But now what creature may be so wise  
 To sauuen helthe *and* voyden hevynesse?  
 Noght one but god in certan as I gesse.

(760)

37. He is þe verray l[ecche] of mannes mynde,  
 þat fro þe awaytyng<sup>t</sup> of his purueaunce  
 He seeþ what is accordant<sup>t</sup> to þe kynde  
 Of eueryche þat he haþ in gouernaunce,  
 And for þeym so he makeþ [odyn]aunce  
 To eueryche as belongeth to his helthe,  
 Wheþer þat ye deme it wrong<sup>t</sup> or elles welthe.

(761)

38. Than is þis noble wonder to youre þoght<sup>t</sup>  
 And merveill of þis ordre destinall,  
 When god all kunning<sup>t</sup> haþ þat werk i-wroght,  
 It stonyeth hem þat knoweþ noght at all.  
 For soþely mannes knowyng<sup>t</sup> is full small  
 And mannes resoun litell may diffyne  
 Of þinges in þe souereyn þoght devyne.

(762)

39. Perauenture þou wilt demen of a wight<sup>t</sup>  
 þat he is iust<sup>t</sup> *and* trewe in his entent,

PROSA VI, STAN. 36.—1. helpe] hele D. 2. honeste] honest M: and] of T H. 3. þi soule do] do thy selfe moste T. 4. vnþrift] vñthristynes T H; vñhoneste P. 7. Noght one] No wyght P: in certan] om. T. STAN. 37.—1. pe] om. D; leche T H P] light<sup>t</sup> other MSS. 2. fro] for T: awaytyng<sup>t</sup>] wantyng D: waytynge Rl Ba Dc F J Ch P: enactyng N C: his] minnys T. 3. is] was T: accordant<sup>t</sup> acorded D: þe] þi J. 5. so he makeþ] he maketh so T: makeþ] maked D; so maketh he H: ordynaunce] purueaunce L R h M Bb. 6. eueryche] euery T H D: belongeth] it longeth T; he longeth H; longeth D. 7. þat] om. D: ye] he T H: deme] demeth T: wrong] woo T H P: elles] ell H; om. F P: welthe] helthe T. STAN. 38.—1. noble wonder] wonder noble Rl Ba Dc J Ch. 3. kunning<sup>t</sup>] knowyng T Ch: haþ þat werk] þat work hath N: werk] world h: i wroght] wroght N D. 4. It stonyeth] Instonyeth Dc: It stoneth P: hem] om. N; hym T H Dc J Ch: noght] it noght Dc: at] om. T H; atte D. 5. soþely mannes knowyng<sup>t</sup>] mannys connyng certen P: soþely] soþe R D: knowyng<sup>t</sup> is full] clothyng is but D: full] but Dc. 7. þoght] om. T H. STAN. 39.—1. Perauenture] peraunter Rl Ba N H R Bb J: þou wilt] than wilt thow D.

Yit in þe purveaunce of goddes sight  
 þere falleþ all on oþer iugement,  
 And fro þi þoghtes is full different.  
 Lo as lucanus my famyliere  
 Thus in hys bookeſ wroot of þis matere :

(763)

40. The cause co[nuyc]t as Cato justified, †  
 That was þe querell of Pompeius,  
 The goddes han his iugement denyeſ.  
 Thei demed iust þe cause of Julius  
 Wherfore þey made hym victorious.  
 So thing es done vnwarly to þi sight,  
 Yet is it done be ordenaunce of right,

(764)

41. Bot yit as to thyn opinable wyt  
 It semeth ouerthwart confusioun.  
 Bot perauenture I suppose yit  
 Here is a man of suche condicioun  
 þat in þe dome is no distincciou[n],  
 Bot god and man accordeth all in one  
 In iugement þat errour is þer none ;

(765)

42. Bot vpon hap so faynt his corage is  
 þat if there falle hym oþere þan he wolde,  
 It schulde hym causen for to do amys  
 And so forlete his gode þewes olde

PROSA VI, STAN. 39.—3. þe] om. H. 4. on oþer] another Rl Ba N.  
 5. And fro þi þoghtes] That for thy thoughte T: is] it is Ch: And a dome  
 that ys fer different P. 6. lucanus] lucans T. 7. Thus] om. P: hys]  
 om. D; this h: bookeſ boke h: wroot] writeth T: of] in N De J Ch: of]  
 in N De J Ch: matere] matiere D h. STAN. 40.—1. conuyct P] comynt  
 L Rl Ba N C T H R M D h Bb De F J Ch: Cato] Catoun D: justified]  
 justifieth L C R M D h Bb De F; can denuye P. 2. Pompeius] Pompeyneſ  
 T: He demed best that was Pompeius P. 3. The] Than T H: his] that  
 T H: But lo the goddes juged otherwyse P. 4. iust] om. h. 5. hym]  
 them D. 6. So] Some Rl Ba Ch: vnwarly] outwardly P. STAN. 41.—  
 1. yit as] as yett T: yit] ye F: thyn opinable wyt] þinge opynable of wit  
 J. 4. a] som P. 5. is] om. M: no] nat T. 6. all] both T.  
 7. is þer] þer is h. STAN. 42.—1. corage] iugement T: his corage is] is  
 his corage De. 2. there falle hym] hym fall T: falle] befalle h: hym]  
 om. N h F. 4. so] to H P: so forlete] shuld forȝete N: þewes] ȝifteſ N;  
 yeffes C; customeſ P.

Be whiche fortune myght he no lengur holde.  
 Wherfore þe wise dispensacioun,  
 Rewardynge to his disposicioun,

(766)

43. And seynge þat by suchे aduersitee  
 He schulde be myche apayred *and* i-schent,  
 Wherfore he spareþ hym of his pite,  
 And yemeth so as is conuenient  
 þat he may kepe hym trewe *and* innocent.  
 And this lo stant in vertu perfightlye  
 And as a seynt is ioyned god full nyhe.

(767)

44. Of this the hyhe devyne purveaunce  
 Wolde deme it as for synne *and* felonye  
 To putte vpon hi[m] harmes as grevaunce.  
 He will hym noght ben harmed bodily  
 Ne be disesed with no malady.  
 Thus seide one † þat of wisdom was fulfilled,  
 þat vertu hath a seyntes body billede.

(768)

45. And often when estate of worthynesse  
 In gouernance is ȝouen to þe wise,  
 þat is [for] to reuoken *and* represse  
 þe vice þat wolde encresen *and* aryse.  
 And som [he] re[wl]eth in an other wise,  
 And as hym liketh enterchaungeþ boþe  
 Right as is best for þeym, it is þe sothe ;

(769)

46. And some he suffreþ softly to be greued  
 Lest they awylden in theire welthis longe ;

PROSA VI, STAN. 42.—5. he] om. T H h: no lenger hold] not with-holde P. 6. wise] hygh D. 7. Rewardynge] Regardynge P. STAN. 43—1. suchē] this T. 2. i-schent] schent D. 4. yemeth] ȝeueth N T H; geueth hym P: so] om. D. 5. kepe hym] hym kepe Dc. 6. lo] now N: perfightlye] propyrly Dc. 7. god] to god h. STAN. 44.—1. the] om. T. 2. and] or D. 3. him T H P] his all other MSS.: harmes] harme T: as] or P. 4. will] wolde N. 5. with] by N T P. 6. one] one of L Rl Ba R M D Bb J Ch: euery T H: of] om. Rl M J Ch: wisdom] wyseman T. 7. billede] bylded N P. STAN. 45.—3. for N H P] om. all other MSS.: reuoken] reule D; rebukē P: and] and to Ba T F J Ch. 4. wolde encresen] encrese wolde T. 5. he rewleth N C T H P] reherseth all other MSS. 7. is (1)] hit is F: is best] bestes T; best ys P: þeym] om. T H; hym Dc (but alt. to þeym): þe] om. T H. STAN. 46.—2. awylden] outrage P.

And som with scharpe schoures to be meued,  
 þat vertu of þaire corage euer amonge,  
 Be vse of pacience be preued stronge,  
 And be confermed be þat excercise ;  
 And sum be-cause of verray cowardise,

(770)

47. Full nedeleſſe of myche þing þei drede  
 Whiche þat þey may parfomen soth to seyne ;  
 And this lo is full hardy in his dede  
 Presumyng more þan he may susteyne ;  
 To þis it spedeth [to] hym þere ageyne  
 To knowe hym-selfe be exeperience ;  
 And this lo for a name of excellencē,

(771)

48. Ful man[ful]ly with deth he haþ it boght ;  
 And so he hath susteyned peynes sore  
 As for exsaumple evire to be þoght,  
 þat men may seen be þinges done before  
 þat vertu haþ inuict ben euermore,  
 And is noght harmed be aduersite  
 But if defaute in men hem-seluen be.

(772)

49. How rightwisyly disposed all aboute,  
 And lo how well þese þinges ben i-do !  
 Who-so lokeþ these he may not be in doute,  
 And for þeire profite whom þey falleþ to !

PROSA VI, STAN. 46.—3. schoures] swerdis T H.    5. vse] om. D (*space in MS.*) : be] to be Dc : preved] grately previd T ; vsed D Dc.    6. be] he be Ba F Ch : confermed] conformed Rl Bb Ba C ; confourmed N.    7. verray] om. T.    STAN. 47.—1. þei] om. h : drede] I drede h.    2. þat] om. T H : parfomen] wel performe P : soth] the soth T P.    3. full hardy] foly hardy T ; fole hardy H : his] om. h.    5. it spedeth to hym] expedient hyt ys P : spedeth] speded D : to N] om. other MSS. : hym] then T H.    6. hym-selfe] them selfen P. [ll. 3, 4 om. D.]    STAN. 48.—1. manfullly N C T H] manly other MSS. and P : deth] dede T.    3. þoght] wrought N.    4. before] to fore Rl Ba Dc J ; afore F.    5. haþ] haþ be R ; and moot Dc : inuict] om. N (*space in MS.*) ; desyred D : inuict ben] be in meryte T ; yn meryte ben H ; be inuict h.    7. if] om. T H : in men] of men N P : hem] hym N.    STAN. 49.—1. rightwisyly] rightuouslly P : disposed] disposeth Dc J.    2. well] rightwisyly T : i-do] do D.    3. he] om. H.    4. whom] when T H : þey] it h : falleþ] fal D : to] so T.

For to þe wicked þat betideth so  
 þat now þey han diseſe *and* now þeire lyst,  
 To þise same causes mow be wylt.

(773)

50. Bot when þey ben in peynes *and* distresse  
 þere is no wight þat wondref noght a dele,  
 For-why þey will supposen as I gesse  
 þat all þise peynes were deserued wele.  
 And þise peynes þat þise wrecches fele  
 Maketh oþre wrecches peynes for to fere  
 And of þeire foule lustes to forbere,

(774)

51. And also for þaire awne amendment.  
 But þinges fallyng lustily to th[eire] chere,  
 It ȝeuþ men a myghti argument  
 What þei schulde demen of thise welthis here  
 Sith þey to wrecches ben famuliere.  
 And certanly I suppose as in this  
 þat god dispensisþ wiþ theire fowardnes.

(775)

52. For some men ben there lo perauenture  
 þat ben so importune in þeire malice,  
 And eke so ouerþward of þaire nature,  
 þat nede hem maketh fallen into vice.  
 But þan þis prescience þat is so wise  
 Agayn þe parell of this maladie  
 Be worldly plente makeþ remedie.

(776)

53. Lo this beholdep on his conscience  
 Defouled so wiþ synne *and* cursidhede,

PROSA VI, STAN. 49.—5. þat] þat he J Ch : so] too T. 6. þeire] om.  
 T. 7. pise] the T H : same] som D : causes] cause h : mow] now N ; may  
 h P; be] om. T H F; we be h. STAN. 50.—1. peynes] causes C.  
 2. noght] neuer P. 3. þey] þey al P: as I] and P. 4. all] om. Ch  
 P: þise] þo P. 6. Makeþ] For soþ maketh T: for] om. T. 7. foule]  
 soule H: lustes] vices P. STAN. 51.—1. for] of F Ch. 2. fallyng]  
 fallen Rl Ba Ch; fallþ F: lustily] lusty T H P: theire N T H P] thi other  
*MSS.* 3. ȝeuþ] ȝemeth Ba Ch. 4. schulde] shall T H D: demen]  
 demeane h. STAN. 52.—1. lo] be lo Dc. 3. eke] om. H: ouerþward  
 L] ouerthrowyng P; ouerthwart all other *MSS.*; of] in N T Dc: þaire]  
 om. P. 4. hem maketh] maketh hym J; maketh hem F J Ch: in-] om.  
 T: vice] coveytise Dc. 5. prescience] presence N. 7. worldly] wordly  
 T P; wordle H. STAN. 53.—1. on] in N T H. 2. and] and with N:  
 cursidhede] cursidnesse T H.

And eke how grete a disconvenience  
 þan is betwene his fortune *and* his dede ;  
 Perauenture he falleþ so in drede  
 Lest þat þe oys of þingi þat doþ hym ese,  
 He may † forfeite *and* for his synnes lese ;

(777)

54. He chaungeþ þan his þewes euerychone,  
 Hym fereth so his fortune for to lete,  
 And all his vices he forsakeþ sone.  
 And þis hap lo thise worldly welthes grete  
 To whiche in soþe his merite is vnmete,  
 And sodanly þe wrecche is overthrownen  
 And sette at noȝt as his deserthes owen.

(778)

55. Som eke han powere *and* auctorite  
 When þat hem lusti to pun[is]che *and* distreyne,  
 So þat it may vnto þe gode be  
 An † exercise of vertu sothe to seyne,  
 And to þe wicked man a cause of peyne.  
 For right as good *and* badde discordeþ evire,  
 Right so þe badde hemself acordeþ neuere.

(779)

56. And why not ? Sith it falleþ euery day  
 þat þey discorden in hem-seluen so,  
 Theire conscience reþeueth hem alday ;  
 And often-tyme it falleþ þat þei do  
 Sum dede, þat when þe tyme is over-go,  
 Hem-self þei demen in theire owne þoght  
 þat bettre had þat dede ben vnwrught.

PROSA VI. STAN. 53.—3. eke] also h; seyth P: how grete a] it is a  
 grete h. 4. is] his N. 6. þe] he J: oys L C M Bb] vse Rl Ba N D  
 Dc F J Ch P; eye h; yoi H; ioys R; joeye T: þingi thyne T. 7. may  
 forfeite] may forfet hym T; may forfeiten H P; makeþ forfeite other MSS.:  
 for] by P. STAN. 54.—1. þan] om. F J: þewes] synnes D; custumes P.  
 2. for to lete] to forfette T; to forlete H P. 3. vices] vyce Dc. 4. þis  
 hap lo] loo thise haue T; this] his D: worldly] wordly H D P.  
 6. wrecche] which is T; wrecches D: is] om. D. 7. at] atte D: his]  
 theire D. [Stan. om. N: fol om.] STAN. 55.—1. Som eke han] And  
 som haue P. 2. to] om. Rl J: punischel nunche L: distreyne] disteyen  
 T. 3. So] om. T H: it] this D: vnto þe gode be] be to thy goode pee T.  
 4. An H F P] And other MSS. 7. þe] om. P. [Stan. om. N: fol. om.]  
 STAN. 56.—3. hem] om. T: alday] alwaye D P. 5. when] om. H.  
 6. demen] demee h. 7. þat dede ben] ben þat dede F. [Stan. om. N:  
 fol. om.]

(780)

57. This purveance if ye it vndirstood  
 It worcheþ here a wonder to youre hert,  
 þe bad[de] men be þ bad he makeþ good  
 And fro þeire vices wonderly conuert.  
 For when þe fooles fele hem-seluen smert  
 When other wrecches han hem harmed sore,  
 It falleþ þat þei haten hem þerfore ;

(781)

58. And while þey wilneth vnto suche men  
 To ben vnlyk þat vsen suche vnright,  
 To fruyt of vertu þei resorten then.  
 For only þis is þing<sup>t</sup> of goddes myght,  
 Right as it liketh hym it is but light,  
 þat badde thing<sup>t</sup> is good, as he deviseþ,  
 When goode effectes of þe bad ariseþ.

(782)

59. For-why oon ordre alle þing<sup>t</sup> embraceth,  
 And what þat flitteþ fro þis ordynaunce,  
 In-to an other ordire þeu it passeth ;  
 For in þe reavme of certeyn purveaunce  
 þat myghti god haþ in his gouernaunce,  
 Pere may noþing<sup>t</sup> be doon vncertainly  
 Ne bot it haue a skilfull cause why.

(783)

60. For vnto man it ne longeþ noght<sup>t</sup>  
 To knownen all his wonderfull engyne,  
 And of þe werkes whiche þat ben y-wroght<sup>t</sup>  
 So be þe hyhe purveaunce devyne ;

PROSA VI, STAN. 57.—1. This] If this T: vndirstood] vnderstond J.  
 3. þe badde men be bad] By bad men the badde T H P: The men that be  
 bad D: badde] bad L M h: be] ben L M h: he] it D. 7. Hit falleth  
 theyme that them hateth therfore T. [Stan. om. N: fol. om.] STAN. 58.—  
 1. wilneth] coueyt P: men] maner T. 2. vnright] vnmight H. 3. of]  
 and Dc: resorten] enforcen T H. 5. but] ful D: light] ryght T.  
 6. he] om. T H. 7. effectes] effecte D. [Stan. om. N: fol. om.]  
 STAN. 59.—1. oon] in P: alle] of T. 2. þat] om. Ch. 3. þen] þat P:  
 it] thys C. 7. a] om. D: skilfull] skilfully H. [Stan. om. N: fol. om.]  
 STAN. 60.—1. it] in sothe hyt P: ne] om. Rl Ba H De F J Ch: longeþ]  
 belongeþ H. 2. To] Tho Ch: engyne] gynne T H. 3. þe] thees D:  
 werkes] werke Dc: y-wroght] wroght D J

Ne theym wiþ wordes fully to diffyne,  
 No creature hath þat abilite.  
 Bot only this sufficeth it to see :

(784)

61. That god þe firste foundere of nature,  
 All thing<sup>t</sup> to good disposeþ he or dresseth  
 So ferforth þat in euery creature  
 Þe liknesse of hym-selfe he enpressith,  
 And for to kepen this lo he represeth  
 All wicked þinges fro his gouernaunce,  
 Avoyding<sup>t</sup> it þe fatale ordynaunce.

(785)

62. For why if þow wilt taken in þy mynde  
 Of purveaunce þat alle thing<sup>t</sup> disposeth,  
 Þere is noþing<sup>t</sup> þat þou schalt badde fynde  
 Though so be þat þi wittes so supposeth.  
 For euery þing<sup>t</sup> wiþ yn itself<sup>t</sup> encloseth  
 Som manere cause of good, it is no drede,  
 Where-of sum oþere goodes schall procede.

(786)

63. But now whilere I saw the waxen faynt  
 As for þe weihtes of þis questioun;  
 This longe processe haþ þe sore ataynt.  
 Sum swete þing<sup>t</sup> of delectacioun  
 Thow asked for a recreacioun;  
 Haue tast of þis and strenger schalt þou be  
 Than hyere to ascende[n] after me.'

PROSA VI, STAN. 60.—5. Ne] Nor D. 7. sufficeth] hit suffiseth H : it] vs D; om. h. [Stan. om. N: fol. om.; 1. 5 om. T H.] STAN. 61.—1. nature] creature H. 2. to] to do T: he] om. D: or] and C T H P: dresseth] redresssth D C. 3. in] om. D: creature] a creature Ba F Ch. 4. enpressith] repressith T; impresseth H. 5. this] om. T: represeth] impressith T. 6. þinges] pinge D. 7. be] to be L R h Bb. [Stan. om. N: fol. om.] STAN. 62.—1. wilt taken] marke wel P. 2. thing<sup>t</sup>] things T. 3. schalt] sholdest H D. 4. so] om. D. 5. self<sup>t</sup>] om. T: encloseth] it closeth Dc. 6. cause] of cause T; case D. 7. goodes] gode F: schall] to T; shulde D. [Stan. om. N: fol. om.] STAN. 63.—1. now] yet P: whilere] where D: saw] see T; saye F: waxen] wex D. 2. weihtes] weighte D. 4. þing<sup>t</sup>] thynges T. 7. hyere] her Dc; and hegher P: ascenden] ascende L; assente Dc. [Stan. om. N: fol. om.]

(787)

METRUM vj<sup>m</sup>

Si vis celsi [iura] thonantes.

1. ' Lo yf þou wilt beholde ententify  
 Wiþ all þe clere myghtes of thy mynde  
 The lawes of the souereyn god on hye,  
 Vp into heuene þou must þi wittes sende.  
 Pere euery þing doth kepe his cours of keende ;  
 þe sterres wiþ a rightwys aliaunce,  
 They kepen there þeire olde gouernaunce.

(788)

2. Ne lo the brighte sonne, it is no doute,  
 þe colde mone letteþ noght adele ;  
 Ne Vrsa whiche þat meueþ rounde aboute  
 þe poole Artyk [right] as it were a whele,  
 His olde cours he kepiþ wonder wele ;  
 Thogh oþre sterres meve into þe west  
 To abyden þere aboue he þ likeþ best.

(789)

3. And Esperus þe euen sterre clere  
 Lo scheweþ hym-self before þe derke nyght ;  
 And lo þe lusty sterre lucifere,  
 He bryngeth eft aȝeyn þe dayes light.  
 This perdurable cours þey kepen right.  
 Thus all discord be enterchanged loue  
 Exiled is out fro þe heuene aboue.

METRUM VI. iura] vne L. STAN. 1.—3. the(2)] thi D; our P: god on]  
 goddis a T. 4. into] to D: must] miȝte F J: sende] fynde R1 F J Ch.  
 5. pere] Wher T. 6. rightwys] rightfulle D; right J; righteous P.  
 7. there] om. N D. [l. 1 om. N: fol. om.] STAN. 2.—1. Ne] And P.  
 2. noght] neuere T P. 3. whiche] om. N: þat] om. R D: rounde] om. T.  
 4. right H P] om. all other MSS.: a] om. R: whele] peef Bb (but alt. to  
 whele by diff. hand). 5. This mowe ȝe knownen wonder wele R1 Ba Dc F  
 J Ch. 6. Thogh] Then T: sterres] om. F. 7. he] sche all MSS.  
 and P: likeþ] lyth D. [l. 5 om. N C M D (space in M D) T H Bb (but  
 inserted in marg. by diff. hand)]. STAN. 3.—1. Esperus] Hesperus T H  
 P: þe] þat N T: euen] hevynly T; eve D. 2. before] afore F. 3. lo]  
 so H; om. P. 4. eft] by eft P: dayes] day h P. 6. Thus] This T:  
 loue] done J. 7. Exiled is out fro] Lo is exyled fro P: out] om T: þe]  
 om. D.

(790)

4. This same accord<sup>t</sup> of loue be stoundes mete  
 Attempereth eke þe fightyng elementes,  
 þat droghte may accorde wiþ þe [w]ete;  
 þat hete *and* colde may haue conuenience;  
 And þogh þey kepe þeire kyndely resistence,  
 þe lighte fuyre algates vp ascendeth  
 And eke þe erthe þat heuy is discendith.

(791)

5. And so be causes of þe selfe resoun  
 þe swete flowres spryngen lustly  
 In þe full lusty firste somer sesoun;  
 And so the hote somer sewengly  
 þe corn to ripen makeþ hastely;  
 And so autumpnus bringeþ forþ his blede  
 Full lusty fruytes folkes for to fede.

(792)

6. This same attemperaunce, it is no nay,  
 þe wynter so bedeweþ wiþ þe reyne.  
 All lyuyng þyng it norischedþ soþe to say,  
 And eft wiþ deth retorneþ doun agayne.  
 þere while syt þe maker souereyne,  
 Well *and* ground, boþe lord *and* kyng is he,  
 Lawe *and* wise iuge [of] equite.

(793)

7. The reynes of þe worlde he hath in honde  
 [T]o maken it to moven *and* to goo;  
 Arestynge eft he makeþ it to stonde.  
 For þing þat flitteþ ever to *and* fro,

METRUM VI, STAN. 4.—1. same] om. Ch : loue] luffe T : stoundes] stounde D. 2 Attempereth] Atteyneth T : fightyng] flyghtyng Ch : elementes] elymant T Dc. 3. droghte may] may dryeth T ; doithe may H : þe] om. Rl Ba D F J Ch : wete P] hete *all MSS.* 6. fuyrel suere T : algates] algate D ; yet algates P. 7. And the heuy erthe contrary way descendeth P. STAN. 5.—1. so] om. P: causes] cause D. 2. þe] om. P. 3. full lusty] fayre P. 4. the] by T. 5. to ripen] full ripe T : Maketh; the corn to ripen hastily P. 6. autumpnus] autonus T : forþ] fyriste T H : blede] brede D. 7. Full] om. P: folkes] folke F: for] with D. STAN. 6.—2. so] om. J Ch : þe (2)] his D: reyne] regne Rl Ba. 3. lyuyng] lyvy H : þyng] þynges H. 4. deth] doughte T : retorneþ] recouereth h: doun] hem Rl Ba Dc J Ch. 5. þere] þe Rl Ba F J Ch P : syt] sith R D. 6. lord & kyng] kynde & lorde D: is he] om. De. 7. of Ba N T H] and *all other MSS.* STAN. 7.—1. in] on D. 2. To] So all MSS. 3. eft] om. T H. 4. þing] þinges R: ever] ouer Rl ; om. T.D.

Bot-if þat he enstablisched it so,  
Compellynge it to mouen into rounde,  
It moste nedes fayle fro his grounde,  
(794)

8. And fro þe ordire whiche þey now obseruen.  
This loue commyn to euery creature  
Coueiteth for to kepen *and* conseruen  
Þe ende of good þat ground is of nature ;  
For oþer wyse ne myght þere noght endeure,  
Bot loue retorne hem in-to vnite  
Of god on hyhe þat causeth þeym to be.'

(795)

## PROSA vija

[Iam] ne [igitur] vides.

1. 'Now seest þou noght,' quod sche, 'what s[e]weth here  
Vpon all þat we han rehersed now ?'  
I asked, "What?" Quod sche, 'It is full clere  
þat all fortune is good.' I asked, "How?"  
'Full soone,' quod sche, 'þat schal I schewen yow.  
Thow vndirstondest well þat þis is soth,  
þat euery fortune lusty is or loþ.

(796)

2. Yit ben þei gyffen for an excercise  
Of vertu to þe good, or elles þus  
As for a guerdonyng vnto þe wise ;  
Or þei ben yeven to þe vicius  
To punche men þat ben malicius  
Or to correcten theym of theire mysdede ;  
This is þe verray cause it is no drede.

METRUM VI, STAN. 7.—5. enstablisched] established N ; couth stabyll T ; enstabelith H. 6. mouen] mevyng TH: in] and TH: into] om. D. 7. fro his] into h. STAN. 8.—1. whiche] which þat N ; þat T ; om. J : þey now] now þei Rl Ba J : now] om. N. 2. commyn] is commune T D. 3. Coueiteth] Coueth T ; Conueyng D : for] om. T M ; them P: and] and to D : Conseruen] obseruen T h. 4. ground] groundyd Dc : nature] creature T H. 5. ne myght þere] thay myȝte nat T H ; may they P. 6. hem] hym J Ch. 7. on] in Rl F Ch : on hyhe] om. D : causeth] causyd T P : to] for to D. PROSA VII. Jam ne igitur vides] vides ne L. STAN. 1.—1. Now] And P: seweth] sweth L R ; sewere H. 2. we han] is T: now] om. Dc. 4. fortune is] fortunes be N : is] be D. 5. soone] soþ N T: sche] he h : schewen yow] shew the now P: yow] now Dc. 6. vndirstondest] vndest Rl Ba ; wondrest J : þis] it Dc. STAN. 2.—1. Yit ben þei gyffen] If it be yeve D. 3. vnto] in T ; ynto H : þe] þis T ; om. H. 4. ben] om. H h : þe] om. J. 5. punche] punysche Rl Ba N T H D h Dc F J Ch P : men] hem F P. 6. to] om. Rl : of] for T.

(797)

3. And all þat evire is iust and profitable  
 Wilt þou noght holde it good? I seyde, "Yis,  
 Forwhi it seweth verray resonable  
 To þat ye han rehersed here i-wys  
 Of purveaunce and destyne er † this.  
 Full fermely youre sentence is [i]knyt,  
 Bot sey me oo þyng if þow likeþ yit.

(798)

4. As we haue put beforne a litell ere,  
 Acounteth fortune now in þis degre:  
 Ye seiden þat a rude commynere  
 kan noght billeue ne will it noght see."  
 'And wharto schall I speke of þat?' quod sche.  
 "Parde, þis speche of folk is vsed wide,  
 þat euell fortune to sum men doth betide."

(799)

5. 'And wilt þow,' quod sche, 'þat we neighe nere  
 Vnto þis comune vsed speche þan,  
 Lest theym seme þat I goo to fer  
 Abouen all þe comune vse of man?'  
 "As liketh yow," quod I. And sche began.  
 'Wilt þow not demen good þat doth aproven?'  
 I seide, "Yis, þat moste I nede allowen."

(800)

6. 'Now all þat vertu is enforced by,  
 Or elles þat correcteth any dede,

PROSA VII, STAN. 3.—2. Wilt] Wolle T: noght] om. N: noght holde it] hold it nat T H. 3. seweth] semeth D; schewest J: verrey] of cause N: right as P. 4. here] om. Ch. 5. er N H D h] are all other MSS. and P. 6. fermely] formally T: i knyt D Dc] knyt all other MSS. and P. 7. if þow likeþ yit] Yef hit likeþ you yet F: þow] ȝow N R; it De: likeþ yit] lyke it D. [L. 7. om. T.] STAN. 4.—1. haue] om. N. 2. Acounteth] Acompytent T: now] om. h. 3. rude] new T; newde H. 4. it] om. h: noght] om. T H: see L M D R h] i see N C T H; hyde Rl Ba Dc J Ch Bb (but altered to see by different hand). 6. Parde] Quod I P: þis] þe N T: vsed] om. h. 7. to] om. F: sun] om. F: men] man Dc: betide] abide h. STAN. 5.—1. wilt] wiste T H: þow] ell h: þat we neighe nere] what were I the nere T H. 3. theym] hym; þan Dc. 4. all þe comune] comoun all Ba: þs] om. F J Ch: man] men T H. 5. quod I] om. Rl Ba Dc F J Ch Bb (but inserted later). 6. a proven] approwen N H D: Demest þou not good that causeth good to encresse P. 7. nede] nedes F: Yes quod I for sothe I may iuge no lesse P. STAN. 6.—2. Or elles] Other P: correcteth] arrecheth D.

Ne doth it noght availe ? " Yis," quod I.  
 ' Than is it good,' quod sche, ' wiþouten drede.'  
 " In sothe," quod I, " this must I graunten nede."  
 ' But this,' quod sche, ' to tho doth aperteyne,  
 þat grounded ben in vertu soþe to seyne,

(801)

7. That taken bataile wiþ suchे auentures  
 Wiþstondynge hem wiþ myghty pacience ;  
 Or it belongeth to þe creatures  
 þat haue led þeire lyf [in] insolence,  
 þat so to vertu doth þeire diligence  
 þere-to enforced be aduersite.'  
 " And þis," quod I, " may not denyed be."

(802)

8. ' Bot wh'en,' quod sche, ' fortune of lustynesse  
 To goode men is ȝouen for þeire nede,  
 Then is it [b]ad whi[ch]e þat thise folkes gesse ?'  
 I seyde, " Nay. Full right þey will it rede  
 þat suche fortune is good wiþouten drede."  
 ' And what,' quod sche, ' when fortune angwyschous  
 Bestowen is vpon þe vicious

(803)

9. To peyne hem for þeire synnes rightwisly,  
 Where will þey deme it good or elles noght ?'  
 " For good will þey noght iuggen it," quod I,  
 " Bot wrecchidnesse þe worst þat may be wrought."  
 ' Behold,' quod sche, ' now [w]here vs haþ i-brought,  
 As sewynge þis [vu]lgare opynioun,  
 A wonder merveillouse conclusioun.'

PROSA VII, STAN. 6.—3. Ne doth it noght availe] Doth hyt not profiten P. 4. quod sche wiþouten drede] that sheweth oute of drede D. STAN. 7.—2. hem] hym J. 3. belongeth] perteyneth P. 4. in] om. L M h. 5. þat] And P. 6. be] with P. 7. And] om. T. STAN. 8.—2. To] The T: ȝouen] then T. 3. Then is it] Is it then P: it] om. H: bad T P] had L Rl Ba N C H M Bb Dc F J Ch; harde h; om. D (space): whiche] wyl P; euel N; om. D (space); while L: þat] om. T P. 4. will] wold J: rede] nede T H. 5. such] thys P. 7. þe] these N; om. Dc. STAN. 9.—2. Where] Whether P: Where will] Wheper wole N: will þey] they will T. 3. For] om. P: þey] om. D. 4. wrecchidnesse] wrecchis T: wrought] thought P. 5. now where] nowher L R M Bb h C; now here Rl Ba J; where N; vs] it us T: vs] haþ] he hath vs D Dc: i brought] he brought N; broughte T D Dc. 6. sewynge] shewyng J: vulgare] wlgare L R C Bb. 7. A wonder] Into a P.

(804)

10. I asked, "What?" 'Hit sueth here,' quod sche,  
 'Of þat we han confessed plenerly:  
 Lo þat þere may no wicked fortune be  
 To tho þat hauen vertu perfity,  
 Or to tho þat [encresen] oght þer-by,  
 Or tho þat done in vertu first begynne,  
 To vertu so conuerted fro theire synne;

(805)

11. And þey þat dwellen in theire wickidnesse,  
 What fortune þat hem falle, or wele or wo,  
 It is meschief to þeym *and* wrecchidnesse.'  
 "In sothe," quod I, "it seweth well þerto;  
 Thogh no man wil it graunte, yit it is so."  
 'For why,' sche seyde, 'a wise and þerfit man  
 Ne schulde not so sore grucche þan

(806)

12. When fortune as a foo doth hym assaile,  
 Right as a [strong] man schulde hym noght disdeyne  
 When þat he hereþ rumour of bataille,  
 Bot þere-of schulde he be full glad *and* feyne.  
 For suche distresse a mater is certayne  
 For to conferme this one in sapience,  
 This oper in estate of excellencye.

(807)

13. For þan hire name vertu vseth right  
 All only when it stont in þis degree:  
 When it enforceth hym of propre myght  
 To be not vencused be aduersite.

PROSA VII, STAN. 10.—1. sueth] sheweth N : sche] I T. 2. Of] *om.*  
 J: plenerly] pruely T. 3. be] *om.* T H. 4. hauen vertu] vertu haue  
 Ba F J. 5. Or] *om.* H: encresen N C T H P] hauen *all other MSS.*  
 6. tho] to Ch: done] *om.* J. 7. so conuerted] conuerted so Dc: conuerted]  
 conforted h: fro] for T D. STAN. 11.—1. þey] þo T: theire] þei Ch.  
 2. þat] *om.* T H: hem] hym J: or (1)] of N C H; in T; *om.* D Dc. 4. In  
 sothe] Sothely H: I] she N. 5. wil it] *om.* De: yit] it T: it is] es it C  
 Dc F P. 6. a wise] *om.* T. 7. Ne] *om.* P: grucche] grogen P. [1. 5  
*om.* D.] STAN. 12.—1. When] For when; fortune] þat T; for H: hym]  
*om.* H. 2. strong] *om.* L R M D h Bb Dc F: man] *om.* H: hym noght  
 disdeyne] not be disdayned T. 3. of] of a F. 4. full] *om.* D.  
 5. such] such a h: distresse] a stresse T. 6. one] *om.* T H: in] is Dc.  
 7. estate] effecte D. STAN. 13.—1. For whan theyre name vseth  
 righte D. 3. When] Where H: hym] hir Rl Ba J: hym of] of hys P:  
 myght] of myght H. 4. To be not] Not to be D: vencused] excused N;  
 vexed D; rencused T H; ventusred Rl Ba Ch; ouerthrownen P: be (2)] with D.

And yow þat in encrese of vertu be  
 Belongeþ noȝht to lede a lusty lyf ;  
 Wiþ euery fortune haue [y]e take stryf

(808)

14. And bataile wonder scharp *and* kene.

Loke how ye can yow kepen in distresse  
 To sette ȝow-self in a myghti mene,  
 So þat hire sorwes noþing ȝow oppresse,  
 Ne þat ȝe be noȝht be hire lustynesse  
 Corrupt, for all þat [o]ver þis men[e] ariseth,  
 Or is be-nethe, felicite despiseþ,

(809)

## 15. And schall no mede as for his labour take.

For in youre owne hondes it is pytt,  
 Youre propre fortune whiche ye will it make ;  
 For if it semeth scharp vnto youre wit,  
 Lo excercise of vertu yeveth it,  
 Or elles yow conuerterþ fro youre synne,  
 Or ponyssheþ yow þat dwellynge ben þere ynne.'

(810)

METRUM vijm

bella bis qui[n]is.

1. 'Oamenon þe vengour of Heleyne  
 A bataile held of yerys twyes fyue,  
 So he destroyed troye *and* gat ageyne  
 þe same heleyne þat was hys brother wyfe.  
 But whan he first gan stire him to þat stryfe,

PROSA VII, STAN. 13.—5. yow] thought N; tho D; to yow P: in] om.  
 N T h. 6. Belongeþ] It belongeth P. 7. ye T H P] om. N; we all  
 other MSS. STAN. 14.—2. yow kepen] bere yow D. 4. hire] ȝoure N:  
 ȝow] pou T; om. h. 5. noȝht] om. F; be (2)] in D: be hire] with theyre  
 T. 6. over H] above P; om. D; ever all other MSS.: over þis mene]  
 thus T: mene P] om. H; man D: men all other MSS. 7. despiseþ]  
 disposteth T H. STAN. 15.—1. no] not J. 2. owne] om. T H: it is  
 pytt] put is hyt P. 3. Youre] Your owne F: whiche] whiche that D: it]  
 om. P. 6. yow conuerterþ] ye conuerte yow T. 7. ponyssheþ] punyshyng  
 T: dwellynge] dwellen J: dwellynge ben] wil abyde P. METRUM VII.  
 quinis] qui vis L. STAN. 1.—1. Oamenon] Oamenoun Rl; Agamemon T;  
 Agamenon H h F P: Heleyne] helyn T; helyne H; Elyn D. 2. yerys]  
 thryes Rl Ba N C; theres J: fyue] synne D. 3. troye] om. N: gat] won  
 P. 4. heleyne] Eleyne N D: brother] broders T; brothers D h; brotherys  
 Dc. 5. first gan] gan firste D: stire him to] to stere vnto D: þat]  
 om. Dc.

Hym lakked wynd<sup>k</sup> to sayle vpon þe floode,  
 And sone he boght it wiþ his doghter bloode ;  
 (811)

2. And so he made hym-selfe pyteles,  
 In sacrifice he slowh hys doghter dere.  
 And also when þat noble vlices  
 Had sailed in the see full many a ȝere,  
 He wepyd hys meyne wiþ a wofull chere,  
 For Poliphemus, daryng in his den,  
 So fiersly had devoured<sup>k</sup> all his men.

(812)

3. Bot vlices ful warly gan aspie  
 When þat Poliphemus was on-slepe,  
 And sodanly than put he out his yghe,  
 And Poliphemus tho began to lepe  
 For angir *and* for malice waile *and* wepe ;  
 Wheroft vlices was full bliþe *and* glad  
 In vengance of þe harmes þat he had.

(813)

4. And hercules gat hym a worthi name  
 Be laboures whiche þat harde were *and* grete.  
 Lo first þe proud centaurus made he tame ;  
 þe leouniers out of his skyn he gete,  
 And arpyas wiþ arowes eke he schet<sup>t</sup> ;  
 And golden apples whiche þe dragoun kept  
 He gat while þat þe cruell dragoun slept.

(814)

5. And Cerberus þe foule hound of helle,  
 A trebill cheyne he bond hym wiþ ful faste.

METRUM VII, STAN. 1.—6. wynd<sup>k</sup>] om. D: vpon] on P: þe] þat D.  
 7. doghter] doughty T; doughtris D; doughterys Dc. STAN. 2.—3. And] om. P. 4. Had sailed in the see] In the see had sayled P: full] om. N T: a] om. D J. 5. wofull] ruthful P. 6. Poliphemus] Polifemus h. STAN. 3.—1. ful warly gan] had full warely T. 2. on slepe] a slepe T D P: Whenne Poliphemus tho began to slepe Dc. 3. than] om. T. 5. For angir and for malice] And for malyce *and* anguishe P. 6. full] both T; om. D. 7. þe] his J: harmes] malycyse T; harme D: þat] om. T. STAN. 4.—1. hercules] Ercules N: worthi] noble P. 2. whiche þat harde were] the whiche were harde D: þat] he T; om. H. 3. þe] om. Ba: centaurus] contrarius N; Seynt taurus T: he] om. T. 4. of] om. H: gete] begete H. 5. wiþ] eke with P. 6. whiche] with Rl J; þat F. 7. while þat] theyme while D P: þat] om. H h: cruell dragoun] dragon cruel F: slept] slepe R. STAN. 5. -2. trebill] double N; terrible T: fulfast<sup>t</sup>] fast T H: With a thre folde cheyne he bounde ful fast P.

And dyomed<sup>k</sup> þe tyrant fiers *and* fell  
 He made hys hors devoure hym at þe laste,  
 Vpon þe serpent<sup>t</sup> ydra fuyre he caste,  
 And so he brent hym in-to asches colde  
 þat to no man hys venom noyen scholde.

(815)

6. When achile[u]s made hym self be craft<sup>t</sup>  
 Lyke to a bole wiþ hercules to fighte,  
 Then hercules his hornes hym by-raft<sup>t</sup>  
 And fully hym despoyled of his myghte,  
 Achile[u]s into [a] ryuer ryghte  
 For schame he leep *and* helde hym-seluen þere,  
 And on þe lond<sup>k</sup> he dorste no more appere.

(816)

7. Eke Anteus þe geaunt of libye  
 þat on þe ground his myghtes wolde renewe,  
 This hercules hym slowh full manfullye ;  
 Vpon his brest<sup>t</sup> and to þe ground<sup>k</sup> hym þrewe.  
 And Cacus eek þe theef þat was vntrewe  
 He slowh *and* euanderus ire he pesid<sup>k</sup>,  
 And so his herte was [right] wel [y]-esid<sup>k</sup>.

(817)

8. And over þis he slowh þe myghty bore  
 Wiþ fome of whiche his schuldres marked were ;  
 But þan this laste labour forthirmore  
 Was when he on his nekke heuene bere,

METRUM VII, STAN. 5.—4. at þe] at hym h : þe] om. J P. 5. þe] a  
 Rl: Ydra] cidra T; om. D (*space in MS.*): fuyre] suere T. 6. asches]  
 askes Rl Ba F J Ch; aysshes H. 7. to] om. T: no] om. h. [l. 4 om. D.]  
 STAN. 6.—1. achileus H] achilles L Ba R M D h Bb Dc F J Ch; achylles  
 Rl; achilleus T; Achilaus P; by crafte N: be] a D. 2. hercules] Ercules  
 N Dc; Arcules C T. 3. hercules] Ercules N Dc; Arcules C T. 4. fully]  
 ffoule T: hym] om. T H. 5. Achileus H] achilles L Rl Ba N M R D  
 h Bb Dc F J Ch; achilleus T; achilaus P: into] thenne into N: a] om. L M  
 Bb; the h. 6. leep] lepte T D P: helde] hidde N C T P. STAN. 7.—  
 1. Eke] om. P: Anteus] Achyns T; Acheus H; antheus D F: libye] liby  
 Rl Ba Ch; lyby T Dc F J; luby D. 2. on] om. F: myghtes] om. H.  
 3. This] Thus P: Hercules] Ercules Ba N: hym] yn hym H: This  
 arculez in hym ffue so manfully T. 5. eek] also h: þe theef] om. D.  
 6. euanderus] auanderus Ba J; Euandres N: pesid<sup>k</sup>] plesede Dc. 7. wel]  
 right wel N: y esid<sup>k</sup>] y eased h; y yesed F; esid other MSS. Which of the  
 Cacus wasse ofte tyme diseasid T: Which of þat Cacus often was desesyd H P.  
 [l. 7 om. C N (*but inserted later in margin by a different hand*).] STAN. 8.—  
 1. pis] al this D. 2. fome of whiche] hoos foom. 3. this] his D P.  
 4. his] om. Rl Ba Ch: heuene] heuens P.

And of this labour he deserued þere  
 þe heuene for to haue vnto his mede.  
 Ye myghti men of þis now takeþ hede.

(818)

9. Now hasten yow þe hye way to wende  
 Right as ye may be þis exsaumple see.  
 [Y]e nyce men *and* mased in þoure mende,  
 Why nyll ye fighte aȝeyn aduersite,  
 Wiþ vertu sith þe may so siker be?  
 Who so in erthe haþ þe victorye,  
 He schall ben worthy to þe heuene on hye.'

Explicit liber quartus.

METRUM VII, STAN. 8.—5. deserued] desired N; deserued hevyn D.  
 6. þe] That P: for] om. Rl Ba F J Ch: vnto] to T H. 7. of] to P: now]  
 om. D; ye P. STAN. 9.—1. Yow] pou J. 3. Ye] þe L C R M D h Bb.  
 4. nyll ye] wille ye not T H P. 5. so] om. T. 7. ben] ben þe R: þe  
 seen Rl Ba F J Ch. [ll. 1, 2 *in reverse order* h.]

[INCIPIIT LIBER QUINTUS]

(819)

[PROSA j<sup>a</sup>]

1. When sche had seid sche gan hire-selue hye  
To oþer þinges tretyd for to be.  
“ Youre noble exortacioun,” quod I,  
“ Full digne it is of hye auctorite,  
But yit whilere as I remembre me,  
Ye speken of devyne prescience ;  
How hard it is I haue experieñce,

(820)

2. And all belapped wiþ demaundes feele,  
Encomberous to euery mannes wyt’ ;  
Full brigous is þat matere wiþ to dele.  
But now I pray ȝow þat ȝe seie me yit,  
If hap be oght, what manere þing is it.”  
‘ I spedē me,’ quod sche, ‘ for to pay my det’ .  
Of thinges whiche whiler I the behet’,

(821)

3. And for to sette the in a redy way  
So þat þou myght’ retorne into þi lande.  
This mater þat þou asked, soth to say,  
Thogh it be good to knowe *and vndirstande*,  
Lo yit þis purpose þat we han on hande  
Sumwhat [it] is impertinent’ perto ;  
And furthermore it is to drede also

PROSA I, STAN. 1.—1. When] Then M Bb. 4. digne] worthy P.  
5. remembre] remembred Rl Ba H F Ch. 6. speken] spaken N Bb ;  
spokyn Dc ; dyd speke P. STAN. 2.—2. Encomberous] Enaumbrous D :  
euery] uery J ; any P. 3. brigous] dangerous P. 4. ȝow] om. F.  
5. manere] om. F: þing] om. M. 7. whiche] þat P: the] om. T H F:  
behet’] byhighte D. STAN. 3.—1. the] yo Ba J. 2. myght’] mayst N :  
þi lande] þyn hand M. 3. pou] I h : asked] askest Rl Ba N H F J Ch  
P ; askeȝ T. 4. to] I D. 5. þis] the h : on] in D. 6. it T H D]  
om. all other MSS. and P.

(822)

4. Lest of þi labour þat þou feynt and fayle,  
 And for thy iourney þat is ouergone,  
 And lest þou suffice noght to þi trauaile  
 To þat þou hast here afterward to done.  
 " Ne drede ȝe noght," quod I; " let me allone,  
 For this schal ben right as a tyme of reste  
 To here of þing þat me deliteþ mest ;

(823)

5. And namely sith youre processe all aboute  
 Be disputacioun so formally  
 Concluded is, it may not be in doute  
 Of þat ye will inducen sewyngly."  
 ' Right as þou wilt,' quod sche, ' right so wil I.'  
 And sche gan to declaren in þis wise :  
 ' What-euere he be,' quod sche, ' þat will devise

(824)

6. That hap is such a þing þat schulde be-fall  
 Wiþouten cause or skill of gouernance,  
 Than say † I þus þat hap is noght at all  
 But as an ydell name of [no] vailaunce.  
 Sith god haþ sett all þing in ordinaunce,  
 How schulde þere þan any place be  
 To worchen þinges of vncerteynte ?

(825)

7. For trewe i-nogh this sentence hap ben holde,  
 Lo þat þere may noþing be done of noght;  
 This ne wiþ-seiden neuer one of þise olde.  
 Of oo begynner all þing most be wroght,

PROSA I, STAN. 4.—1. labour] wayes P. 3. lest] lest þat T: to] for h: þi] om. D. 4. here] om. N: afterward] to] after for to P. 5. Ne] Then P: ȝe] the T; me h: thowe D. 6. right] om. F Dc: as] om. H: a] om. N. 7. þing] þinges F: mest] best P. STAN. 5.—3. it] that T. 4. will] wolde N: inducen] enditen F. 5. quod sche right so] righte so quod she D h: right (2)] om. T. 6. gan] began P: gan to declaren] can declare T: to] om. h. 7. he] she T: he be] om. D. STAN. 6.—1. þat (2)] as F: schulde] shall T H. 2. cause] om. Dc: or] of J Dc. 3. say] saide Ba L C T M D h Ch Dc: pus] pis F: at] om. Rl. 4. no T H P] om. all other MSS.: vailaunce] variaunce N; violence h. 6. þan any place be] yn any maner be T; in any man than be H; any place þan be all other MSS. and P: þan] om. F. 7. worchen] worpi Dc: of] in P. STAN. 7.—1. i-nogh] y-noght Rl Ba: hap ben holde] to be holde D. 2. Lo] Soo: noþing be done] be doo nothing T: be done] y doon Dc. 3. ne] om. N: olde] wold D: Thys sentence reuoked neuer fadres olde P.

Yit þis was not þe conseit of þeire þoght.  
Thogh all þing haue a makere principall,  
They meued of subiecte materiall.

(826)

8. For þat þey put as for a foundement,  
And þat hap euery resoun of nature.  
Than wil it sewen well and consequent,  
This may conceyuen euery creature,  
If any þing were done be auenture  
Wiþouten causes wherof to procede,  
Than most it come of noght it is no drede.

(827)

9. Bot sith þis may not been in no manere,  
Than hap may not be cleped sikerly  
Suche as we han diffyned now whilere.  
“What! is þere þanne no manere þing,” quod I,  
“þat chaunce or hap is cleped skilfully?  
Or suche a þing þer is to folk vnknowe  
Wherto þis name be-longeþ as ye trowe?”

(828)

10. ‘Þis lo myne Aristotiles,’ quod sche,  
‘Wiþynne þis book of fysyk naturele,  
In schort he scheweþ what þing it scholde be;  
Full nyhe þe skill declareþ it full wele.’  
“And how?” quod I. ‘Lo þis is euerydele,’  
Quod sche, ‘þat writeþ Aristotiles;  
Of þis mater I trowe it be no les:

PROSA I, STAN. 7.—5. þe] ly TH : þeire] his D. 6. þing] þinges T :  
a makere] oo mater Dc. 7. They meued] The meuere H; they dyd meue  
P: of] be of D. STAN. 8.—1. þey] þe Rl ; om. T H. 2. euery] euer T  
P: of] and R. 3. it] om. Rl Ch: well] clere N T H P. 4. conceyuen] STAN. 9.—  
wel perceyve P. 5. were] be h. 5. wherof] þeroft Dc. STAN. 9.—  
1. not] om. T : in] bye D. 2. not] om. D: cleped] called P. 3. Suche]  
sith T: han diffyned] diffyned haue P: diffyned] diffyne D: now] here D.  
5. cleped] called P. 6. per] as T: þat D. 7. ye] þei Rl Ch ; I N J Dc ;  
Y R. STAN. 10.—1. þis] Yes T; Yet D: lo] om. P 2. Wiþynne]  
Which in T H; In P: his] this L Ba C M h Bb F J: book] bokes T.  
3. In schort] Breffely P: he] it D: scheweþ] speketh H: þing] þynges H.  
4. it full wele] he quod she T: Full nye the trouthe dyffyneth he hyt ful  
wel P. 5. And] om. F: þis] þus T: is] om. D F. 7. I trowe it be no  
les] And hyt ys no les P: no] not F. [Stan. om. N.]

(829)

11. Als often as ther is a werk iwroght  
 As for a certeyn purpos of entent,  
 And þan of oþere causes vnbiþoght  
 Betideth oþer wayes þan was be-ment,  
 Lo hap this may be cleped verrayment.  
 And if it luste a man to delue his lond  
 And hid þerynne a somme of gold he fond,

(830)

12. Of suche a þing men demen sikerly  
 Lo þat a sodeyn auenture it is.  
 Yit come it not of noþing noght-for-thy,  
 Bot propre causes were beforne i-wys  
 Þe concurse of þe whiche causeth þis;  
 Bot for it fell vnware and vnþepoght,  
 It semeth folk þat hap it hap i-wroght.

(831)

13. For bot the tyllear doluen had his ground,  
 And eke þe hider putte it in þat stede,  
 Thow may wel sene þe gold had noght be founde.  
 As in þat manere wise, it is no drede,  
 Þe causes ben of auenturous dede  
 When þat þey mete and ben assembled so  
 Wiþoute certeyn purpose to be do.

(832)

14. For he þat dalf ne he þat hyd it there  
 Purposed noght, þow myght suppose it wele,  
 þat gold to haue be found in þat manere;  
 Neuer oon of hem ne þoght it noght a dele.

PROSA I, STAN. 11.—1. werk] werre D : iwroght<sup>t</sup>] wrought D. 3. þan þauȝ F. 4. oþer wayes] otherwyse h P : was] hath T : be-ment] ment D. 5. hap] happy T: cleped] called P. [Stan. om. N.] STAN. 12.—2. þat what T H : a] om. H. 3. come] came P: not] om. F: noþing] oo thing T H : noght] om. T: yet D: noght for thy] parday P. 4. causes] cause M. 5. þe (2)] om. P. 6. it fell] itsilf h. 7. it hap] hap it T; hap H: i-wroght<sup>t</sup>] wrought T D. [Stan. om. N.] STAN. 13.—1. the] this D: doluen had] had delue T; had dolue P: his] this D. 3. may] myȝte T H; maiste D: þe] þat Rl Ch Dc. 5. auenturous] auentures F. 7. Wiþoute] Wiþ Rl Ba F J Dc: do] to C. [Stan. om. N.] STAN. 14.—1. ne] and P: hyd<sup>t</sup>] putt T. 2. Purposed] Purposed it F: myght] maiste T P: suppose consayve T: it] om. T. 3. be found] bestowid T. 4. Neuer] Ne Neuer Rl Ba F Ch; noght P: oon] none F: of hem] om. T H: ne] he ne H: noght] om. T.

But right as I haue seid it so be-fell  
 þat in þat same place þat þey it hid  
 þat oþer dalf *and* fond as it betyd.

(833)

15. Now than in schort to make an ende of all,  
 To set a finall diffinicioun :  
 Lo hap is such a þing! þat doth be-fall,  
 Noþing! purposed of entencioun,  
 Where diuerse causes maken vnioun  
 In thinges þat for somewhat were i-wroght,  
 Bot in-to þat þat is be-fallen þnoght.

(834)

16. But this vneschuale ordynaunce  
 Whiche þat þe welle heed procedeth fro  
 Of the devyne hyhe purveaunce,  
 Wiþouten whiche þer may noþing! be do,  
 'Þat makeþ þe causes to concurren so,  
 Þat alle þing! disposeth kyndely  
 In propre place and tymes certanly.'

(835)

METRUM j<sup>m</sup>

'Rupis Achaemeniae.'

1. 'Tygris *and* eke eufrates spryngen boþe  
 Out of a craggy roche in armanye,  
 Out of a welle hede, to seie þe sothe,  
 Where men be woned to fighten wonderlye.

PROSA 1, STAN. 14.—5. it] right D. 6. þat (2)] þe F P: þat þey] om. D; where þes P: þey] pise T H. 7. as it] it as Dc. [Stan. om. N.] STAN. 15.—1. than] om. F: in] þe yn H: Now the to make a ende in shorte of all T. 2. To] om. T H: To set] And to make P: finall] smal N. 3. hap] happy T: þat] as þis T; as D. 5. maken vnioun] metyng into one P: vnioun] in you T; mencioune D; on you H. 6. for] om. T: were] were ere Rl Ba F J Ch: i-wroght!] wroght D. 7. þat (2)] whiche D; om. F: noght N C H P] of noght *all other MSS.* STAN. 16.—1. vneschuale] om. N (space left in MS., but word put in marg. in diff. hand); vnesuall h; vncasewell T H; vneschewable P. 2. þe] om. Ch: þe welle heed] we will T H. 3. devyne hyhe] hygh diuine T D P. 4. whiche] the which T H J: do] i do Dc. 5. þe] pese N T H P: causes] cause M: to] om. T: concurren] contrarien N; concurrent T; concur D; vncurren Dc. 6. þing!] þinges N D. 7. place] placys D F: tymes] tyme T F. METRUM I. Met. j<sup>m</sup>. (*MS. has iij<sup>m</sup>.*) Rupis Achaemeniae] Rupus Archu-nenie L. STAN. 1.—1. Tygris] Mygris T: eke] om. N P. 2. in] of P: Armanyel Armonie Rl Ba h J; Ermony N; hermony T; hermenye H; Armony D; Armeny F; Ermény P. 3. Out] But T: a] one P: hede] here T H.

In flight þei harmen hem þat sewen nye,  
 Theire scharpe darter sicching in þaire breste,  
 So when þei fle[en] þeire foos þey noyen † mestē.

(836)

2. Thisse ryueres bothe ben desioyned soone  
 And renne in two dyuerse stremes grete,  
 And after þat þey fallen into one  
 Wher þat þey in an other place mete.  
 De schippes þan and stokkes þat þere flete  
 In ayther of these ryueres doun along,  
 It happeþ þat þey meten ever among.

(837)

3. This water þus enplyeth and be-lappeth  
 Thus mengyng many chaunces fortunelle ;  
 Bot of that schel[u]yng erthe it so be-[h]appeþ  
 Whiche þat [þ]is water s[e]wet[h], wite it welle,  
 That flittyng ordire rewleþ euerydelle.  
 Right so is hap vnrewled as ye demeth,  
 Bot noght-forthi a certeyn lawe it yemeth.'

(838)

PROSA ij<sup>a</sup>

'Animaduerto inquam.'

1. "To þis," quod I, "full well accorde I can,  
 And þat ye seyn I may it well beleuen.

METRUM I, STAN. 1.—6. sicching in þaire brest] in ther brest fyxing  
 P : sicching] fuchen D ; fuching T ; fightyng R.      7. fleen Dc N F] sleigh  
 L R M Bb ; slegh C ; flee D ; fie J ; slogh h ; flettih T ; fleeth H ; flye Rl  
 Ba Ch : þey] om. N : noyen D H F] neighen L R M Bb h ; nyghen Rl Ba J ;  
 nyȝen N C ; harme Dc ; nyght Ch ; ne T : So when þey sleigh ther foes moste  
 noyng P.      STAN. 2.—1. bothe ben] be both T.      2. in two] into N D F.  
 4. an] any Dc.      5. þan and] and the T : and] and the H ; as Dc : þat  
 þere] per þei Dc.      6. ryueres] stremes P : along] and long R ; on long F.  
 STAN. 3.—1. þus] than D ; this F : enplyeth] amplieth H ; empieþ F.  
 2. Thus] This H : mengyng] mevyng Rl Ba Th F J ; meuy H ; medelyng  
 P : fortunelle] for to melle N ; fortunesse R.      3. of] om. Dc : scheluyn  
 T H] schelewyn h ; sheloyng L Rl Ba R M F J Ch ; scloyng Dc : sheloyng  
 N C ; shelvey P : behappeþ C H F] be lappeþ L Rl Ba N T R M h J Ch Dc  
 Bb.      4. Whiche] The wych P : pis T H F R h P] is L Rl Ba N C M Bb  
 Dc J Ch : seweth T H P] swete all other MSS. : wite] wote T ; om. h.  
 5. flittyng] fitteth h.      6. vnrewled] vnrewleþ Pa J Ch : ye demeth  
 demeth ye P.      7. it] yet T : But nevertheles hyt hath a law of certente P.  
 [ll. 2, 3 om. D.]      PROSA II, STAN. 1.—1. full well accorde] full accorde  
 wel D ; accorde full wel F.      2. it] fful T ; right H.

But in þe ordire of þise causes than  
 Whiche þat so sewyngly to-gideres cleuen,  
 This wolde I seen yf ye couthe schewe or preuen,  
 If in youre chois is any liberte,  
 Oþer elles þat þis cheyne of destyne

(839)

2. Constreyneth all þe movyng<sup>t</sup> of oure wyt ? ”  
 Quod sche, ‘ Forsothe þan were it all amys,  
 þat will I schewe *and* clerly preuen it,  
 For-why no kynde þat resonable is  
 Wiþoute liberte may ben i-wys.  
 For all þat<sup>t</sup> kyndly resoun vsen may,  
 May demen and discerne, it is no nay.

(840)

3. And be hym-selue he knoweþ kyndely  
 What þing<sup>t</sup> is to desire *and* what to flee.  
 And what þing<sup>t</sup> þat he demeþ verrely  
 And worthi ys desired for to be,  
 þat þing lo sekeþ *and* desireþ he ;  
 And what he iuggeþ worth to be forsake,  
 þat will he leuen and þat other take.

(841)

4. Than euery þing<sup>t</sup> þat resoun hath certeyne,  
 Of will *and* nyll haþ liberte þerto,  
 But all ylyk in sothe will I not seyn ;  
 For-why devyne substancies stonden so :  
 þe iuggement<sup>t</sup> is wonder clere of tho,  
 Theire will is in-corrupt<sup>t</sup>, þeire [myght] is prest<sup>t</sup>  
 And spedy to all þat hem likeþ best.

PROSA II, STAN. 1.—3. þise] the N h. 4. Whiche þat] The wych P: so sewyngly to gideres] to gedere so sewyngly T: cleuen] cleuee h. 5. This] That N: couthe] koude N D: or] and T. 6. youre] oure H: chois] chose Ch. 7. Oþer] Or Rl Ba N H D Ch: elles] ell H: cheyne] om. T H. STAN. 2.—1. all] om. N: movyng] ynobeyng H. 2. Quod sche forsothe] fforsoth quod she T: forsothe] in sothe P. 4. no] in D. 6. þat H] om. T; thing *all other MSS. and P.* 7. May] Also D; To J Ch Dc: discerne] discriuen N. STAN. 3—2. what(2)] what þing Rl J Ch; om. T 3. þat] om. F J Ch: demeth] denyeth D. 5. lo] lo so Rl Ba F; so H. 6. he] om. N: worth] worthy N H D P; om. T; worth and Dc: be] om. N. 7. þat(2)] the T: þat other] the tother D; another h. STAN. 4—2. and] or T H. 3. ylyk] in lyke N T: in] for T: will I] I wolde N. 4. For-why] For P: substancies] substaunce D h J. 6. is(1) om. R: is incorrupt<sup>t</sup>] incorrupt is Rl Ba F J Ch: þeire (2)] þan h: myght T H] will *all other MSS. and P.* 7. spedy] spedeth Rl Ba D F; spenden N: to] till Rl Ba F J: hem likeþ] liketh hem Th. [ll. 5-7 om. Dc: fol. om.]

(842)

5. Bot most in fredom is þe soule of man  
 When he is set in contemplacioun,  
 And fully fecchen of his þoghtes can  
 In hye devyne speculacioun,  
 And lesse if þat his occupacioun  
 Of worldly þing<sup>i</sup> distrakkeþ out his mynde,  
 And lesse when fleschely bondes doth hym bynde.

(843)

6. He gynneth then to wexen derk *and* dull  
 Of þat vnþrifty cloude of ignorance ;  
 Of foule affecciouns þan is he full,  
 Encombred wiþ the vice of in[con]stance  
 þat turbeleth hym wiþ angwisshe *and* grevance,  
 To þe whiche when he consenteth in his wit<sup>r</sup>  
 In seruage þan hym-seluen haþ he knyt<sup>t</sup> ;

(844)

- 7 In manere of his propir liberte  
 A caytif is be-come of conscience.  
 But neuerþelatter he þat all may se  
 As be his hye eternall prescience,  
 All þing<sup>i</sup> gouerneþ by his excellencie  
 And hereth *and* seeth well euer[y] þoght *and* dede,  
 And so he will disposen for þeire mede.'

(845)

METRUM ij<sup>m</sup>

Puro clar[um] lumine.

1. 'The noble poete honymouth Omere  
 Lo of þe sonne singeþ in þis wise,

PROSA II, STAN. 5.—3. fecchen] futher T; fuchen H; sythen D; fyxen P: of] all T H; in D. 5. lesse if] losse ȝit N: if] ȝit Ch. 6. worldly] wordly T H; distrakkeþ] disturbyng D; distracteth N F P: distractineth T; distracteth H: out] ogh C H; om. D F: his] of T. 7. bondes] lustes N: doth] om. T. [Stan. om. Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 6.—1. gynneth] grauneth D. 2. vnþrifty] foule P. 3. Of] And of T H: þan is he full] þat he is of full D: is he] he shall be P. 4. vice] wyse T; wyce H: inconstance] instance L M h. 6 þe] om. H: he] om. N: his] om. D. 7. hap] doth N: hap he knyt<sup>t</sup>] he hath y knytte T. [Stan. om. Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 7.—2. is] is he F: of] in P. 4. hye] eye Rl Ba J. 5. gouerneþ] gouernyng P. 6. well euery] euery wille T: euery] euere L R M D. 7. he] om. F. [Stan. om. Dc: fol. om.] METRUM II. Puro clarum lumine] Puro clari lumine L. STAN. 1.—2. singeþ] fayneth T: in] on P.

And seith for all his brighte bemes clere,  
 þe see and lond ne may he noght suffice  
 To person thurgh; so may we noght [deuise]  
 Of hym þat haþ þis wyde worlde i-wroght.  
 þe heuy erthe wiþstondeth hym right noght,

(846)

2. For fer and hye all þing he seth anone;  
 He is not let be clowdes of þe nyght,  
 For all þat is, or was, or schall be done,  
 At ones is it all beforne his sight.  
 Sith he allone wiþ his bemes bright  
 So alle þinges may be-holde and see,  
 We may wel say a verray sonne is he.'

(847)

[PROSA iii<sup>a</sup>]

[Tum ego en inquam].

1. [I] seide then, "A gretter doute now  
 Confoundeth me þan dide beforne i-wys."  
 'Of what,' quod sche, 'art þow in doute now?  
 Now right in sothe coniecte I what it is.'  
 "Full hugely," quod I, "repugneth þis,  
 þat god may knownen all þing or it be,  
 And þat oure will may stonde in liberte.

(848)

2. Sith god beforne seeth all þat schall be do,  
 And his sight lo may be deceyued noght,  
 Of verrey force þan nede it moste be so  
 þat presciens haþ seen as to be wroght;

METRUM II, STAN. 1.—3. for] þat for Rl Ba J Ch : for all] þat for F.  
 4. ne] om. N. 5. deuise N C T H P] suffice all other MSS. 6. haþ.  
 om. T H: wyde] om. H; wilde h: i-wroght] wrought T H D. 7. wiþ.  
 stondeth hym] hym wythstandeth P: right] om. D F P. [l. 5 om. D. Stan.  
 om. Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 2.—1. and] on T H: all þing he seth] he seith  
 al thyng h. 2. be] by the T. 3. or (1)] om. T; and D. 4. is it]  
 it is D F: beforne] befor yn H. 6. þinges] þinge D. [Stan. om. Dc :  
 fol. om.] PROSA III (Prose not separated from previous Metrum in MS.).  
 STAN 1.—1. I] om. L C R Bb: I seide] Seyde I Rl Ba F J Ch: gretter]  
 tretter Ba Ch. 2. Confoundeth] Confoundyd T: þan] om. T. 3. sche]  
 om. H: now] and howe D. 4. Now right] Right now D: in sothe] om. M.  
 5. repugneth] repugneth Ba. 6. or] or þat H. 7 in] at P. [Stan.  
 om. Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 2.—1. be] om. H: Sith god seith all thyng  
 afore it is don T. 3. þan nede it moste] þen moste hit nede F. 4. seen]  
 sone J: as] al D; þat is P.

[And furthermore all erþely þing vnsoght]  
Of euery wight he knoweth plenerlye;  
Than is no fredom in oure arbitrye,

(849)

3. For-why þere may be neiper þoght ne dede  
þat purveaunce beforne seeth it all.  
He faileþ noȝt þer-of, it is no drede,  
Bot all þat ever he wot betiden schall;  
All þat he seeth beforne it must be-fall,  
And if it may be-fallen oþer-wise,  
It was noȝt seen before as I devise.

(850)

4. Than schall þis be no verrey prescience,  
Bot as an vncerteyn opynyoun.  
But sikerly þis were a foule offence  
Of god to felen þat conclusioun.  
And some men wenēn þat þis questioun  
May ben assailed thus as þey beleue,  
But þaire resonēs ne kan I þat noȝt appreue.

(851)

5. Lo þus þey seyn: a thing þat schal betide  
Betydeth noȝt for god provideth so,  
Bot god þat þing to comyng þat doth provide  
And seeth bifore all þing that schal be do;  
And þus ayeinward schulde þe cause [go]:  
þat god forseeþ this þing þat schal be wrought,  
But yit of nede it schal betide noȝt.

PROSA III, STAN. 2.—5. As for that sothe opynyon in thy thought P.  
6. plenerlye] verrily D. [Stan. om. Dc: fol. om. ll. 2-7 om. TH; 1. 5 om. L N [space in MS.] C R M D h Bb; in N l. 5 is put in margin by different hand.] STAN. 3.—1. neiper] noþer P. 2. ne N H P] ye other MSS. 3. drede] doughte T. 4. betiden] betide hit F. 5. seeth] sayth N: beforne] be from N. 6. befallen] be torned P. 7. seen before] be seen a fore F; as I] at my P. [l. 1 om. TH; ll. 1-4 om. Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 4.—1. schall] shall not T. 2. as] om. N h. 4. to] pat Dc: felen] seke T. 5. men] om. T: wenēn] om. Dc; supposest P. 6. þey] ye J. 7. ne] om. N T F P: I T Dc F P] it other MSS. [ll. 4-7 om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 5.—1. Lo] And lo T; So Ch: a] me Dc: a thing] of thynge; T: schal] shulde T. 3. þat] om. N; then that T; to comyng] is to comme D: comyng] connyngh L T M h Bb F J Ch: cummyng C; commen P. 4. And seeth all thing before that shall betyde or do T. 5. schulde þe cause] yeldeth the cause T; cause] causes P: go] om. L R M h Bb; lo T; be lo D. 6. forseeþ] fforfettyth T: þis] om. R. 7. yit] ȝif Ch; om. P: schal] schulde Dc. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.]

(852)

6. Thei seien also þat þing<sup>i</sup> þat schall be-falle,  
In goddes sight provided it is nede.  
Lo þis answere assoileth noght at all  
This brigous questioun, it is no drede.  
Onely to þis entent it doth procede:  
Lo of two diuerse þinges to enquere  
Whiche of hem two þe cause of oþere were;

(853)

7. Where þat þe prescience of god allone  
So causeth þing<sup>i</sup> to fallen nedelye,  
Or elles thing<sup>i</sup> þat nedes schall be done  
Lo causeth prescience of god on hye.  
This is no verray answere sikerlye  
To þat þat I entende for to schewe,  
But no[t]-forþi my purpose stondeth trewe.

(854)

8. How-euer it stondeth of þis ordynaunce  
Which þat of þise cause of oþre be:  
A þing<sup>i</sup> þat is forseyn be purveaunce  
Of nede it muste betide as semeth me,  
þogh it be so þat þis necessite  
Ne be noght caused of this prescience,  
As in effecte þer is no difference.

(855)

9. As if I sitte and þow supposest it,  
Then nedes soth is þyn opinioun,  
But þow my sittyng is not caused yit  
As nedfull of thyn estymacioun.

PROSA III, STAN. 6.—1. seien also] also seyn Ch: þat (1)] þe N.  
2. it is] is it C T. 4. brigous] doubtful P. 5. þis] his T. 6. to] it  
to D. 7. two] om. P. [l. 3 om. T. Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 7.—  
1. Where] Whether D F P. 2. So] om. P: þing to fallen] to fallen  
pinge F. 4. on] so T. 6. To] So D; þe J: þat (1)] om. N: I] om.  
D: entende] entendyd Dc J. 7. not forþi] neuertheles P: not] no L T  
M Bb; now h; nought N C; trewe] so true T. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.]  
STAN. 8.—1. þis] his D. 2. þise cause] cause this h; þes the cause P.  
4. betide] be T: semeth] thynketh D. 5. Though that so be of necessite  
T. 6. caused] cause T. 7. effecte] effectis T. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.]  
STAN. 9.—1. I] it T. 3. þow] þaugh F.

And right so if þou torne it vp *and* doun,  
 If þou supposest soþ of þat I do,  
 Eke of necessite it muste be so.

(856)

10. Necessite þan must ther ben in bothe ;  
 Vnto þat poynt lo here we ben i-brought,  
 In me of sytting and in the of soþe.  
 Yit wost þou well þerfore ne syt I noȝht  
 For þou right so supposest in þi þoght,  
 But rather þus : because þat I sat  
 Lo thyn opynioun was soþ in þat.

(857)

11. Than is þis trewþe caused of þe dede,  
 And eke in bothe þere is necessite.  
 Lo in þe same wise we may proceðe  
 Of purveaunce in soþe as semeth me ;  
 For-cause þise þinges schall here-after be,  
 For-thy be purveaunce he seeth it all,  
 And ȝit þerfore ne doþ it noȝht be-fall ;

(858)

12. And nevirþelatter all þat schall betide,  
 Of god it is provided nedely ;  
 And eft aȝeyn all þat he doþ provide  
 Of nede it doþ by-falle sikerly.  
 And all þe fredom of oure arbitry  
 Lo þis suffiseth to distroyen clene.  
 He scheweþ well how masedly we mene

PROSA III, STAN. 9.—5. And] Of D ; As Ch : so] om. T : it] om. Dc F : vp and] vp so N C T P. 7. it muste be so] than ys byt so. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 10.—1. must þer] per moste F : ther ben] nede be than T. 2. we ben] be we T D : i-brought] brought T D. 3. in (2)] of T : om. Ch. 4. þerfore ne syt] ne þerfore syt R : that therfore syt D P. 5. þou right so] righte so þou T : so] om. Rl Ba Ch : supposest] disposes D : As for that soþe opynyon in thy thought P. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 11.—1. þis] pat N : caused] causeth Ch. 2. eke] om. T : And in boþe eke is necessite Dc. 4. Of] Of thys P : in soþe] for soþe N ; om. P. 5. þise] the N ; om. D : schall] om. T : be] me T. 6. For-thy by] For bye this D : seeth] seet Rl Ba ; sette F ; set Ch. 7. ne] om. N F P : it] he T. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 12.—2. prouided] purveyed D. 5. all] om. Ch. 7. scheweþ] sewith T ; aperith P : masedly] masid T ; insadly h. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.]

(859)

13. That aventure of þinges temporele  
 Schulde cause[n] his eternall prescience.  
 But þis were right a nyce þing to fele ;  
 Wiþ resoun haþ [it] no conuenience,  
 For it wolde sewen of theire evidence  
 þat þinges passed many ȝeres seyn  
 Schulde cause god þat is oure souereyn.

(860)

14. As if I kn[o]w a thing[ þat present is,  
 While I it knowe, nedes is it so ;  
 Right so a þing þat schal be after þis,  
 If I it knowe, of nede it moste be do.  
 It seweth wel, we may not go þerfro,  
 And so my purpose may not ben reme[w]ed  
 þat þing prescrit ne may not be eschewed.

(861)

15. For if I deme thus of a certeyn thing[  
 And is not so, it is no questioun,  
 Noght only is þat conseit no konnyng[e],  
 Bot errorr of a fals opynyoun,  
 And wonder fer is þat suspiciooun  
 And dyuerse fro þe trewþe as I suppose.  
 But who can sa[u]e it wiþ a better glose ?

(862)

16. For if þer schall a certayn þing be wroght  
 And schal not fallen of necessite  
 But is vncertayn to betide or noght,  
 It is not knowe to been as semeth me.

PROSA III, STAN. 13.—2. causen] cause L R M h Bb ; om. T. 3. were right] wold ben P; right] om. T: a] om. Ba T Dc F J : nyce] new D; foly P. 4. Wiþ] Which with D: it Rl Dc T F J Ch P] om. L Ba N C R M D h Bb. 5. theire] that Dc. 6. many ȝeres] long tyme P: seyn] sithen T. 7. cause] caused L Rl Ba C R M h Bb Dc F (but altered to cause) J Ch: þat] whiche D. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 14.—1. know T R P] knew all other MSS. 2. I it] that I D Dc ; that h: knowe] knew Rl Ba Dc F: is it] it is D. 3. a] om. J: schal] om. R: schal be] is D. 4. I it] þer J. 6. purpose] symple purpose T: not ben] be not F: remewed N] reneued J; remewed other MSS. 7. þing] om. D: prescrit] presente F: ne] om. D P: not] om. F: eschewed] exchued P. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 15.—1. of] om. Dc. 3. no] nor D. 4. a] om. D. 5. is] it is R. 7. sauþ] sawe L R Bb. [Stan. om. H: fol. om.] STAN. 16.—3. But] And N: to] om. T. 4. knowe to been] vñknownen to betide D: to been] to be seen h.

For knowyng<sup>t</sup> so wiþ falshede may not be  
 In no manere conioyned ne disceyued,  
 Bot ben it moste þat knowyng<sup>t</sup> haþ conseyued.

(863)

17. And other-wise ne may it not be done,  
 For lo þat is þe verray cause why  
 þat in a knowyng<sup>t</sup> errorr is þere none.  
 Sith trouthe then stondeth nedefully,  
 And knowyng<sup>t</sup> comprehendēþ verrely,  
 What þan availeþ þat we ben abowte ?  
 How knoweþ god a þing<sup>t</sup> þat is in doute ?

(864)

18. For if þat god a certayn þing<sup>t</sup> devise  
 For to be done þat no wight may eschue,  
 And yit it may betiden oper-wise,  
 A perelouse errorr here-of will þere sewe,  
 þat goddes iuggement<sup>t</sup> schulde be vntrewe ;  
 And so of god oure hyhe souereigne  
 Full felonous is this to þinke o[r] seyne.

(865)

19. And if he knoweþ þinges for to ben  
 So þat þey may betid in-different,  
 As be or noght be, þan can I not seen  
 But þis is an vncerteyn iugement.  
 þe prescience of god omnipotent,  
 What þing is it I can it not defende  
 þat may noþing<sup>t</sup> in certayn comprehendē.

PROSA III, STAN. 16.—5. so] om. P. 6. conioyned] communed N ; conieynd Dc ; conioned M : ne] nor D: disceyued] disseuered N. 7. ben it moste] hyt must ben P: it] om. T: knowyng<sup>t</sup> om. D. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 17.—1. ne] om. T D. 3. a] om. R. 4. then] that J : then stondeth] stondeth then D. 5. comprehendēþ] reprehendeth D. 6. availēþ] vayleþ T: we] ȝe Rl Ba J. 7. god] om. T: a] all Ba F J Ch. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 18.—1. þat] om. F. 2. wight] man N. 3. it may betiden] may be don T. 4. of] on T. 6. And] But P: so] lo T P. 7. felonous] felous T ; felonies P: this] the T: to] om. J: or] of L. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.] STAN. 19.—1. knoweþ] knew T. 3. þan] þat D. 4. an vncerteyn] no certeyne T. 6. it (1)] om. h: I can it not] þat I cannot T. 7. in certayn] vncerteyn N : comprehendē] om. D. [Stan. om. H : fol. om.]

(866)

20. Then schulde þere be no manere difference,  
 As semeth in myne estimacioun,  
 Betwene þe hyhe devyne prescience  
 And Tyresyes diuinacioun  
 Of whom Ovide makeþ mencioun :  
 ‘ What-euere I say,’ sche seide, ‘ it schal befallie,  
 Or elles schal it noght betide at all.’

(867)

21. What better schall þis purueaunce be  
 Than is þe opinioun of a mannes wit,  
 þat demeþ thinges in vncertaynte  
 And so vncertainly betideth it?  
 Ovir alle þing<sup>t</sup> we muste beleuen yit  
 þat god is verrey well *and* siker grounde  
 In whom noþing in-certane may be founde.

(868)

22. Than euery þing<sup>t</sup> in certayn schal be-tide  
 þat is be-fore seyn in his purueaunce.  
 Than is no liberte in mannes side,  
 Ne in oure chesyng<sup>t</sup> is no cheuysshaunce.  
 Devyne þoght may haue no variaunce ;  
 Wiþouten error he [be-]holdep all  
 And bi[n]dep vs to þing<sup>t</sup> þat most be-fall.

(869)

23. And haue [we] ones fully geten this,  
 He may conceyven who þat takeþ hede,  
 A mannes lyf in what meschief<sup>t</sup> it is,  
 And stondeth euere in heuynesse *and* drede.  
 Why schulde þere any man resceyuen mede,  
 Or any surfetour be put<sup>t</sup> in peyne ?  
 All þis will seme but a þing<sup>t</sup> in veyne,

PROSA III, STAN. 20.—3. devyne] *om. h.* 4. Tyresies] Tiresies F ;  
 Tyresies Ba N De Ch ; Therisies D. 6. say] saide T D J : sche seide] *om.*  
 T. 7. elles] *om.* T : schal it] hit shall T. [Stan. *om.* H : *fol. om.*]  
 STAN. 21.—2. a] *om.* Rl J Ch. 5. yit<sup>t</sup>] it Dc. [l. 5 *om.* T. Stan. *om.* H : *fol.*  
*om.*] STAN. 22.—1. in<sup>t</sup>] of T. 5. variaunce] purveyaunce P. 6. be-holdep]  
 byholdeth NC ; wiþoldep other MSS. 7. bindeþ] biddep L M h : most]  
 may Rl Ba F. [Stan. *om.* H : *fol. om.*] STAN. 23.—1. haue] *om.* T R :  
 we T F P] he N D ; *om. all other MSS.* : ones] oonly Dc. 2. conceyuen]  
 perceyuen] P : who] hit who F. 3. A] *om.* P. 4. and (2)] and in Dc.  
 5. pere] *om.* T. 6. surfetour] forfeftour T. [Stan. *om.* H : *fol. om.*]

(870)

24. Sith be no wilfull mevyng<sup>t</sup> of þeire gost  
 Of liberte þey noght deserued han ;  
 And þinges þat now ben commended most,  
 As verrey wrong<sup>t</sup> they most be demed þan :  
 For vertu to rewarden any man  
 Or ponysche any wicked skilfully,  
 Þere neither han deserued wilfully,

(871)

25. Bot necessite theym hath constreyned<sup>t</sup>  
 To þinges þat of certayne most be done.  
 Than vice ne vertu ben [b]ut þinges feyned,  
 Ne in oure werkes merit is þere none  
 Bot as an vndiscrete confusioun.  
 Þere is noþing<sup>t</sup> þat worse may be þoght,  
 Sith alle þing<sup>t</sup> in ordire forþ is broght

(872)

26. Of purveaunce, ne vnto mannes wyt<sup>t</sup>  
 Noþing is lefull, and oure vices wode  
 Lo vnto god they be referred yit<sup>t</sup>  
 þat verray auctour is of alle goode.  
 And furthermore, if þat þis errorr stode,  
 What schulde we prayen any þing<sup>t</sup> or trest<sup>t</sup>  
 When we may noþing<sup>t</sup> geten þat vs lest<sup>t</sup>?

(873)

27. If all þat evire we kun desire or saye  
 Oo certeyne ordire vnreuersed knytteth,  
 Than wherto schulde we hopen ought<sup>t</sup> or praye  
 Sith purveaunce faileþ noght<sup>t</sup> ne flitteþ,

PROSA III, STAN. 24.—1. be] that P: no] þeire T. 2. han] to han F.  
 3. þinges] þing Dc: now] may Dc. 4. demed] denyed D. 5. any] in  
 any D. 7. þere] Theye D; That J: wilfully] willyngly P. [l. 7 om. T.  
*Stan. om. H: fol. om.*] STAN. 25.—1. theym] hym N T. 2. certayne]  
 certente T. 3. ne] and N; nor D: but] put L R M h Bb; no T: þinges  
 feyned<sup>t</sup>] thyng y feyned P. 5. as] om. Rl Ba; an] om. N D; vndiscrete]  
 vndisert D. 6. þat] om. T: þoght] wroght h. 7. forþ is] is forthe T.  
*[Stan. om. H: fol. om.]* STAN. 26.—1. ne] nor D: vnto] to D; of  
 h: wyt<sup>t</sup>] wille T. 2. Noþing] No this Dc. 4. þat] Wych þat P.  
 5. þat] om. T: þis] om. Dc F J Ch. 6. What] Wherto P: wel] om. N:  
 any þing<sup>t</sup>] ought P: or] of T: trest] trust J. 7. þat] as N; at D; what  
 De: vs] oure D. *[Stan. om. H: fol. om.]* STAN. 27.—1. If] For D:  
 evire we kun] we euer con T: desire] deuise F: say] see T. 2. Oo] A F.  
 3. hopen] vpon N: ought<sup>t</sup>] om. h: or] om. N. 4. faileþ] falleth Rl.

Pat euery þing so at a certayne pytteth ?  
 This onely marchandise is voyded þan  
 Pat vsed is bitwene god *and* man :

(874)

28. Preyere *and* hope schulde ben vnprofitable.  
 Bot wiþ þe prycē of iust humilitē  
 We gete of god a mede inestimable,  
 For onely þat hath euere þe manere be  
 Pat euery man may haue abilite  
 With god to speke *and* neighe hym to þat light  
 þat persed may not be wiþ mannes sight'.

(875)

29. Be verrey resoun of oure prayere meke  
 To hym we be couioyned verrelly  
 Before ar þanne we gete þat we beseke,  
 And if we schull assenten vtterly  
 þat þing to come must falle nedely,  
 This hope *and* trist' of whiche we speke beforne,  
 Is þing of noght *and* all oure labour lorn.

(876)

30. How schulde we þan vnto þat prince aboue  
 Approchen or be knytte be any mene,  
 If þat we may deserue of hym no loue ?  
 And all oure labour is not worth a bene,  
 But all mankynde stant disioyned clene  
 As f[ro] theire heed departed alwey wrong',  
 Right as whilere ye seiden in youre song."

PROSA III, STAN. 27.—6. is] it T. 7. þat] Whiche D: vsed] oysed C :  
 bitwene] betwexe h. [ll. 5-7 om. Dc : fol. om. Stan. om. H : fol. om.]  
 STAN. 28.—3. a mede] amde h. 6. hym] om. T P. 7. sight'] might N.  
 [Stan. om. H Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 29.—1. oure] thys P. 3. Before]  
 Tofore N: þat] or that N: beseke] byspeke N; speke F: Before that wee  
 gette or beseke T. 5. nedely] nedfully C T P. 6. of whiche we speke  
 beforne] þat we speke of aforne F: which-] om. D: speke] spoke P: beforne]  
 of afore T; om. h. 7. Is] Is no T: of] om. M: lorn] lore is T. [Stan.  
 om. H Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 30.—1. we] om. T. 2. knytte] quytte T.  
 3. deserue] discerne H: deserue of hym no loue] discue hym to loue T:  
 no] to H. 5. kynde] om. H: disioyned] disioyne Rl Ba; discouyed T.  
 6. fro] for L Rl Ba C R H: alwey] all with H D P. 7. whilere ye] ye  
 whileere h. [Stan. om. Dc : fol. om.]

(877)

METRUM iij<sup>m</sup>

'Quenam discors.'

1. What manere cause of wonder discordaunce  
 So hath disioyned thus in þis manere  
 Oure liberte *and* goddes purveaunce  
 Pat neither may to other neighen nere ?  
 What god this bataile hath devised here  
 Betwene two trouthes, here-of haue I wonder,  
 Pat soth i-now ben while þei ben asonder,

(878)

2. Bot lo þey may noght be togidre set ?  
 And ȝit discord in trouthes is þere none,  
 For certanly they ben togidres knett.  
 Bot mannes gost [ȝi]t so is overgone,  
 Enclosed thus wiþ-yinne flesch *and* bone  
 Pat so oppressed han hire fire light,  
 Pat sche ne may not liften vp here sight

(879)

3. Thise sotel knottes to beholde *and* see ;  
 And fleschely bondes doth it so oppresse.  
 Bot why so feruently desireþ sche  
 Pe notes for to fynde of sothfastnesse ?  
 And þat sche sekeþ so wiþ besynesse,  
 Wot sche not þat hire-seluen knawþ it ?  
 Bot who desireþ knownen þing<sup>i</sup> to wit ?

(880)

4. Who may desire a thing<sup>i</sup> *and* knowe it noght ?  
 If he ne knoweth what sekeþ he so blynde ?

METRUM III, STAN. 1.—2. So] Thus N : hath] hath thus D : disioyned] dis onyed T : thus] vs D. 5. god] om. T H: devised] disceyvid T. 6. trouthes] trougthes N. 7. i-now] is now D : ben (1)] om. T H: while; T ; but while H: a-sonder] in sonder N T D ; esonder C. [Stan. om. Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 2.—1. Bot] Now h: lo] soo D. 2. trouthes] trowthe T. 3. they ben] be they T: togidres knett<sup>i</sup>] togedre y knytt H. 4. gost] soule P: ȝit] pat all MSS.: so is] is so D: ouergone] ouercom T. 6. oppressed] ympressid T: fire] fyry D P. 7. sche] so h: ne] yet P: not] om. N T D. [Stan. om. Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 3.—1. beholde] belde D. 2. And] The T. 5. pat] om. N: wiþ] wiþ grete D. 6. sche] ye J: pat] pat shee D: seluen] felow T. 7. knownen] to know T; a knawen P. [Stan. om. Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 4.—1. knowe] knoweth T P. 2. he (1)] om. Rl Ch; hym T H.

Or who may seke þat is noght in his þoght? 6.  
 Or if he seek it, how schall he it fynde? 7.  
 Or how schall he bethinke it in his mynde  
 How may he knownen when he fyndeth þis,  
 And wot noght of what manere forme it is? 8.

(881)

5. When þat þe soule is soole and separate  
 Beholdyng<sup>t</sup> on þat souereigne þoght onely,  
 Than may [sch]e seen þat now ne may [sc]he nate, †  
 All thing<sup>t</sup> in some *and* also singulerly.  
 Bot now sche is enclosed<sup>t</sup> b[o]dely,  
 Som partie of þis sight sche haþ forlete,  
 Bot vtterlye, sche haþ it noght forȝete,

(882)

6. For-why þe sum sche holdeþ, as I trowe,  
 Bot noght so euery þing<sup>t</sup> in specialte.  
 He þan þat thise trouthes wolde knowe,  
 Lo all ne knoweth he noght, þou may well see,  
 Ne all þe trewthe forgeten haþ noght he,  
 Bot lo þe knowynge of þe generall  
 Makeþ him to laboure for þe speciaill.

(883)

7. This sume than whiche sche holdeþ here  
 So in here þoght remembrynge ofte ageyn,  
 Sche sekeþ in þat souereyn merour clere  
 Where euery sothe may singulerly be seyn,  
 Enforsyng<sup>t</sup> here wiþ labour *and* wiþ peyn,  
 Forgeten þing<sup>t</sup>, if þat sche may it fynde,  
 To put it to þe tresour of hire mynde.

METRUM III, STAN. 4.—5. *how*] who R; *he om.* R; *bethinke*] remembre P.  
 6. *þis*] *pus* T H. 7. *forme*] of forme T; fortune D. [l. 7 *om. at first in*  
*Rl, but inserted later in margin.* Stan. om. Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 5.—  
 1. *soole and*] fro thy body T H: *separate*] separable Ch. 2. *þoght*] god  
 T: *onely*] on hihe T H P. 3. *sche (1) N*] he T h P; *be all other*  
*MSS.*: *sche (2) N*] *he other MSS.*: *nate* Rl Ba N C F Ch P] *noght* L T  
 H M D h Bb Dc; *not R.* 5. *bodely*] bedely L. 6. *sight*] light T H.  
 STAN. 6.—2. *so om.* D: *specialte*] *especialte* F. 3. *þan þat*] *that then* T:  
*þat*] *om.* J: *trouthes*] *trouthe* P: *wolde*] *wol* D; *wyl* Dc. 4. *Lo*] *Nat*  
*D: ne*] *he Dc; om.* P: *he om.* Dc: *may*] *maist* N D; *myght* H F.  
 6. *þe om.* N. 7. *speciaill*] *especiall* F. STAN. 7.—1. *sche*] *he T:*  
*holdeþ*] *beholdeth* D. 2. *So om.* P: *here*] *theire h: ofte*] *eften* D; *not*  
*Dc.* 4. *may om.* T. 6. *Forgeten*] *For the time* T; *Forgetyng* J: *þat*] *om.* T.  
 7. *to (2) into D.* [l. 2 *om.* Ch.]

(884)

PROSA iiiij<sup>a</sup> \*

'Tum illa vetus inquit.'

1. Sche seide þan, ' þis is an old compleynt  
 And a full comyn vsed questioun;  
 To marchus tullius it semed queynt  
 As [b]e his book of devinacioun.  
 He had þere-wiþ grete occupacioun,  
 And of thi-self full ofte it haþ be soght,  
 And none of yow as ȝit ne fonde it noght,

(885)

2. Ne sufficiantly ne haue noght declared it.  
 And sikerly the cause may þis be :  
 Lo þat þe discours of [a] mannes wit  
 May not atteigne to so hye degree  
 To iuggen of þat hyhe simplicite  
 The whiche is in devyne purveaunce ;  
 He is noght soþely of þat suffisaunce.

(886)

3. And if þis myght be þoght or comprehended,  
 Thow schuldest þan be never a dele in doute.  
 Bot at the laste I hope I schal amende it  
 If þat Y may my matire bryng aboue  
 This errour of thy herte to voyden oute.  
 Bot ferst I will avoiden *and* dispreuen  
 Conceites whiche þe to þis errour meven.

(887)

4. Bot firste I aske the þe cause why  
 Thow holdest þis resoun not effectuele  
 Of hem þat schewen þat oure arbitry  
 All-gates in his fredom stondeth wele,

PROSA IV. inquit] inquam L. STAN. 1.—3. tullius] tulious T. 4. be]  
 he L M R h Bb. 6. ofte] of H; long P: it haþ] haþ it T: it] om. D: be]  
 he D. 7. ne] om. T D F. STAN. 2.—1. ne haue] haue N H F P;  
 hath T; not haue D: noght] om. T D: declared] declare D. 2. may]  
 myȝte T. 3. þat] lete h: þe] þis R: a P] om. all MSS.: wit] myȝte T.  
 5. iuggen] demen P: þat] þe D. 6. The] om. P. 7. noght] om. Dc:  
 soþely] so thoughtly D: þat] om. D. STAN. 3.—1. if] om. T H: myght  
 be þoght] be pouȝte miȝte F: or] om. Rl Ba Dc J Ch. 2. þan] om. D:  
 be never a dele] never a dele be D. 3. the] om. Ba J Ch P. 5. of]  
 frome T: voyden] avoyden F J P. 6. will] wold J: dispreuen] discreuen  
 h. STAN. 4.—1. I aske the þe cause why] the cause why I aske T H:  
 the] om. F. 2. holdest] shouldeȝ T; sholdest H. 3. oure] your T.

Sith prescience constreyneth noght a dele  
 Be ned[e] thinges whiche þat schull be done,  
 Bot is contingent for to be or none.

(888)

5. Lo makest þou any oþer argument  
 Of þing[<sup>t</sup>] to fallen of necessite,  
 Bot only for þat god omnipotent[<sup>t</sup>  
 So knoweth it þat it schall here-after be,  
 It may not ben vndone as semeth the ?  
 And yit þis prescience causeth noght[<sup>t</sup>  
 Pe same þing[<sup>t</sup>] of nede to be wrought;

(889)

6. That graunted þou whiler if þou haue mynde.  
 Why is it þan þat voluntarye dede  
 So is constreyned to a certeyn ende  
 þat þing[<sup>t</sup>] to come must be-falle nede ?  
 Bot þat I may the to þe treuthe lede  
 To see what sewelþ here be consequence,  
 I put this case : there were no prescience.

(890)

7. Will then þyn argument[<sup>t</sup>] availen oght[<sup>t</sup>  
 Pe whiche in prescience þow groundest so,  
 þat þinges whiche of fre will schull be wrought[<sup>t</sup>  
 þat any nede compelleþ hem þer-to ?  
 Thou wolde not trowe þis ?' I seide, "No."  
 'Now set we,' quod sche, 'prescience ageyn  
 So þat of nede it doth noþing constreyn ;

(891)

8. Than stondeth absolute þe same will  
 Hole in his liberte, þis wotest þou well.  
 But I suppose þou makest me this skill :

PROSA IV, STAN. 4.—5. noght] never D P. 6. nede N] nedye other  
 MSS. : schull] shulde T D h J: be] om. h. STAN. 5.—3. only for] for cause  
 P. 4. þat it] om. D: here] om. N. 6. þis] om. Dc: causeth] ne  
 causeth H. STAN. 6.—2. Why is it þan] Than why is hit T: it] his H:  
 þat] þat a N. 3. is] it Dc: ende] nede T H. 4. come] me h. 7. þis]  
 om. T H: there] þei H: were] wille T. [l. 4 om. T.] STAN. 7.—1. availen  
 oght[<sup>t</sup>] avayle or noghte T. 2. groundest] groundyd T. 3. þinges]  
 thyngye T: schull] shulde Rl Ba N. 4. hem] om. F. 5. wolde] wille  
 T; wilt H: þis] þat P. 7. doth] om. Dc. STAN. 8.—2. þis wotest  
 þou] þou wiste hit F. 3. þis] þat N.

Thow prescience necesseth neuere-a-dell  
 Thing for to come in stoundes temporell,  
 þow seist it is a verray signe trewe  
 Of þing þat must as necessarie sewe.

(892)

9. Right so þou myght concluden as be this  
 Thogh þat þere were no prescience at all,  
 þat þing þ which [is] to come here after this,  
 So must it necessaryly be-fall.  
 For onely euery signe schewen schall  
 A þing þat is or after schall be sene,  
 Bot ȝit þat signe makeþ it noght to bene.

(893)

10. And if þat prescience a signe were  
 Of euery þing þat falleþ nedes-cost,  
 Lo first it nedeth vs to schewen here  
 þat no þing þalleþ bot it nedes most.  
 And if it is not so þan well þou wost  
 þat signe may þere none be verreilie  
 Wiþoute a þing betokened þerby.

(894)

11. Bot to conferme fully all aboute  
 And sadly to susteyne[n] oure entent,  
 We may not seke signes of wiþoute  
 To fecche vs in a foreyn argument,  
 Bot of þe causes full conuenient  
 And necessarie byhoueþ vs procede,  
 If þat we schulden in oure purpos spede.

PROSA IV, STAN. 8.—4. necesseth] ne seth Dc; ne ceaseth h; causeth R; cesseth D. 5. Thing] Thynge; T. 6. signe] thyng T. 7. as] of D. [l. 2 om. D.] STAN. 9.—1. myght] maist N; om. H: concluden] concludest H: Right so thow concludest as it is by this T. 3. þing whiche is H] þing which T; þinges whiche all other MSS. and P: to come here] herto come F. 4. befall] be byfalle D: Necessaryly hyt must befall P. 5. euery] om. T H: schewen schall] schal falle Dc. 6. or] as Rl Ch. STAN. 10.—1. þat] om. T H: a] as a J: a signe] assigne h. 2. falleth nedes cost] nedes must come P: cost] muste D. 3. Lo] om. P: first] fyers D. 4. it nedes most] nedes it must be done P: nedes] ne T. 5. it] om. M: is] be T P: so] om. T: well pou wost] knowest pou sone P. 6. none be] be non T. 7. betokened] betokene R: þerby] be therby P. [l. 7 om. D.] STAN. 11.—1. fully] full T. 2. susteynen] susteyne L. 3. seke] eke D. 4. To fecche] Ne fyxe P. 5. þe] om. P. 6. vs] vs to Dc P. 7. schulden] shullen h; shul D: purpos] processe N.

(895)

12. Bot þus þou wilt replien here ageyn :  
 “ How may þat þing<sup>t</sup> noght falle,” seist þou me,  
 “ Whiche þat provided is and so forseyn,  
 Be purveaunce here after for to be ? ”  
 Ascaunce þat I couthe none other see,  
 Bot þing<sup>t</sup> þat prescience doth provide  
 We trowed þat it were [not] to betide.

(896)

13. Bot rather þis entende I for to preue :  
 þat þogh a certayne þing<sup>t</sup> befalle so,  
 Of propre kynde, yit as we bileue,  
 So was it noght<sup>t</sup> necessid to be do.  
 This lightly myght þou vnderstonden lo :  
 Full many a þing<sup>t</sup> is subiecte to þi sight<sup>t</sup>  
 þe while it be beforne vs present [right] ;

(897)

14. As when a chare is rewled<sup>t</sup> redely  
 And how it torneþ we beholden well,  
 And so of othire craftes sewyngly.  
 Doth any þing<sup>t</sup> þise crafty men compell,  
 Or any of [t]his[e] werkes canst þou tell,  
 If þat þey be constreyned to be wroght<sup>t</sup>?  
 I seide, “ Nay, þey be compelled<sup>t</sup> noght.

(898)

15. In ydell were þe craft<sup>t</sup> of any man  
 If euery þing<sup>t</sup> were arted for to meven.”  
 ‘ Sith þinges while þey ben,’ sche seide þan,

PROSA IV, STAN. 12.—1. þus] yif J: thys P. 2. noght] om. D.  
 3. provided is and so] ys prouided and P: so] om. T D F. 4. after]  
 a fore D. 5. Ascaunce] As chaunce Dc F J Ch P: þat] om. R: I couthe]  
 it coude D: other] otherwyse D. 6. doth] om. T H. 7. trowed]  
 troweþ F: not T H P] om. all other MSS. STAN. 13.—1. rather] om.  
 T H: pis entende I] entend I this D: entend] intendyd T P; entente F;  
 ende Ch: I] om. F J Ch. 2. þat þogh] though that T: befalle so] so befall  
 T. 3. Yet of propre kende we do beleue P. 5. lightly myght þou]  
 might þou lightly T: myght] mayst P. 6. Full] as P: a] om. T: þi] our  
 P. 7. while] whiche M: be] om. Rl R Ch; ys P: right] om. L R M h Bb.  
 STAN. 14.—2. it] he T: we] he T H: well] ful wel P. 4. þing] of T:  
 crafty] craftys H P: compell] tempereil D. 5. thise N H P] his all other  
 MSS. [ll. 5-7 om. Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 15.—1. In] Then P: craft]  
 craftys D. 2. were arted] arted were D: arted] compelled P. 3. Sith  
 thynges; sayde she that thay be than T.

' Ben noght coart to be, þou wilt beleuen,  
 Lo be þat same resoun myght þou preuen,  
 † Before [þei ben], tho same þinges be  
 Noght for to comen of necessite.

(899)

16. Full many a þing<sup>i</sup> schall ben, it is no drede,  
 And is to come, it seweth well be þis,  
 þat vtterly is absolute of nede.  
 I trowe þat no wight<sup>t</sup> thus wil seyn i-wys  
 þat any þyng<sup>i</sup> þat now presente is  
 Was noght to come vnto þe tyme it fell.  
 Thogh þey beforen of god were knownen well,

(900)

17. In sothe yit ben þei frely to be-falle ;  
 For right as verrey knowynge and science  
 A present þing<sup>i</sup> compelleth noght at all,  
 Right so it stondeth eke of prescience  
 As þou may see be lyk conuenience,  
 Thogh god þis þing<sup>i</sup> to comen doth provide  
 Yit is it noght compellid to betide.

(901)

18. Bot lo of þis þow seist me doutest<sup>t</sup> thow :  
 Sith þinges whiche þat schull here after benc  
 Ben noght to come as necessarie now,  
 How is þat þing<sup>i</sup> forseyn þou kannest not sene.  
 It semeth the þat þis dissowneþ clene ;  
 To forseyn þing<sup>i</sup> it moste nedes sewe  
 Necessite, þou canst it noght eschue,

PROSA IV, STAN. 15.—4. coart] coorted N P; toward D; coact H : coart to be] to be coarte T: þou wilt] will thow T: wilt] om. M. 5. myght þou] maystow N. 6. Before þei ben] þat to ben for F; þat ben for L Rl Ba T R M h Bb J Ch; þat before N C H D P: tho] the T D. [Stan. om. De: fol. om.] STAN. 16.—1. drede] doute M. 2. seweth] sheweth Rl T D h F J Ch. 4. thus] this T; om. D. 5. þat (2)] whiche D: now] now in C T H: presente] presence T. 7. beforne] om. T: were] be D. [Stan. om. De: fol. om.] STAN. 17.—1. sothe] sothly T. 2. knowynge] konnynghe Rl F J Ch: and] of N; in T; y H; an D: science] conscience D. 4. so] om. T H. 6. þis] om. R. [l. 4 om. D. Stan. om. De: fol. om.] STAN. 18.—2. whiche þat] om. T: þat] om. Ba F J. 3. Ben] Butt T. 4. is] is hit H: þing<sup>i</sup>] thyu H: þou kannest not] yet can þow not T. 5. the] om. D. 6. þing<sup>i</sup>] thyngys D: nedes] nede R 7. þou canst it noght] þan can thow natt T. [Stan. om. De: fol. om.]

## (902)

19. And if necessite schulde be forfended,  
 Lo forseyn is there no-þing<sup>t</sup> vtterly,  
 Ne noght be knowing<sup>t</sup> may be comprehended<sup>t</sup>  
 Bot þing<sup>t</sup> þat moste betide verrely.  
 And if þere oght betide vncertainly  
 And is forseyn of certayne as it were,  
 Pow seest no verray knowyng<sup>t</sup> is þer there,

## (903)

20. Bot as a derk and opinable þing<sup>t</sup>.  
 And for to trowen oþerwise or gesse,  
 In verrey sothe þis clepest þou no konnyng<sup>t</sup>  
 But a supposynge of vnstabilnesse.  
 And lo þe cause of all þis errorr is  
 þat ye conseyen thinges, as we trowen,  
 Of nature of þe same þinges knownen,

## (904)

21. Bot in contrary † [wyse] it stondeþ right<sup>t</sup>.  
 For euer<sup>y</sup> þing<sup>t</sup> þat knownen is be witt<sup>t</sup>,  
 It is not knownen be þe propre myght<sup>t</sup>,  
 Bot be his myght<sup>t</sup> þat comprehendid it.  
 As be exsaumple myght þou felen yit :  
 For of a þing<sup>t</sup> þat round is verrely,  
 Lo sight and felyng<sup>t</sup> knoweþ dyuersly.

## (905)

22. The sight beholdeth þe forme from a-fer  
 At ones comprehendynge euer<sup>y</sup> dele,  
 Bot he þat felip is conioyned ner

PROSA IV, STAN. 19.—1. And] Butt T: forfended<sup>t</sup>] fforfettyd T:  
 2. there] om. T H D. 3. knowing<sup>t</sup>] knownen D. 5. if] om. D:  
 vncertainly] certaynly D. 6. is forseyn of certayne] as forsayne certenly  
 T: of] for N C D; om. H: ful P. 7. per (1)] om. T D. [Stan. om. Dc:  
 fol. om.] STAN. 20.—1. as] om. N H: and] and a T; om. D. 2. or]  
 and T. 3. þis clepest] that callest P: clepest þou] cleped is D.  
 4. supposynge] wenyng P. 5. þis] þe N: is] esse Rl. 6. as] that  
 T: we trowen] I trowe D: þat ye trow the cause of knowlege to be P.  
 7. In the thyng and not in the knower perde P. [Stan. om. Dc: fol. om.]  
 STAN. 21.—1. contrary wyse Rl Ba T H F J Ch P] contrary time N; contrarious tyme L R M D h Bb; contrarious wyse C: right<sup>t</sup>] yett right T.  
 3. þe] om. D; his P: be] for N. 4. comprehendid] comprehendeth T D F  
 Ch. 5. myght þou] maistow N; mayst þou P: yit<sup>t</sup>] hitt T. 7. knoweþ]  
 knoweth hyt P. [Stan. om. Dc: fol. om.]

Vnto þat compace for to knowe it wele ;  
 For all aboute þe sides moste he fele,  
 And all þat roundenes so he knoweþ than.  
 Lo dyuersly knownen is a man ;

(906)

23. The comune wittes iuggen of wiþ-oute,  
 Imaginacioun an other wise,  
 And resoun oþir wise, it is no doute ;  
 Intelligence passeth alle thise,  
 Eueryche of hem so as þey may suffise.  
 þere comyn wittes knownen noght at all  
 Bot formes of subiect̄ materiall ;

(907)

24. Ymagynyng all onely comprehendith  
 þe forme of man as immateriall ;  
 Resoun þan abouen þis transcendith,  
 Of mannes kynde he iuggeþ singulerly  
 With vniuersall sight full sotelly ;  
 Bot all thise passeth yit intelligence,  
 As be a sight of þaire excellence

(908)

25. He passeth all aboue thise kyndes here,  
 þe cumpace of þe vniuersite,  
 And he behaldeth in þat exsaumplere  
 þe myrrour of the hyhe eternite,  
 þe fourme of man in his simplicite.  
 Bot most it is to taken hede in þis,  
 þat þilke myght̄ alwey þat hyere is,

PROSA IV, STAN. 22.—4. þat] þe Rl T. 6. all þat roundenes] þat all rounde is Ch. 7. knownen] knowynge R J; y knownen P. [Stan. om. Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 23.—1. The] Thise T. 2. an] in an N; and M D. 4. alle] ȝit alle Rl Ba Ch: as T. 5. Eueryche] Euery T P: as] om. D: þey] he F P. 6. þere] þe N T; Theire h. 7. subiect̄] coniectes and subiectes T. [Stan. om. Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 24.—2. immateriall] yn materyall T H; materyally D. 4. he] om. D: iuggeþ] demeth P. 5. full] om. N D. 6. yit] yit þe N; om. T. 7. þaire excellence] hygher intelligence T H. [Stan. om. Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 25.—1. aboue] al one H. 6. it is to taken hede in] nedys take hede of D: in] of T. 7. þat (1)] om. R: þilke] ylke F; the same P: alwey þat] þat alwey T: hyere] here R J. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.]

(909)

26. Lo all þe lawere comprehendeth wele,  
 But þey ne mowe ascende noght ageyn  
 To knowe *and* comprehendene noght-a-dele  
 Of tho þat ben aboue sothe to seyn.  
 For comyn wit ne may not vp atteyn ;  
 Þe þinges whiche ben immateriall  
 He may conseuyue neuere adell at all.

(910)

27. Ne furthermore yimaginacioun  
 Þe vniuersale [k]yn[d]es may not seen ;  
 Ne resoun may not haue inspecciuon  
 Of formes whiche þat pure *and* simple ben ;  
 Intelligence comprehendeth clene,  
 And as it were beholdeþ fro an hye ;  
 Thise formes he conceyueþ plenerlye.

(911)

28. Conseuyng<sup>t</sup> þan þis forme principall,  
 He iuggeth after all þat is in man,  
 As he hath in þe exsaumple ydeall  
 Conseuyed þat non other may ne can.  
 Þe vniuerse of resoun knoweþ he than,  
 And also formes of ymagynynge  
 [And] eke materiall sensible þynge.

(912)

29. And resoun yit in this he vseþ noght,  
 Imaginacioun, ne comune witt,  
 But wiþ a sotill smytyng<sup>t</sup> of þe þoght

PROSA IV, STAN. 26.—2. ne] om. P; mowe] may T P: This is of trouth no man can hit withsayne F (*inserted in margin by different hand*). 3. and] ne N H; ne to T: noght] never T P: But þay ne mowe ascende nouȝt a deel F. 5. comyn] ther comen P: ne] om. P. 6. þe] To H: whiche] whiche þat T. 7. conseuyen] perceyuen P. [Reason than abouen thus transcendeth (*added as extra line in T*.)] [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om. ll. 2, 3 confusedly combined F.] STAN. 27.—Ne] And P. 2. þe] om. P: kyndes] þinges L R h Bb D. 3. not haue] haue none P: haue] om. T H. 4. þat] om. N T. 7. Thise] The Ba: he conceyueþ] ben consayvid T: he perceyuethe P. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 28.—1. principall] principally T. 2. iuggeth] demeth P. 3. exsaumple] saumpleȝ T; sample D. 4. Conseuyed] Conserued Ba J. 5. vniuerse] vniuersite Ch P. 6. imagynynge] imaginacioun T. 7. And eke T D P] Eke all other MSS. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 29.—1. he om. T: he vseþ] vseth he D. 2. ne] the D. 3. þe] a l.

Full formally so he behaldeth it.  
 And more plenerly to speken yit,  
 The souereyne hyhe devyne intelligence  
 Over alle þinges haþ perspicience.

(913)

30. When resoun doth behalden oght or see  
 As in his comune kynde vnyuersale,  
 Ymagynyng<sup>t</sup> noþing<sup>t</sup> ne vseth he,  
 Nethire þe comune wittes neuere-a-dele,  
 And noght-forthi he comprehendep wele  
 All þinges þat yimaginable is,  
 And all þat comyn wit<sup>t</sup> may knowe i-wys.

(914)

31. Thus resoun [h]is conseyt vnuariable  
 Of vniuersele lo diffineth he :  
 Man is a beest, two-footed, resonable.  
 Lo þis knawynge, as euery man may see,  
 Vniuersall it moste nedes be ;  
 And þis also, as euery man may wit,  
 Yimaginable and sensible is it yit.

(915)

32. Bot resoun þis beholdeth kyndely  
 Noþing<sup>t</sup> as by ymaginacioun,  
 Ne be þe comune wittes sikerly,  
 Bot only hath consideracioun  
 Be discours and deliberacioun.  
 Bot þis ymagynyng doth be-gynne  
 Be comyn wittes all hys werkes thynne,

**PROSA IV, STAN. 29.—4.** behaldeth] holdeth F. 5. to speken]  
 bespeken N. 7. þinges] thinge T D Ch: perspicience] prospicience h.  
 [Stan. om. M De: fol. om.] STAN. 30.—1. doth behalden oght or see]  
 doth he ought beholde and se T. 2. his] om. F: comune] connyngh T.  
 3. noþing<sup>t</sup> ne] no no this N: oo þing ne h: ne] om. T; yet P. 4. neuere]  
 om. T. 5. noght] now T H. 6. þinges] thyng T D. 7. knowe]  
 lerne D. [Stan. om. M De: fol. om.] STAN. 31.—1. Thus] This T H:  
 his P] om. R; is all other MSS.: conseyt] consayd T: vnuariable] strong &  
 stable P. 2. lo] om. N. 5. it] om. T. 6. may] om. T: as euery  
 man may] to euery mannes P. [Stan. om. M De: fol. om.] STAN. 32.—  
 2. as] om. P. 3. þe] om. H. 5. and] and by T P: deliberacioun]  
 conceyt of resoun P. 6. ymagynyng] ymaginacioun Rl Ba F P: doth  
 begynne] begynne doth P. 7. þe Rl Ba N C T H] Be L R Bb h D F J  
 Ch: ynne T H] thynne all other MSS.: In the comen wytties hys workes in  
 sothe P. [Stan. om. M De: fol. om.]

(916)

33. The formes for to schappen or devise ;  
 And yit þise comune wittes all wiþoute,  
 Sensible þinges in a wonder wise  
 He seeth, *and* hem compasseth all aboute,  
 Sensibilly noþing, it is no dowte,  
 Bot be ymagineacioun of mynde.  
 Of knowynge lo here may þou see þe kynde :

(917)

34. That noght þe myght of þing þat knownen is,  
 Bot propre myght þe knawere vseth nede.  
 And skilfully, for euery dome i-wys,  
 O[f] euery juge it is þe propre dede ;  
 So then of þis if þou wilt taken hede,  
 þe werk of man is no foreyne myght,  
 Bot propre myghtes vseþ euery wight.

(918)

METRUM iiiij<sup>m</sup>

Qu[on]dam porticus attulit.

1. Whilom wereþ in þe porches of Athenus  
 Full olde clerkes derke in þeire corages,  
 Whiche in þaire tyme were cleped stoicienus  
 þat in þe porches hadden made þeire stages,  
 Disputyng þat þe formes *and* ymages  
 Of bodily substaunce[s], as þey gessid,  
 So were in-to a mannes mynde enpressid,

PROSA IV, STAN. 33.—1. The] om. P: for] om. T: schappen] shippen C.  
 2. wiþoute] aboute T. 3. in a wonder wise] om. D. 4. hem] he T:  
 compasseth] passeth N; compass T; comparere Ch. 5. Sensibilly]  
 Sensible N T: Sensibilly noþing] Not sensibly P. 7. lo] om. Ch: here  
 may þou see] þou myghte here se T: may] myght H F: now may D: þe]  
 thy T H. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 34.—1. of þing] om. D:  
 þing] thinges T. 2. Bot] By T: þe knawere vseth nede] of thing that  
 knowyn is T: That noght þe myght þe knawere vseth nede J. 4. Of H]  
 Lo of T; Lo all other MSS.: euery] the T H P: it] he T: dede] drede T.  
 5. So then of reson yf thou take good hyde P. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.  
 ll. 1, 2 confusedly combined J.] METRUM IV. Quondam] Quidam L.  
 STAN. 1.—1. Whilom] Som tymē P: were] where L; om. P: þe] om. D:  
 porches] portes Rl Ba F J Ch: Athenus] Athenes Rl Ba N D F Ch P;  
 Athenus C; Athenys H; Athenysse T. 2. olde] hold J: corages] corage  
 Rl Ba T D J Ch P. 3. Whiche in] Within D: stoicienus] stocycenus H:  
 stoicienes Rl Ba D F Ch P; stocycenes N. 4. þe] om. H: porches]  
 porches T; porche F: þeire] high T; he H. 5. ymages] vsages N.  
 6. substaunce P] substaunce all other MSS. 7. into] in T: mynde] soule  
 P. [Stan. som. M Dc: ol. om. ll. 6, 7 in reverse order D.]

(919)

2. As men ben wont to writen or portreyen  
 Figures in a pagyne faire *and* clene  
 In whiche before þere were [no] notes seien.  
 Bot þis amased þing is for to mene ;  
 For if þe soule of man, so as þey [w]ene,  
 Of verrey propre myght implyeth noght,  
 But suffreþ to be prynted in his þoght,

(920)

3. Subiected to þe notes as it were  
 þat bodies doth to þeym enpresen so,  
 And veyne ymages representid þere  
 Right as a myrrour woned is to do,  
 Bot all þis knowyng, whennes cometh it fro,  
 Be whiche noght onely þinges corporall  
 Bot also formes in-materiall

(921)

4. He seeth and so beholdeþ singulerlye  
 And in hire hyhe consaytes speculatiue ?  
 And knownen þinges þan[ne] sewynglye  
 So he devideþ be a negatyue  
 And afterwardes be affirmatyue ;  
 Thise same thinges þat devided be  
 Assembleþ *and* aȝeyn compowneþ he,

(922)

5. And so þis way he enterchaungeþ ofte.  
 For now to principall proposiciouns  
 Lo his entent he lifteþ vpon lofte,

METRUM IV, STAN. 2.—1. wont] vsed P: or] and D F: portreyen] porten T. 2. Figures] letters P. 3. whiche] whiche were T: before] bestie J: þere] pei H: no H P] om. all other MSS. 5. so] were so T: wene T H P] mene all other MSS. 6. verrey] hys P. 7. pryntryd] payntyd T. [l. 5 om. D. Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 3.—1. Subiecte to] Subiecte vnto T; Subiectyd yn to H: þe] his h: notes] bodies N. 2. to] in T h P: enpresen] vnpresen N. 3. representid] representith T; representith H P. 4. woned is] is wonete T; is y woned P. 5. þis] om. N. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 4.—1. and] so and H. 2. hvhe] om. T H F. 3. knownen] knowyng T J P: panne] pan all MSS. and P. 4. he] om. D: devideþ] demeth T H. 5. afterwardes] afterward N H D: be] þinges be J; by an P. 6. devideþ] demed N T. 7. and] om. R: aȝeyn] here T H. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 5.—1. so þis way] also þis maner N. 2. to] the T H: proposiciouns] proporcions D h. 3. vpon] vp and doun on T.

And falleþ after to conclusiouns,  
Referrynge þan his awne entenciuons,  
And seeth what þinges will of other sewe  
Reprevyng so þe false be þe trewe.

(923)

6. Than is he rather cause efficient,  
And more of myght þan þing þat lieþ oppressed  
In maner like a mater pacient  
Þat notes haþ so in hym-self enpressed.  
Bot þat [þou] haue þis matere more expressed:  
þere goþ before a manere sufferaunce  
Wiþynne þe lyvy bodily substaunce,

(924)

7. Whiche þat þe myghtes of þe soule exciteþ  
And maketh the to vndirstonde *and* lere.  
As when þat light into þyn eyzen smyteþ  
And makeþ the for to beholden þere,  
Or when a voyce haþ sowned in thyn ere  
And so commoveth the to herken oght,  
Than so ben stired þe myghtes of þi þoght.

(925)

8. And þinges whiche þat were kyndelye  
Wiþynne þi-seluen hid, it is no doute,  
He þan implyeth in his fantasie  
Vnto þise othere notes of withoute,  
And þus remembreþ in hit-self aboute;  
þe foreyn ymages þan addeth he  
To formes whiche þat hidde wiþyn be.

METRUM IV, STAN. 5.—4. after] afterwarde T H. 5. Referrynge]  
Refreyninge N; Refermyng F; awne] om. D. 6. þinges] om. D. [Stan.  
om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 6.—1. he] the D: cause] om. J. 2. þing]  
om. F: lieþ] is D; bithe F. 4. haþ so in] so haue in T: so] om. N: self]  
om. T H: enpressed] impressed D P 5. pat] om. T H: þou T H P] one  
all other MSS. þis matere more] more this matier D. 7. lyvy] lyfly D;  
lyuely P; lethi T; lyþ H: substaunce] sustynaunce D. [Stan. om. M  
Dc : fol. om. 1. 5 om. Ch.] STAN. 7.—1. myghtes] myght J: soule]  
saule T. 3. pat] pat þe F. 5. voyce] vice T D. 7. so] tho  
T: to Ch. [l. 4 om. T H; l. 6 om. T H. Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.]  
STAN. 8.—1. whiche þat] the which T: were] were ye' P: kyndely] vn-  
kyndly T H. 3. He] þou P: implyeth] applyeth T H; applyest P: his]  
thy P. 4. Vnto] To P: notes] nothes N: of] om. T. 5. remembreþ]  
membryng T H P: hit] thy P. 6. addeth] haddeth T; abideth D. 7.  
To] Tho J: hidde] om. D: be] the be P. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.]

(926)

PROSA V<sup>a</sup>

Quod si in corporibus.

1. Thow þat obiecte qualitees than

Comme[ue] and steren youre foreyn instrumentes,  
 þe whiche I calle þe comune wit of man  
 þat of wiþouten yeueþ iugementes ;  
 And gooth before þe goostly sentementes  
 A maner sufferaunce corporall  
 For to excite þe gostly myght wiþall,

(927)

2. And steren so þe worchyng of þe mynde

To formes whiche arrested were wiþ-ynne  
 So þat þe corage may them feele and fynde ;  
 And þow þe wittes all his werk begynne  
 þe knowyng of þise bodies for to wynne,  
 And bryngeþ hym to a manere remembraunce,  
 þe soule is subiect to no sufferaunce,

(928)

3. Bot iuggeþ of his verray propre myght

Thise passions þat in þe body been.  
 How myche more such a gostly wight  
 þat fully is all absolut and clene,  
 In whom may none affeccioun be sene  
 Of noþing to be feled bodely,  
 His propre myght schall vsen kyndely !

(929)

4. And foreyn myghtes schall [h]e vsen noght

For to diserne obiectes of wiþ-oute,  
 Bot be þe worching of his owne þoght

PROSA V, STAN. 1.—1. Thow] Thought N : qualites] and qualite; T.  
 2. commeue N T H P] comen all other MSS. : instrument<sup>x</sup>] instrument T D.  
 3. comune wit of man] om. h. 4. wiþouten] withoute forth P: yeueþ] herith H: iugementes] iugement D. 5. sentementes] sонтимент D.  
 6. maner] manere of N. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om. 1. 4 om. T.]  
 STAN. 2.—1. so] om. T H. 2. formes] stormes Rl Ba. 3. þe N T H P]  
 paire other MSS. : them] þei Rl Ba F J Ch. 4. all his werk begynne] do all  
 theyme berynne T: his] the H; theire D; thys P; werk] werkes D F  
 J: begynne] be rynde H. 5. for] om. D [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.]  
 STAN. 3.—1. verray] om. R; owne D: verray propre] propre verey F: But  
 he demeth of his propre myght P. 3. myche] om. T H. 4. all] om. D.  
 5. may none] man nen H: none] om. T: affeccioun] affecccions T. 6. feled] felt D. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 4.—1. he] we L R D h Bb; be  
 Ba T H F J Ch: vsen] vsed Ba F J Ch. 3. þe] no Rl J Ch: þoght] þoghtes T.

He wynneþ his conseytes al aboute.  
 And by þe same skill, it is no dowte,  
 Full many-foldl of knowyng<sup>i</sup> myght þou fynde  
 In substaunce[s] full dyuerse in þeire kynde.

(930)

5. The felyng may be cleped one of tho  
 Whiche bestes haue þat ben so inmevable,  
 þat wit þey haue all onely *and* no mo,  
 As schelle fische *and* suchे þat stonden stable  
 In clyues þat to theym is conuenable,  
 And so suchе oþere conchous of þe see  
 Whiche in diuerse places norissshed be.

(931)

6. Bot knowyng<sup>i</sup> of ymagineacioun  
 Meuable bestes han *and* don it sewe,  
 Whiche þat in manere han affeccioun  
 Sum maner þing<sup>i</sup> to couoit or eschewe.  
 Bot resoun to discerne fals *and* trewe  
 Onely to man it haþ conuenience,  
 As onely doþ to god intelligence.

(932)

7. Than is it so as euere man may see,  
 þat þis knowyng<sup>i</sup> most worthy is *and* hyhe  
 Whiche of his owne kynde[ly] propirte,  
 Noght onely þat belongeth kyndely  
 Vnto his owne knowyng propirly  
 He knoweth well, but furthermore yit<sup>t</sup>  
 þe subiect knoweþ he of euery wyt.

PROSA V, STAN. 4.—6. manyfoldl] many fole H ; many a fole T : myght] may T. 7. substaunces H] substaunce *all other MSS.* : full om. P : kynde] mynde T ; syde kynde D. [Stan. om. M De : fol. om.] STAN. 5.—2. bestes haue] haue bestes P : so] om. P. 3. wit] will T : þey] while þey H : all] om. T H. 4. schelle] shelid T H : suchе] whiche T : þat] as H. 5. elyues] cliftest N : þat to theym is] as is to hem N : þat] as C T H : is] beþ F : couenable] comendable T : commevable H. 6. oþere] om. D : conchous] shylle fysche P. 7. Whiche in] Within D. [Stan. om. M De : fol. om.] STAN. 6.—1. of] of the D. 5. and] or T H. [Stan. om. M De : fol. om.] STAN. 7.—1. is it] it is D : as] þat T : euere] euery Rl h. 2. is] om. R. 3. kyndely] kynde L h : kyndely propirte] properte kyndely H. 4. belongeth] perteyneth P. 6. well] it wele T. [l. 5 om. Ch. Stan. om. M De : fol. om.]

(933)

8. But what if comyn wittes stood aȝeyn  
 And perauenture lo [thus] wolde answere,  
 And wolde vnto discours of resoun seyn  
 Lo þat þis vniuersele noþing were  
 Whiche resoun semeth he beholdeth there ?  
 For all þat euer yimaginabill is,  
 Or comyn wittes may conseyue i-wys,

(934)

9. It is noght vniuersele in no wise.  
 Now [or] þe iugement of resoun þan  
 Lo myght be soþ if he myght þus devise  
 þat noþing may sensible be to man ;  
 Or for he woot well þat þise wittes han  
 Obiectes many dyuerse whiche þeye knowe,  
 His owne conseites fallace muste he trowe

(935)

10. When þat he seeth *and* comprehendeth wele  
 The þing þat sensible is *and* singulere,  
 Byhaldyng it right as vniuersele.  
 To þis [yf] resoun wolde answeren here  
 þat sche hire-self beholdeþ well *and* clere  
 Be resoun of vniuersalite  
 All þat þise oþere may conseyue *and* see ;

(936)

11. For wittes ne yimaginacioun  
 Ne mowe not comprehendenden sikerlye  
 Thise vniuersele þinges of resoun,

**PROSA V.** STAN. 8.—1. what] whan D : if] of Rl J Ch : comyn wittes] two mennys witte T ; too men wittes H : stood] stonde N D. 2. thus T] om. all other MSS. and P : And in thys wyse perauenture aunswere P. 3. vnto] to T H. 4. were] ne were F. 5. Whiche] þat P. 6. euer] evry H. 7. comyn] comyng J : conseyue] perceyue P. [Stan. om. M De : fol. om.] STAN. 9.—2. Now or] Ne were F : or] at L R h D F Ch ; are Rl Ba Bb : of resoun þan] be thanne D. 3. Lo] It D ; om. P: myght (1) mut T ; mote H ; Must P: myght (2) will T H P: þus] the N ; this H. 4. sensible be] be sensible H. 5. þise] his D. 6. Obiectes] Subiectes P: whiche] þat P. 7. conseites] conseuyng P: fallace] fallacys D : muste] myght Ba F J : he] be Ba Ch : trowe] knowe T. [Stan. om. M De : fol. om.] STAN. 10.—2. is] om. J : and] om. D. 3. right] om. D. 4. yf T H] om. all other MSS. and P. 5. well] whele J. 7. conseyue] prouide D ; perceyue P. [Stan. om. De : fol. om.] STAN. 11.—1. ne] nor D. 2. Ne mowe not] May no way P. 3. Thisel] The T : þinges] om. T.

For þey may not exceden propirlye,  
As be þeire owne knowynge kydelye,  
þe schappes *and* figoures corporall,  
Abouen þat m[ay] thei noþing at all,

(937)

12. In knowyng þan of þinges atte laste  
It is to leuen to þe iuggement  
þe whiche most perfit is *and* stedefaste ;  
And we þat [haue þis] resoun excellent<sup>t</sup>,  
And comune wyt to iuggen þing present,  
And eke ymagineacioun also,  
Schull we noght resoun here assenten to ?

(938)

13. [But mannes resoun is [i-]lyk in this]  
As anentes deuyne intelligence,  
Right as ymagynyng<sup>t</sup> of wittes is  
To resoun of [a] mannes conscience,  
Whiche weneth þat devyne prescience  
Ne may noþing<sup>t</sup> behalden, as he troweþ,  
þat is to come but as hym-seluen knoweþ.

(939)

14. For lo þis argument þow makest me :  
If þinges þat here-after schul be done  
Noght ful certeyn ne necessarie be,  
For-knowyng may noght fallen þere vpon,  
For prescience, seist þou, is þere non ;  
And if so is þat prescience be,  
Þere falleþ noght bot of necessite.

PROSA V, STAN. 11.—4. may] mowe N. 6. and] of D. 7. may  
T P] mowe H; moeve h; meuen *all other MSS.*; at] atte D. [Stan. om.  
M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 12.—2. leuen] geue credence P. 3. þe] om.  
H : perfyt] profyte H D : is] om. H : Whiche is moste prophite and sothfast  
T. 4. wel] wene Ba F J Ch ; why D : haue þis resoun N C T H P] resoun  
is and L R Bb h Rl Ba F J Ch ; resoun is than D. 5. wyt<sup>t</sup>] witte<sup>t</sup> T :  
iuggen] jure H : þing] wytte<sup>t</sup> T ; thyngys D. 6. eke] om. P. 7. we]  
be T H J : resoun] with resoun N : to] perto Ba H F J. [Stan. om. M Dc :  
fol. om.] STAN. 13.—1. i lyk H] lyk Rl Ba N C T R D h Bb F J Ch P.  
2. As] om. D : anentes] anoinete F. 3. of] or T H P. 4. a H] om. *all*  
*other MSS.* 6. Ne may noþing<sup>t</sup>] May no maner thyng P : behalden]  
beholdyng J : he] we D. 7. as] that T. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.  
1. 1 om. L h. Inserted from R in text.] STAN. 14.—2. þinges] þing T :  
here] ther T. 3. ful] om. P : ne] nor D. 5. is þere] ther is T D J.  
6. if] om. J. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.]

(940)

15. Bot if we myghte pertyneres bene  
 Of iugement of deuyne þoght,  
 Right as we may be verrey resoun sene  
 [That [oure] imagening sufficeth noght],  
 Ne comyn wittes to conseyen ought  
 þe iugement of resoun for to deme,  
 Full iust it schulde mannes resoun seme

(941)

16. To be subiect *and* vndercast<sup>t</sup> all-way  
 Vnto devyne þoght, I am certeyne.  
 Aryse þerfore fully if we may  
 To þat intelligence souereyne,  
 And if we may into þat height atteyne,  
 Lo þere schal resoun feele *and* knowe wele  
 þat in † it-self ne may it neuere a dele.

(942)

17. Lo þat is þis, as in what wyse *and* how  
 þe þinges þat ben tyd vncertanly,  
 þis prescience seeþ it well y-now  
 De[fj]in[ed] in his þoght eternally ;  
 Noght as be gessyng opynabillly,  
 But be souereigne science *and* simplesse  
 Whom termes mowe not closen ne compresse.

PROSA V, STAN. 15.—1. pertyneres] partners D. 2. Of iugement] Lo of the domes P. 4. That oure imagening sufficeth noght] That imagening sufficeth noght T H P; Oure imaginacioun is as nouȝte F; *om. all other MSS.* 5. Ne] The N: wittes] witte is T; witt ys H: conseyen] perceyuen P. 6. for to] as we P. 7. seme] be seme T. [l. 4 *om.* L Rl Ba N C R D h Bb J Ch.] [Stan. *om.* M Dc: *fol. om.*] STAN. 16.—2. devyne] dunyre T; denur H. 3. Aryse we P: if] yef þat F. 5. into] vnto NH; to T: þat] þe Fl: height] high T. 6. schall] *om.* J. 7. it-self N T H P] þi self D; þat-self *all other MSS.*: ne] *om.* N H; he P: it] do P. [Stan. *om.* M Dc: *fol. om.*] STAN. 17.—1. þis] þus D: and] and in h. 2. þat] which þat T: vncertanly] oon certenly T H; thus vncertenly P. 3. it] *om.* Rl Ba F Ch. 4. defined P] dyuyned N (*in margin in different hand*); devide *all other MSS.* 5. as] *om.* P: opynabillly] opynally D. 6. and] of T: simplesse] symplenesse P. 7. Whom] Whan T: mowel] *om.* Rl Ba F J; may T: ne] nor D. [Stan. *om.* M Dc: *fol. om.*]

(943)

[METRUM V<sup>m</sup>]

Quam variis terras.

1. The bestes † in þeire kyndes different  
 Full dyuersly on erthe doth þey glyden ;  
 Some on þeire body strecchyng<sup>t</sup> and extent,  
 Crepynge vpon þeire brestes done þei sliden,  
 And in þe dust a forow þey deviden ;  
 And some be verray lightnesse of þeire kynge  
 Wiþ fethered wynges planeth in þe wynde,

(944)

2. And longe spaces on þe eire on hyhe  
 So in þeir flight þey swymmeth as it were ;  
 And so[me] ben glad to kepe hem-seluen nyhe  
 þe grounde on lawe, and sette þeire steppes here  
 In grene feldes þer is all þeire chere ;  
 And some to walke in wodes and forestes.  
 And þogh so be þat þese wilde bestes

(945)

3. Ben dyuerse bothe in schap and in figure,  
 All þeire faces ben enclyned yit  
 Vnto þe erthe, scheu[y]n[g] þeire nature  
 And eke þe kyndly dulnes of þeire wit.  
 Lo only kynde of man re[u]er[s]eth it ;  
 For mannes hede ariseth vpon heyght  
 And euen vpright his body stondeth streight,

(946)

4. And vnder hym þe erthe beholdeth he.  
 Wheþer doþtest þou or art þou in a sweuene,  
 Thou† erþely man, [þ]y figure techeþ þe,

METRUM V, STAN. 1.—1. in T H P] þat in F; whiche þat in *all other MSS.*: kyndes] kynde H. 2. on] in T: doth] do D. 3. Some on þeire body strecchyng] Som theyre bodyes strecchen D: on] of Rl: body] bodyes N : strecchyng] strecchen F. 4. done] fourthe D; om. F. 7. planeth] play. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 2.—1. on] of T P. 3. some] so L R h Bb. 4. on] a P: sette þeire steppes] set the sterres D. 6. and] and yn T H. 7. so] hit so H F: þese] þe N. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 3.—1. bothe in schap] in ther shappes P: in (2)] om. D Ch. 3. schewyng N C D T H P] schewen *all other MSS.* 4. eke] om. P: dulnes] diuersite T. 5. reuerseth N T H] reserueth *all other MSS.* 6. ariseth] areysed N. 7. his body stondeth] standeth his body T. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 4.—2. dotes H] doutest *all other MSS.* 3. Thou R] Thy T; Though *other MSS.*: þy H P] this T; by *all other MSS.*: þe] he T.

þat lifteþ vp þy visage into heuene  
 And so þi frount into þe e[ir]e f[u]l euene,  
 On erþely þing<sup>t</sup> þou schuldest not set þi loue,  
 Bot set it onely in þe heuene aboue.

(947)

5. There schuldest þou be, þere is þy kyndely place.  
 Thow hast of erthe noght but þy bestly kynde,  
 And yit þou wilt lo bringe þi-seluen bace  
 And so wiþ bestes set þi-self behynde.  
 Let not þe noble nature of þy mynde  
 Be plonged doun *and* to þe gronde i-pight,  
 Sith þat þi body stondeþ euen vpright.

(948)

PROSA vja

Quam igitur.

1. Yit euery þing, as I haue schewed now right,  
 þat wist or knownen is be any way,  
 It is noght knownen of þe propre myght<sup>t</sup>  
 Lo of þat selue þing, it is no nay,  
 Bot of þe kyndly myghtes, soth to say,  
 Of þo þat doth it knowe or comprehendē.  
 Now lat vs þen beholden *and* entende,

(949)

2. So as oure symple kynde may suffice,  
 What þing<sup>t</sup> is þat estat of excellēce  
 Of devyne substance, *and* in þat wise  
 Than somwhat may we knowe of his science.  
 This is þe vsed generall sentence  
 Of alle þat be resoun do[n] discerne,  
 þat seyn þat god hym-selfe[n] is eterne.

METRUM V, STAN. 4.—4. þy] þe F. 5. eire H P] erthe all other MSS.: full] fel all MSS. 6. þing<sup>t</sup>] þynges H. 7. set it onely] only sette it Ba J F Ch: onely] holy N C: in þe vnto N. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 5.—2. of] of þe P: of erþe noght] noughe of erthe T: noght] om. P. 3. lo] om. D: bace] in bace D. 6. þe] om. D: gronde] erthe N: i-pight<sup>t</sup>] plight D; y plyght J. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] PROSA VI, STAN. 1.—1. Yit] Sith T H P: now] þe N. 2. knownen] knewen Rl Ba Ch: be] om. D; in P. 4. Lo] om. P. 5. þe] om. D: myg'tes] myght P: soth] the soth P. 7. Now] Lo now J: þen] om. F. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 2.—1. may] may not D. 2. estat] state T. 3. and] om. T: in] om. J: þat] þis D. 6. don] doth R L h; om. J. 7. þat] þey P. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.]

(950)

3. Bot now what þyng is þis eternite  
 It nedeth first to knownen sikerly,  
 And after þat we may be-holde *and* see  
 Þe science *and* þe nature plenerly,  
 So as we may suffisen simpilly,  
 Of god þat is oure prince souereigne.  
 Eternite is this, as clerkes seyne :

(951)

4. It is a perfite hole possessioun  
 At ones of a lyf interminable.  
 This is declared be comparisoun  
 Of þing þat is be tymes variable ;  
 For all þat luyeth in tyme it is vnstable ;  
 Present it is, þe tyme ago is past,  
 To tyme comynge hyeþ it full fast.

(952)

5. There may noþing<sup>i</sup> be sett<sup>t</sup> in tyme of space,  
 As clerkes han diffyned here biforn,  
 þat all at ones may his lyf embrace ;  
 For-why as yit he faileþ of to-morn,  
 And yesterdai is passed *and* forlorn.  
 And in þe same day þat present is,  
 Lo of youre lyf ye haue no more i-wys

(953)

6. Bot þis moment<sup>t</sup> transitorie lo.  
 þat þing þat hath his disposicioun  
 His tyme for to overpassen so,  
 Thogh þat it were of suche condicioun  
 Be Aristotiles traþicioun,  
 And seide þat þis worlde noȝt began  
 Ne neuere here-after schall an ende han,

PROSA VI, STAN. 3.—1. þyng] om. T. 4. and] of T H D. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 4.—1. hole] hold J: possessioun] perfeccio[n] D. 2. of] on N: of a] om. T. 4. þing] pinges T J: is] be T. 5. it] om. T: For al that leueth in tyme a goo is past' D. 6. it is] is it Ba ; yet is P. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om. II. 5, 6 confusedly combined D.] STAN. 5.—1. of] and P. 2. diffyned] deuyised P: here] bere h. 3. at] om. N. 4. he faileþ of tomorn] he falleth to the morne D: to-morn] to morowen T. 6. þat] as T. 7. youre] oure D. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 6.—2. his] om. T H. 3. tyme] tymes T H P: for] om. T: ouerpassen] compasen D. 4. it] ȝe N. 6. And] That II : þat] om P: worlde] worde T noȝt] neuer P. 7. an] om. F. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.]

(954)

7. Thogh þat it myghte, as Aristotile semed,  
 To infinit it-seluen so extende,  
 Eterne it may not rightwisly be demed.  
 Thogh it were infinit wiþ-outen ende,  
 At ones all he may not comprehendre,  
 Ne clippen all thyse spaces temporele,  
 For tyme to come yit hath it nocht a dele.

(955)

8. Bot he þat of þe lyf interminable  
 The fulnesse comprehendreþ verrelly,  
 Possessyng it at ones perdurable,  
 Fro whom no þing ne lakkeþ [certain]ly,  
 For tyme to come he haþ it presently,  
 Ne tyme passed þ fro hym is þere none,  
 Bot is, and was, and schall be, all is one,

(956)

9. Eterne he may be called well be right,  
 Vn to hym-selue present and pereles ;  
 And all-wey present is beforne his sight  
 þe [m]oble space of tymes endeles.  
 Bot þei rehersyng Plato, sauë þeire pes,  
 His conseit thei reporten all amys,  
 And of his me[n]yng failen foule i-wys.

(957)

10. Lo Plato seith þis world haþ evire be,  
 And to an ende nevire it schall be broght.  
 They seie þefore it haþ eternite,

PROSA VI, STAN. 7.—1. myghte] om. T. 3. rightwisly] rightuously  
 P. 5. all he may not] he may not all D T: he] hyt P. 6. clippen]  
 clepen R. 7. nocht] never D F. [l. 4 om. N but inserted later in margin  
 by different hand. Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 8.—1. of T H P]  
 for other MSS. : interminable] eterminable D. 4. ne] om. T H: ne lakketh]  
 doth lacken P: certeinly N] verrelly other MSS. ; vtterly F. 6. Ne] No  
 Ba: passed] passeth L R h Bb. 7. Bot] om. P: all] and all T: is (2)]  
 as N; at Ch. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 9.—1. well] will J:  
 be right] bryght Rl Ba F J Ch. 2. and] is J. 3. beforne] afore T.  
 4. moble H P] noble all other MSS. : space] spaces N. 6. amys] on mis H.  
 7. menyng] mevyng L R h Bb: failen] failed F. [Stan. om. M Dc. fol. om.]  
 STAN. 10.—1. world] wordle H: be] y be F P. 2. nevire it schall] it  
 shall neuer P; shal it neuer T: it] om. F. 3. seie] seide N: þefore]  
 furthermore D.

And euen i-lyk wiþ god þat haþ it wroght.  
 Bot yit allone, incertayn is it noght  
 A lyf interminable for to lede,  
 As Plato wende hym-self it is no drede;

(958)

11. It is anoþer to enclosen all  
 At ones so þis lyf interminable ;  
 For all þat is, or was, or evire schall,  
 At hym it is present and permanable,  
 He flitteþ noght but all-wey stondeþ in stable.  
 Lo of devyne þoght þe estat is þis,  
 No creature may ben i-lyk i-wys.

(959)

12. And noght-forþy ȝe schull not demen here  
 þat god is elder as in tyme of spas  
 Than creatures made of his powere ;  
 Bot þus lo schall ye iuggen in this cas :  
 þat god hym-self alwey is *and* was  
 Before or any formed creature  
 In propre simple[ne]sse of his nature.

(960)

13. And all þe entent of þinges temporele  
 þat alway meveþ so contynuelly,  
 They caste to counterfete euerydele  
 þe perdurable lyf of god on hy  
 þat chaungeþ noght but stondeth presently.  
 Bot when it may not evene hym-self þerto,  
 Theire verray stabilnesse þei fallen fro,

PROSA VI, STAN. 10.—4. euen] *om. D*; i-lyk] is like D; lyk F; in lyk T: god] *om. T H.* 5. allone] all T: is it] it is D; ȝit is it Ch: is] was T. 6. interminable] eterminable D. 7. wende] wened H; thought P. [Stan. *om. M Dc: fol. om.*] STAN. 11.—2. interminable] eterminable D. 3. or (1)] *om. T: schall*] shalbe T. 5. stondeþ in stable] stondeth stable N C T H F P; stant at stable D. 6. estat] state T D P. 7. i-lyk] like T H. [Stan. *om. M Dc: fol. om.*] STAN. 12.—1. noght forþy] yet for that P: here] *om. T H.* 2. of] and T. 4. lo] lo this T: ye iuggen] iuggen the T: iuggen] neyghen D: this] the D. 6. or] *om. F H:* formed] forme of T; forme a H; forme h. 7. simplenesse T H P] simplesse all other MSS.: his] his hye D. [Stan. *om. M Dc: fol. om.*] STAN. 13.—1. all] *om. T H Ch P: temporele*] naturall N h. 6. when] *om. T H: hym*] it N C H. 7. Theire] Theigh Rl Ba Ch; þe; F. [Stan. *om. M Dc: fol. om.*]

(961)

14. Movynge then out of simplicite,  
 Decressyngē out of present þen anone  
 To infinite and endeles quantite  
 Of tyme to come *and* tyme þat is gone ;  
 But when he may not brynge it into one  
 As all hys lyf attones for to haue,  
 I[t] wilneth þus it-seluen for to saue.

(962)

15. And þere it may not ben aboute ibrought  
 So all hys lyf at ones for to gete,  
 þat in als meche as it [en]deth nocht,  
 This lyf it doth not vterly forlete,  
 It semeth þat it wolde counterfete  
 Pe souereigne lyf of god omnipotent,  
 In so meche as he somewhat haþ present.

(963)

16. And so it byndeþ hym to a lytell stounde  
 To haue a maner perdurabilnesse  
 In whiche no tyme of space may be founde.  
 But for it haþ a maner liklynnesse  
 Of þe eternall lyf þat present esse,  
 It semeth how þat euere it fleet or flitte,  
 þat in present alwey abydeþ it.

(964)

17. And for it may nocht after his delite  
 Abiden bot for suche a litell space,  
 Hit takeþ away of tymes infinite ;  
 And for it may not all his lyf embrace

PROSA VI, STAN. 14.—1. Movynge] And meneth P : then] that H : out] om. N. 2. Decressyngē] Decrete hem T : þen] there D. 4. gone] agone H D P ; ago T. 4. when] om. T H : he] we T H : it] yn H. 7. It] I L R h Rb ; He D: for] om. T. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 15.—1. i-brought] broght D. 2. hys lyf at ones] attoneȝ his life T. 3. þat in als meche] Yit is a mochel T H: endeth] nedeth L N H. 4. forlete] forȝete N ; for to lete T H. 5. It (1)] But hyt P. 7. he somewhat haþ] somewhat haþ he T H. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 16.—1. it] he J : to] om. Rl F J Ch. 3. space] spacyss D: may] om. D. 4. liklynnesse] likenesse J Ch. 6. semeth] semeth pat T: fleet] fleeth Rl Ba D F J; fleete h; flee P; feleth T. 7. alwey] euer P. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om.] STAN. 17.—1. may] man H. 3. away] alwaye D: tymes] tyme D.

At ones a[s] his principall purpos was,  
Passyng forth, þe lyf he kepeth so,  
For cause he may ne can none oþer do.

(965)

18. And if we schull be names hem disc[er]ne,  
To sewen plato if he seide wele,  
He seith þat god him-selfe[n] is eterne,  
Lo and þe worlde schulde be perpetuele.  
Of þis myght þou consevye þen and feele,  
Sith euer[y] iugement þat schal be trewe,  
It moste þe nature of hym-selfe sewe

(966)

9. To comprehenden þinges of wiþoute ;  
And þe estate of souereigne god on hye  
Is stondyng euere in one, it is no doute,  
All-gates in hym-selfe presentlye ;  
His knowyng þen surmounteþ sikerlye  
All thing þat mevyng haf in difference,  
Abidyng in his simplesse of presence,

(967)

20. And so encloseth spaces infinit  
Of tyme þat was and schall here-after be ;  
But to þe spaces haþ he no respit  
Bot to his owne hole eternite,  
Be knowynge of [his] hye simplicite,  
And all þing† in þe presence of his sight  
He seeth as it were do now right.

PROSA VI, STAN. 17.—5. as] al L h Bb T; al as H: principall] fyrste  
T. 6. kepeth] lyueth N. 7. may ne can] can ne may F: ne] nor D:  
none oþer] non otherwyse H; otherwyse T. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.]  
STAN. 18.—1. if] om. H: be] of Ba F: discerne] discreue L; discryue h.  
2. if] where P. 3. seith] said P. 4. worlde] worde T: be] om. D.  
5. and feele] ful wel P. 6. euyer] euer L h Rl Ba C. 7. nature] matire  
R: selfe] om. D. [l. 7 om. T. Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 19.—  
1. of] so Rl Ba F J Ch. 2. þe estate] thaste h; the state T. 3. Is  
stondyng† Stondeth P. 5. þen surmounteþ sikerlye] them furdermore  
securly T. 6. mevyng haf] hath meuyng P. 7. simplesse] symplenesse  
T H; symplycye P: of] and F J Ch. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.]  
STAN. 20.—2. schall here-after be] euer after shalbe T. 3. respit† respect  
P. 4. to] of H: owne hole] hole ounre F: hole] holde J. 5. knowynge]  
knowe D; his H D P] om. all other MSS. 6. And] om. T H P: all] alle  
N: þing D P] þinges all other MSS.: in þe] per in D: þe] om. N P.  
7. as it] hyt as hyt P: do] y do T H. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.]

(968)

21. And if þou haue þat presence in þi þoght  
 In whiche he knoweth alle þinges so,  
 His prescience þou schalt referre noght  
 As to a þyng' þat after schal be do,  
 Bot present sciens schalt þou clepe it lo,  
 Of present tyme þat neuere fayle may,  
 Ne out of presence passen neuer away.

(969)

22. For-why it is noght cleped providence,  
 Bot rather is it cleped purveaunce  
 þat alle þinges knoweþ in presence,  
 In whiche knowenge þere is no variaunce  
 F[ro] oure knowyngē it haþ full gret distaunce ;  
 For ye beholden lowe þinges here,  
 Bot fro on hy behaldeþ he all in-fere.

(970)

23. Sith euery iugement moste sewen þan  
 þe nature of þe knowere kyndelye,  
 Where is it þat þou wilt iuggen þan  
 þat all most fallen necessarily  
 þat seyn is in devyne sight on hyhe,  
 Sith men þe present thinges þat þei seen,  
 They maken noght of nede for to been

971)

24. Lo may thy sight of þinges here present  
 Make h[e]m to fallen of necessite ?  
 I seyde, " Nay." Quod sche, 'Right so it stant'

PROSA VI, STAN. 21.—1. þoght] sight T H: If thou consydre that prescience in thy thought P. 2. In] By P: he] om. R. 3. þou schalt shalst thou P. 5. present] very P: sciens] om. T H: clepe it] clepet Ba Ch; deme hyt P: lo] so T H. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 22.—2. is it] it is Ba D: cleped] called H P. 3. þinges] þing D F. 5. Fro H] For other MSS.: oure] youre T H: ful] in F; om. T. 6. ye] we P: lowe] howe D; lo P. 7. he] ye N: in fere] y fere N F. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om. 1. 3 om. T.] STAN. 23.—1. sewen] follow T. 2. knowere] knowyng T. 3. Where] Wherfore T H: Wherfore is yt that thou askest than P. 4. þat all] þat all pat Rl Ba. 5. þat] Whiche D: in] in the T D. 6. þe] po D; om. T: things] om. D: þei] ye T H. 7. They] Then H: om. P. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 24.—1. Lo] So H: thy] þis Rl Ba F J Ch: sight] om. F: here he D 2. hem N C H D] hym all other MSS 3. right] om. T

Of goddes purveaunce as semeth me,  
All-pogh þere no comparisoun may be,  
For-why þe presence of [a] mannes þoght  
To goddes presence may be likned noght.

(972)

25. For right as ye behoden wiþ youre sight  
þat in [this] tyme present is i-done,  
Right so he seeth in his eternall light,  
So þat noþing to comyng † is þere none  
As in his sight ne noþing ouergone.  
For-why his prescience, it scheweþ wele,  
Nature of þinges changeþ not a dele,

(973)

26. For suchē he seeþ tho þinges presently  
Right as þei schull here afterward befall ;  
Ne iugement of þinges sikerly  
His knowyng ne confoundeþ not at all.  
For all þing þat be-tid here-after schall,  
Wheþer nedefull or contingent be þe ende,  
At ones [all] he seeth it in his mende.

(974)

27. Right as þou seest a man gon on þe grunde,  
And eke þe sonne also in heuene aryse,  
And boþe þou beholdest in a stounde,  
Yit canst þou wel discernen *and* deuyse  
Lo þat þis man þat waweth in this wise,  
. He does noght elles but a wilfull dede,  
Bot yit in sothe þe sonne ariseth nede.

PROSA VI, STAN. 24.—4. goddes] god his H. 5. All-pogh] As thou H; All þaught Ch: þere] om. F: no comparisoun may] may no comparisoun P. 6. why] om. P: þe] there D: presence] prescience H: a N D F J] om. all other MSS. 7. presence] prescience H P. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 25.—1. this N T H P] om. all other MSS. 4. noþing] þyng H P; thyng; T: to] om. T H: comyng} comyng D; comyng h; comunyng L; cummyng C. 5. his] om. F. 6. his] hit F: prescience] presence F: scheweþ] sweth C; seweth H P. 7. Nature] The nature P: not] neuere N C H F P T. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 26.—1. suche] sith Rl Ba D F J Ch P: tho] too D; no J. 2. schull] shuld Ch: afterward] after H F. 4. ne confoundeþ not] confoundeth no thyng P. 5. þing] thyng; T. 7. all T H P] om. all other MSS.: he seeth it in] all he seeth in T: in] is in P. [l. 1 om. T. Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.] STAN. 27.—1. Right] Lyke T: þe] om. D. 3. a] one P. 4. wel discernen] discerne wel F. 5. þat (2)] om. D; whiche J: waweth walketh T H D P. 6. He dothe hym self wyllyngly that dede P. [Stan. om. M Dc: fol. om.]

(975)

28. Nether þe sight of god þat is so clere  
 þat all þing<sup>t</sup> doth benethe hym-seluen see,  
 Of þise worldly þinges þat ben here  
 Destourbleþ nevir a dele þe qualite,  
 Whiche in þe sight of his eternite  
 Ben present now, but to þe sight of man  
 Theire tyme thei schull here afterwardes han.

(976)

29. And herfore cometh þis conclusiou[n]  
 þat what he woot þat schall here-after sewe,  
 It is a fallace nether opiniou[n],  
 But verrey science suffisaunt *and* trewe,  
 Be whiche he knoweth þat it is not dewe  
 As of necessite to fallen so.  
 Bot þan þou seist, “A þing<sup>t</sup> þat schall be do,

(977)

30. And is provided in devyne þoght,  
 I[t] may not vnbetide, it is no drede ;  
 A þing<sup>t</sup> þat so may be [e]schewed noght,  
 Than of necessite it falleþ nede.”  
 And so þou wilt me bynde to þe dedo  
 As be þis word it is necessite,  
 And lo as trouthe I will it graunte þe.

(978)

31. Bot þis vnnethe may felen any wight,  
 Ne well conseycyen in þis erþely lyf,  
 Bot if he had a conseit *and* a sight

PROSA VI, STAN. 28.—1. Nether] Nere T H; Nother D. 2. þat] Whiche D: benethe hym seluen] hym selfe beneath T. 3. worldly] wordly T. 4. distourbleþ] distroubleth Rl T H F Ch P: qualite] rualite H. 6. to] om. T; in D: sight] right N. 7. afterwardes] after T F; afterward H D. [Stan. om. M Dc : fol. om. 1. 7 om. J : fol. om.] STAN. 29.—1. herfore] therefore D; here of P. 2. þat(2)] om. D. 3. nether] ne N; neither H h; ner C; nor D; noþer R P. 5. he knoweth] knoweth not F: not] no H. 7. þan] om. D: schall] shulde T H. [Stan. om. M Dc J : fol. om.] STAN. 30.—1. prouided] preved T. 2. It] I L R h Bb: vnbetide] be vntide T: drede] dede h. 3. A] And C: so may] may so D: eschewed N C (e inserted later) T H P] schewed *all other MSS.* 5. so] om. T: wilt] woldest D: me] om. Rl F Ch: to] vnto T. 6. word] worlde R: it] that N T H P. [Stan. om. M Dc J : fol. om.] STAN. 31.—1. may felen any wight] wele may eny wyȝte T: felen] felen wele H. 2. well conseycyen] may contayne T: this] his T.

Of god *and* fully were contemplatyf.  
 Bot vnto þi[s] I answere the be-lyf:  
 When þat þing[<sup>t</sup>] þat so for to comen is,  
 Vnto diuine science referred is,

(979)

32. Lo necessary is it sikerly ;  
 Bot in þe manere of the *propre* kynde,  
 When þat þow it behaldest verely,  
 Necessity ne doth it noþing[<sup>t</sup>] bynde.  
 For two necessites schalt þou fynde,  
 Of whiche þat [oon] is simple, wite it wele,  
 And lo þat oþre is condicionele.

(980)

33. That euery man is mortale of nature,  
 This is necessite of simpl[en]esse,  
 But when þow knowest a man peraudentur  
 þat walkeþ[<sup>t</sup>] of his owne wilfulness,  
 þat mannes walkyng[<sup>t</sup>] necessarie esse,  
 Wiþ þis condicioun iputte þerto :  
 þe whiles þat [it] is well knownen so.

(981)

34. For þing[<sup>t</sup>] þat knownen is to mannes þoght,  
 As for þe tyme it may non oþer be.  
 Bot þis condicioun sufficeþ noght  
 Wiþ hym to drawen this simplicite ;  
 For well þou wotest[<sup>t</sup>] þat þis necessite  
 Cometh not of kyndely disposicioun,  
 Bot of þat accident condicioun.

PROSA VI, STAN. 31.—5. vnto] to F: þis Rl Ba N C H F] þe *all other*  
*MSS.*: be-lyf] blyf N; blyue H; belyue P. 6. fer] ferre D; *om.* P.  
 7. Vnto] To P. [*Stan. om.* M De J: *fol. om.*] STAN. 32.—1. is it] hit  
 is F. 2. the (2)] that P. 3. behaldest] be hiddest h. 4. ne] *om.*  
 T H: no] ne h: no þing[<sup>t</sup>] in no wyse P. 6. whiche] whome T: þat] the  
 T D: oon] *om.* Rl Ba L F Ch Bb. 7. lo] *om.* P: þat] *om.* T. STAN. 33.—  
 2. This] Hit F: symplenesse H] simplesse *other MSS.* 4. walkeþ[<sup>t</sup>] maketh  
 T: of] on Rl. 5. necessarie] necessite T. 6. iputte] putte T H.  
 7. whiles] while is T; while his H; while P: þat] *om.* P: it N T H F P]  
*om. all other MSS.*: is well] hys wyl is D: well] *om.* T H P: knownen] y  
 knownen P: so] to be so P. [*Stan. om.* M De J: *fol. om.*] STAN. 34.—  
 1. þing[<sup>t</sup>] thinge; T: to] in P. 2. pe] þat H: may] wol D. 3. sufficeþ[<sup>t</sup>]  
 suffreth N. 5. well þou wotest] þou woste wel F. [*Stan. om.* M De J:  
*fol. om.*]

(982)

35. Necessite ne doth hym not compelle  
 To walken, he þat walkeþ wilfully ;  
 Bot while he goth, þis will I grante welle,  
 Lo þat he walkeþ necessarily.  
 And in þe same wise sikerly  
 What purveaunce a[s] present doth provide,  
 [Lo of necessite it doth betide],

(983)

36. And yit þat þing<sup>t</sup> as of his propre kynde  
 Ne doth noght of necessite befall.  
 Bot all þat god beholdeþ in his mynde  
 þat so of liberte betide schall,  
 So he beholdeþ it as present all.  
 And so referred to devyne sight,  
 As necessarie þei ben accounted [right] ;

(984)

37. Bot þis is only be condicioun  
 Lo of þe knowyng<sup>t</sup> of devyne witt.  
 Bot when þese þinges han relacioun  
 Vnto þeire owne propre kynde ȝit,  
 All absolutely then betideþ it,  
 Noþing<sup>t</sup> compelle[d] of necessite,  
 Ne hit forleteth noght<sup>t</sup> his liberte

(985)

38. So þan it schall befalle douteles  
 All þing þat god to co[m]yng doth provide ;  
 And myche þing<sup>t</sup> schall falle neuerþeles,

PROSA VI, STAN. 35.—1. ne] om. R. 2. wilfully] wyllingly P.  
 3. goth] walketh H: But he walketh this graunte I wele T. 4. neces-  
 sarily] necessary T H. 5. wise] om. T H. 6. as H P] a all other MSS.:  
 as present] and prescience D. 7. Full soothe is it must nedys betyde D.  
 [1. 7 om. L R h Bb.] STAN. 36.—1. þat] om. R: as] om. D. 2. of] om.  
 T: befall] falle D. 6. devyne] dyne T. 7. right T H F P] sight Rl Ba  
 Ch; yit all other MSS. [Stan. om. M Dc J: fol. om.] STAN. 37.—  
 1. þis] om. T H: is] om. N Ch. 2. þe] om. T. 4. owne] om. T H F:  
 kyndel] partie H. 6. compelled C T H P] compelleth L Ba R D Bb h;  
 compellynge Rl F Ch. 7. his] for his D. [Stan. om. M Dc J: fol. om.]  
 STAN. 38.—1. So] Lo T: befall] ben all Rl Ba Ch; falle T H. 2. com-  
 yng N F] cummyng C; commyng D; kommynge R; comen P; connynge Rl  
 Ba L h Bb Ch. 3. falle] om. N: neuerþeles] doutlese neuerþelesse C.

þat only schall of liberte betyde,  
 So þat þey stonden fre for euery syde,  
 And þogh þey be to come yit may we chese,  
 So propre nature doth þey noght forlese.

(986)

39. Theire kynde is þis, beforehande ar they were,  
 Of liberte þey myght haue ben vndo.  
 " Bot what force is it," wilt þou seye me here,  
 " Wheþer þey come of necessite or no,  
 Sith of devyne science it is so,  
 In alle wise it doth befallie this  
 Right euen as þing þat necessarie is ?

(987)

40. Lo þus as I [a] litel here beforne  
 Purposed be exsaumple plenerly,  
 Lo of þe sonne þat riseth be þe morne,  
 And of a man þat walkeþ wilfully,  
 Till þat þei be in doyng presently,  
 They may well be vndo it is no drede.  
 Bot yit þat one was to betiden nede,

(988)

41. Bot sikerly þat other nedeth noght.  
 So all þat he beholdeþ as present,  
 Right so wiþouten doute it schall be wrogh  
 Bot þat þe sonne riscþ verrayment,  
 Lo of necessite it hath dissent,  
 Bot yit þat man to wawen or to goon,  
 His awne chois it falleþ all vpon.

PROSA VI, STAN. 38.—5. for] on Rl Ba F Ch ; fro P: euery] eyther  
 P 6. we] not N. [ll. 2-7 om. T H. Stan. om. M Dc J : fol. om.]  
 STAN. 39.—1. þis] om. N: beforehand] byfore and N: ar] as Ba F Ch.  
 3. it] om. Ch: wilt þou seye me] all thow me say T: seye me] me sey H.  
 4. Wheþer] Where C P. 5. it is] ys it P. 7. þing] om. R. [Stan. om.  
 M Dc J : fol. om. 1. 1 om. T H.] STAN. 40.—1. þus] om. Rl Ch; thys  
 P: as I] om. T: a] om. L C D R h Bb: litel] telle D. 3. Lo] om. P.  
 4. wilfully] skylfully D; willingly P. 5. þat] tyme P: doyng] doynges  
 Ch. 6. well] om. F: well be] be well H: vndo] vnder D: vnto Ch.  
 7. yit] om. P: was] om. F: was to] muste T: to] om. h. [Stan. om. M Dc  
 J : fol. om.] STAN. 41.—1. nedeth] neded P. 2. he] om. H. 5. it]  
 he D: hath] shall T. 6. to] that T: wawen] walken Rl Ba T H D F Ch  
 P. 7. falleþ] standeth P. [Stan. om. M Dc J : fol. om.]

(989)

42. Now then in this we haue seid but right  
 þat whenne þese þinges so referred be  
 Vnto þe knowyng of devyne sight,  
 Lo þenne þei fallen of necessite;  
 Bot þen referred to þeire qualite,  
 Full absolute in liberte þei stonde,  
 As out of alle necessarie bonde.

(990)

43. As all þat scheweþ to þe comyn wit,  
 If þatþey be referred to resoun,  
 Lo vniuersele þan in sothe is it;  
 And if þou sette in thyn entencioun  
 þe propirte of thy condicioun,  
 So þ[en] þou felest it as singulere.  
 "Bot if [it] be," þou seist, "in my powere

(991)

44. My purpos for to changen as me list,  
 Lo then schal I voyde purveaunce  
 Be whiche my purpos knownen is *and wist?*"  
 Bot I schal answer to þin allegeaunce:  
 "Thy purpos may þou chaunge at þi plesaunce,  
 Bot þis myght for to done or do it noght;  
 And all þe dyuerte chaungyng of þi þoght,

(992)

45. The verray present trouthe of presciens  
 Hit euerydele beholdeþ presentlye;  
 Ne thow myght noght avoyden his presens

PROSA VI, STAN. 42.—3. of] om. H. 4. fallen] fayleth T. 5. pen] om. P. 6. in liberte] om. R: stonde] be founde F. 7. bonde] londe D. [Stan. om. M De J: fol. om.] STAN. 43.—1. scheweþ] apereth P: þe] that T. 2. þey] them T; then they H. 3. Lo] om. P: vniuersel] þan in sothe] vniuersele in sothe then T; than vniuersal for sothe D. 4. in] it in T. 5. thy] her T H P. 6. then P] þat other MSS.: it] om. N T D: as] is Rl Ch; yn F. 7. it N T H P] þat F; pou all other MSS.: my] py N. [Stan. om. M De J: fol. om.] STAN. 44.—2. then] yett T H: schall] I shall T: voyde] avoyden T P. 3. By wyche the same ys knownen and wyst P. 4. þin] þis Rl Ba F Ch. 5. may] myzte T H: at þi plesaunce] om. N. 6. þis] thus T: myght] must T: for to done] thou doo T H: or do] om. Ba Ch. [Stan. om. M De J: fol. om.] STAN. 45.—1. of] of thy T. 2. Hit] In N; om. P. 3. myght] maist N P: presens] prescience F.

No more þan þou myght voyde verrelye  
 þe right beholdyng of a present yghe,  
 Thowȝ þat þou woldest þi-selue torne or wende  
 As liketh to þe frewill of thy mynde.'

(993)

46. Bot here þou makest this obiecciouн:

" If goddes science may be changed so  
 Right as myne owne disposicioun,  
 And when I now this *and* now þat m[ay] do, †  
 Than may I enterchaungen to *and* fro  
 His hye science be stoundes of my wille?"  
 ' Nay, nay, forsothe, þat myght þou not be skille,

(994)

47. For-why þe knowynge of devyne sight .

It goth bifore þat þing! þat schall be-falle,  
 And right before his propre presence right,  
 Lo of his knowyng he retorneth all  
 þat euer was or ben here-after schall.  
 Ne as þow wenest he alterneþ noght  
 His presence be stoundes of þi þoght,

(995)

48. As now þis þing *and* now þat þing to knowe,

Bot he, beholdyng! euery wyt, compaseth  
 The chaunginge of þi þoghtes all arowe.  
 With o syght all at ones he enlaceth ;  
 He goth also before *and* all embraceth.

PROSA VI, STAN. 45.—4. myght] maist N P. 5. right] om. P.  
 6. or] and N; wende] wynde N. 7. frewill] for wil D; fyry wille T.  
 [ll. 2, 3 om. T. Stan. om. M Dc J : fol. om.] STAN. 46.—1. here] there  
 T H. 3. as] att T P: owne] propre P. 4. now (1)] om. T H: now  
 this] this now N P: and (2)] om. D: þat] what N; may do T H P] mysse  
 do D; I do N; mys ido *all other MSS.* 5. may] om. H. 6. Hys  
 hye] Loo hys P; science] sciences H: of] att H P. 7. Nay (1)] om. P:  
 myght] may D; mayst P. [Stan. om. M Dc J : fol. om.] STAN. 47.—  
 1. of] of the T D. 2. It] om. P: þat (1)] þe T: schall] shold H.  
 3. right (1)] om. P: right (2)] om. T. 4. his knowyng] thyte returnyng  
 D: retorneth] knoweth D: returned Ch. 5. or] and D: þat euer has  
 ben or here after shall T. 6. Ne] And T: alterneþ] altereth P.  
 7. presence] prescience F: stoundes] stondeth T. [ll. 3-7 om. H: fol. om.  
 Stan. om. M Dc J : fol. om.] STAN. 48.—1. And now þat þing] om. T:  
 to] thus for to T. 2. beholdyng!] abydyng P: euery wyt] euene with N.  
 3. arowe] on rowe Rl Ba Ch; on a rowe F. 4. all] he D: he] theym  
 D: enlaceth] elusith T. 5. before] afore T: all] he T.

Ne he hys myght [þat] al[1] so comprehendeth,  
And eke his sight þat to so fer extendeth

(996)

49. All þinges to beholden presently,  
He hath hem noght resayued so as we  
Of þing þat is to comen sewyngly,  
Bot of hys propre hye simplicite.  
Wherby it may full well assoyled be  
The resoun whiche þou hast aȝeyn [m]e broght :  
Vnsemely, seist þou, is it in thi þoght

(997)

50. That þing to come of oure vnstabilnesse  
þe cause schulde be of his science.  
Bot of his konnynge lo the myght is þis :  
He closeth all with knowynge of presence ;  
Of dyuerse tyme haþ he no difference,  
And all þing into certayn haþ he broght ;  
To þinges passed oweth he right noght.

(998)

51. Sith it is so Y may concluden now,  
Lo þat in euery mortal creature  
The liberte abideþ hole y-now,  
And stondeþ fully in theire propre cure.  
And lawes whiche þat medes done mesure  
To tho whiche þat ben good and vertuous,  
And also peynes to þe vicious,

PROSA VI, STAN. 48.—6. Ne he] om. P: he] be T: þat all so] þat also T; also that all P: also other MSS. 7. to] om. N. [Stan. om. H M Dc J: fol. om.] STAN. 49.—1. to] om. Ba F Ch. 2. hem] om. F: resayued] reserved D. 4. of] om. T: hye] by T. 5. Wherby] Wherefore D. 6. me] be L h: That thou while er ageynst me hast Y put P. 7. Vnsemely] Vnsembly h: seist] semys T: þou] om. F: is it in] hitt is to T: in] to P. [Stan. om. H M Dc J: fol. om.] STAN. 50.—2. þe cause schulde be] Sholde the cause ben P. 3. of his konnynge lo] lo of his cunyng T. 4. knowynge] closynge N; connyngh. 7. oweth he] he oweth D: oweth he right noght] hath he no righte T: noght] noon h. [Stan. om. H M Dc J: fol. om.] STAN. 51.—4. theire] om. T; thy h: propre] owne P. 5. medes] nedes N; nedeth T: done] doth T. 6. tho] the D: whiche] om. T; men P. [Stan. om. H M De J: fol. om.]

(999)

52. Wiþ none vnright þey may not ben arettid  
 Sith euere man his owne will is at,  
 As be necessite no thing i-lettid,  
 Bot þat he may deserue loue *and* hate.  
 And god hymselfe sitte aboue algate,  
 And euery þing he knoweþ ar it be  
 As present in his hye eternite,

(1000)

53. In vs beholdynge euery þoght *and* dede  
 þat is or schall be done in ful certeyne ;  
 And to þe gode man he disposeth mede,  
 And to þe wicked punyschement *and* peyne.  
 To triste in god it is no þing in veyne,  
 And prayers if þey rightwisly be led,  
 Byleue it well, þey may not ben vnsped.

(1001)

54. Wiþstonde þou vice *and* ȝif þe to vertue ;  
 To rightwys hope þou lifte vp þi corage ;  
 And for þy nedes if þou wilt pursue,  
 Lo humble prayer send on thi message  
 Vp to þi god ; hit fayleth not his wage.  
 Ne doute þe noght þou schalt be sped full sone,  
 For he refuseth neuere a lowely bone.

(1002)

55. And loke þat þou þi conseil noght forgete ;  
 Dissimule noght bot do þi besynesse.  
 þe nede is thyne also the charge is grete

PROSA VI, STAN. 52.—1. Wiþ] Seth F: Then P: none] for P.  
 2. owne] om. T. 3. i-lettid] letted T. 4. he] þei Rl: deserue]  
 discerne N: and] or T P. 6. ar] as N. [Stan. om. H M Dc J: fol. om.]  
 STAN. 53.—1. þoght] thing N. 3. he] om. T. 5. in (2)] of T.  
 6. rightwisly] rightuously P: be led] bede T; be bed D. 7. ben] om. T.  
 [Stan. om. H M Dc J: fol. om.] STAN. 54.—2. rightwys] righteous P:  
 hope] hol hope T: þou] and T; om. D. 3. And] om. Rl Ba. 4. Lo]  
 om. P: on] in P. 5. fayleth] vayleth D. 6. full] right T. [Stan. om.  
 H M Dc J: fol. om.] STAN. 55.—1. þi] this D. 3. also] om. T: thi]  
 the T; om F: grete] all gret T.

That þou be founde in vertu *and* prowesse,  
Sith all þi werkes ben open *and* expresse  
Vnto þe presence of þe iuge on hye  
þat all þing doth beholde plenerlye.'

Explicit liber Boecij de consolacione philosophie de latino in  
anglicum translatus Anno domini millensimo cccc<sup>mo</sup> X<sup>o</sup> per  
capellanum Johannem——

PROSA VI, STAN. 55.—5. werkes ben] werke is T. 7. doth beholde]  
oldeth F. [ll. 2-7 *om.* N: *fol. om.* Stan. *om.* H M Dc J: *fol. om.*]

## NOTES

1, 4. Proof of Walton having made the translation to order. *Vide* reading of P for ll. 3, 4.

9, 5. Further indication that translation made for a patron.

6. *Vide* reading of P.

10. The prologue is entirely the work of Walton and has no Latin original. King Alfred wrote a prologue to his translation of *Boethius* in which he gave a short history of Boethius' dealings with Theodoric. Walton's prologue follows similar lines. In Stan. 4, ll. 1-5, he says he has seen earlier English translations.

13, 7. **Antechristes lay.** The Pauline conception of the Antichrist is not of a heathen potentate and oppressor, but of a false Messiah from within Judaism itself. But for the Apocalyptic writing to a Church which had known Nero's cruelty, there arose the Antichrist of a contemporary Nero-Saga with its dream of a Nero redidivus who should come back to the world from the realms of the dead.

19, 7. **Berwyng.** The readings *Briuen*, *Betwyne*, *To bryngē* of the various MSS. and P give no sense. Unfortunately T and H, which often give reliable readings, lack the translator's prologue. *Berwyng* is the emendation of a correcting scribe in C, and gives the best sense = sheltering, protecting [M.E. *berwen*, O.E. *beorgan*].

7. "Sheltering himself (or seeking protection) in Philosophy."

40, 3. **extent.** The reading *existent* is meaningless. Note how it has been transmitted throughout the B<sup>1</sup> group of MSS. while the others give the correct reading.

42, 2. **grekisshē P.** II.

4. **T**, i.e. θ not τ, the Greek θ being pronounced T in Latin. The reference is to Booth., *In Porph.*, Dial. i. "est enim philosophia genus, species uero eius duae, una quae θεωρητική dicitur, altera quae τιματική, id est speculativa et actiua."

50, 3. A latinism. Lat. *propria luce relictā*.

53, 4. and **gesoun.** Emendation supported by members of both groups of MSS.

72, 3. **thondere leight.** Lat. *Ardentes uia fulminis*.

73, 3. **disarme.** Both Lat. [*exarmaueris*] and Ch. [*desarmen*] as well as several MSS. support the emendation.

74, 6. **musten hele.** Perhaps from dictation, this was written *must vnhele*, which gives the opposite of the required sense.

80, 5. Let your own judgment bear witness to it.

94, 1. **me by.** Confusedly combined throughout the B group of MSS.

97, 3. **he sayed.** The MSS. readings *assayed*, *y sayed* probably due to dictation.

101, 3. **for to sle.** *for* and *sle* are lacking throughout the B group of MSS.

After this stanza the passage in the Latin — "Nunc quingentis . . . proscriptionique damnamur" finds no corresponding translated verse in the MSS. P, however, gives it a whole stanza :

But then I beyng for that same while  
With al my labour and my dilygence  
Fro my iugemente fyue hundred myle,  
Hauyng in court no aduocate ne defence  
To deth I was a-iuged in absence,  
Me beyng in the senatoures nedes ;  
And they consentyng, geuen was the sentence ;  
Loo how I am rewarded to my medes.

It is possible that this stanza is the work of Thomas Richard, the editor-printer, who observing the omission, proceeded to rectify it.

117, 5. **Another.** Lat. Iterum. Another time. Cp. 136, 5: 'Be þat he haþ with winter dayes met,' where 'Be þat' = By the time þat. 'Yere' makes no sense as the change described is a daily process. Cp. Milton's 'Hesper-Phospher.'

119, 1. **seedes.** Lat. semina; Chauc. seedes.

136, 5. **Be þat.** By the time þat.

163, 5. Lat. 'Deprehendisti caeci numinis ambiguos uultus.' Ch. 'Thou hast knownen and ataynt the doutous or double visage of thilke blinde goddesse fortune.' Walton, in his choice of words, was influenced by Chaucer. The verb 'to attain' (pp. attaint), to ascertain, find out, is fairly common in M.E. But Walton's phrase: 'Attaynt . . . hast pou take' is perhaps a Latinism where 'attaynt' is a past part., and the whole is a construction such as 'deprehensum . . . habuisti.'

177, 6. **oys.** Lat. 'usus.' Ch. 'used.' 'Voyce' of most of the MSS. is obviously wrong. In 776/6 L C M Bb correctly give 'oys' = use.

181, 1. Cp. Ch. 'Now worth vpon my wheel.'

182, 5. **Kyng of Perse,** Lat. Persi regis. Chaucer has: 'King of Persiens,' and Walton makes a similar mistake. The Lat. = 'of King Perses.' Perses III. was last King of Macedonia, and was defeated by L. Æmilius Paulus near Pydna, B.C. 168.

183, 7. **þe tone, that one.** L's reading due to 'tonnes' [l. 5].

196, 8. Walton's own. Note he keeps the legal term 'arrageare' (debt) after using 'feffed' [l. 1].

206, 5. 'Which thou didst consider of the highest value.'

207, 4. **in his defence,** in such a secure position as he.

256, 1. **At youre desert,** deservedly.

258, 6-8. Many MSS. have here in the margin: Ego nego ullum bonum esse quod nocet hominem.

262, 6. **sesse paire talent,** satisfy (cease) their appetite.

262, 8. **clarry,** 'wine mixed with honey and spice, and then strained till it is clear; clarified wine' [Skeat].

263, 2. **venym tyryen.** The numerous MSS. readings show the perplexity of the scribes. Chaucer has "venim of Tyrie," and here [V. Introd., Meth. of Trans.] Walton borrowed slavishly. Further in 385/2, and 428/2 Walton has 'tyriene' for Lat. Tyrio, and Tyrrhena.

300, 3. **thritty.** Lat. 'decem'; Ch. 'ten.'

320, 5. **howen, cry how!** (with grief). Probably onomatopæcic. Cp. Child's *Ballads*, xiii, 1889. 'What need ye hech and how ladies! What need ye how for me?'

327, 8. **I am þefore,** 'I am for there,' i.e. 'I am of that opinion.'

332, 3. **dryuen.** Lat. pepulerit; Ch. chased away. The better reading is confined to the A group of MSS.

338, 5. **mortal folks.** Lat. mortalium; Ch. mortal folk.

338, 2. **renoun.** Lat. claritas; Ch. renoun.

343, 8. The Latin has the opposite sense. Chaucer makes same mistake by reading 'afferre' as 'auferre.'

350, 4. **theire mynde.** Lat. sententiae; Ch. sentences. Perhaps 'ende' of the MSS. was written as a result of confusion with the next line.

352, 3. **mete.** Lat. escas; Ch. metes.

354, 2. **cage of tree,** wooden cage.

355, 5. **passid dayes stounde.** Latinism, abl. absolute construction. 'The day having ended.'

358, 2. **in suche a wyse.** Lat. per ea; Ch. by thilke thinges.

360, 3. **welpes.** Lat. diuitiis; Ch. richesses. Bad reading confined to B group of MSS.

361, 1. Joined to previous stanza in L R Bb.

382, 3. **in þe same,** in the same estimation, i.e. worth 'an ydell name.'

398, 4. **wilfullye,** more than 'willingly,' rather with 'endeavour.' Lat. Seneca opes etiam suas tradere Neroni . . . conatus est.

- 405, 1. **metep.** Lat. metitur; Ch. mesuren.
- 408, 8. 'Only those who are praised, and no others, must be noble.'
- 409, 8. **forleyneth.** *V.* chap. on Language.
417. Cp. Translation of this metrum by John Wilbye, 1609, in Fellowes, 'English Madrigal Verse,' p. 292.
- 423, 5. **schap** or **beaute.** Lat. Formae uero nitor . . . ; Ch. . . . the beautee of thy body.
443. Rather involved. For 'Wiche þat' [l. 4] read 'Is that which' to make the passage clearer.
- 445, 2. **vile.** Lat. vilis; Ch. vyl.
- 447, 5. **it will not be,** it will not be possible. *V.* Introd., chap. on Language.
- 449, 5. The emendations are supported by the MSS. nearest the original.
- 451, 7. **I dar be bold,** I dare be bold enough to assert.
- 452, 7. Lat. nisi fallor. *V.* Introd., chap. on Language.
- 457, 6. **lestē.** Lat. minimis; Ch. right litel.
- 458, 5-6. 'Nothing may be begun perfectly by him who leaves that (i.e. prayer) behind.'
- 459, 4. **sowest,** peoplest. Cp. 465/1.
- 462, 3. **haue conuenience,** 'may have a coming together,' i.e. 'may come together satisfactorily.' Lat. ut frigora flammis . . . conveniant.
- 462, 7. **so,** 'lest.' 'So' does not refer to the fire being prevented from 'fleeing his way.' God arranges this agreement in such a way that, despite the weight (of the other three elements) on the earth, the latter is not borne down.
- 463, 1. **mene spirit.** Lat. medium . . . animam. *V.* Thomas Richards' Commentary on this metrum.
- 463, 7. **he,** 'the mene spirit.'
- 464, 1. **Enseryng.** Lat. circuit; Ch. envirouneth. Perhaps 'encerlyng' would have been a better reading, but it has no manuscript support.
- 479, 1. **he,** i.e. God.
- 480, 4. **He may no ferre be.** Walton's own. "He cannot be further away than he is now"—implying doubt as to his existence.
- 487, 2. **proposiciouns.** Lat. propositis; Ch. proposiciouns.
492. As to emendations, see Introd., R. xxxvi.
- 498, 3. **as þei devise,** as people think. A tag. Probably as a result of this plural 'þei' in the tag, Walton unconsciously made the subject (goodes) plural in the remaining part of the sentence.
- 501, 2. Lat. ipsius boni et beatitudinis; Ch. of good and of blisfulness.
- 506, 1. **schenyng.** Lat. splendor; Ch. shyninge.
- 506, 2. **gouerned.** Lat. regitur; Ch. gouerned.
- 508, 3. **So þat,** Provided that.
- 518, 7. **ne will þere none,** None will go. Cp. Macbeth, III. 4:
- "I will tomorrow, And betimes I will to the weird sisters."
- 522, 3. **most tendre.** Lat. mollissimum; Ch. right softe. Mistake confined to the B group of MSS.
- 532, 3. **one,** Unity.
- 551, 3. **a yok to þing contrary.** Lat. detrectantium iugum.
- 558, 2. **hous of Dydalus.** Not in Latin. Taken from Chaucer, who uses it to explain Lat. Labyrinthum.
- 567, 2. **Eрудice.** Not mentioned by name in Latin or Chaucer.
- 569, 4. **At,** Ask at = ask of.
- 571, 7. **conuyct.** Lat. vincimur. The reading 'quyt' was no doubt due to the scribes' confusion of the abbreviation ~ or ? = con. with the letter q. 'Puyct' could easily be misread 'quytt.'
574. Note the change to the 'Troilus' stanza in Bks. IV and V. *Vide* Introd., chap. on Versification.
- 576, 6. **Ye,** i.e. Elizabeth Berkeley, Walton's patron.
- 583, 6. Latinism. L, 'nondum penitus insiti maerioris oblitus.'
- 591, 4. Latinism. L, 'purturbatione depulsa.'
- 592, 6. **speere of eyre.** [I make use of Prof. Skeat's note.] In the old astronomy the region of air [speere of eyre] was supposed to be surrounded by a region

of fire which Boethius says was caused by the swift motion of the ether. Beyond this region were the planetary spheres:—those of the moon, Mercury, Venus, the Sun, Mars, Jupiter and Saturn. This explains the allusion to the passage of the ‘mynde’ above the ‘spere of fuyre’ on its way to ‘the sterred places . . . thurgh-out the speres of planetes seuen,’ and so past the ‘sonne’ to the pe olde ‘Saturnus.’ After this the mynde soars to the eighth sphere ‘the cercle of the sterres bright,’ and finally reaches the ‘primum mobile,’ ‘to hym pat auctour is of kynde.’

611, 4. **kyndely for to do**, if he is to act naturally.

615, 5. **befor me could easily be confused with ‘be forme.’**  
rennest. L, praecurris.

619, 7. **Tag.** The greater the desired good that is lost, the less is the power obtained.

629, 2. **assembled.** Lat. ‘colleginus’ concluded. *Vide* Introl., chap. on Language.

636, 5. **woodnesse.** Lat. rabie; Ch. woodnesse.

647, 6. **dymmen.** Lat. ‘fuscet’ K. Alfred has ‘adimmad.’ The word seems to have presented difficulty to the scribes. Evidently the corrector of Bb, unable to make sense of ‘dennen,’ turned up the Latin and saw ‘minuat’ three words before ‘fuscet.’ This he translated as ‘Lassyn’ and inserted as a correction. R copied the correction. L tried to explain ‘demen’ by ‘demyn’t [=diminish?].

668, 4. **wilneth schrewdely,** has wicked inclinations.

668, 5. **wrecche.** Lat. Miserum. Correct reading confined to the A group of MSS.

671, 2. **bat**, i.e. ‘lyf’ of previous line.

671, 5. **hem**, i.e. the wicked.

674, 2. **it is conuenient**, it is in agreement.

686, 5. **som.** Lat. alia; Ch. some.

714, 7. **iyses.** The numerous readings show the perplexity of the scribes. Lat. ‘cum praesertim carcer, lex ceteraque legalium tormenta poenarum.’ Chaucer has ‘iuyse’ [O.F. juise, L. iudicium], justice, judgment, sentence, in ‘Knightes Tale’ A 1739, ‘Man of Lawes Tale’ B 795 [Skeat]. The printed edition gives ‘Ingynnes’ as a solution.

715, 1. **wicked.** Lat. pernicioſis.

720. *Vide* Prof. Skeat’s notes to the allusions in this metrum in his edition of Chaucer’s *Boece*.

727, 7. **feele**, many things.

740, 3. **bat**, refers to ‘excercise destinate’ [l. 1].  
entendeth, is directed.

743, 2. **bothe**, also. Merely a tag for rhyme.

745. *Vide* Introl., p. xxxvii, par. (4). Examination and comparison with the Latin lead to the conclusion that the readings of THP are correct. l. 5 savours of a tag; and l. 7 is tautological.

746, 3. **faster**, more firmly.

747, 6. **poynt to be circumference**, i.e. the centre as compared with the circle.

750, 4. **it**, refers to ‘causes’ [l. 1]. Singular number probably due to influence of ‘purveaunce’ [l. 2].

757, 2. **complexioun.** Combination of supposed qualities (cold or hot, moist or dry) in a certain proportion, determining the nature of a body.

763, 1. **conuyct.** Lat. victam. The passage of Lucan referred to is: ‘Victrix caussa deis placuit, sed uicta Catoni.’

763, 2-4. Walton’s own. At the battle of Pharsala 48 B.C. Pompey, the supporter of the Senate (and ‘justified’ by Cato) was defeated by the rebel; Julius Caesar.

790, 1. **be stoundes mete.** Lat. aequis modis, ‘in equal bounds, limits.’

802, 3. **bad.** Lat. malam.

803, 2. **where**, whether.

804, 5. **enoresen.** Lat. prouectu.

808, 6. **over.** Lat. ultra.

824, 3. **is noght at all**, does not exist.

835, 7. **fleen**. Lat. *fugax*. Several scribes probably took it to refer to the flight of the arrows and wrote 'fleigh' [O.E. *fleōgan*, to fly]. The reference is to the habit of the Parthians who dissembled flight and shot their arrows at their pursuers.

837, 3. **scheluyng**, sloping. Lat. *declivia*. Cp. *Trans. of Ovid.*, Met IX, 182: "A lake there is which sheluing margents bound" (1621).

851, 1-5. Not clearly translated. The 'Loeb' version runs: 'For they say that nothing is therefore to come to pass because Providence did foresee it, but rather contrariwise, because it shall be, it could not be unknown to Providence; and in this manner the necessity passes over to the other side.'

852, 2. **provided it is nede**, it is necessarily foreseen.

868, 6. **beholdeþ**. Lat. *prospiciens*.

879, 7. Lat. *Sed quis nota scire laborat*.

894, 4. To bring in arguments from outside [irrelevant] to support us.

904, 7. Sight and feeling prove the same thing, yet in different ways.

910, 2. **kynedes**. Lat. *species*. Bad reading confined to the Bb group of MSS.

918, 2. **derke in peire corages**, cloudy in their minds.

920, 2. **beym**, i.e. souls.

934, 2. **or**, correlative with 'or' [l. 5]. Lat. *aut . . . aut*.

935, 7. **pise othere**, i.e. the senses and imagination.

937, 4. Lat. *nos quibus . . . ratiocinandi . . . uis inest*. The readings of the B<sup>1</sup> group of MSS. make no sense.

942, 4. **Defined**. Lat. *definita*.

954, 1. **as Aristotile semed**, as it seemed to Aristotle (in 'De Caelo,' Lib. I.).

958, 4. **At hym**, i.e. in God.

960, 6. **it**, i.e. 'the infinite motion of temporal things' [ll. 1, 2.]. So also *he* [961/5], *hys* [961/6], *It* [961/7] *hys* [962/2], *it* [962/4], *it* (2) [962/5]. *Vide* Lat. B. V. Pvi, ll. 40—53.

964, 6. **passyng forth**. Lat. 'eundo.' By passing forth he so keeps his life, the fullness of which he could not keep by staying. Walton's translation of the whole of this passage is very loose.

966, 6. **difference**. All things that are different by having motion.

969, 1. **providence**. Lat. 'praevidentia,' foresight.

969, 2. **purveaunce**. Lat. 'prudentia,' providence.

969, 3. **in presence**, i.e. as if they were present.

981, 4. **hym**, i.e. itself ('condicoun').

981, 7. **accident condicoun**. Lat. 'adiectio condicionis.'

993, 4. **may do**. Lat. *uelim*.

## GLOSSARY

IN the preparation of this glossary it has been decided that since Walton shows no definite signs of abnormality in dialect or language a complete concordance noting *all* occurrences of simple well-known words would be superfluous. In such cases one reference and *etc.* is usually considered sufficient except in a case where the word occurs in a strange construction when this is quoted.

On the other hand, an attempt has been made to incorporate *all* words which differ materially in spelling or even very slightly in meaning from present-day forms and uses. Words revealing only slight differences in spelling but precisely the same meaning as their present-day forms are not always included, e.g. *exhortacioun, estimacioun, yimaginacioun, devide, eternite, aryse, enterchaunge, byholde, bounte*, etc.

Often in the case of unusual words the corresponding Latin of the original text is quoted within square brackets.

An asterisk over a word denotes that its form has been accommodated to the rhyme. The figures refer to stanza and line. The following abbreviations have been used.

<i>adj.</i> adjective.	<i>p.</i> present.
<i>adv.</i> adverb.	<i>prep.</i> preposition.
<i>comp.</i> comparative.	<i>pp.</i> past participle.
<i>conj.</i> conjunction.	<i>ppl.</i> present participle.
<i>contract.</i> contraction.	<i>pl.</i> plural.
<i>dat.</i> dative.	<i>prn.</i> pronoun.
<i>gen.</i> genitive.	<i>pt.</i> past.
<i>imp.</i> impersonal.	<i>pt. pr. vb.</i> preterite present verb.
<i>imper.</i> imperative.	<i>sb.</i> substantive.
<i>inf.</i> infinitive.	<i>subj.</i> subjunctive.
<i>neg.</i> negative.	<i>trans.</i> transitive.
<i>num.</i> numeral.	<i>vbl. sb.</i> verbal substantive.
<i>opt.</i> optative.	

**Abate**, *vb. inf.* [detrahere] take away, 217/3, [subtrahere] 290/6.

**Abateth**, *vb. 3 sp.* [beat] departeth, 202/3.

**Abominable**, *adj.* monstrous, abominable, 587/2.

**Absolute**, *adj.* free, 472/3, 899/3, 928/4, 989/6.

**Absolutly**, *adv.* freely, with liberty, 984/5.

**Accidentes**, *sb. pl.* [quid ex appositis] adjoining things, external ornaments, raiment, 258/2, 258/3.

**Accordant**, *adj.* agreeable, 17/6.

**Accordantly**, *adv.* harmoniously, 323/4

**Accorde**, *sb.* suitability; *non accorde* it was, [nec conueniebat], it was not fitting.

**Accounten**, *vb. inf.* [calculum ponere] reckon, 196/7, 231/8, 319/1;

**Acounten**, *2 pl. p.*, 232/1; **Accounted**, *pp.* 197/7, 232/4, 247/2.

**Acesen**, *vb. inf.* satisfy 243/3.

**Achaufe**, *vb. inf.* warm, 135/5.

**Acombeith**, *3 pl. p.* encumber, 122/4.

**Acomplice**, *vb. inf.* accomplish, 363/8, 491/5.

**Acorsed**, *pp.* acursed, 385/4.

**Admitted**, *pp.* [suscepta] suffered, permitted, 89/8.

**Adoun**, *adv.* down, 638/3.

**Adrad**, *adj.* afraid, 276/7; **Adrede**, 352/7

**Affection**, *sb.* power, disposition, 931/3.

**Afore**, *adv.* before, 549/6.

- A**fter, *prep.* after, 13/3, etc.; for, 8/6; in accordance with, 9/7, 168/6, 383/4, 384/5; *adv.* afterwards, 15/8.
- Agilt**, *pp.* wronged, 205/7.
- Agone**, *adv.* ago, 360/2.
- Agoō\***, *pp.* gone, 312/4.
- Agreue**, *rb.* *inf.* grieve, 258/8; **Ag-reued**, *pp.* 91/5.
- Aiuged**, *pp.* condemned, 85/6.
- Akeb**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* aches, 417/5.
- Aknoweb**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* knoweth, 379/4;
- Aknowen**, *pp.* known, 74/7; acquainted, 437/6.
- Alayed**, *pp.* satisfied, 262/5.
- Alday**, *adv.* continually, 365/2, 712/5, 754/3.
- Algat**, *adv.* always, 71/3, 107/3, 337/4, etc.; **Algates**, 705/3, 887/4, etc.
- Allegeaunce**, *sb.* allegation, 991/4.
- Allmighty**, *adj.* almighty, 108/8.
- Allone . . . another**, [aliud . . . aliud] one thing . . . another, 957/5.
- Aloute**, *vb.* *inf.* bow, pay homage, 285/4, 561/6.
- Also . . . as**, as . . . as, 128/3, 210/6, 581/3; **Als . . . as**, 3/3.
- Alterneb**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* [alternat] varies, 994/6.
- Alther**, *adj.* of all, 461/3; **Your alther makere**, The maker of all of you, 412/4; **Alther mest**, greatest of all, 694/7.
- Amenuse**, *vb.* *inf.* [minui] diminish, 208/8.
- Amersed**, *pp.* punished, 188/8.
- Ameuen**, *vb.* *inf.* move, rouse, 655/4; **Ameued**, *pp.* 124/2.
- Empty**, *adj.* empty, 34/6.
- Anents**, *vb.* *inf.* [minuat] bring to nought, destroy, 647/5. (O.F. *anientiss*—extended stem of *anientir*.)
- Anentes**, *prep.* in regard to, 703/7, 707/1, 938/2.
- Anext**, *prep.* [circa] around, 744/4.
- Angyschous**, *adj.* full of anguish, 82/3, 418/2; uncertain, doubtful, 214/1.
- Angwisshe**, *sb.* anguish, 843/5.
- Anhaunced**, *pp.* *v.* enhauence.
- Ankyrs**, *sb.* *pl.* anchors, 211/1.
- Annecten**, *vb.* *inf.* add, 490/4.
- Anon**, *adv.* at once, 15/3, 24/1; **Anon to þis** [usque ad hoc] hitherto, 584/3.
- Apaire**, *vb.* *inf.* impair, 208/7; **Apeyre**, 544/1; **Apereb**, [minuit] 3 *sp.*, 103/8; **Apayred**, *pp.* 766/2; **payre** (aphetic form), 237/7.
- Apele**, *vb.* *inf.* impeach, 91/8.
- Apele**, *sb.* impeachment, 90/8.
- Apert**, *adj.* [aperta] manifest, 96/3; *adv.* clearly, 158/8.
- Apertly**, *adv.* openly, plainly, 433/5, 508/2.
- Apeyre**, *v.* apaire
- Apeyrement**, *sb.* impairment, 235/2.
- Aproven**, 799/6 (O. F. *Aproer*), *v.* Appreven.
- Apparaile**, *sb.* fortifications, 70/5; [ornamentis] ornaments, 212/1.
- Appreue**, *vb.* *inf.* approve, 850/7; **Appreue**, 2 *sp.* 163/1; **Appreued**, *pp.* [proprium], proper; **Appreuen**, *vb.* *inf.* [prodesse] benefit, 705/3; **aproven**, profit, 799/6.
- Ar.**, *adv.*, *v.* Or.
- Arace**, *vb.* *inf.* [extirpare] destroy, 145/4.
- Arayse**, *vb.* *inf.* trans. raise 653/2; **Arayse**, 3 *pl.* *p.* subj. 69/6; **Araysed**, *pp.* 595/3.
- Arbetrie**, *sb.* freewill, 579/1, 848/7, 858/5.
- Arerith**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* riseth, 394/6; **Arerid**, *pp.* 52/3.
- Aresten**, *vb.* *inf.* constrain, 272/8; **Arest**, *pp.* overcome 57/4; **Areest**, subdued, 353/3; **Arested**, [quiescentes] quiet, 927/2.
- Arett**, *pp.* called, decreed, 93/2; **Arettid**, charged, 999/1.
- Arowe**, *adv.* in succession, 995/3.
- Arraied**, *pp.* prepared, 30/6; **Arayeng**, *pppl.* [ornat] adorning, 53/3.
- Arrerage**, *sb.* debt, 196/8.
- Arst**; *adv.* super. earliest; **At arst**, as quickly as possible, 62/7; **Aterst**, for the first time, 63/1, 197/1.
- Arten**, *vb.* *inf.* constrain, compel, 460/3; **Arted**, *pp.* [artus] 273/6, 898/2; **Coart**, 898/4.
- Ascaunce**, *conj.* [quasi] as if, 895/5.
- Aslakē**, *vb.* *inf.* 323/1, *v.* slake.
- Asoght**, *v.* Soght.
- Asonder**, *adv.* apart (from the truth), 245/8.
- Assay**, *vb.* *inf.* try, 135/1, 160/3; **Assaien**, 152/4; **Assaied**, *pp.* 183/8; 262/7, 416/3. **Assemblen**, *vb.* *inf.* [colligo] conclude, infer, 646/3; **Assembled**, *pp.* [collegimus] 629/2. *V.* Introd., Chap. on Lang.
- Assetteth**, 3 *pl.* *p.* besets, 69/6; **Assette**, *pp.* 82/4.
- Assised**, *pp.* appointed, ordained, 436/7.
- Assoileth**, 3 *sp.* solves, 852/3; **Assoiled**, *pp.* 850/6, 996/5.
- Astounde**, *pp.* astonished, 48/8; **Astonyed**, 56/8; **astooned**, 325/4; stonyed, 721/1.
- Astrayed**, *pp.* gone astray, 125/4.
- At**, *prep.* from, of, 569/4.

- Atame**, *vb. inf.* subdue, 313/4.  
**Ataynt**, *pp.* affected, 786/3.  
**Attaynt** *pp.* ascertained, discovered, 163/5. *v. note.*  
**Attaynt**, *sb.* verdict, 89/5.  
**Atte.**, *contract.* at the, 420/4, etc.  
**Atteigne**, *vb. inf.* attain, 885/4.  
**Attemperaunce**, *sb.* [temperies] temperance, 792/1.  
**Atemperure**, *sb.* [temperiem] temperament, 757/1.  
**Atempre**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* tempers, 53/1, 351/4, 790/2; **Attemperest**, 2 *sp.* 118/5; **Attempred**, *pp.* 156/2; **Attempre**, *imper.* 161/7.  
**Attones**, *adv.* at once, 185/2; [tota] wholly, 214/3, 236/2, etc.  
**Attyr**, *sb.* venom, 219/5; **Attrē** 372/8.  
**Auctor**, *sb.* originator, 474/4, 595/4; author, 576/2.  
**Auctorite**, *sb.* authority, 771/7, 819/4.  
**Auncetrye**, *sb.* [parentum] ancestors, 408/4, 412/2.  
**Avarous**, *adj.* avaricious, 233/5.  
**Avaunce**, *vb. inf.* advance, 192/7; 363/5; **Avaunce**, 1 *sp.* 177/4; **Avaunched**, *pp.* 204/8, suggested, 212/4.  
**Avaunt**, *sb.* boast, 422/3; **Awaunt**, 37/1.  
**Avaunten**, *vb. 3 pl. p.* boast, 412/1.  
**Aventure**, *sb.* consequence, 163/6, 229/5, lot, 275/4.  
**Aventurous**, *adj.* [fortuitus] fortuitous, 831/5.  
**Avise**, *sb.* deliberation, 14/7, 25/6.  
**Avise**, *vb. inf.* consider, 60/3, 481/3; **Avise**, 2 *pl. p.* advise, 251/5; **Avised**, *pp.* advised, 436/5.  
**Awne**, *adj.* own, 24/4; **Awne**, 41/3; *ouene*, 697/5.  
**Avoiden**, *vb. inf.* drive out, 886/6; **Avoyded**, *pp.* 107/6.  
**Awatyng**, *sb.* [alta specula] watching, look out, 760/2.  
**Awayward**, *adv.* away, 336/6.  
**Awylden**, *vb. inf.* grow dissolute, 769/2.  
**Ayeinward**, *adv.* again, 356/3; [in contrarium partem] conversely, 851/5.  
**Aylen**, *vb. 3 pl. p.* [gestiunt], affect with desire, desire passionately, 310/1.  
**Ayther**, *adj.* either, 836/6.  
**Axe**, *vb. inf.* ask, 115/8; **Axeþ**, 3 *sp.* 174/3, 181/4.  
**Bace\***, *adv.* base, low, 32/8.  
**Bareyne**, *adj.* barren, 170/4.  
**Bastell**, *sb.* [vallum] fort, 230/6.  
**Be-bled**, *pp.* covered with blood, 214/5.  
**Be-blown**, *pp.* proclaimed abroad, far-famed, 308/1.  
**Bede**, *vb. inf.* offer, 168/3, 504/1.  
**Beet**, *vb. inf.* beat, 40/4; **Bet**, 3 *s. pt.*, 284/4; **Bete**, 3 *s. p. subj.*, 228/3.  
**Be-flowe**, *vb. 3 sp.* overflow, 322/5.  
**Behappeþ**, *vb. 3 sp.* happens, 837/3.  
**Beheeste**, *sb.* promise, 319/3; **Bihestes**, *pl.* 316/3.  
**Behight**, *v. Behoten.*  
**Behoten**, *vb. 2 pl. p.* promise, 598/2; **Behet**, 1 *s. pt.*, 820/6; **Behete**, 2 *pl. pt.* 598/3; **Behight**, *pp.* 359/5, 418/3; **Behighted**, 363/8.  
**Beknowe**, *pp.* aware of, 541/6.  
**Belappeth**, *vb. 3 sp.* enfolds, 837/1; **Belapped**, *pp.* [implicatam] entangled, 820/1.  
**Beld**, *v. Bulde.*  
**Belyf**, *v. Blyue.*  
**Bement**, *pp.* [intendebatur] intended, 829/4.  
**Ben**, *vb. inf.* to be, 6/5, 7/2, etc., **is**, 3 *sp.* 11/4, etc., **esse\***, 190/5, etc., **es\***, 185/5, etc. **Ben**, 3 *pl. p.* 119/3, etc., **Bethe**, 512/6; **was**, 3 *s. pt.* 12/1, etc., **wace\***, 28/4; **ware**, 3 *s. p. subj.* 452/2; **nys.**, *contract.* is not 166/4, etc.; **nas.**, *contract.* was not 361/1, etc.; **It will not be**, [nequeat] it will not be possible, 447/5.  
**Bene**, *sb.* bean, 303/8, 876/4.  
**Benignite**, *sb.* kindness, 8/7.  
**Bere**, *sb.* bier, 370/7.  
**Bereuen**, *v. Byrene.*  
**Berwyng**, *ppl.* seeking protection, 19/7. *v. note.*  
**Bere**, *vb. 1 sp.* bear, 131/7; **Berith**, 3 *sp.* 121/4; **Bere**, 3 *pl. p.* 310/3; **Bare**, 3 *s. pt.* 12/3, **bere**, 43/8; **Beere**, 3 *pl. pt.* 66/1; **Born**, *pp.* 48/2.  
**Beschyned**, *pp.* lit up, 116/6; **Beschyne**, *imper.* 466/7.  
**Besechyn**, *vb. inf.* seek, beseech, 8/6; **beseke**, 1 *pl. p.* 875/3; **Besekyng**, *ppl.* 1/7, 31/3.  
**Best**, *sb.* Beast, 146/4, 257/1; **Beest**, 252/3; **Bestes**, *pl.* 290/5, 357/1; [animantibus] living things, 930/2.  
 **Beste**, *sb.* greatest advantage, 24/4.  
**Bestly**, *adj.* beastly, animal, 947/2.  
**Bestowe**, *pp.* [incolatur] inhabited, 290/5.  
**Bestrawe**, *vb. inf.* bestrew, 179/5.  
**Besynesse**, *sb.* business, 70/8, 130/6, 209/6, etc.; interference, 18/5; [operae] works, 46/6, 546/2; [cura] care, 50/5 370/6, 402/4; [studia]

- impulses, 68/3; [sollicitudo] concern, 344/1; 393/2.
- Bet**, *adv. comp.* better, 60/3, 97/6, 136/7, 142/5, etc.
- Betwist**, *pp.* involved, 199/7, 619/7.
- Betyd**, *vb. 3 s. pt.* happened, 832/7.
- Bewerned**, *pp.* warned, 322/3.
- Bewrey**, *vb. inf.* betray, reveal, 273/7.
- Bidden**, *vb. inf.* pray, 458/3.
- Bihestes**, *v.* **Beheeste**.
- Bileuen**, *vb. inf.* leave off, leave, 65/4, 185/8; **Beleuyng**, *ppl.* 235/8; **Bylaft**, *pp.* 662/7.
- Billed**, *v.* **Bulde**.
- Bisely**, *adv.* with concern, carefully, 249/2.
- Bitaken**, *pp.* entrusted, 286/8.
- Blame**, *sb.* [crimen] crime, 92/1.
- Blaundishe**, *sb.* flattery, 167/7.
- Blaundischyng**, *adj.* [blandissimam], alluring, charming, 158/2; *ppl.* flattering, 159/5; **Blaundischynges**, *vbl. sb. pl.* flattery, 163/1.
- Blede**, *sb.* fruit, 791/6.
- Blesse**, *sb.* happiness, bliss, 194/2, 308/6.
- Blisfulhede**, *sb.* happiness, happiness, 426/7.
- Blisfulnesse**, *sb.* happiness, 9/4, etc.
- Blisse**, *vb. inf.* bless, 7/1.
- Blyue**, *adv.* quickly, 556/3; **Belyf**, 978/5.
- Bole**, *sb.* Bull, 422/2, 815/2.
- Bone**, *sb.* Boon, 25/2, 32/8, 458/3, etc.
- Boones**, *sb. pl.* bones, 26/8.
- Boote**, *vb. 3 s. pt.* bit, 274/1.
- Bore**, *sb.* boar, 659/6, 710/6, 817/1.
- Bot if**, *conj.* unless, 793/5.
- Bote**, *sb.* cure, 190/8.
- Bothe**, *adv.* also, 743/2; **peire bothes**, of both of them, 514/6.
- Boundes**, *sb. pl.* bonds, 149/8.
- Bown**, *adj.* prepared, 114/1.
- Boystously**, *adv.* boisterously, 658/1.
- Brede**, *sb.* breadth, 122/7, 289/4.
- Brenne**, *vb. inf.* burn, 27/2, 30/3; 567/1; **Brenneth**, *3 sp.* 187/5, 265/3; **Brent**, *3 s. pt.* 814/6; **Brenned**, *3 pl. pt.* 39/3; *i-brent*, *pp.* 105/2.
- Brideled**, *pp.* [vincta frenis] restrained, fettered, 155/8.
- Brigous**, *adj.* open to controversy, 729/1, 820/3, 852/3.
- Brutel**, *adj.* [brevis] brittle, easily ended, 671/7.
- Bryd**, *sb.* bird, 354/1.
- Bulde**, *vb. inf.* build, 228/1, 229/8, held, 127/7; **Billed**, *pp.* 767/7.
- Burthen**, *sb.* burden, 229/4.
- Bynepen**, *adv.* beneath, 42/1, 42/8.
- Bynome**, *3 pl. pt.* deprived, 85/3.
- Byreue**, *vb. inf.* bereave, 273/3; **Bereued** *pp.* 91/7, 124/5; **Byreuen\***, 65/5; **Byraft**, 662/6, 815/3.
- Careful**, *adj.* [tristis] sorrowful, 36/4, 208/6.
- Careyn**, *sb.* carrion, 514/8, 626/1.
- Cariage**, *sb.* [vectigalibus] toll, 88/5.
- Catyf**, *sb.* [captivae] captive, 844/2.
- Cessen**, *vb. inf. trans.* end, 25/4.
- Chare**, *sb.* chariot, 321/6, 897/1.
- Charge**, *sb.* [sarcina] burden, 382/2.
- Chere**, *sb.* countenance, 39/1, 44/3, 49/3, etc.
- Chesen**, *vb. inf.* choose, 579/3, 622/4, 985/6; **Chese**, *3 s. pt.* 17/7; **Chesyng**, *vbl. sb.* choosing, 868/4.
- Cheuep**, *vb. 3 sp.* achieveth, 138/7.
- Cheuyaunce**, *sb.* supply, 521/6, successful issue, 868/4.
- Chirche**, *sb.* church, 13/1.
- Clarry**, *sb.* spiced wine, 262/8. *v. note.*
- Cleme**, *adv.* entirely, 107/6, 147/8, 303/6, etc.
- Clength**, *vb. 3 pl. p.* cling, 520/6.
- Clepe**, *vb. inf.* call, 655/3; **Clepe**, *2 pl. p.* 233/1; *3 pl. p.* 35/6; **Clepid**, *pp.* 21/8, etc.
- Clere**, *adj.* [praeclarus] excellent, 387/7.
- Clergie**, *sb.* learning, 578/4.
- Clerkes**, *sb. pl.* scholars, 658/6, 918/2, 950/7.
- Clernesse**, *sb.* excellence, 438/6.
- Clippen**, *vb. inf.* gather together, embrace, 322/7, 954/6; **clyppynge**, *ppl.* clustering, 59/3.
- Closen**, *vb. inf.* [inclusa] enclose, 942/7; **Closep**, *3 sp.* [complectens] 997/4.
- Clottes**, *sb.* [molem] masses, 722/6.
- Cloutes**, *sb. pl.* [panniculus] rags, shreds, 65/5.
- Clowes**, *sb. pl.* claws, 660/1.
- Clyues**, *sb. pl.* cliffs, 930/5.
- Coart**, *v.* Arten.
- Colour**, *sb.* reason, ground, 149/2; [species] appearance, 359/8.
- Commodite**, *sb.* benefit, 106/5.
- Commixt**, *pp.* [miseri] mixed, 716/6.
- Commoveth**, *vb. 3 sp.* moveth, 924/6; **Commeue**, *3 pl. p.* [afficiant] affect.
- Commynly**, *adv.* commonly, 375/7.
- Compance**, *sb.* [orbis] circle, 744/3; **cumpace**, [ambitus] circumference, 745/2; **cumpaces**, *pl.* 744/1.
- Compounen**, *vb. inf.* combine, **Compound**, 493/4, 579/7; **Compowneþ** *3 sp.* 491/2, 921/7.

- Comune**, *adj.* common, 40/2, 80/8; **comyn**, 57/5, etc.; **comen**, 130/6, etc.; **comyn gouernaunce** [res publicas], 77/7.
- Comynalte**, *sb.* commonwealth, community, 10/8, 78/6, 293/6, etc.
- Comynere**, *sb.* [privato] commoner; ignorant person, 798/3.
- Conchous**, *sb. pl.* [conchae] shell fish, 930/6.
- Concorded**, *pp.* agreed, 104/6.
- Coniecte**, *vb.* 1 *sp.* imagine, devise, 610/6, 847/4, etc.; **Coniectyng**, *ppl.* 213/3; **Coniectet**, *pp.* 114/2.
- Conseilynge**, *ppl.* advising, 15/2.
- Conseit**, *sb.* conception, 825/5; **Consaytes**, *pl.* 921/2.
- Consentant**, *adj.* agreeable, 17/3.
- Contagious**, *sb.* contagion, 540/4.
- Continence**, *sb.* restraint, 11/2.
- Contingent**, *adj.* liable, 887/7, [non necessarie] unnecessary, 973/6.
- Contrariance**, *sb.* complaint, 164/5; contrary, 269/7, 703/5; difference, 294/4; dissention, 324/8; opposition, 551/7.
- Contrariouste**, *sb.* contrary, 280/7.
- Contreued**, *pp.* planned, 69/5, 95/6.
- Conveie**, *vb. inf.* accompany, 370/8.
- Covenable**, *adj.* suitable, 930/5.
- Convenience**, *sb.* agreement, 462/3, 859/4, 900/5.
- Convenient**, *adj.* in agreement, 674/2; pertinent, 894/5.
- Convert**, *pp.* converted, 780/4.
- Conuyct**, *pp.* overcome, 571/7, 763/1.
- Corage**, *sb.* heart, spirit, mind, 39/6, 55/8, 75/1, etc.
- Corilare**, *sb.* corollary, 490/2, 646/1; **Corellary**, 487/8.
- Cornes**, *sb.* corn, 119/3, 321/1.
- Corrumpen**, *vb.* 3 *pl. p.* spoil, destroy, 525/6; **Corrupt**, *pp.* 2/6.
- Corruption**, *sb.* destruction, 526/4.
- Cors**, *sb.* body, 272/3.
- Coste**, *sb.* coast, 23/3.
- Cosyns**, *sb.* cousins, 564/7.
- Counsellour**, *sb.* consul, 85/1, 85/5, 194/5, **conseilere\***, 379/2; adviser, 575/2.
- Counterpayse**, *vb. inf.* balance, weigh, 299/1; **Counterpayse**, 2 *sp.* 300/2; **Counterpaysed**, *pp.* 390/7.
- Couetise**, *sb.* ambitious desire, 107/1, 107/6, 186/5, etc.
- Craft**, *sb.* skill, 8/6.
- Crafty**, *adj.* skilled, 738/4, 897/4.
- Craftily**, *adv.* skilfully, 5/5.
- Creves**, *sb.* crevice, 433/4.
- Cropp**, *sb. [cacumen]* top, 355/4.
- Cruell-hede**, *sb.* savage state, 353/4.
- Cruelnesse**, *sb.* cruelty, 35/7, 396/3.
- Crykes**, *sb. pl.* creeks, 428/4.
- Cuntre**, *sb.* country, 218/2, 297/3.
- Cure**, *sb. [cura]* care, 191/8, 229/7, 333/5, etc.
- Cursedhede**, *sb.* cursedness, 122/4, 586/5.
- Daliaunce**, *sb.* [blanditia] flattery, 46/1.
- Dampnacioun**, *sb.* accusation, 90/3, destruction, 101/9, condemnation, 130/5.
- Dar**, *vb.* 1 *sp.* dare, 13/4, 178/7; **Dar**, 3 *sp.* 114/5; **Durst**, 3 *s. pt.* 264/6; **Dorste**, 566/7; **Daryng** *ppl.* venturing, 811/6.
- Daungere**, *sb.* power, 395/2, 575/4.
- Deceyuable**, *adj.* unreliable, 208/5.
- Decre**, *sb.* decree, 93/3.
- Dede**, *sb.* deed, 295/5, 295/8.
- Dedly**, *adj.* mortal, 529/5.
- Dedlynnesse**, *sb. [mortale]* mortal state, 146/4, 175/5, 218/5.
- Deed**, *adj.* dead, 15/6, 271/6, **Ded**, 252/8.
- Deen**, *vb. inf.* dye, 263/1.
- Defaut**, *sb.* want, lack, 1/2, 215/4, 292/8, etc.; defect, 664/6, 771/7.
- Defautes**, *pl.* faults, crimes, 109/4.
- Defiled**, *pp.* foully accused, 88/1.
- Defouled**, *pp.* defiled, 378/3, 439/7, 586/2, 587/6.
- Degre**, *sb.* rank, 37/5, 75/5; stage, 106/2; state, 134/7, 256/2.
- Delatoures**, *sb. pl.* [accusatoribus] accusers, 704/5.
- Dele**, *vb. inf.* deal, 17/8.
- Delice**, *sb.* pleasure, 14/5; [delicias] daintiness, 213/1; [voluptas] 413/1.
- Delue**, *vb. inf.* dig, 829/6; **Dalf**, 3 *s. pt.* 832/1, 832/7; **Doluen**, *pp.* 831/1.
- Demen**, *vb. inf.* judge, consider, 100/8, 198/4, 279/1; **Demed**, *pp.* sentenced, 105/5.
- Demene**, *vb. inf.* demean, 218/7; **Demened**, *pp.* governed, 140/1.
- Departed**, *pp.* separated, 515/5.
- Depeynted**, *pp.* painted, 201/8, 241/5.
- Derk**, *adj.* mysterious, 6/2; obscure, 903/1, 918/2.
- Derrer**, *adj. comp.* dearer, 210/1; **Derrest**, *sup.* 209/8.
- Derworth**, *adj.* precious, 221/3, 270/2.
- Desordeth**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* differs, 350/4.
- Deserueth**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* [debentur] is due, 243/2.
- Despitous**, *adj.* [gravis] grievous, 690/3.

- Destene**, *sb.* [fatum] destiny, fate, 733/4, 734/4, etc.  
**Destinale**, *adj.* appertaining to destiny, 740/1, 741/3.  
**Destourbled**, *pp.* disturbed, 261/4.  
**Det**, *sb.* debt, 820/6.  
**Deuer**, *sb.* duty, 160/5; **Devire**, 687/2.  
**Devise**, *sb.* device, 129/8; mind, 213/3, 677/2; **At my devys**, in my knowledge, 196/5, 316/6.  
**Dewe**, *adj.* due, 120/6.  
**Deynte**, *sb.* [O.F. deinte] importance, 206/5.  
**Dyte**, *sb.* deity, 486/6.  
**Diffye**, *vb. inf.* defy, 135/5.  
**Digest**, *pp.* [digesta] divided, 737/2.  
**Dight**, *pp.* appointed prepared, 173/4, 267/3, 515/3, 573/7.  
**Digne**, *adj.* worthy, 819/4.  
**Diminute**, *adj.* [deminutus] defective, 472/1; **Diminude\***, 236/1.  
**Diologe**, *sb.* Dialogue, 29/2.  
**Discomfit**, *pp.* [victi] discomfited, 172/7.  
**Disconvenience**, *sb.* difference, 776/3.  
**Discordaunce**, *sb.* Discord, 877/1.  
**Discours**, *sb.* [ratiocinatio] careful reasoning, 747/1.  
**Discovering**, *ppl.* [detego] uncovering, 314/8.  
**Discryven**, *vb. inf.* describe, 38/7; **Discryvyng**, *ppl.* 76/8; **Discreved**, *pp.* 651/4.  
**Disdeyne**, *sb.* anger, 26/4, 98/5; [odii] hatred, 85/8.  
**Diseese**, *sb.* wretchedness, 32/7, 68/6, 71/7, etc.  
**Diseesen**, *vb. 3 pl. p.* make wretched, 101/2, 698/5; **Disedes**, *pp.* 56/3, 215/4, 649/6.  
**Dishoneste**, *vb. inf.* [vilesces] bring disgrace upon, 419/8.  
**Dispenden**, *vb. inf.* spend, 78/2, 233/7; **Dispenderest**, *2 sp.* 233/1; **Dispendyng**, *ppl.* 234/5.  
**Displeasaunce**, *sb.* displeasure, 46/3.  
**Dispreue**, *vb. 1 sp.* disprove, 258/6, 886/6.  
**Dissent**, *sb.* descent, 988/5.  
**Dissimule**, *vb. imper.* dissemble, 1002/2.  
**Dissowneþ**, *vb. 3 sp.* [dissonare] contradicts, 901/5.  
**Distourbelance**, *sb.* [perturbatio] trouble.  
**Distrakkeþ**, *vb. 3 sp.* distracts, 842/6.  
**Distress**, *sb.* constraint, 808/2.  
**Distreyne**, *vb. inf.* restrain, 778/2.  
**Ditee**, *sb.* poem, 403/3.  
**Do**, *vb. inf.* do, 4/7, 5/3, etc., set, 1/5, **Done**, 125/8, **Doon**, 627/7; **Dop**, *3 sp.* 5/5, etc.; **Dop**, *3 pl. p.* 418/6, 607/6, etc.; **Dede**, *3 s. pt.* 7/8, **Dide**, 12/7; **Dode**, *3 pl. pt.* 65/7; **Done**, *pp.* 1/4, etc.; **Doynge**, *ppl.* 987/5, etc.  
**Doloure**, *sb.* suffering, 227/4.  
**Domage**, *sb.* damage, 759/3.  
**Dome**, *sb.* judgment, 94/1, 131/4, 536/8, etc.  
**Doumbe**, *adj.* silent, 57/1.  
**Doute**, *sb.* [formidolosa] fear, 294/1.  
**Drede**, *sb.* fear, 72/8, 154/8, etc. doubt, 368/8, 376/8, 648/1, etc.; *wiþouten drede*, without doubt.  
**Drede**, *vb. inf.* fear, 122/2, 167/6.  
**Dredip**, *3 sp. trans.* terrifies, 71/6.  
**Dresse**, *vb. inf.* direct, 315/5; **Dresseþ**, *3 sp.* 784/2; **Dressed**, *pp.* arranged, 568/2, 752/6.  
**Drow**, *vb. 1 s. pt.* drew, 75/1.  
**Duresse**, *sb.* hardship, 178/1.  
**Dusk**, *adj.* dusky, 41/6.  
**Dymmen**, *vb. inf.* [fuscat] obscure 647/6.  
**Dynne**, *sb.* din, 155/2.  
**Dyuersed**, *pp.* made to differ, 442/8, 480/8.
- Effecte**, *sb.* Accomplishment, 619/5.  
**Effectuele**, *adj.* [efficacem] efficacious, 887/2.  
**Eft**, *adv.* afterwards, 52/6, 695/6.  
**Eftstone**, *adv.* soon after, 25/4; moreover, 256/5; immediately, 572/4.  
**Egerly**, *adv.* keenly, bitterly, 327/7.  
**Egre**, *adj.* [Acerbis] bitter, sharp, 264/4.  
**Eire**, *sb.* air, 944/1.  
**Eke**, *conj. also*, 3/3, 9/5, etc.  
**Eld**, *sb.* age, 34/3, 41/6, 200/3.  
**Elded**, *pp.* [consenesceret] grown old, 287/6.  
**Eldere-fadir**, *sb.* grandfather, 209/4.  
**Eldres**, [veteres] ancestors, 268/6.  
**Elles**, *adv.* otherwise, 614/6.  
**Enchesoun**, *sb.* cause, 101/7.  
**Encomberous**, *adj.* cumbersome, 820/2.  
**Endite**, *vb. inf.* indite, compose, 8/3, 32/5; **Endited**, *pp.* 20/3; **Endytyng**, *ppl.* 44/3.  
**Enfecte**, *pp.* [affectum] affected, 649/7, [infecit] infected, 650/7.  
**Enforcen**, *vb. 3 pl. p.* strive, 337/4, 337/7, 345/1, etc.  
**Enhaunce**, *vb. inf.* advance, 288/5; **Anhaunce**, *pp.* prospered, 204/6.  
**Enlaceth**, *vb. 3 sp.* [nectit] connects, 735/2.  
**Enplyeth**, *vb. 3 sp.* enfolds, 837/1.  
**Enpoysoned**, *pp.* poisoned, 67/3.

- Empresse**, *vb. inf.* impress, 371/3, 919/2; **Empressith**, 3 *sp.* 784/4; **Empressed**, *pp.* 918/7.
- Enserchen**, *vb. inf.* examine, seek, 142/5, 494/2, 536/1; **Enscherche**, 2 *pl.* p. 139/7; **Enscherched**, *pp.* 574/4; **Enscherching**, *ppl.* 464/1.
- Ensure**, *vb. 1 sp.* assure, 167/1.
- Entenciou**, *sb.* intention, 101/6, contention, 134/1, [attentionem] attention, 156/3, understanding, 725/5, consideration, 990/4.
- Entende**, *vb. imper.* hear, 221/2.
- Entende**, *vb. inf.* strive, intend, 524/2; **Entendeth**, 3 *sp.* 523/2, 525/1; **Entenden**, 3 *pl. p.* 414/8, 609/4; **Entendeth**, minister, serve, 740/3.
- Entent**, *sb.* meaning, purpose, 3/2, 92/8, 94/2, etc.; decision, 112/4, 114/8; notice, 167/7, 227/2, etc.
- Ententyf**, *adj.* intentive, 549/6.
- Ententyfly**, *adv.* intentively, 327/1, 588/5, etc.
- Enterchaungement**, *sb.* interchanging, 167/4; *pl.* 321/1.
- Entrecomunyng**, *sb.* [commercium] communication, 292/8.
- Entirmete**, *vb. 1 sp.* concern myself, meddle, 5/4.
- Entre**, *sb.* entry, 160/7.
- Envirround**, *pp.* enclosed, 291/7.
- Ere**, *sb.* ear, 730/2, 924/5.
- Ere**, *vb. inf.* plough, 370/5.
- Eschinus**, *sb.* [Echinus] sea urchin, 429/3.
- Ese**, *vb. inf.* ease, 149/8; **Eise**, 3 *pl. p.* 219/7.
- Estate**, *sb.* rank, 75/2, 79/2, etc.; [auctoritas] authority, 82/8; state, 213/8, 335/7, 336/1, etc.; **Estates**, *pl.* dignities, 378/7.
- Este**, *sb.* east, 17/5.
- Ete**, *vb. 3 s. pt. ate*, 571/1.
- Evene**, *vb. inf.* [aequare] equal, 960/6.
- Evene**, *adj.* equal, 311/4.
- Evoriche**, *adj.* each, 448/3, 484/7, 523/3, etc.
- Everychone**, *prn.* everyone, 410/2, 500/6, 518/3.
- Everydele**, *adv.* completely, 91/6, 131/1, 150/4, etc.
- Exsaumplere**, *sb.* sample, image, 461/1, 464/2; *pl.* 208/3.
- Extent**, *adj.* prolonged in length, 40/3; extended, 270/5, 296/4, 943/3.
- Exul**, *sb.* exile, 124/5, 125/2.
- Eyen**, *sb.* *pl.* eyes, 35/8, 39/3; **Eighen**, 58/3, 58/7; **Eyzen**, 343/1, 424/2; **Yhen**, 691/7; **Yen**, 425/3.
- Fair**, *adv. v. fer*, 2/4.
- Fallace**, *sb.* fallacy, 976/3.
- Fallace**, *adj.* fallacious, 675/2.
- Fals**, *sb.* falsehood, 94/4.
- Falshede**, *sb.* falsehood, 862/5.
- Famyliere**, *sb.* disciple, 762/6.
- Favere**, *sb.* favour, 683/3.
- Faynest**, *adv. sup.* most gladly, 394/3.
- Febil**, *adj.* [non laetos] feeble, hapless, 138/8.
- Febilnesse**, *sb.* feebleness, 11/1.
- Febilte\***, *sb.* feebleness, 617/1.
- Fecchen**, *vb. inf.* fix, 466/4, 842/3; **Ficching**, *ppl.* 835/6.
- Feere**, *sb.* fear, 352/4.
- Feffed**, *pp.* invested, endowed, 196/1.
- Felawes**, *sb.* [sodalibus] true companions, 324/4.
- Fele**, *adj.* many, 295/1, 370/3, 370/5, etc.
- Felonus**, *adj.* criminal, 113/8, 864/7.
- Felthe**, *sb.* filth, 253/7.
- Fendys**, *sb. pl.* fiends, 30/4, 396/6, 741/1.
- Fer**, *adv.* far, 27/4, 76/7, etc.; fair, 2/4.
- Ferd**, *adj.* [pavidus] timid, 655/6.
- Ferep**, *vb. 3 sp.* inspires with fear, 394/8; **feryd**, *pp.* terrified, 181/7.
- Ferforth**, *adv.* far, 210/6, 326/1, 554/1, etc.
- Ferful**, *adj.* terrified, 187/6.
- Ferne**, *sb.* firmness, permanence, 531/3, 532/1.
- Fers**, *adj.* fierce, 654/4; **fersere**, *adv. comp.* 265/4.
- Ferper**, *adv.* further, 393/8.
- Feture**, *sb.* appearance, 38/8.
- Fevire**, *sb.* fever, 425/7.
- Feyne**, *vb. inf.* imagine, devise, 480/2; **Feyneth**, 3 *sp.* dissembleth, 316/2; **Feynest**, 2 *sp.* 210/6, 210/8; **Feyne**, 2 *pl. p.* 237/7; **Fayne**, 3 *pl. p.* 170/2.
- Feyre**, *adj.* fair, 119/2.
- Ficching**, *v.* **Fecchen**.
- Filthes**, *sb. pl.* [sirenes] treacherous ones, 47/1.
- Filyng**, *ppl.* defiling, 106/7.
- Fisyk**, *sb.* physic, 280/2, 828/6.
- Flaumbe**, *sb.* flame, 30/2, 580/3; **flaumble**, 465/3.
- Fleen**, *vb. inf.* flee, 138/4, 166/5, 229/5, 462/6; **Fleeb**, 3 *sp.* 111/8, 128/6; **Fleynge**, [fugiendo] *ppl.* 200/7.
- Fleen**, *vb. inf.* fly, 692/2.
- Flees**, *sb.* fleece, 263/2.
- Fleischly**, *adj.* fleshy, 72/8.
- Flemen**, *vb.* flee, 198/7; **Fleme**, 2 *sp.* banish, 154/8.

- Flete, vb. inf.** float, 211/8; 3 pl. p. 836/5.
- Fletyng, adj.** fleeting, 149/4, 317/6, 321/3, etc.; **Flittyng**, 454/7.
- Floure, sb.** flower, 5/1; **Floures**, pl. 10/1; **In hir floures**, in her flourishing state, 10/1.
- Flouren, vb. inf.** flourish, 713/3.
- Fole, sb.** fool, 421/7; pl. 622/7.
- Folily, adv.** foolishly, 149/4, 257/4.
- Foly, adj.** foolish, 427/1.
- Folynesse, sb.** folly, 46/8.
- Fome, sb.** foam, 817/2.
- Fond, vb. 3 s. pt.** found, 829/7, 884/7.
- Foo, sb. fœ**, 806/1.
- Foole, adj.** foolish, 93/5.
- For-cause, adv.** because, 857/5.
- Forclere, adj. [perspicacibus]** very keen, 39/3.
- Fordone, vb. inf.** destroy, 368/3; pp. 706/2.
- Foreyn, adj. [forinsecus]** outward, 926/2.
- Forfended, pp.** [desit] lacked, wanting, 902/1.
- Forzete, pp.** forgotten, 57/8, 119/8, 127/5, etc.
- Forhight, pp.** [prohibebor] forbidden, 179/1.
- Foriuggen, vb. inf.** [putare] deem, judge, 374/7.
- Forletten, vb. inf.** forsake, leave, 14/2, 119/6, 127/2, etc.; forego, 40/7; **Forlette**, 3 sp. 128/3; **Forlettynge**, ppl. 128/8; **Forlethen**, pp. 41/6, 50/3, etc.
- Forlyne, vb. inf.** [degenerar.] degenerate, 412/6; **Forleyneth**, 3 pl. p. 409/8 (v. *Introd.*, *Chap. on Language*).
- Formally, adv.** [indubitate fide] with conviction, 823/2.
- Forow, sb.** furrow, 943/5.
- Fors, sb.** force, 365/4.
- Forpined, pp.** starved for want of food and drink, 570/8.
- Forsake, vb. inf.** [inficior] deny, 92/2.
- Forthes, sb.** fords, 428/2.
- Forthi, adv.** therefore, 148/2, 260/3.
- Fortunelle, adj.** fortuitous, 837/2.
- Fortunous, adj.** fortuitous, 223/2.
- Forwhy, adv.** because, 69/3, 106/7, 839/4, etc.; for 139/4, 785/1; wherefore, 184/6, 972/6; therefore, 214/2, 635/4, 969/1; why, 475/5.
- Foule, adv.** foully, 554/2.
- Foulyng, vbl. sb.** defouling, 131/8.
- Foundement, sb.** foundation, 228/8, 826/1.
- Frayed, pp.** terrified, 271/5.
- Freel, adj.** frail, weak, 473/3, 317/5, 421/3, etc.; **Freeler**, comp. 271/3.
- Frended, pp.** provided with friends, 340/5.
- Fret, pp.** adorned, 177/2, 206/6.
- Fro, adv.** separate from, 485/3; absent, lacking, 601/5.
- Front, sb. [frontibus]** forehead, 89/3; face, 314/7; **Frount**, 946/5.
- Frectuouse, adj.** fruitful, 413/7.
- Fulfile, vb. inf.** completely fill, 236/3, 309/8, etc.; **Fulfilled**, pp. 285/8, 369/2, etc.
- Fury, adj.** fiery, 30/2.
- Fuyre, sb.** fire, 265/4, 267/5, 380/3, etc.
- Fyne, sb.** end, 21/1.
- Fysicien, sb.** physician, 280/2.
- Gabbe, vb. 1 sp.** talk idly, 289/2.
- Garnement, sb.** garment, 58/6.
- Geaunt, sb.** giant, 816/1; **Geauntes**, pl. 554/8.
- Gedered, pp.** gathered, 233/2, 335/8.
- Geet, vb. 3 s. pt.** got, 40/5; **Gat**, 810/3; **Gete**, pp. 127/4, 147/5.
- Gentilnesse, sb.** [nobilitas] nobility; 407/6, 412/6, 432/4.
- Geometrenous, sb. pl.** geometers, 487/1.
- Gesoun, adj.** scarce, 53/4.
- Gesse, vb. imper.** reckon, 206/3.
- Gidoresse, sb.** guide (female), 584/1.
- Gifen** vb. inf. give, 151/4, 384/8; **Gifeþ**, 3 sp. 410/7, 410/8; **Gaf**, 3 s. pt. 22/3, **yaf**, 56/1, 101/7, **ȝaf**, 263/3; **Gyffen**, pp. 11/8, **Gifen** 14/5, **ȝif**, 682/6, **ȝif**, imper. sing. 1001/1.
- Gilt, pp.** trespassed, sinned, 174/6.
- Glede, sb.** burning coal, 328/8.
- Glose, sb.** gloss, comment, 861/7.
- Goddes, sb.** goddess, 658/5.
- Godhede, sb. [diuinitas]** divinity, 488/3.
- Gon, vb. inf.** go, 89/4; **geth\***, 3 sp. 686/3; **goon**, 3 pl. p. 118/1, etc.; **Gan**, pt. (simply to denote past, did) 10/6, 12/5, 18/4, 21/7, etc.; began, 27/2, 44/4; **Ganstow**, didst thou, 133/1; **Gon**, pp. 88/5.
- Good, sb.** possessions, 118/1, 124/5, 174/7, 365/3, 398/3, etc.
- Gost, sb. [spiritum]** spirit, 208/6; [animus] mind, 870/1.
- Gostely, adj.** spiritual, 329/7, 665/6; pertaining to the mind, 925/5, 926/7.
- Goostly sight**, [mentis intuitum], 451/5.
- Gouernaile, sb.** government, 141/8, 276/3, 423/4, 552/1.
- Governance, sb.** government, 69/3, 77/2, 77/7, etc.
- Grame, sb.** harm, 275/1, sorrow, 313/5.

- Gre**, *sb.* step, 42/7.  
**Gredith**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* eagerly desires, 369/2.  
**Grisest**, *vb.* 2 *sp.* [perhorrescere] shudderest, 164/6.  
**Gropen**, *vb.* *inf.* probe, 139/4.  
**Grucche**, *vb.* *inf.* grumble, 805/7.  
**Grucchynge**, *vbl. sb.* grumbling, 189/7.  
**Gryp**, *sb.* vulture, 571/1.  
**Guerdonynge**, *vbl. sb.* reward, 796/3.  
**Gynne**, *sb.* instrument, 704/6; **Gynnes**, *pl.* [machinas] engines, 523/6.
- Habit**, *sb.* [habitu] condition, 156/7, 327/3.  
**Haldyng**, *vbl. sb.* hold, 211/1.  
**Halp**, *vb.* 3 *s.* *pt.* helped, 661/7; **holpen**, *pp.* 662/1.  
**Hap**, *sb.* fate, 718/4; [casum] chance, 820/5; **Happes**, *pl.* [fata] death, 710/2; **Upon hap**, perhaps, 765/1.  
**Hardely**, *adv.* unwillingly, 361/5.  
**Hardest**, *vb.* 2 *s.* *pt.* heard, 327/2.  
**Hastyflye**, *adv.* hastily, 688/5.  
**Hauteyn**, *adj.* haughty, 401/7.  
**Hauere**, *sb.* possessor, 478/6.  
**Hede**, *sb.* heed, 167/8.  
**Heed**, *sb.* chief, head, 16/7, 876/6, *Hede*, 885/1.  
**Hele**, *sb.* health, 17/6, 139/5, 142/4, 150/2, etc.  
**Heng**, *vb.* 1 *sp.* hung, 48/6.  
**Hennes**, *adv.* hence, 431/5.  
**Hent**, *pp.* seized, taken, 211/1, 320/1.  
**Hemme**, *sb.* hem, 42/1.  
**Heremyte**, *sb.* hermit, 29/3.  
**Herfore**, *adv.* hereof 976/1.  
**Herne**, *sb.* nook, corner, 756/4.  
**Heroycus**, *adj.* heroic (having the qualities of the classical hero), 28/3.  
**Hert**, *sb.* [ceruus] hart, 655/7.  
**Herys**, *sb.* *pl.* hairs, 34/4.  
**Heste**, *sb.* behest, 1/4, 17/4.  
**Heuynesse**, *sb.* [graues . . . discordiae] enmity, 81/1, grief, 130/8, 134/6, 162/2, 197/6, etc.  
**Highte**, *vb.* 3 *s.* *pt.* was called, 84/1, 87/3, 504/5, etc.; **Highte** *pp.* 372/5; promised, 451/7.  
**Hele**, *v.* **Hool**.  
**Holsom**, *adj.* wholesome, 263/4.  
**Holy**, *adj.* wholly, 222/4, 330/8, **Holly**, 544/8.  
**Hondes**, *sb.* *pl.* houndes, 85/2.  
**Hondes**, *sb.* *pl.* hands, 276/6.  
**Honymouth**, *adj.* [melliflui . . . oris] sweet musing, 845/1.  
**Hool**, *adj.* safe, 91/3, 301/4; whole, 236/1, 347/8, 448/3, etc.; **Hole**, cured, 766/7.  
**Hoole**, *sb.* whole, 472/3.
- Hoore**, *adj.* hoar, 34/4.  
**Hoote**, *adj.* hot, 118/3.  
**Hope**, *vb.* *imper.* *trans.* desire, 155/3.  
**Hostilment**, *sb.* [supellectilis] furniture, ornament, 250/3; **Hostilmentys**, *pl.* 252/8.  
**Hotest**, *vb.* 2 *sp.* commandest, 459/6; **Hoten**, *pp.* 34/3.  
**Houe**, *vb.* 3 *pl.* p. hover, 592/7.  
**Howen**, *vb.* *inf.* cry, 320/5.  
**Hugely**, *adv.* greatly, 142/1, 154/2, etc.  
**Hulles**, *sb.* *pl.* hills, 427/7.  
**Humour**, *sb.* [medulla] pith, 521/3.  
**Hurtlen**, *vb.* *inf.* attack, 159/3.  
**Huscht**, *pp.* hushed, 264/3.  
**Hyen**, *vb.* *inf.* hasten, 418/8, 819/1; **Hyeb**, 3 *sp.* 951/7; **Hyeng**, *ppl.* 34/2.  
**Hyhe**, *adj.* high, 11/8, 154/1, etc.; **Hier**, *comp.* 430/3; **Hiest**, *sup.* 268/3; **Hy**, proud, 636/5; noble, 646/1; **Hyhe**, *adv.* angrily, 22/5; **Hily**, 216/2.  
**Ilke**, *adj.* same, 453/1, 720/3.  
**I-lyke**, *adj.* like, 17/1; [aequam] alike, equal, 841/3.  
**Implyen**, *vb.* *inf.* [implicitae] entangle, involve, 418/6; **Implyeth**, 3 *sp.* [explicat] accomplishes, 919/7; [applicat] applies, 925/3.  
**Importune**, *adj.* [importuna] importunate, 775/2.  
**Incertane**, *adj.* uncertain, 867/7.  
**Inconstance**, *sb.* inconstancy, 843/4.  
**Indifferent**, *adv.* [pariter] alike, 606/2, 754/3; indifferently, uncertainly, 865/2.  
**Inducen**, *vb.* *inf.* deduce, 823/4.  
**Infere**, *adv.* together, 194/4, 325/7, 400/6, etc.  
**Infortune**, *sb.* misfortune, 416/8, 669/7, malice, 670/3.  
**Infortunat**, *adj.* unfortunate, 589/5.  
**Ingetyng**, *vbl. sb.* obtaining, 511/6.  
**Inlyk**, *adv.* alike, 311/3.  
**Inmediate**, *adj.* conclusive (without any intermediary step), 223/8.  
**Inmevable**, *adj.* immovable, 930/2.  
**Inogh**, *v.* **Ynow**.  
**Inow**, *v.* **Ynow**.  
**Inperfyt**, *adj.* imperfect, 434/6, 456/1, 468/2.  
**Inpertinent**, *adj.* [aversa] irrelevant, 821/6.  
**Insolible**, *adj.* insoluble, 749/6.  
**Institution**, *sb.* [instituta] ordinances, 161/4.  
**Insuffishounce**, *sb.* Lack, 1/1.  
**Invict**, *pp.* unconquered, 771/5.

- Inwit**, *sb.* intelligence, 421/6.  
**I-wys**, *adv.* indeed, 306/8, 435/7,  
 476/4, etc.
- Iape**, *sb.* [ludiera] trifle, 619/2.  
**Iolite**, *sb.* jollity, 338/8.  
**Ioye**, *vb.* *imper.* rejoice, 155/1.  
**Iuge**, *sb.* judge, 792/7.  
**Iuggementis**, *sb.* judgments, 18/8.  
**Iuggen**, *vb.* *inf.* judge, 803/3;  
**Iuggeþ**, 3 *sp.* 840/6.  
**Iupartie**, *sb.* jeopardy, 82/8, 259/8,  
 392/8.
- Kende**, *v.* **Kynde**.
- Kene**, *adj.* keen, 118/8; *adv.* keenly,  
 187/1.
- Kerue**, *vb.* *inf.* carve, cut, 263/7.
- Keuered**, *pp.* covered, 258/4, 265/6.
- Knetten**, *vb.* *inf.* knit, 356/8; **knet**,  
 3 *s. pt.* 273/2; **knet**, *pp.* 278/7,  
 507/2, 559/1, 878/3.
- Konnyng**, *sb.* wisdom, 51/5; skill,  
 582/4; knowledge, 861/3, 903/3.
- Kunnen**, *pret. pres. vb.* *inf.* be able,  
 51/2; **Can**, 1 *sp.* 12/7, etc.;  
**Kannest**, 2 *sp.* 3/8; **Can**, 3 *sp.* 54/5,  
 71/4, etc.; **Kan**, 136/7; **Konne**, 3  
*pl. p.* 237/8, etc., **Kun**, 429/8,  
**Cunne**, 266/7; **Couthe**, 1 *s. pt.* 31/8,  
 42/2, etc., **Kouþe**, 53/5, 360/8, etc.,  
 coude, 38/7; **Couthe**, 2 *s. pt.* 126/1;  
**Couthe**, 2 *pl. pt.* 838/5; **Couthe**, 3  
*pl. pt.* 185/8, 262/2, etc.
- Kynde**, *sb.* nature, species, 45/7, 47/4,  
 50/3, 54/2, 126/3, etc.; **Out of**  
**Kynde**, unnatural, 99/8; **Kende\***,  
 manner 178/8.
- Kyndly**, *adj.* pertaining to its nature,  
 natural, 146/2, 208/4, 479/7; *adv.*  
 naturally, by nature, 203/7, 489/5.
- Kytte**, *vb.* *inf.* cut, 704/7, 65/4; **Kyt**,  
 pp. 43/2, **Ykyt**, 514/5.
- Laberynt**, *sb.* labyrinth, 557/8.
- Languisshous**, *adj.* [anxios] anxious,  
 220/4.
- Lapped**, *vb.* 3 *s. pt.* folded, 58/6.
- Largesse**, *sb.* [magnitudo] greatness,  
 341/5.
- Lasse\***, *adv. comp.* less, 459/8, 472/7.
- Lat**, *vb.* *imper.* let, 188/5, 309/3, 309/5,  
 756/1.
- Laused**, *pp.* loosed, set free.
- Laweness**, *sb.* humility, 569/3.
- Lawere**, *adj. comp.* lower, 909/1.
- Lawly**, *adj.* humble, 326/5.
- Leche**, *sb.* leech, 60/4, 615/7.
- Leeful**, *adj.* lawful, 94/3, 101 1. **Lefull**,  
 871/2.
- Lef**, *adj.* dear, 192/3.
- Lefte**, 3 *s. pt.* remained, 28/4.
- Leften**, *vb.* *inf.* lift, 310/2.
- Leight**, *sb.* lightning 72/3.
- Lemyng**, *vbl. sb.* shining, 466/2.
- Lengpest**, 2 *sp.* lengthenest, 118/3.
- Leoun**, *sb.* lion, 813/4; *pl.* 352/1.
- Lepe**, *vb.* *inf.* leap, 812/4; **Leep**, 3 *s.pt.*  
 815/6.
- Lere**, *vb.* *inf.* learn, 76/5, 126/4, 433/3,  
 457/1, etc.; *guide*, 329/6; **Lered**, *pp.*  
 80/3, 651/3.
- Lese**, *vb.* *inf.* lose, 111/6, 264/8, 469/7;
- Lessest**, 2 *sp.* 261/8; **Lesip**, 3 *sp.*  
 448/7; **Lese**, 2 *pl. p.* 250/4, **Loose**,  
 573/8; **Lorne**, *pp.* 383/3, 875/7.
- Lesse**, *sb.* [fomenta] remedy, 190/4.
- Leste**, *vb.* *inf.* last, 171/8.
- Leste**, *adj. sup.* least, 217/6, 289/8,  
 319/1, 457/6; *atte leste*, at least,  
 17/2, 657/6.
- Lete**, *vb.* *inf.* hinder, prevent, 33/3,  
 92/8, **Letten**, 101/6, etc.; **Let**, 1 *s. pt.*  
 81/8; **Let**, 3 *pl. p.* 158/8; **Let**, *pp.*  
 59/4, 142/4, etc.; [elusus] deceived,  
 136/4.
- Lete**, *vb.* *inf.* leave, 189/5, 257/4, 623/6;  
**Let**, 1 *sp. refrain*, 527/2.
- Lette**, *sb.* hindrance, delay, 49/7.
- Leuene**, *sb.* flash of lightning, 555/3.
- Levire**, *adv. comp.* rather, preferably,  
 214/8, 445/2.
- Leyne**, *vb.* *inf.* to lay, 98/4.
- Lightly**, *adv.* easily, 896/5.
- Like**, *vb.* used impersonally, 6/1, 158/3,  
 178/3, 464/4, etc.
- Lykly**, *adv.* [ad exempla] like, 77/2;  
*adj.* similar, 512/7.
- Lyklyhede**, *sb.* likelihood, 289/7; like-  
 ness, 461/6.
- Liklynnesse**, *sb.* [similitudine] appear-  
 ance, 497/7; similarity, 963/4.
- Lisse**, *sb.* comfort, 231/1.
- Litargie**, *sb.* Lethargy, 57/4.
- Lofte**, high; **On lofte**, 180/8, **Upon**  
**lofte**, 922/3, on high.
- Lok**, *sb.* lock, 2/8.
- Lokeþ**, *vb. trans.* 3 *sp.* beholdeth, 772/3.
- Longeþ**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* belongeth, 704/1;  
**Befits**, 709/1, 783/1; **Longyng**, *ppl.*  
 belonging, 76/6, 195/2.
- Loose**, *v.* **Lese**.
- Lorell**, *sb.* [perditissimum] abandoned  
 wretch, 141/1.
- Losyth**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* loosens, 317/3.
- Loth**, *adj.* [exosa] hateful, 208/5.
- Lothely**, *adv.* loathesome, 385/5.
- Lothes**, *vb. imp.* 3 *sp.* [piget] it is  
 hateful.
- Lourith**, 3 *sp.* scowls, frowns, 33/2.

- Louse**, *adj.* loose, 229/3.  
**Lowsynges**, *sb.* loosenings, 351/7.  
**Lowte**, *vb. inf.* descend, 52/6.  
**Lust**, *sb.* pleasure, 343/6; **Lustes**, *pl.* 202/4.  
**Lustely**, *adv.* happily, 359/1, 583/3.  
**Lusten**, *vb. inf.* delight, 163/3; **Lust**, 3 *sp.* 127/7, 228/1; used impersonally, 73/8, 121/6, 122/5, 139/6, etc., **List**\*, 121/6, **Lest**\*, 139/6; **Lusteth**, 3 *pl. p.* 220/4; **Leste**\*, 3 *sp. pt. imp.* 24/2.  
**Lusty**, *adj.* pleasant, 32/2, 36/2, 76/2, etc.; [Ludens] playful, 354/3.  
**Lustynesse**, *sb.* happiness, 35/2, 165/2, 184/2 etc.  
**Lye**, *vb. inf.* [mentiri] lie, 93/5; **Lyeth**, 3 *sp.* 316/2; **Lye**, 3 *pl. p.* 107/4.  
**Lyen**, *vb. inf.* lie, 566/3; **Lith**, 3 *sp.* 54/3, 55/2, 121/3; **Leyn**, 3 *pl. p.* 172/7.  
**Lyfly**, *adj.* [vitalis] vital, 151/2; [animans] living 290/4.  
**Lymes**, *sb. pl.* limbs, 612/5.  
**Lyst**, *v. Lust*.  
**Lyte**, *sb.* little, 8/1, 710/3; *adj.* 183/3, *adv.* 296/3.  
**Lyth**, *sb.* limb, 239/1.  
**Lyyv**, *adj.* living, 923/7.  
  
**Maister**, *sb.* master, 12/6, 353/7, 397/3; **Maistres**, *pl.* 352/4.  
**Maisterie**, *sb.* mastery, 401/6.  
**Maistresse**, *sb.* mistress, 92/1, 102/1, 287/1, 583/1.  
**Makynge**, *vbl. sb.* versifying, 5/4, 5/7.  
**Manere-wise**, *sb.* manner, 367/4.  
**Manyfold**, *sb.* a great deal, 929/7.  
**Many-wise**, *adj.* manifold, 219/5.  
**Marchandise**, *sb.* [commercium] business, 873/6.  
**Mareys**, *sb.* [paludes] marsh, 290/8, 520/5.  
**Mased**, *adj.* confused, 697/7.  
**Masediche**, *adv.* amasedly, 554/4; [praeposterum] preposterously, 858/7.  
**Matire**, *sb.* matter, 2/1, 3/5, etc.; material, 41/2, 245/4.  
**Maundement**, *sb.* decree, 24/6.  
**Mawe**, *sb.* [icceur] liver, 571/1.  
**Mayne**, *v. Meyne*.  
**Medled**, *pp.* mingled, 295/4.  
**Meet**, *sb.* measure, 40/2.  
**Melk**, *sb.* milk, 55/6.  
**Melle**, *vb. inf.* mingle, 138/1; meddle, 265/5, 416/2.  
**Mende**\*, *sb.* mind, 738/6, 973/7.  
**Mene**, *sb.* means, 147/6, 613/6, 876/2; [medium] mean, 808/3, 808/6.  
  
**Mene**, *vb. 1 sp.* mean, 16/3; **Mene**, 3 *pl. p.* 72/4; **Mende**, 3 *s. pt.* 42/6; *iment*, *pp.* 105/4.  
**Mengyng**, *ppl.* mingling, 837/2; **Mengid**, *pp.* 219/6.  
**Ment**, *vb. 2 s. pt.* didst moan, 141/2.  
**Merk**, *sb.* mark, 6/7; **Christes merk**, sign of baptism.  
**Merour**, *sb.* mirror, 883/3.  
**Merueil**, *vb. 1 sp.* marvel, 99/6.  
**Merveille**, *sb.* [miraculum] miracle, 724/7, 761/2.  
**Merveilable**, *adj.* admirable, 245/4.  
**Meschief**, *sb.* misfortune, 37/8, 220/2.  
**Meste**, *adv. sup.* most, 17/7, 822/7; *adj.* greatest, 171/6.  
**Mete**, *adj.* equal, 790/1.  
**Mete**, *pp. met*, 33/1.  
**Meteth**, *vb. 3 sp.* measures, 405/1; **Mete**, *pp.* 747/1.  
**Meuable**, *adj.* movable, 931/2.  
**Meue**, *vb. inf.* move, 140/8, 288/2, etc.; **Meueth**, 3 *sp.* 75/6, 129/3, etc.; **Meue**, 3 *pl. p.* 51/8; **Meued**, 3 *s. pt.* 129/2; **Meued**, 3 *pl. pt.* 76/7, etc.; **Meued**, *pp.* 69/4, etc.  
**Meuyng**, *vbl. sb.* course, 51/4.  
**Mewe**, *sb.* confinement, 306/7.  
**Meyne**, *sb.* retainers, 17/2; **Meigne**, company, 48/5, 178/5; **Mayne**, 246/2, etc.  
**Mo**, *adj.* more, 13/3, 14/5, 376/7, 390/3.  
**Moble**, *adj.* [mobilis] mobile, 956/4.  
**Moder**, *sb.* mother, 11/4, 12/6.  
**Monarchie**, *sb.* sovereignty, 10/2.  
**Movs**, *sb.* mouse, 270/6.  
**More**, *adj.* greater, 391/8, 459/8.  
**Mortheren**, *vb. inf.* murder, 420/4.  
**Most**, *pt. pr. vb.* must, 1 *sp. 1/5*, 4/6, etc.; **Most**, 2 *sp.* 164/4; **Must**, 5/8, **Most**, 3 *sp.* 431/5, etc.; **Must**, 54/8, etc.; **Mot**, 3 *sp.* 406/2; **Muste**, 1 *pl.* 40/7; **Moste**, 3 *pl.* 23/1, etc.  
**Mowe**, *pt. pr. vb. inf.* to be able, 257/2; **Mowe**, 3 *pl. p.* 95/3, 109/4, etc.; **Mown**, 642/6.  
**Myghtless**, *adj.* powerless, 634/4.  
**Mykell**, *adj. adv.* much, 250/2, 290/7, etc.; **Mychel**, 250/8; **Mekyl**, 375/6; **Myche**, 389/1, 407/1.  
**Mykelhede**, *sb.* greatness, 289/5.  
**Mynte**, *vb. 3 sp.* intends, 399/1; **Myntyng**, *ppl.* 50/4.  
**Mysbede**, *vb. inf.* injure, 73/4.  
**Mysbeware**, *vb. trans.* 3 *sp.* make unaware, deceive, 452/7 (v. *Introd. Chap. on Language*).  
**Myses**, *sb.* distress, 111/8, 503/8.  
**Myspayed**, *pp.* dissatisfied, displeased, 216/7.

- Naturele**, *adj.* natural, 828/2.  
**Nay**, *sb.* denying; it is no nay, there is no denying, 13/5, 278/4, etc.  
**Nayen**, *vb.* *inf.* deny, 614/7.  
**Necesseth**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* necessitates, 891/4;  
 Necessid, *pp.* 896/4.  
**Nedeþ**, *vb.* *imp.* need, 3 *sp.* 7/3, 53/8, 75/3, 250/2, etc.  
**Nedelye**, *adv.* necessarily, 853/2, 858/2.  
**Nedes**, *adv.* of necessity, 1/5, 54/8, 168/1; **Nede**, 110/8, 228/6, etc.  
**Nedes-cost**, *adv.* necessarily, 404/5, 893/2.  
**Nedynesse**, *sb.* want, 444/8.  
**Neghe**, *vb.* *inf.* approach, 49/1, **Neigh**, 874/6; **Neighth**, 3 *sp.* 745/5; **Neigh**, 1 *pl.* *p. subj.* 799/1.  
**Neigh**, *adv.* near, 8/3; **Neye**, 4/5.  
**Nekkes**, *sb.* *pl.* necks, 310/2.  
**Ner**, *prep.* near, 905/3.  
**Neper**, *conj.* neither, 228/8, 975/1; nor, 976/3.  
**Neuerþelatter**, *conj.* nevertheless, 125/1, 141/3, 844/3.  
**Noght**, *neg.* not, 14/8, etc.; **Nouth**, 37/3, 61/7; **Noght-for-thye**, *conj.* nevertheless, 4/7, 69/2, 489/7, 580/5, etc.; **Noght-for-that**, *conj.* nevertheless, 94/5, 190/1, **Noght-for þan**\*, 415/5.  
**Non-power**, *sb.* impotence, 390/8, 391/1.  
**Nones**, for þe nones, for the moment, 214/1.  
**Nory**, *sb.* [alumnus] foster-child, 62/1, 454/1, 534/6.  
**Norys**, *sb.* nurse, 60/6, 204/1.  
**Not**, *vb.* 1 *sp.*, [Ne wot.] know not, 415/7, 518/8.  
**Noþer**, *adj.* neither, 399/3, 485/5.  
**Noþing**, *adv.* in no wise, 124/2, 184/6, 439/2, 660/7, 915/2.  
**Nouthe**, *adv.* now, 193/5.  
**Now and nowe**, *adv.* time after time, 83/3.  
**Noyen**, *vb.* *inf.* annoy, trouble, 258/8, 814/7; **Noyeth**, 3 *sp.* 434/8; **Noyen**, 3 *pl.* *p.* 10/2, 835/7; **Noyed**, *pp.* 447/4.  
**Noþous**, *adj.* troublesome, 50/5.  
**Noysaunce**, *sb.* injury, 703/4.  
**Nyce**, *adj.* fastidious, 253/3; foolish, ignorant, 304/5, 358/5, 380/7; [vulgi] 404/2; absurd, 859/3; [inertes] (Chaucer's gloss, 'slow and delicat') insipid, 818/3.  
**Nyhe**, *prep.* nigh, 504/6.  
**Nyll**, *sb.* [nolendi] refusing, 841/2.
- O**, *adj.* one, 294/6, 295/5; **Oo**, 208/7, 296/8, 434/5; **On**, 516/3, 516/4.  
**Obeissant**, *adj.* obedient, 463/1.  
**Obiecte**, *adj.* objective, 926/1.  
**Obreide**, *vb.* *inf.* start angrily, 306/1.  
**Obysaunce**, *sb.* obeisance, 77/4, 171/3, 326/5, etc.  
**Of-right**, *adv.* aright, 474/8, 498/8.  
**Olyphaunt**, *sb.* elephant, 422/1.  
**Omageres**, *sb.* retainers, payers of homage, 403/6.  
**Onaunter**, *adv.* peradventure, 7/7.  
**One**, *sb.* Unity, 532/3, 532/6, 533/2.  
**Oneliche**, *adv.* only; All oneliche, alone, 529/4.  
**Oned**, *pp.* united, 736/6.  
**Onered**, *pp.* honoured, 337/3.  
**Ones**, *adv.* once, 869/1.  
**Onhede**, *sb.* Unity, 514/5, 526/8.  
**On-lawe** *adv.* below, 944/4.  
**On-long**, *adv.* along, 313/1.  
**On-lyve**, *adj.* alive, 23/8.  
**On-side**, *adv.* aside, 7/2, 318/6, 513/2.  
**Onslepe**, *adj.* asleep, 569/8, 812/2.  
**Oon**, *sb.* one, 22/6, 23/3; **Oon þe** principal, the chief one, 12/2.  
**Oost**, *sb.* host, 69/1, 69/6.  
**Opinable**, *adj.* indefinite, 963/1.  
**Opynabilly**, *adv.* by conjecture, 942/5.  
**Opinative**, *adj.* imagined, 64/8.  
**Or**, *adv.* ere, 165/3, 181/5, 202/7, etc.; **Ar**, [prius] 192/3.  
**Ordinance**, *sb.* decree, 95/5, 551/4; Control, 530/4, 714/4, 141/4; [ordinem] order 138/5, 390/4, 544/6, 718/6, 735/2.  
**Ordinate**, *adv.* *adj.* [compos] self-controlled, 71/1; stable, 213/6; well-ordered, 545/1, 692/7.  
**Orphelyn**, *sb.* Orphan, 191/6.  
**Over**, *conj.* or, 185/5, 244/3, 371/3, 741/2.  
**Outrage**, *sb.* excess, 262/3.  
**Overblowe**, *pp.* driven away, 311/7; overcast, 537/5.  
**Overgo**, *pp.* passed, 779/5, 972/5; **Overgone**, 822/2; [obruta] overwhelmed, 878/4.  
**Overpassee**, *vb.* *inf.* perish, 298/2; [praemittere] put forth, go over, consider, 590/5, 590/6.  
**Overþward**, *adj.* [praeceps] headlong, rash, 775/3.  
**Oweth**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* ought, 188/8, 632/6, etc.; [convenit] is fitting 521/3; **Owen**, 3 *pl.* 377/8, 497/6, etc. **Aughten**, 3 *pl.* pt. 498/7.  
**Owe**, *vb.* 3 *pl.* possess, own, 364/3.  
**Oys**, *sb.* use, 177/6, 776/6.

- Pagyne**, *sb.* [pagina] page, paper, 919/2.
- Paleys**, *sb.* [vallo] rampart, defence, 70/5; palace, 86/2; **Pales**, 85/2, 128/4.
- Parell**, *sb.* peril, 265/8, 420/2, 775/6.
- Parelouse**, *adj.* perilous, 11/7, 17/8, 400/7, 661/5.
- Parfyt**, *v.* **Perfyt**.
- Partie**, *sb.* part, 65/1, 443/5, 443/7; *pl.* 461/8, 491/1, 495/2, etc.
- Partisoun**, *sb.* division, 443/6; **Particioun**, 526/2.
- Passen**, *vb.* *inf.* surpass, 254/4, 422/2; **Passeth**, 3 *sp.* repast, 1/6, 3/6, 907/6.
- Past**, *sb.* repast, 662/4.
- Payed**, *adj.* [contenta] content, 253/1, 262/2.
- Paynes**, *sb.* *pl.* pains, 120/5.
- Payre**, *v.* **Apayre**.
- Pays**, *sb.* heaviness, load, 466/5.
- PaySEN**, *vb.* *inf.* weigh, 310/4, 390/8, 653/4.
- Pecys**, *sb.* *pl.* pieces, 66/1.
- Pees**, *sb.* peace, 23/2, 24/8; **Pesse**, 50/8, etc.
- Fennes**, *sb.* *pl.* feathers, wings, 591/2.
- Peraunture**, *adv.* perhaps, 670/6; **Per-aunture**, 754/1, 775/1, etc.
- Perde**, *exclamation*, Par Dieu, 144/8, 231/5, 287/4, etc.
- Perdurable**, *adj.* everlasting, 41/2, 203/7, 228/2, 407/4, etc.; *adv.* perpetually, 116/2, 955/3.
- Perdurabilite**, *sb.* continuity, 231/7, 386/8, infinity, 301/7.
- Perdurabilnesse**, *sb.* continuity, 963/2.
- Perduracioun**, *sb.* eternity, 299/5.
- Peregal**, *adj.* equal, 326/3.
- Pereles**, *adj.* peerless, 956/2.
- Perfyt**, *adj.* perfect, 335/7, 456/3, 461/8, 951/1.
- Perfitly**, *adv.* perfectly, 330/6, 433/5; **Perfrightly**, 327/5, 453/7, 461/7.
- Perle**, *sb.* pearl, 428/6.\*
- Permanable\***, *adj.* permanent, 958/4.
- Perry**, *sb.* precious stone, 238/2, 385/2.
- Person**, *vb.* *inf.* pierce, 424/3, 845/5; **Perce**, 578/5.
- Perseveraunt**, *adj.* continuous, 37/3.
- Perspicience**, *sb.* perspicacity, 912/7.
- Perteyne**, *vb.* *inf.* become fitting, proper, 464/8.
- Pertinent**, *adj.* appertaining, 104/4.
- Pertyneres**, *sb.* *pl.* [participes] participants, 940/1.
- Perversidnesse**, *sb.* perverseness, 111/4.
- Pese**, *vb.* *inf.* appease, 186/5; **Pesid**, *pp.* 816/6.
- Pesible**, *adj.* peaceful, 467/1.
- Peyne**, *sb.* pain, 15/4.
- I-Fight**, *pp.* fixed, *v.* **pycche**.
- Planeth**, *vb.* 3 *pl.* *p.* glide, 943/7.
- Plener**, *adj.* full, 547/4.
- Plenerlye**, *adv.* fully, 289/1, 453/5, 541/8; openly, 359/7, 590/2.
- Plentevous**, *adj.* plentiful, 170/4.
- Plesance**, *sb.* pleasure, 9/8, 164/2, 177/5, 437/4.
- Pleton**, *vb.* *inf.* plead, 174/1.
- Pletours**, *sp.* *pl.* pleaders, advocates, 703/5.
- Pleyne**, *adj.* plain, 4/3; [stratum] smooth, 179/7; full, 460/2, 470/7.
- Pleynen**, *vb.* *inf.* complain, lament, 177/8, 182/8, 206/7, etc.; 3 *pl.* *p.* 187/4.
- Plyt**, *sb.* fold, 58/6.
- Poepull**, *sb.* people, 407/2; **Puple**, 712/6.
- Porisme**, *sb.* [porismata] deduction, 492/2; *pl.* 487/3.
- Posteme**, *sb.* [strumam] impostume, 372/7.
- Pouer**, *sb.* power, 11/5, 713/4.
- Pouere**, *adj.* poor, 260/7.
- Pouert**, *sb.* poverty, 11/1, 214/8, 444/8.
- Poynt**, *sb.* centre (of circle), 747/6.
- Poyntyng**, *sb.* [punctus] point, 291/6.
- Poysees**, *sb.* *pl.* poems, 6/2.
- Precelleth**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* excels, 479/4.
- Prechynge**, *sb.* preaching, 14/4.
- Preciouste**, *sb.* value, 165/6, 234/5, 587/7.
- Prees**, *sb.* press, gathering, 194/8.
- Prekkep**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* pricketh, 417/2.
- Prescit**, *adj.* [praescitae] foreknown, 859/7.
- Presently**, *adv.* in one's presence, 73/6, 361/4.
- President**, *adj.* superior, 270/5.
- Preste**, *adj.* eager, 347/7; ready, 616/6, 841/6.
- Preve**, *vb.* *inf.* prove, 51/6, 175/3, etc.; *i-preued*, *pp.* 95/8, 477/4, 484/1.
- Prikkes**, *sb.* *gen.* point's, 291/6, *pl.* thrusts, 393/3.
- Printe**, *pp.* [praestriuxit] frowned, 197/2.
- Printes**, *sb.* *pl.* [specimen] patterns, 209/3.
- Pris**, *sb.* price, 129/6.
- Prive**, *adj.* secret, hidden, 54/2, 76/6, 103/7, etc.
- Prively**, *adv.* secretly, 508/6; **Preuely**, 97/7, 271/8; **Pryuely**, 655/1.

- Privite**, *sb.* secrecy, 371/7, 581/6.  
**Processe**, *sb.* history 15/8, 95/1; [ordo] procedure, 431/5; [ratio] reasoning, 476/3; discussion, 730/7, 786/3.  
**Promissioun**, *sb.* promise, 426/2, 449/8.  
**Propirte**, *sb.* attributes, 146/2.  
**Propur**, *adj.* own [propria] peculiar to one's nature or species, 50/3, 378/8, 380/5, etc.  
**Propirly**, *adv.* by its nature, 383/2, 434/7.  
**Proute**, *adj.* proud, 172/1, 310/1.  
**Provide**, *vb. inf.* foresee 858/3; **Provideth**, *3 sp.* 851/2; **Provided**, *pp.* 852/2, 858/2.  
**Providence**, *sb.* [praevidentia] foresight, 969/1.  
**Provostry**, *sb.* [praetura] praetorship, 381/7.  
**Prow**, *sb.* advantage, 260/7.  
**Prowesse**, *sb.* [probitatis] uprightness, 1002/4.  
**Pryse**, *sb.* value, 14/4, 196/4.  
**Punche**, *vb. inf.* punish 796/5.  
**Puple**, *v.* **Poepull**.  
**Purpure**, *adj.* purple, 263/1, 385/2, 428/8, 686/2.  
**Purveaunce**, *sb.* Purveyance, 136/6, 363/7, 496/8; [Providentia] Providence, 530/2, 578/1, 728/2, 872/1, etc.  
**Purveith**, *vb.* *3 sp.* provides, 739/4.  
**Fyche**, *vb. inf.* [adfigam] fix, 591/2; **I-pight**, *pp.* 592/3, 744/1, 947/6.  
**Pyment**, *sb.* wine mixed with honey, 262/8.  
**Pyne**, *sb.* grief, 584/5.  
**Pyt**, *pp.* put, 300/4.  
**Pytous**, *adj.* compassionate, 704/5.  
**Quod**, *vb.* *1 s. pt.* quoth, said, 436/1, etc.; *3 s. pt.* 436/2, etc.  
**Racen**, *vb. inf.* (aphetic form of arace) tear to pieces, 710/7.  
**I-Rad**, *pp. v.* **Rede**.  
**Rafte**, *v.* **Reueth**.  
**Rathe**, *adv.* soon, early, 34/4; **Raper**, *comp.* former, 262/1; [prius] before 475/8, 476/2.  
**Raveyn**, *sb.* rapine, 83/6, 186/6.  
**Really**, *v.* **Ryally**.  
**Reavme**, *v.* **Rewme**.  
**Reche**, *vb. inf.* depart, 60/2.  
**Recorse**, *sb.* course 51/7, 356/3; **Recours**, 594/5.  
**Rede**, *vb. inf.* read, 31/2, 693/4; decide, 802/4; **Rad**, *1 s. pt.* 42/3; **Red**, *pp.* 12/8, *i-rad* 275/2, Rad 301/4.  
**Reduce**, *vb. inf.* lead, 596/4.  
**Redoute**, *vb. inf.* [vereor] fear, 62/7.  
**Refreyne**, *vb. inf.* restrain, 15/2.  
**Refut**, *sb.* refuge, 503/7.  
**Regne**, *sb.* kingdom, 388/1.  
**Reherse**, *vb. inf.* relate, discuss, 182/4, 205/1, enumerate, 727/7; **Reherse**, *1 pl. p.* 486/3, 494/6; **Rehersyng**, *ppl.* quoting, 956/5; **Rehersed**, *pp.* 188/6, 247/5, 442/6, etc.  
**Reioyer**, *vb. inf.* rejoice, 241/3; **Reioyeth**, *3 sp.* 356/2; **Reioyer**, *3 pl. p.* 282/2, 394/1.  
**Relees**, *vb. inf.* repeal, 24/6.  
**Relisse**, *vb. inf.* relieve, cure, 135/8.  
**Remembre**, *vb. inf.* remind, 605/1; *pp.* 130/5, 540/2, 541/5.  
**Remembrable**, *adj.* worthy of being mentioned, 407/5.  
**Remenant**, *sb.* [relicquum] remaining things, 341/1, 492/4, 496/2, etc.  
**Remeued**, *pp.* removed, 91/3.  
**Remewe**, *vb. inf.* [expellere] banish, 393/1; **Remewed**, *pp.* altered, 860/6.  
**Renewe**, *vb. inf.* recall, 6/6.  
**Renne**, *vb. inf.* run, 565/8; **Rennynge**, *ppl.* 154/1, 263/3, 370/2, 640/6.  
**Renomed**, *adj.* renowned, 293/2, 408/6.  
**Repayren**, *vb. inf.* return, 353/4.  
**Replenysched**, *pp.* filled, 328/2.  
**Replecacioun**, *sb.* reply, 674/7.  
**Repreue**, *sb.* reproof, 62/5, 225/2.  
**Repreuable**, *adj.* [contemnedum] despicable, 346/4, 374/7 (*v. Introd.*, *Chap. on Lang.*).  
**Repreueth**, *vb.* *3 sp.* reproveth, 779/3; **Repreuyng**, *ppl.* [redarguit] disproving, refuting, 922/7; **Repreued**, *pp.* [pendenda] despised, 69/2, 347/3, 445/8; reproved, 91/4, 268/8.  
**Repugneth**, *vb.* *3 sp.* is contradictory, 847/5.  
**Resayued**, *pp.* received, 6/7.  
**Rescowen\***, *vb. inf.* rescue, 722/2.  
**Resistant**, *adj.* opposed, 3/4.  
**Resolved**, *pp.* dissolved, 307/5, 686/1, 722/7.  
**Respit**, *sb.* respect, 967/3.  
**Rethorien**, *sb.* rhetorician, 280/3.  
**Rethorien**, *adj.* rhetorical, 161/1.  
**Rethoryk**, *sb.* rhetoric, 5/1, 280/3.  
**Reueth**, *vb.* *3 sp.* bereaveth, 261/3; **Reuen**, *3 pl. p.* 654/2; **Reuyd**, *pp.* 347/1, **Rafte**, 222/8.  
**Reuerent**, *adj.* [reuerendi] inspiring reverence, 39/1, 382/4.  
**Reward**, *sb.* regard, 678/5, 692/7.  
**Rewardyng**, *ppl.* regarding, 765/7.  
**Rewarded**, *pp.* regarded, 736/5.

- Rewme**, *sb.* realm, 184/7, 394/6, 586/5; **Reavme**, 782/4.
- Riall**, *adj.* royal, 432/5.
- Righted**, *pp.* [iustos fecit] made just, 90/4.
- Rightwis**, *adj.* right, just, 120/5, 787/6, 121/4.
- Rightiosly**, *adv.* rightly 105/8, 474/4, 665/5.
- Rightwinesse**, *adj.* righteousness, 111/2, 115/2, 684/6.
- Roo**, *sb.* roe, 428/1.
- Rote**, *sb.* [profundum] root, 190/6, 325/2; [radice] 702/2.
- Rounde**, *sb.* *pl.* [orbes] meven into rounde, move in circles, 793/6.
- Route**, *sb.* company, 246/1.
- Rufulliche**, *adv.* sorrowfully, 24/5.
- Rulere**, *sb.* [clavis] helm, 548/6.
- Ryally**, *adv.* royally, 244/7; **Really**, 636/2.
- Rynde**, *sb.* bark, 241/7, 522/2.
- Sad**, *adj.* firm, 442/1; grave, dignified, 583/4.
- Sadly**, *adv.* seriously, 327/4; firmly, 894/2.
- Sadnesse**, *sb.* [firmitate] firmness, 521/6.
- Sapience**, *sb.* wisdom, 364/6, 582/1.
- Save**, *vb. inf.* preserve, 576/4, 759/6.
- Say**, *vb. inf.* Say, 13/4, **Sayn**, 23/5. *Seie*, 48/6; *Seith*, 3 *sp.* 13/6; *Seie*, 3 *pl.* p. 66/8, **Seye**, 107/1, **Seyn**, 110/7, **Seien**, 852/1; **Seide**, 3 *s. pt.* 17/6, 139/6; **Seie**, *imper. pl.* 23/7, *Seith*, 139/6, **Say**, 140/1; **Seid**, *pp.* 130/8.
- Scameþ**, *vb. imp.* 3 *sp.* shames, 214/6.
- Schappen**, *vb. inf.* shape, 916/1.
- Scheluyng**, *adj.* sloping, 837/3.
- Schende**, *vb. inf.* injure, 179/6, 205/4, 544/1; **Schent**, 3 *sp.* grieves, 112/5; **Schenden**, 3 *pl.* p. 443/8; **Schent**, *pp.* 120/7, 165/1, 586/2, 766/2, split up, 236/5.
- Schenys**, *sb.* shame, 9/1.
- Schenyng**, *vbl. sb.* [splendor] brightnes, 506/1.
- Schet**\*, *pp.* shot, 813/5.
- Schewe**, *vb. inf.* show, 5/8; **Schewyng**, *ppl.* 20/4.
- Schippes**, *sb.* *pl.* ships, 263/7, 429/4, 836/5.
- Schippest**, *vb. 2 sp.* createst, 461/6.
- Schit**, *pp.* shut, 130/1.
- Schortest**, *vb. 2 sp.* shortenest, 118/2.
- Schour**, *sb.* menace, 661/5; **Schoures**, *pl.* [duris] hardships, 769/3.
- Schrewd**, *adj.* wicked, 373/2, 699/2.
- Schrewdely**, *adv.* wickedly, 668/4.
- Schrewes**, *sb.* tyrants, 11/8.
- Science**, *sb.* [memoriam] memory, 159/2.
- Scripture**, *sb.* [scripta] writings, 298/1.
- Seche**, *vb. inf.* seek, 227/2, 457/1; **Seche**, 3 *pl. p.* 349/6.
- Secre**, *sb.* secret, 103/7.
- See**, *sb.* seat, throne, 636/3.
- See**, *sb. sea*, 240/5, **Se**, 263/7, 427/7.
- See**, *vb. inf.* see, 188/5; **Seep**, 3 *sp.* 99/7; 3 *pl. p.* 110/6; **Sawh**, 1 *s. pt.* 48/1, **Seye**, 38/6, **Sawe**, 83/3; **Sawh**, 2 *s. pt.* 626/1; **Sawh**, 3 *s. pt.* 44/1, **sawe**, 29/5, 57/1, **Syhe**\*, 343/4; **Seynge**, *ppl.* 766/1; **Syne**, *pp. 4/1*, 40/6, 318/3, 970/5, etc.
- Seeke**, *adj.* sick, 44/6, 142/3.
- Seintuarie**, *sb.* sanctuary, 88/5, 88/8.
- Sekenesse**, *sb.* sickness, 149/6; **Sike-**  
**nesse**, 150/4.
- Sekirnesse**, *sb.* security, 11/3, 165/4.
- Seld**, *adv.* seldom, 723/3.
- Self**, *sb.* being, 478/1.
- Selfe**, *adj.* same 791/1; **Selue**, 743/1, 948/4.
- Selle**, *sb.* cell, 597/4.
- Semble**, *sb.* assembly, 194/6.
- Sen**, *v.* **Seyn**.
- Sensible**, *adj.* [sensibile] able to be felt or perceived, 934/4, 935/2.
- Sentence**, *sb.* sense, meaning, 3/2, 4/8, 143/1, 576/4; [sententiae] opinions, 112/2; opinion, 142/2, 150/5.
- Septir**, *sb.* sceptre, 43/7.
- Servage**, *sb.* servitude, 83/4.
- Sesen**, *vb. inf. trans.* bring to an end, destroy, 101/4; satisfy, 262/6; **Sees**, 1 *sp.* cease, 92/8.
- Sedes**, *pp.* possessed, 215/5.
- Setten**, *vb. inf.* set value, 277/1.
- Sewen**, *vb. inf.* follow, 33/4, 356/6, 391/7; **Sewep**, 3 *sp.* 278/6, **Suyth**, 389/5, 500/7; **Sewyng**, *ppl.* 8/1, 487/7; **Sewen**, 3 *pl. p.* 622/1.
- Sewyngly**, *adv.* consequently, 627/4, 375/5, 497/1, **Suengly** 488/8, etc.; [ad hunc modum] in like manner, 897/3; **Suengly**, as follows, 458/8.
- Seyn**, *adv.* [olim] formerly, 859/6, **Sen**, since 540/5.
- Shyn**, *sb.* [scintillula] gleam of light, 151/1.
- Siker**, *adj.* safe, sure, 229/6, 229/8, 399/8, 818/5, 867/6.
- Sikerlye**, *adv.* certainly, 26/8, 318/2, 495/5, 502/2; securely, 351/8.
- Sikernesse**, *sb.* safety, 261/8, 393/5, 420/8.

- Sympilly**, *adv.* simply, 950/5.  
**Sympliciter**, *adv.* simply, 626/4.  
**Singulerly**, *adv.* particularly 293/1; merely 423/1; separately 736/2, 881/4, 883/4, 921/1.  
**Sith**, *conj.* since, 342/5, 350/3, 391/1.  
**Sippe**, *adv.* afterwards, 55/7; **Sith**, 56/1, 738/7.  
**Skille**, *sb.* reason, 414/6, 606/3, 614/2; *pl.* 562/2, 564/1, etc.; **Be skill**, reasonably, 586/7.  
**Skilful**, *adj.* reasonable, 782/7,  
**Skifully**, *adv.* reasonably, by reasoning, 655/3, 656/7, 657/4, 675/6, etc.  
**Slaken**, *vb.* *inf.* ease, 85/4, 150/4; diminish, 388/5.  
**Sle**, *vb.* *inf.* slay, 101/3, **Sleen**, 396/8; **Sleen**, 3 *pl. p.* 45/5; **Slowh**, 3 *s. pt.* 12/6, 13/1, **Slow**, 28/6, **Slough**, 284/3; **Sleyn**, *ppl.* 15/7, 26/7.  
**Sleuthe**, *sb.* [segnis] sloth, 656/1.  
**Slipper**, *adj.* sliding, 638/4.  
**Sliperlye**, *adv.* insecurely, 396/7.  
**Smart**, *adj.* flitting, ephemeral, 423/7.  
**Smertly**, *adv.* quickly, 189/6, 204/6.  
**Smytyng**, *vbl. sb.* [ictu] stroke, 912/3.  
**Socurlese**, *adj.* helpless, 34/8.  
**Sodeyn**, *adj.* sudden, 199/2.  
**Sofferayn**, *adj.* sovereign, 9/4.  
**Softely**, *adv.* meekly, 352/6.  
**Soleyn**, *adj.* singular, strange, 193/7.  
**Som**, *sb.* sum, 646/3; **Somme**, 829/7; **Some**, 881/4.  
**Sond**, *sb.* sand, 228/8; **Sondes**, *pl.* 228/6, 229/3.  
**Songe**, *ppl.* sung, 260/8.  
**Sooke**, *adj.* single, 881/1.  
**Sorte**, *sb.* fate, 169/3, 212/6, 286/5.  
**Sorwe**, *sb.* sorrow, 134/6, 135/3, 165/1, 568/8.  
**Sorwest**, *vb.* 2 *sp.* sorrowest, 131/6, 157/1; **Sorwe**, *imper.* 155/4.  
**Sorwful**, *adj.* sorrowful, 135/8.  
**Sotel**, *adj.* slender, thin, 392/5.  
**Sothe**, *sb.* truth, 12/8, 97/5, etc.; *adj.* true, 473/3, 473/5, etc.; **Soþer**, *comp.* 451/2, 533/4, 690/7, 737/6.  
**Sopely**, *adv.* truly, 96/7, 124/4, 706/4, etc.  
**Sotheren**, *adj.* southern, 153/3.  
**Sothfast**, *adj.* very true, 108/2, 150/5.  
**Sothfastnesse**, *sb.* truth, 115/6, 501/5, 534/8, 536/1, 879/4.  
**Sowest**, *vb.* 2 *sp.* [sator] plantest, peoplest, 459/4, 465/1.  
**Sown**, *sb.* sound, 161/5, 351/2.  
**Sownep**, *vb.* 3 *pl. p.* sounds 189/2; **Sowned**, 3 *s. pt.* 568/3; **Sowned**, *ppl.* 924/5.  
**Spas**, *sb.* space, 959/2.
- Spedeth**, *vb.* 3 *sp. imp.* profiteth, 94/6, 770/5; **Sped**, *pp.* 1001/6.  
**Speere**, *sb.* sphere, 592/6, 593/1; **speres**, *pl.* 51/8, 593/4, 594/6.  
**Speke**, *vb.* *inf.* speak, 15/1, 188/3; **Spak**, 3 *s. pt.* 19/2; **Speken**, 2 *pl. pt.* 819/6; **Speke**, *pp.* 4/1.  
**Spet**, *vb.* 3 *s. pt.* spat, 274/2.  
**Sprad**, *pp.* spread, 34/4.  
**Stable**, *sb.* stability, 958/5.  
**Stabilnesse**, *sb.* [constantiam] constancy, 162/7.  
**Steðe**, *sb.* rank, 194/5.  
**Stede**, *sb.* place, 831/2; *pl.* 545/2.  
**Steren**, *vb.* *inf.* stir, 927/1; **Steren**, 3 *pl. p.* 926/2; **stered**, *pp.* 396/5.  
**Sterne**, *sb.* [gubernaculum] rudder, 548/6, 550/4, 561/4.  
**Stokkes**, *sb.* *pl.* [trunc] tree-trunks, 836/3.  
**Standen**, *vb.* *inf.* stand, 373/6, 329/7; **Standen clere vnto** [intueri] behold, 329/7; **Stent**, 3 *sp.* 94/5, **Stant**, 302/6, 516/1, **Stont**, 807/2.  
**Stonge**, *pp.* stung, 260/6.  
**Stonyed**, *v.* **Astound**.  
**Stound**, *sb.* short time, instant, 156/1, 300/1, 333/3, 963/1, 974/3; duration of time, 355/5; **Stoundes**, *pl.* [tempora] times, 138/1, 891/5; [Vices] Vicissitudes, 172/2; 993/6, 994/7; [modis] bounds, 790/1.  
**Strenges**, *sb.* *pl.* strings, 568/2.  
**Streyt**, *adj.* [angustas] scanty, 237/1; [artus] tight, 637/4; *adv.* narrowly, 296/4.  
**Strondes**, *sb.* shores, 429/1, 504/3.  
**Strook**, *sb.* [conflictatione] stroke, 556/3.  
**Stye**, *vb.* *inf.* climb, ascend, 581/4; **Stieng**, *ppl.* 592/2.  
**Stynte**, *vb.* *inf.* [retinere] restrain, 171/5; **Styntyng**, *ppl.* 318/7.  
**Suasioun**, *sb.* [suadela] persuasion 16/2.  
**Subtile**, *adj.* intricate, subtle, 2/1, 130/3, 351/1; **Sotil**, 523/6, 594/1, 879/1.  
**Subtillye**, *adv.* skilfully, 4/2; **Sutteline**, 152/4; **Sotelly**, 562/4, 907/5.  
**Sufferaunce**, *sb.* [passio] suffering, passion, 923/6, 926/6, 927/7.  
**Suffreynes**, *sb.* *pl.* sovereigns, 79/5.  
**Suffisante**, *sb.* sufficiency, 345/7.  
**Suget**, *adj.* subject, 150/8, 254/8, 402/3.  
**Sum**, *adj.* some, 741/2, 758/2.  
**Sure**, *adj.* *adv.* secure, 56/4, 70/4, 207/7, 228/2; **Surere**, *comp.* [tutior] 86/7.

- Surfet, sb.** excess, crime, 28/5, 105/6, 110/8; [fraudes] 88/4.
- Surfeture, sb.** [flagitiosus] lewd fellow, 114/5: one who commits excess, 869/6; **Surfetoures** pl. [nefarios homines] wicked men, 101/1, 131/7, 133/3, 570/2, 684/7.
- Surfetous, adj.** [nequissimus] sinful, 372/2, 418/5.
- Surfetously, adv.** excessively, 244/2.
- Suspecioun, sb.** conjecture, 861/6.
- Suspessious, adj.** open to suspicion, 130/7.
- Sustened, pp.** sustained, 140/3.
- Sustenoures, sb. pl.** supporters, 131/5.
- Suyngly, v.** Sewyngly.
- Suyth, v.** Sewe.
- Swelwen, vb.** 3 pl. p. Swallow, 527/6.
- Swerde, sb.** sword, 260/6, 286/6.
- Swenene, sb.** dream, 946/2.
- Swye, sb.** [turbo] sway, whirl, 116/3.
- Talent, sb.** appetite, 262/6.
- Temperour, sb.** [temperamentum] temperament, 758/6.
- Tempeste, vb.** 2 sp. agitate, 212/5.
- Temporele, adj.** temporary, 20/4.
- Tene, sb.** vexation, 218/3.
- Theder, adv.** thither, 580/6.
- Threschfold, sb.** Threshold, 183/6.
- Thretyng, ppl.** menacing, 636/4.
- Thryst, sb.** thirst, 570/7; **þrist**, 187/5.
- Thristen, vb. inf.** thirst, 367/7.
- Thritty, num.** thirty, 300/3.
- Thurgh-out, prep.** through, 593/4.
- Tille, vb. inf.** [adipiscor] reach, 635/5.
- Tired, 3 s. pt.** tore, 571/2, 571/4.
- To, adv.** furthermore, 376/1.
- Togidres, adv.** together, 556/1, 566/7.
- Tomorn, sb.** to-morrow, 952/4.
- Tone, þe tone,** that one, 188/6, 755/7.
- Tonnes, sb. pl.** barrels, 183/5.
- Toome, adj.** empty, 34/5.
- Torne, vb. inf.** turn, 992/6; **Torneþ**, 3 sp. 897/2; **Torne**, 2 sp. subj. 855/5.
- Topere, þe topere alle**, all the others, 287/3.
- Totere, vb. inf.** tear to pieces, 353/8.
- Tragedenus, adj.** tragedian, 182/7; **Traadien**, sb. 408/3.
- Transfounded, pp.** [transfunditur] transferred, 718/3.
- Travaile, vb.** 3 pl. p. labour, endeavour, 337/1, 444/6; ppl. 347/8, 587/2.
- Traytores, sb. pl.** traitors, 90/4.
- Traytouriȝ, adv.** treacherously, 95/6.
- Tresour, sb.** treasure, 883/7.
- Trest, v. Trist, vb.**
- Treten, vb. inf.** treat, 582/5; **Tretyd**, pp. 819/2.
- Trist, sb.** trust, 136/4, 875/6.
- Trist, vb. inf.** trust, 199/4, 1000/5; **Trest\***, 872/6; **Trist**, 2 sp. 181/3, 203/5; **Trist**, 3 sp. 224/8; **Trist**, 3 pl. p. 121/8.
- Trone, sb.** Throne, 116/2.
- Trouble, adj.** troubled, 155/6.
- Trowþe, sb.** truth, 155/6; **Trouthes**, pl. 877/6, 878/2.
- Turbeleth** vb. 3 sp. troubleth, 843/5.
- Tweyn, sb.** twain, 484/5, 612/5.
- Twynne, vb. inf.** twist, 637/5.
- Tyd, vb. inf.** happen, 942/2.
- Tyllear, sb.** [cultur] husbandman, 831/1.
- peef, sb.** thief, 29/7, 260/8.
- Penne, adv.** thence, 27/7.
- Penke, vb. inf.** think, 441/6.
- Perfore, for that:** I am perfore, I am of that opinion, 327/8 (v. *Introd.*, *Chap. on Language*).
- pewes, sb. pl.** virtues, 11/6, 765/4; [mores] customs, 777/1.
- pilke, adj. s.** that, 157/6, 286/2; pl. those, 95/5, 219/7, 232/1, 236/7, 569/4.
- pinketh, vb.** 3 sp. seemeth, 139/8.
- þo, adv.** then, 16/5, 306/1, 689/1.
- pogh, conj.** though, 4/7, 12/3, etc.; **pogh so**, however much, 5/4.
- ponk, sb.** thanks, 295/6.
- porw, prep.** through, 66/5.
- pow, conj.** though, 855/3, 891/4.
- prest, vb. inf.** thrust, 254/6.
- prowe, sb.** instant, short time, 202/4, 688/7.
- Vnbetide, vb. inf.** [non evenire] omit to happen, 977/2.
- Vnbipoght, adj.** unexpected, 829/3; [inprovisus] unforseen, 830/6.
- Vnbore, pp.** unborn, 267/7.
- Vndercaste, pp.** [subiacebis] subjected, 420/2, 941/1.
- Vndirfolde, pp.** made submissive, 550/7.
- Vnderfong, vb.** 3 pl. p. undergo, 684/4.
- Vnderslide, vb. inf.** [sub pedibus egit] to be overcome, 71/2.
- Vndiscrete, adj.** [indiscreta] indistinguishable, mixed, 861/5.
- Vndo, pp.** ruined, 172/7; undone, 986/2, 987/6.
- Vneschuale, adj.** [inevitabile] inevitable, 834/1.

- Vnesed**, *pp.* [maestus] made sad, 215/7.
- Vnhight**, *pp.* impaired, deprived of beauty, 118/7; made foul, 639/2;
- Vnhight**, *adj.* [sordida] squalid, 153/7.
- Vnwhite** *sb.* defilement, dishonour, 255/5 (*v.* *Introd.*, *Chap. on Lan-*  
*guage.*)
- Vnhynde**, *adj.* rude, malicious, 98/3.
- Vniversele**, *sb.* universality, 914/2, 933/4; *adj.* universal, 934/1.
- Vnkouth**, *adj.* [inusatitum] unwonted, 162/3; unknown, 193/7.
- Vnkunnande\***, *adj.* ignorant, 317/7.
- Vnkunnynge**, *sb.* ignorance, 541/6; *adj.* ignorant, 622/3.
- Vnkyndely**, *adv.* [e natura] unnatu-  
rally, 415/5.
- Vnlliche**, *adv.* unlike, 337/3.
- Vnmerciabill\***, *adj.* unmerciful, 36/4.
- Vnmete**, *adj.* unequal, 5/7; undeserved, 776/5.
- Vnmyght**, *sb.* impotence, 389/8, 390/6, 391/4, 618/7.
- Vnmighty**, *adj.* weak, 392/5, 589/1, 623/4.
- Vnmyghtynesse**, *sb.* impotence, 435/4.
- Vnneþes**, *adv.* scarcely, 291/1, 667/6;
- Vnneþe**, 315/5, 978/1.
- Vnplie**, *vb. inf.* unfold, loosen, 119/5; unravel, 558/3; **Vnplied**, *pp.* 562/1.
- Vnquemen**, *vb. 3 pl. p.* displease.
- Vnrenomend**, *adj.* wanting in fame, 406/8.
- Vnright**, *sb.* wickedness, 99/1; in-  
justice, 999/1.
- Vnrightwisly**, *adv.* wickedly, 711/3.
- Vnsauled**, *adj.* [inanima] inanimate, 252/8; **Vnsouled**, 524/1.
- Vnselthe**, *sb.* misery, 32/3.
- Vnsely**, *adj.* unhappy, 684/3, 698/6, 699/5.
- Vnsped**, *adj.* unprofitable, 1000/7.
- Vnsuffisaunce**, *sb.* insufficiency, 363/2, 388/6.
- Vntemperature**, *sb.* intemperance, 623/4.
- Vnþrift**, *sb.* [indignos] unworthiness, 281/8, 759/4.
- Vnþrift**, *adj.* unworthy, 628/2.
- Vnþriftily**, *adv.* unworthily, wickedly, 704/2.
- Vnþriftyness** *sb.* [defectus] defect, 99/2.
- Vnto**, *prep.* until, 572/2, 899/6.
- Vntransmutable**, *adj.* [immutabilis] immutable, 750/4.
- Vntretable**, *adj.* [inexorabile] implacable, 314/2.
- Vnware**, *adj.* unaware, 317/7; *adv.* [insperato] unexpectedly, 671/7; [inopinatus] 830/6.
- Vnwarily**, *adv.* unexpectedly, 34/1; [citra spem] 763/6.
- Vnwelful**, *adj.* unhappy, 681/3; **Vnwilful**, 678/3.
- Vnwyst**, *adj.* unknown, 144/8, 199/5.
- Vnwit**, *sb.* [imprudentia] folly, 93/5; 220/5; ignorance, 429/5.
- Vnwittily**, *adv.* unwisely, 309/1.
- Vnyte**, *sb.* unity, 510/4, 511/6.
- Vp-so-down**, *adv.* upside down, 120/1, 202/8, 252/2, 382/7, 504/8.
- Vpbraid**, *sb.* misfortune, 62/6.
- Vttermeste**, *adj. sup.* uttermost, 650/4; [extimus] outmost, 745/1.
- Vailaunce**, *sb.* value, 824/4.
- Valour**, *sb.* value, 751/6.
- Variande\***, *ppl.* varying 317/5.
- Varienges**, *ubl. sb. pl.* [vices] changes, 203/3, 351/5.
- Vencused**, *pp.* vanquished, 807/4.
- Venym**, *sb.* [venenum] colouring matter, dye, 263/2; poison, 286/8.
- Verament**, *adv.* truly, 674/4; **Verray-  
ment, 829/5.**
- Vere**, *sb.* spring, 137/4.
- Verray**, *adj.* true, 143/8, 152/8, 226/6, 230/5, etc.
- Vitaile**, *sb.* victuals, 382/6.
- Voluptuosite**, *sb.* voluptuousness, 414/4.
- Voydaunce**, *sb.* contradiction, 547/7.
- Voyden**, *vb. inf.* banish, 152/5, 371/6, 402/7, 447/6, 856/5; avoid, 991/2, 992/4; **Voided**, *3 pl. pt.* [decederent] left, 89/1; **Voided**, *pp.* 152/6, 268/8, 367/5; taken away, 532/3.
- **Voys**, *sb.* voice, 236/1.
- Vulgare**, *adj.* of the crowd, popular, 803/6.
- Wake**, *vb. inf.* keep vigil, 569/5.
- Waloweth**, *vb. trans. 3 sp.* churneth, 153/4.
- Warly**, *adv.* warily, 812/1.
- Wasche**, *pp.* washed, 41/8.
- Wast**, *adj.* waste, useless, 70/7.
- Wawen**, *vb. inf.* walk, go, 988/6; **Waweth**, *3 sp.* 974/5.
- Wawes**, *sb.* waves, 123/4, 153/5, 179/7, 355/6, etc.
- Weder**, *sb.* weather, wind, 169/8; **Wedres**, *pl.* 522/5, 522/8.
- Weie**, *vb. inf.* weigh, 297/1; *i-weie*, *pp.* 138/2.
- Wele**, *sb.* happiness, 71/4, 167/5, 214/2.
- Wele**, *adj.* well, 139/9.

- Welefull**, *adj.* happy, 216/6, 219/1, 227/6, 676/6, etc.  
**Welfulnesse**, *v.* **Wilfulnesse**.  
**Welthful**, *adj.* wealthy, 183/2.  
**Wende**, *vb. inf.* go, 27/6, 47/5, 178/6, 225/2, etc.; [sollicitent] stir up, 52/4; [voluat] turn, 52/8, 179/8;  
**Wende**, 3 *pl. p.* 219/8; **Wende**, 3 *pl. pt.* 65/6; *i-went*, *pp.* 58/7, 212/z.  
**Wenen**, *vb. inf.* think, 449/5; **Wenest**, 2 *sp.* 148/4, 218/4; **Wenen**, 3 *pl. p.* 66/8, 900/5; **Wende**, 2 *s.pt.* 367/1; **Wende**, 3 *s.pt.* 274/3; **Wend**, 3 *pl. pt.* 65/6, 65/8.  
**Wepyngly**, *adv.* tearfully, 565/6.  
**Were**, *sb.* doubt, 319/8, 395/4.  
**Were**, *vb.* 3 *pl. p.* wear, 352/2.  
**Werneth**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* refuseth, 35/7; **Werned**, *pp.* 198/5.  
**Werre**, *sb.* war, 323/3.  
**Weven**, *pp.* woven, 65/2.  
**Wexen**, *sb. inf.* grow, 170/2, 843/1; **Wexeth**, 3 *pl. p.* 152/2; **Wexen**, 201/4, 519/7; **Waxen**, 119/6; **Wax**, 1 *s.pt.* 38/3; **Woxe**, *pp.* 55/8, 135/4.  
**Weyk**, *adj.* weak, 603/7; **Weik**, 663/3.  
**Weyne**, *sb.* wain, 720/5.  
**Wheder**, *adv.* whither, 328/6, 329/1.  
**Wher**, *conj.* whether, 74/1, 85/4, 129/1, 179/1, etc.  
**Whette**, *vb. inf.* whet, 7/4.  
**Whilare**, *adv.* formerly, 483/3 142/2, 143/7 [jam dudum], till now, 457/3.  
**Whilom**, *adv.* formerly, 32/1, 51/1, 381/8, 918/1.  
**Wight**, *sb.* weight, 466/5; **Wiſte**, 538/2.  
**Wilfullye**, *adv.* eagerly, 398/4; [voluntaria] willingly, 550/7.  
**Wilfulness**, *sb.* happiness, felicity, 64/4, 148/8, 155/1, 165/5, 193/8, 197/8, 198/8, 206/1, etc.; **Welefullnesse**, 213/4; **Welfulnesse**, 220/7, 225/6, 560/7; [voluntas] will, 528/1.  
**Willen**, *vb. inf.* to wish, will, 93/1; 99/1; **Will**, 3 *sp.* will go, 518/7; **Wol**, 3 *sp.* 166/2, etc.; **Wolde**, 1 *s.pt.* 38/7, etc.; **Wolde**, 3 *s.pt.* 14/7, 14/8, 15/1, etc.; **Wolden**, 3 *pl. pt.* 754/5, 343/5, etc.; **Nold**, neg. [Ne wold] 3 *s.pt.* 23/3, 219/3, etc.  
**Wilneth**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* desireth, 401/1, 605/3; **Wilneth**, 3 *pl. p.* 498/5, 781/1; **Wilned**, 2 *s. pt.* 361/8; **Wilned**, *pp.* 92/5.  
**Wirchinge**, *vbl. sb.* working, 509/7.  
**Wissen**, *vb. inf.* guide 60/7.
- Wit**, *sb.* skill, knowledge, 1/1, 304/3, 245/5; understanding, 145/3, 292/5; mind, 148/1, 170/3, 204/3, 300/2; 451/6, 481/5; Sense (physical), 930/3; **Comyn Wit**, sense (physical), 913/7, 912/2; **Wittes**, *pl.* thoughts, 170/2, 205/5, 266/7; senses (phys.), 344/8; **Comuné wittes**, senses (phys.), 906/1, 906/6, 913/4.  
**Wite**, *pret. pres. vb.* to know, 91/1, 91/6, 191/2, 204/4; **Wot**, 1 *sp.* 5/3; **Woot**, 298/1; **Wost**, 2 *sp.* 144/4, 514/4, 856/4; **Woot**, 2 *pl. p.* 75/5, **Wetyn**, 107/4; **Wiste**, 1 *s.pt.* 124/6, etc.; **Wiste**, 2 *s. pt.* 328/5, etc.; **Wist**, 3 *s. pt.* 575/1, etc.; **Wite**, 3 *sp. subj.* 453/4; **Wityng**, *ppl.* wityng pe kyng, [rege cognoscente] the king, knowing this, 84/8; **Wist**, *pp.* 227/1; attributed 772/7; **Wot**, *imper. s.* 588/1.  
**Wytyng**, *sb.* knowledge, 624/1.  
**Witen**, *vb. inf.* [imputare] blame, 205/8; **Witej**, 3 *pl. p.* 110/4.  
**Witles**, *adj.* [effeto lumine mentis] senseless, 54/3.  
**Witnes**, *vb. imper. s.* look, 6/4; **Witnesse**, *opt. subj.* bear witness 80/5.  
**Wipholdyn**, *pp.* held back, 1/3, 219/8.  
**Wipouten-forth**, *adv.* outside, 86/8.  
**Wipseyne**, *vb. inf.* contradict, 15/5; deny, 92/4; **Wipseiden**, 3 *pt. pt.* 825/3.  
**Wipstonden**, *pp.* withheld, 154/2.  
**Witty**, *adj.* clever wise, 208/1, 304/4.  
**Woo**, *adj.*, sad, 579/4.  
**Woo**, *sb.* woe, 32/6, 71/4, 167/5, 172/5.  
**Wode v. Woode**.  
**Wodes**, *sb. pl.* woods, 565/8.  
**Wondreth**, *vb. trans.* 3 *sp.* causes to wonder, 723/4.  
**Wondir**, *adj.* wondrous, 4/2, 8/1, 10/4, 22/5, etc.  
**Wondirly**, *adv.* wonderfully, 172/4 459/1, 461/2, etc.  
**Woned**, *pp.* accustomed, 76/5, 279/3, 569/5, 692/2.  
**Woode**, *adj.* [rabies] raging, 71/5, 642/5, [turbidus] 153/3, 230/3, mad, 264/6, 322/3, 630/7.  
**Woodnesse**, *sb.* fury, 636/5.  
**Worchen**, *sb. inf.* work, 631/4, 631/6, 824/7; **Worcheþ**, 3 *sp.* 779/2, 780/2.  
**Worchere**, *sb.* worker, 701/5.  
**Worhyng**, *vbl. sb.* working 927/1, 929/3.  
**Worth**, *vb. imper.* be, **Worth vpon**, mount upon, 181/1.  
**Worth**, *sb.* consideration, Take in

- worth**, take into consideration, 164/3.
- Wraste**, *vb.* 3 *pl. p.* wrench, 211/7; **Wrast**, *pp.* turned, twisted, 155/7.
- Wrecchidhede**, *sb.* wretchedness, 633/3.
- Wretched**, *adj.* wretched, 211/7.
- Wreke**, *pp.* avenged, 15/3.
- Wreth**, *adj.* wrathful, 704/5.
- Wreppe**, *sb.* wrath, 638/2.
- Wrieng**, *ppl.* turning, 35/7.
- Wrongfulhede**, *sb.* wrong, injury, 698/7.
- Wrongwise**, *adj.* wrong, 418/6.
- Wrongwisly**, *adv.* wrongly, 703/4.
- Yates**, *sb. pl.* gates, 569/6.
- Ydel**, *adj.* idle, 823/4; **In ydell**, futile, 898/1.
- Yelde**, 1 *sp.* yield, 77/4.
- Yemeþ**, *vb.* 3 *sp.* guardeth, 142/6, 766/4, heedeth, 837/7.
- Yen**, *v. Eyen.*
- Yerde** *sb.* [virga] twig, 355/1.
- Yere**, *adv.* there, 126/7.
- Yeres**, *sb. pl.* ears, 236/3.
- Yerys**, *sb. pl.* years, 810/2.
- Yeure**, *sb.* giver, 479/3.
- Zeuen**, *vb. inf.* give, 504/4; **Yeueþ**, 3 *sp.* 410/6, **Zeueþ**, 411/2, 432/4, **Yefeth**, 431/1; **Zeouen**, *pp.* 768/2, **Zeuen**, 530/3.
- Yhen**, *sb. pl. v. Eyen.*
- Yghe**, *sb.* eye, 812/3, 992/5.
- Yle**, *sb.* isle, 30/1, 402/1.
- Ynow**, enough, 86/3, **inow**, 260/2; **inogh**, 326/2, 825/1.
- Zok**, *sb.* yoke, 168/2, 310/3.
- Zong**, *adj.* young, 183/3.
- Yongly**, *adj.* young, 39/6.
- Yren**, *sb.* branding iron, 89/3.
- Ysshue**, *sb.* issue, 215/4, 215/6.
- Yuer**, *sb.* ivory, 129/4.

## INDEX OF PROPER NAMES

- Achileus**, Achelous, 815/1, 815/5.  
**Affryk**, Africa, 276/2.  
**Albyn**, Albinus (Consul 493 A.D.), 85/5.  
**Alcibiades**, 424/6.  
**Alecto**, Alecto, 8/5.  
**Anastasius** (Emperor 491–518), 16/2, 17/1, 21/1.  
**Anaxagoras** (Grk. Phil. b.c. 500–428), 67/1.  
**Antecrist**, Antichrist, 14/3, *gen.* 13/7.  
**Anteus**, Antaeus, 816/1.  
**Antonius**, Antoninus. Chauc. has ‘Antonius.’ He is Emp. Caracalla, on whom Septimus Seuerus conferred title Antoninus, 397/4.  
**Arcturus**, 720/3.  
**Aristotiles**, Aristotle, 424/1, 828/1, 828/6, 953/5, *gen.*; **Aristotile**, *dat.* 954/1.  
**Armanye**, Achaemenia, 835/2.  
**Arpyas**, Harpies, 813/4.  
**Arrianes**, Arians, 21/8, 23/1, 23/6, 24/8, 25/7.  
**Artyk**, Arctic, 788/4.  
**Athenes**, Athens, 126/6; **Athenus\***, 918/1.  
**Auster**, 202/1.  
**Autumpnus**, Autumn, 791/6.  
**Basileus**, Basil, 87/3.  
**Boecius**, Boethius, 2/1, 15/7, 16/3, 18/5; **Boece**, 26/5.  
**Boetes**, Boötes, 720/5.  
**Brutus**, 311/6.  
**Busyrides** [Lat. *Busiridem* (*accus.*)], Busiris, 275/5.  
**Cacus**, 816/5.  
**Calliope**, 8/2, 568/5.  
**Campanye**, Campania, 84/1.  
**Canio**, Canius (*v.* Seneca: *De Tranquillitate Ch. XIV*), 67/6.  
**Cato**, 763/1; **Katoun**, 311/7.  
**Catullius**, Catullus, 372/4.  
**Caucasus**, 293/7.  
**Centaurus**, Centaurs, 813/3.  
**Cerberus**, 569/5, 814/1.  
**Chaucer**, 5/1.  
**Christ**, 6/8, 7/1, 16/1; **Christes**, *gen.* 6/3, 6/7, 14/1.  
**Circes**, Circe, 658/6, 659/1, 663/2.  
**Conigast**, Conigastus, 81/6.  
**Constantinopill**, Constantinople, 24/1.  
**Cresus**, Croesus, b.c. 560–546, defeated by Cyrus at Sardis. *v.* also Herod., i, 87, for story of his deliverance from death by burning, 181/6.  
**Cupide**, Cupid, 7/4.  
**Cypriane**, Cyprian (*v.* Cassiodorus, Epist. V, 40, 41), 85/8.  
**Cyrus** (*v.* Cresus), 181/7, 181/8.  
**Decorat**, Decoratus, Quaestor c. 508 (*v.* Cassiod. Ep. V, 34), 373/8.  
**Dydalus**, 558/3.  
**Dyomed**, Diomede, 814/3.  
**Englisse**, 4/5, 5/2.  
**Epicurus**, 843/4; Epicures, 64/1.  
**Erudice**, Eurydice, 567/2, 572/8.  
**Erynus**, Hermus, 503/2.  
**Esperus**, Hesperus, 117/3, 322/2, 789/1.  
**Etna**, Etna, 267/5.  
**Eufrates**, Euphrates, 835/1.  
**Eures**, Eurus, 228/3.  
**Euripes**, Euripides, 416/6.  
**Euripys**, Euripus, 171/2.  
**Euanderus**, *gen.* Évander’s, 816/6.  
**Fabricius**, conqueror of Pyrrhus Censor in b.c. 275, 311/6.  
**Gaudencius**, Gaudentius, 88/2.  
**Gower**, 5/5.  
**Gregor.**, Gregory (St. 540–604), 29/1.  
**Heleyne**, Helen, 810/1, 810/4.  
**Hercules**, 275/7, 726/7, 813/1, 815/2, 815/3, 816/3.  
**Indus**, 504/5.  
**Ierom**, Jerome (St.), 6/4.  
**Jone**, John I (Pope 523–526), 24/3 27/3; **John**, 29/6

- Jubiter**, Jupiter, 183/5.  
**Julius**, 763/4, *v. note.*  
**Justyne**, Justin I (Emp. 518–527),  
 24/6.
- Kanyus**, Canius, 97/1.  
**Katoun**, *v. Cato.*
- Libye**, Libya, 816/1.  
**Lucanus**, Lucan (allusion to his  
 'Pharsal,' I, 126), 762/6.  
**Lucifer**, 332/3, 789/3.  
**Lumbardye**, Lombardy, 19/4.  
**Lyde**, Lydia, 181/6.
- Marchus Tullius**, Cicero, 293/5, 884/3.  
**Marmoryk**, Marmaric, 659/7.  
**Megare**, Megaera, 8/5.  
**Mercurie**, Mercury, 661/3.  
**Myleyne**, Milan, 26/7.
- Naricius**, *adj.* Neritian, 658/2 ;  
**Naryce**, 661/1.  
**Nero**, 12/1, 284/2, 286/2, 385/1, 397/1,  
 398/4.  
**Nonius**, 372/5 (*v. Catullus*, Carm.  
 LII).
- Oamenon**, Agamemnon, 810/1.  
**Omere**, Homer, 845/1.  
**Opilioun**, Opilio, 88/2.  
**Orpheus**, 565/5, 571/5.  
**Ovide**, Obid, 866/5.
- Papynian**, Papinianus, Roman Jurist  
 put to death at command of Caracalla, 397/5.  
**Parthus**, Parthians, 294/1.  
**Paule**, Æmilius Paulus, 182/5, 182/6,  
*v. note.*  
**Paule**, St. Paul, 13/2, 13/5.  
**Paulyn**, Decius Paulinus (Consul 498  
 A.D.), 85/1.  
**Pavie**, Pavia, 26/6, 26/8.  
**Pene**, [Poeni] Libya, 352/2.  
**Perymenides**, Parmenides, 563/5.  
**Perse**, Perse III, 182/5, *v. note.*  
**Petir**, Peter (St.), 13/2.  
**Phebus**, Phœbus, 201/1, 285/2, 321/6.  
**Pictagoras**, Pythagoras, 108/2.  
**Plato**, 63/5, 63/6, 77/6, 78/3, 457/4,  
 539/5, 540/1, 564/6, 634/6, 956/5,  
 957/1, 957/7, 965/2.
- Poliphemus**, 811/6, 812/2, 812/4.  
**Pompeius**, Pompey, 763/2, *v. note.*
- Ravenne**, Ravenna, 27/4, 28/6 ; **Raven**,  
 89/1.  
**Regulus**, 276/1 (imprisoned by Carthaginians B.C. 255).  
**Rome**, 10/1, 16/4, 16/7, 17/4, 18/1,  
 22/1, 85/1, 294/8.  
**Romeyns**, Romans, 17/8 ; **Romeynes**,  
*gen.* 294/6.
- Saturnus**, Saturn, 593/7.  
**Senek**, Seneca, 67/6, 397/2, 398/3.  
**Socrates**, 63/7, 67/3, 94/1.  
**Soran** (*v. Tacitus*, Annal. XVI, 23),  
 Soranus, 67/7.  
**Stoycienus**, Stoics, 64/1, 918/3.  
**Symachus**, Symmachus, 28/1, 29/6,  
 207/5, 210/3.
- Tagus**, 504/1.  
**Tantalus**, 570/7.  
**Tessiphone**, Tisiphone, 8/4.  
**Theodoricus**, Theodoric, 16/6, 17/3,  
 18/1, 22/5, 29/5.  
**Thimeus**, Timaeus, 457/5.  
**Tholome**, Ptolemy, 290/3.  
**Trangwyle**, Triguilla, 82/1.  
**Troye**, Troy, 810/3.  
**Tycius**, Tityus, 571/1.  
**Tygris**, Tigris, 835/1.  
**Tyle**, Thyle, 402/2.  
**Tyresyes**, Tiresias, 866/4.  
**Tyryen**, Tyrian, 263/2 ; **Tyriene**, 385/2,  
 428/2.
- Ulices**, Ulysses, 661/1, 811/3, 812/1,  
 812/6.  
**Ursa**, 788/3.
- Venus**, 7/5.  
**Verone**, Verona, 102/8.  
**Vesene\*** [Vesaeuu], Vesuvius, 72/2.  
**Vlcane**, Vulcan, 30/1.
- Yaoun**, Ixion, 570/6.  
**Ydra**, Hydra, 726/6, 814/5.  
**Ynde**, India, 293/8, 401/8, 660/6.  
**Ytalie**, Italy, 16/6.
- Zeno** (founder of the "Eleatici philosophi," b. 488 B.C.), 67/4.  
**Zephirus**, Zephyrus, 201/7.

## APPENDIX

THE Printed Edition of 1525 has the following prose commentaries:

(1) After Stan. 4 of Translator's Prologue to discuss the "Antechristes lay."

Misterium iam operatur iniquitatis / ut qui tenet iam teneat donec de medio fiat. ¶ Novv sayth sent Paule vvorchet the mystery and forme of antechristes vvickednesse, vvych antechriste shal be leke to hym / vsynge none other lave but vvylfulness / ledynge hys lyfe in lustes / fyndyng occasions for to destroy al the good and vertuos / cruel and ful of vnkyndly affections draying to hym all them that be leke to hym in foule conditions.

(2) To introduce M. I., B. I.

¶ Reson and intelligens purely consydered in kynd of ther vvorching haueth them selfe euery agen other / as practick and theoryk / or as actyf and contemplatyf. And al tho the vvorchyng of reson leke to practys in ordre and processe in vs that vseth processe go before intelligence as practycke goyth before theorick / and actyf before contemplatyse / yet in vvorthisnes and also in perfection of blesfulhed / intelligens sormounteth and ys souerayn to reson. ffor the same treuthes that reson seketh and findeth by discours / thes pure blisful spirites / vviche ben called intelligences, feyth and knoueth perfectly in the mirour of eternal lygth / that ys goddes sonne withouten any discourse of reson. And moche more viche ne may not be perceued here of ous in thyss pilgremage. But rygth as a good practiser by exercise of labur and experiens of hys craft / may deserue to be made preuy of soteltes of hys crafte / and be made a master / rigth so a soule coniuned to bodily mater / may by his good labour of discours / deserue to attayn to be made preuy by intelligence of all the same trouthes on hye in blisse that thes blesful spirites haueth of ther firste creation.

¶ By nature of the resonabelte of mannes soule / viche resonabelte is the forme substancial of the selfe soul / ther shuld not be denyd hem that he vvolde desyre. And þat may be scheued by thyss skyle.

¶ The soule vhos forme substancial ys reson or resonabilte / he may of proper kynde noȝt desire but resonable, for yf he other desired / he vvere vresonable. And yf he desyre but that ys proper to hem of kynde / yt may not of reson be denyd hym. But hove ys hyt that a soule coniuned desyreteth ofte other than resonable / Ther be ii causes. One ys for some soules for the intemperance and bosceyuenesse of ther material body fayleth in discours. In other that haueth clere discours yet sensualite vych is the flesly part of the soule replyeth ever a-gen this discours of reson / askyng hys lustes as proper to hys kynde. And togth he be never so ofte answered and concluded / yet euer he resorteth to hys first askyng hauyng no regarde to al the resones that may be made agenste hym. Rigth as a man that fayleth discours whom men calleth a mad man / tongh a man make to hym never so gret resonys / yet ys he not answered / he feleth them not / but euer he resorteth to that he firste began.

¶ Thys importunat pressyngne of sensualite of suche unresonalbe replicationcs encombret so the reson that he leueth the true ende that he had traueled for by discours and entendethe to the luste of sensualite desyryng thinges that be vresonable / vvych desyre yf yt vvere grounded in sensualite vych is changeable / yt schulde anone bryng the soule into endles mischief, for ther may no thyng stand kyndly that contrarieth his avne kynd. Ne a resonable spirite though he be moveable in vworking and in affectioun yet of propre kynde he may not vvyl contradiction / that ys to sey nove thyss and nov the contrary, for then lie erred agen reson. So then a soule desyryng that thyng

that ys vnresonable and consequently to hys destruction / by the by gourne hyt ys oftentyme denyed hym, vherfore he falleth ynto a peynful hevynesse because he lacketh that he desireth / or hath that hym lotheth. And vvere not that the sensualite bereth this peyn the mischief vvere endles. Vherfore the sensualite that ys changeable and lotheth thys peyn vylling to be deliuered therof / somtyme resorteth to [re]son forsakynge such vnsayleful desires and suffreth reson to haue his kyndly operations. And yf thys peynful heuynesse be moved in the soule and reson fully overcome then falleth a man in despere, and so some destroioth themself by vvyful deth and so continue in perpetual peyn without ende. Thus fel hyt of the first angel that desired undiscretly to be leken to god and for he migthe not haue hys desyre / he fel in peynful heuinesse. but in heuen may be no peyn / And he myght not vvyll the contrary to that he ones vvyld / he vvas so pure and simple of nature, vherfore vwithout remedy he vvas caste into mischef in the peyn of hel.

¶ So yt befel of this noble clerk Boyce / because he had that he vvold not / that vvas prison and other tribulation. And also he vwanted that he vvolde haue / that was hys estate in the cyte of Rome / his hovsc / bokes / and his other goodes / presens of his vvyffe and children and hys other frendes vvherof he vvas wrongfully spoyled and put out of hys cyte / exiled as a traytor / he fel into a peynful heuynesse and made his compleynt sayng, "Allas I wrecche etc." But for as moche as thys heuynesse vvas but the mevyng of sensualite / viche of his nature ys changeable. And leste he fel into ful forgetyng of hymself and in the vtttermest mischief Reson conforteth the fleshly kynde / reducyng yt to knovlege of yt selfe / and so to forgete the heuynesse that he vvas so greuously peyned vvit for losyng of hys dignyte / vvyffe, children / and goodes a sore rehersed.

(3) To introduce P. i, B. I.

¶ ffortune vvas depaynted after fantasy of poetes a lady sittyng in myddes of a whyle viche her self continually torned aboute / she hadde ii visages / one brygth and another darke, and in bothe she vas blynde.

¶ Commentor<sup>1</sup> triuet assigneth iii causes why that philosophy was descryued apperynge into Boyce in lekenesse of a vvoman. The first cause is for thys name philosophia as vvel in Latin as in greke is put in the femynyne gender. The seconde cause is for righth as a vvoman noryssheth her childe vvit her mylke / rygth so philosophy noressed her discyples vvithe the subtilyte of her science.

The thyrde cause ys / for a vvoman is of kynde more tender and compacient for to comforthe a man in mischef. And sithe thys clerke vvas falle than in to mischef as him self semed / he induced philosophy in lekenesse of a vvoman to comforthe hym in a slakyng of hys heuynesse. She vvas also descrived reuerent / for she maketh the persons reuerent in viche she ys impressed. The yees of philosophy ben reson and understandyng / vherby philosophy ys kendlly perceyued.

¶ They brenne by desyre of connynge

¶ They shyne clere by possibilite of understandyng

¶ Her myghtes ben the uryt of her principles that neuer may be empted ne fully comprehended

¶ The chyre of her visage is perfection of doctryne, the colour ys fulnesse of trueth. for the hoole entente is for to perceive and comprehend trueth. She passed de manues age / for her truthes ben perpetual not subget to tyme that mesureth man hys age.

(4) To comment on l. 3, St. 1, P. iv, B. I.

¶ The couetous kyng Mida vvas made juge between Apollo and Pan by ther both assignment for to demen whether the harpe of Apollo vv[a]s more delicous / other the shal-muse of Pan. And so vhen he had herde them bothe /

<sup>1</sup> Nicholas Trivet (1258?–1328) the chronicler, wrote a Latin commentary "In librum Boetii de Consolatione philosophiae." There are two MSS. in the Cambridge University Library—MS. Dd, i, 11; MS. Mm, ii, 18.

he iuged that the shal-muse vvas svetter than the harpe vherfor Apollo hauyng indignation of his leude iugement / punisshede hym in that party that vvas semyng the cause of hys error / and gaue hym long asse eres.

¶ Morally Mida is euery vvordly man that more appryseth the luste and lekyng of the vvorlde than he doth any vvhit or gostely vvysedom. vherfore such men ben dulle and insensible to reson / leke to rude asses.

(5) To introduce P. v, B. I.

Hyt belongeth not a vvyse man to be moued vwith a fooles worde but rather to enforme / and teche and comfort hym / reducyng hym in to the bondes of reson. So vvas thys clerke by excesse of heuynesse / in maner of fallen into folly / forletynge the bondes of reson / viche philosophy calleth his kende contrey. for by resonabelte man is made leke to angeles and a very cytesen of heuen. vherfore lest thys painful heuynes sholde put hym in despere / philosophy conforsted hym and saeth that he is not exyle by the foresayd vvolence out of hys kende contre but by error of hys oone false deduction. for vhy as longe as a man kepereth the knowyng of hys kendly principles / he may not be compelled to leue the bondes of reson. but erron he may by his false deducion / by vyche he vveneth that he be necessed and constrainyd to that false conclusyon. But standyng the knoulege of these forsaed principles / he may retorne and examen hys deduction by labour or by techynge / and fynde out hys error and consequently retorne ageyne to the truth

¶ Multitude of astates in a lande or cyte is cause of grete confusion / for because that eurych of them coueteth to be gretteste / so that after hys vvyll may stande all the rule and gouernance

¶ Hyt betydethe ofte that lordes fortellen in destruccioun of other / that because of favour of the cominalte / by vvysedom of gouernance / or by excellencie of connynge or of wyt / ben preferred or lekely ben to be preferred into hye astates so that they may the more frely and sekerly vverken as they vvold as for to vwynne the astates that they desyren / or elles the astates that they hauen the more frely for to holde / other for to be preferred in excellens more singulerly than other.

¶ But in thys realme of resonabelte that specially be longeth to the court of heuen / ther ys but one lorde and souereyn, the vyche is God / principle and ruler of reson / vherfore in so muche as any man length after reson / in hovve moche he is subgett to the rule of goddes lavve. And in hovve moche he length after reson / and so moche he abydeth in hys contre and in hys proper cyte. In vvyche god alone ys prince and gouernour. Then ensueth thus / that yf a man be obesant and subiect vnto goddes lavve. he may not be exyle nor put out of hys contre. Boetius complayned hym of no gostly desese but only of harmes bodily / vvelyng of his prison and vwantynge of hys bokes. To vvyche complaynte philosophy answereth and seyth / that hym oughte more to complain the perturbation of hys spirit that so erred vvelynge the losse of his temporal goodes vvyche muste nedes at laste vterly be berafte hym. Also she saeth he erreth foule vvelynge for hys bokes / for vhy she had put in hys mynde the same thynges that maketh bokes dere and precious / sotel sentences of reson and of kende

¶ Si enim cuius oriundus sis patrie. The realme and the very contre of resonabelte is the blysse of heuen. And al the vyle vve vvorke after reson vve ben in our contre as holy and heuenlych by maner of vverkenge.

¶ The realme of athenes firste vaas gouerned by kynges / vyche regned the terme of lyues. And after that vvere ordeyned princes vyche regned comenly X. yeres / After thes vvere made princes annual that regned but one yere / and of them shulde be ix at ones and of thes here speketh Boetius.

¶ Romulus vwhen he had founded the cyte of Rome / that he myght make the cyte copyous of people / ordeyned thys lavve that ho so vvoldode bylde in that cyte / he shuld never ben exyled after for no maner trespace.

(6) To introduce P. vi., B.I.

Here before hath philosophy enquiered the qualyte and condition of the

greuance that thys clerke vvas in. Now here she begynneth to enquire the rote and the original cause / viche stoudeth specially in iii thinges, one because he sorved vnskyfullly that is to sey out of mesure the losse of his temporal goodes. The second stode in error of false opinion trouyng that vvycked myghty men to the vworld vvere by myght of vvickednes vvelful. The thyrde that he troued the enterchangynge of fortune by vyche often tymes the good ben depressed and the vvicked resed / vvas without rule of goddes purueaunce. So the very ground of al hys heuynes / vvas ignorance or elles more verely to sey forgetyng of diuyn gouernance / as touchyng the kende of man / viche error he vvas fallen in / by false deduction fro hys firste principles for he graunted vvel that god was maker and gouernour of al. but because that he suffered de vvycked folke to execute ther malyce upon the goode / viche execution is very open vvrone / to viche vvrone god that is perfyt rightuous by no vway may conseute: vverfore he supposed that had forleete the gouernance of man / committynge ther rule to fortunes vnstabletye fro knouen principles by very tru deduction / a man to exclusion of error by conclusions deduced of thys principle. So of thys principle that god gouerneth al as president to hys proper vvorke / viche Boyes confessed hyt ensueth vvel that god forleeth not the gouernance of man / but dresseth rightuously. To vyche conclusion thys clerke feled the contrary. The fallace of thys consequent of thys foule error then is founden in iii thinges. One in false deduction, a nother in defaute of knowynge verely the kynde of man. In thys hys deduction fayled that for cause vvetingly suffereth vvronges / he seyd other god consenteth the vvrone (viche is inconuenient) other he forleeth the gouernance / and suffereth in that vyse. but this foloeth not / for he suffereth vvronges knowyngly both by rightuous and by mercy and yet he consenteth not ne farleth not hys gouernance. By rightuesnes he may compelle no creature ageyn the principal properte of hys kende. But the properte of mannes vvel is for to be fre to good or to yuel / then shall not god bereue hym that liberte but rightuously suffereth hym chuse so that for hys goode chose he may deserue mede / and for hys bad chose he deserueth payn

¶ Yf god shulde bereue hym thys liberte then fayled mercy / for then muste he nedes utterly destroy hym / or put hym into endles punesmente: for bereuyng the principal properte of a creature / that creature is vtterly destroed. As bereue hete fro fyre / then ys yt no fyre. Right so byreue liberte from fre vvel / then ys yt no vvel. But sych a spirit may not be destroyed. Yf he shulde lese hys liberte of vvel / he muste then anone be put in to endles punishment / and thys muste avoyde mercy. Thys may be proued thus. Yf god lefte thys cruell vnpunished fynally / then myght he seme to conseute to euel / but that may he not no more ne may he leue ye finally vnpunished. Yf he byrafte hym hys liberte / then myght he never after deserue mede in releuyng hys punishment / and then muste he nedes be endles in payn / vwherfore of mercy and of rightuesnesse he suffereth vvickednesse. But here myght that god of hys goodnessse might lette the execution of suche malicius purpose. / No doute so he doth for the more partey for thogh malyce be executed / yet fayleth yt the ful entent of hys execution.

#### (7) To conclude M. ix., B. III.

¶ God gouerneth all thyng by reson of his purveyance the vvyche is reson perdurable and infynyte. Right as god by reson of perdurable beyng is cause of all thynges to be / and by reson of hys goodnesse / cause of all good / right so by hye eternal duration / he is cause of all durations and continuans temporal.

¶ By thys god is preued cause of thinges only of hys goodnesse / for ther is no foreyn cause that compelleth hym to vvorke / but the forme of souereyn good that ys hymself allone. Envy letteth communycation of goodes / but sith god is not envyous but souerenly good / he must by reson of goodnesse comen that good out-vvard to creatures.

¶ After holy scripture this vwordly mater that ys to say the iiii elementes in the fyrist begynnyng / vvas floyng togeder in confusyon, that is to seyn vwithouten ordre. vndystrict in sette and in place. And thys is marked by thys

texte of genesis. Terra / hoc est terrena materia erat inanis et vacua. The erthe that is the elementes vvyche he calleth erthely mater vvas veyn vvithouten ordre and voyde vvithouten production of any thyng.

¶ Also god byndeth the elementes in nombre and proporcyon / so that euerych kepeth his propre place / for alwey the ii nexte elementes accordeth in one qualyte and discordeth in ii. fyre and ayre accordethe in actes that knyteth or byndeth them togeder that dysioyne not. They discord in drygth and moysture / for fyre is drye and ayre is mostey this discord letteth them for to medle. Vvater and erthe accordeth in cold and discordeth in moysture and drythe / for the erthe is drye and the vvater moystey. Fyre and erthe accordeth in drouthe so that the erthe may not disioyne fro his place / ne the fyre fro hys and they discord in cold and hete / vvhetherfore they may not medle but euerych kepeth hys kendly place. Also the elementes that of qualiteys ben contrary / he byndeth together by intermene elementes accordyng in qualiteys vvith bothe / as fyre and vvater that ben very contrary in qualiteys / ben bounden togedres vvyth ayer that is intermene accordyng vvith fyre in heat and vvith vvater in moysture. Erthe and ayer ben knet togedres by vvater that ys entermene accordyng vvyth erthe in cold and vvyth ayer in moysture.

¶ for clere vnderstandynge of thys chapitre / hyt is for to knowv that he that shall helpe another / hit nedeth that he be myghty / vvyse / and vwell vvylled. For yf a thyng be asked of a man the viche he may not do ne can not / ne hys vvyl skylfully may not consent / of very ryght he may denie hyt / for no suche thyng ought to be asked.

¶ Therfore fyrist he sheweth the suffysance of god in myght / in as moche as he governeth all the vvorlde / not by grete labour as creatures gouerneth / but by perdurable reson. for syth he fyrst set the vvorlde in gouernance the naturel progression never varied / but haldeth hymself alvvay in the fyrst ordynance. Also in producynge of creatures he shewveth his benevolence and good vvyl to all that is consonant to reson. In that he shewveth that is to say in that he maketh the elementes as sede and mater vvhherof ben engendred all erthly thynges. And thus doth he not compelled of no foreyn cause as men ben compelled but only of the habundance of hys goodnesse / vvyche is and euer vvas perfetly in hymself / the vvyche goodnesse vvas so ententyfly habundant that it must nedes of reson be extended by comunyon.

¶ Also he shewveth the suffysance of hys vvysedom and connynge / in as moche as all that ever vvas / is / or shal be herafter / hyt is open to hym in hys eternal exampler or myrrour of hys mynde that all thynges comprehendeth presently at ones. And syth so vvyseley produceth yt in hys beyng / not only in general / but all partes in specyal absolutely vvithout defaut or nede of any exterior cause. And in thys is shewved the vvysdom of god in as much as he ys the formal cause of al thynges as in exampler. After that he hath shewvd the suffysance of god in myght / goodnesse / and vvysdom in gouernance of thes thinges in specyall / he commendeth the same suffysance in general in creation and gouernance of som other things of more deper conceytes of invvard speculation in that he shewveth and reherseth the sotel knytyng of the iiiij elementes / as ys before sayd.

¶ furdermore also in creation of the mene spirit of treble kend / vvyche som phylosophres as Plato and his foloers called anima mundi / the soule of the world for cause that plato savve his master Socrates empoysoned and put to deth for hys soth sayinge / he vvold not discover his sotel conceytes ne the preuytes of nature to the rude people / but put them under maner of parables / and prevy vvordes vvyche myght enstore hys vvysdom vnto the tyme that men vvolde be better vvylled for to lyre truth. The grekes at that tyme vvorshipped the sonne and called hym Apollo / god of vvysedom / fantasyngh that he caused all other thynges to be. Fro vvyche errorre Socrates dyssented and sayd that the sonne vvas a formed creature / vvhetherfore he vvas slain as is before sayd. And before hym Anaxagoras vvas exiled for the same cause. VVherfore Plato lefte the cyte of Athenes, and chose his habitation in a cyte or place named Acadencia. In vvyche place vvas often tymes erthe quakes. Thys place he chose because his dysciples shold euer leue in drede of ther lyues / vvyche drede

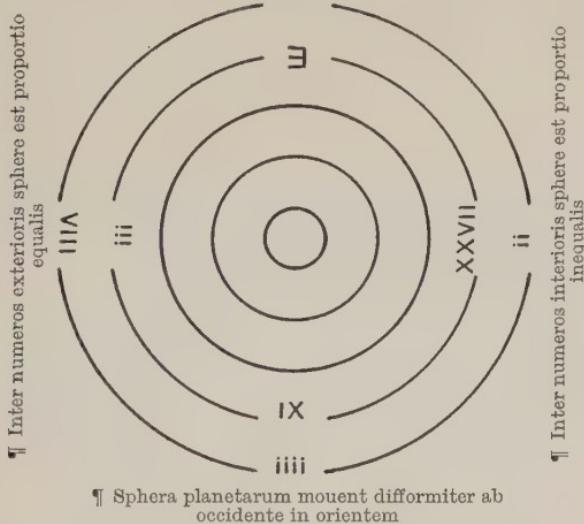
shold refrayn foule passions of the flesly lustes / and so for to avoyde the foule errore of Epicurenes that did put the ful felicite of man in fleshly delyte.

¶ Plato then spekyng of the gouernance of the vworld in hys boke named Thimeus / sayth thus.

¶ God of the same and euer abidynge mater and also of dyuers mater and varyable / medled and made the thyrde kende. Of the vvyche he toke fyrist one part, syth ii, syth iii and after iiiii and after viij and after ix and after xxvij. Of vyche he made the kende of thyss spyret of thyss soule. And then he fulfylled the internalles of thes nombres wvithe mene proporcions / as here after appere. j. dupla ii. sesq;alta iii sesq;tcia iiiii dupla viii sesq;octaua ix tripla xxvij

¶ Then thyss renge thus draen a-longe he dyuyded in ii partes of the vvyche one shold conteyne euen nombres and proporcions / and the other odde / so that the begynnnyng of eyther shold be j. Then eyther of thes nombres he broght into compase / and put the lasse circle vvythin the more. And the circle of the same nature that is to say of odde proporcions he torned fro the ryght hand to the lyfte hand. And the other of dyuers nature that ys to say of euen proportions / he torned fro the lyft hand to the right hand / thys may be perceyued by thyss fygure foloyng.

Primum mobile mouetur motu vniformi ab oriente  
in occidentem



¶ fordermore philosophia shevveth her petition resonable as to iii thynges asked. First he asked the knowledge of souereyn god. He asked also in thyss knowlege perseuerance. And laste he asked to be comforted by hys souereyn lyght.

¶ Fyrste she assigneth a reason for thyss laste petition / vvhher she saythe thou art clernesse / by vvyche al thynges ben beshened and clered. For perseuerence she assigneth the second reson and sayth the to behold hyt ys the ende to vvyche man vvas made. For thou art begynner of al thou berest and conteynest all / thou ledest ous by naturall inclination, thou art the path of the vway of love by vvyche vve shall retorne to the. thou art al the blysse or heuen / thou art the terme and ende of al our vwordly labour / vve seketh none other.

¶ The vnderstandingyng of thyss sotel conceyte ys thus. Vvhhere he sayth thyss saule is medled of the same mater and diuerse / he vnderstandeth that the saule of the vwordle vvas made of nature chaungable and of nature vnchaungeable. Nature vnchaungeable he calleth the same / and chaungeable he calleth

BOETHIUS.

B B

dyuerse. The evyn nombres for as moche as they may be dyuyded into euen / he calleth nature chaungeable / and the odde nombres that may not euenly be dyuyded / he calleth nature vnchaungeable.

¶ furdermore for to shewve that thys soule ys principle of doblenesse / that ys to say of vneformyte that ys in the fyrist meueable viche is the sterred ferment that clerkes calen primum mobile / And also of difformyte / by cause of his diuisibilitie. And eyther of thes partes he torned into compas in signe of circular meuyng. But the parte of odde nombres he torned fro the rigth hand to the lyfte hand in signe of vniiformyte of mevyng. And the other of euen nombres / he torned fro the left hand to the right / in signe of difformyte. The right hand of the vvorlde is the Este / the lyte hand the vveste / the hed is the south / and the fete is the north. The meuyng of the uniformyte he put to meue from Este to VVeste for so meueth the sterred sphere. The meuyng of difformyte / he called the speres of the vii planetes / vvyche is meued fro vveste to the este.

¶ Also hyt ys to considre that bothe thes nombres of odde and euen metith at one / that ys called vnyte / in signe of the onehed and the simplicyte of god at vvhom beginneth and endeth al creatures. vpon hooes stablenesse is grounded euery meuyng / vpon hooes vniiformyte / all difforne and variable thynges ben righted and reduced.

¶ Now then to the processe and conceypte of Boecius where he sayth thus. Thou god knettest the mene soule that ys the soule of the vvorlde of treble kende that meuythe all thyng. He calleth the soule of the vvorlde / the spyret that next vnder god extendeth to the meuyng and gouernance of the vvorlde / vvyche is mene betwene the stabilyte of god hed and meueablenessse of creatures. Of treble kynde. For fyrist he is partener of the kende of angeles viche ben of vniiforme kende / that ys to say of simple nature / pure / and vnmelled : viche Plato calleth the same and euer-abidynge mater / that ys to seyn of perdurable kende. The seconde part of hys kende / may be called the alliance to the erthly things vvyche ben varyable and corruptible and diuers in ther beyng. The thyrd part of his kende / is medelee of thes bothe / that ys his alliance to the spheres of sterres and of planetes viche ben in parte meueable and in parte vnmeeueable. they be meucable in ther kendlly cours / and vnmeeueable in continuance of ther cours and kepyng of the place and ordre vvyche they vvere set in at ther fyrist creation. Hovv he meueth al thyng the letter shevveth furdermore vwhere he saeth. Resoluynge it in membres consonant / that is to say / departyng his labour into the meuyng of al the viij spheres of sterres and of planetes. Hooes meuyng thogh they be discordant in ther cours / contrarius and diuers in effectes / yet be they so consonant togedres / that none letteh but rather righteth and dresseth euerych other. For the viii sphere meuyng vvestvvard rauesheth all the nether spheres and maketh them to meue the same vvay / vvhile ther naturel meuyng is estevarde. Also tho the effectes of the planetes ben dyuers / yet ther kendlly cours of meuyng is such that euerych tempereth other so that ther fall no confusyon in this vvorlde gouernance.

¶ Also this meuyng he dyuydeth into ii spheres or ii circles as is afore sayd. by meuyng of viche / ben gouerned the elementes vvith al ther transmutacions and al other thinges vnder the mone. And he retorneth unto hymself / by viche circular meuyng or vvorchyng he attaineth by similitude of natural perfection to the depe mynde of diuyne intelligence viche is the laste ende of nature simpliciter. VVithout other and after this circular meuyng by forme of like conuenience he tornethe heuen aboute / dressyng the effectes of al this meuyng after the souereyn exemplar of the hye purueance of god. Furdermore Boecius commendeth the might / the goodnesse / and the vysesdom of god / in makynge and gouernyng of erthly thynges / and specially in the disposyng of mannes soule vvhile he sayth in the texte thus. Thou auauncest or reyest soules and lesse lyues of creatures and by euenly or leke causes makest them able to lyfte cartes.

¶ When he hath soetely treted of the soule of the vvorlde / than goethe he to the soule of man and sayth that in maner leke as god hath made the soule of

the vvorlde of iii naturs / so hathe he made the soule of man. for fyrst he taketh a mater perdurable that is to seyn a nature immortal of the kende of angeles and joyneth it to a nature chaungeable and corruptible / that ys the sensualyte drawen of their corruptible fleshe. And of thes i resulteth the thyrde / vviche is in part dedly because of the body and also because of hys vnstablenesse / And in part vndedly / because of the perdurable nature of intelligence / vvhere of he is partener. Thys soule is dindyd into ii compases of the vviche one ys of perdurable nature that ys reson / and meueth kendly fro the right hand to the lyfte hand that is to say, he groundeth all his vvorkes vpon vertu / and so putteth them in perfet execution. But the other circle of sensualite meueth in contrary for he groundeth all his vverkes upon the fleshie / and so procedeth into vicious lustes. But the reson muste rauyshe the sensualite vvit hym in to the vvy of vertu, or elles muste they bothe torne into mischefe. And so tho reson be stired and distract by errour and rebellyon of sensualyte / yet must he retorne vnto hymself / behaldyng the excellencye of his nature / not resting ther proudly vvith Lucifer / but enserchynge and sekinge by thought and devote prayer the depe intelligence that is god. And there behald in the myrrour of eternal vvyssedom vwhat he ought to do, repressyng vvithe the fire of loue all vicyous meuynges. ffor why thou god hast made the soule able to hye cartes (that is to say) to be resed in heuen.

¶ Thou sovvest in heuen and in erthe. Fyrst he maketh the soule and putteth hyt into thys erthly body / therefore to encrece in meret and vertues. And syth vwhen they ben ripe / he taketh hem into heuen : And hovve forsothe the vertues that hymself hath planted in the soule / he hymself norysheth them vvythe fyry bemes of loue / And maketh them ripen into ful frute / and so retorne vp to hym fro whennes they toke ther beynge.

(8) To conclude M. xi, B. III.

¶ Nothyng elles do ye vwhen ye lere &c.

¶ An harpe vvel and lustly tuned by true accordes of musyke / al be hyt in that no vvyght toche hyt ne set hand thereto / yet conteyneth that harpe vvythin hem al songes and al tunes possyble to be songe or touched vpon the same harpe. Or elles myght not the harper fynde ther on that vvas not ther before. Right so in mannes soule ys conteyned al connynge / that of an erthly creature possyble ys be knowven. But hyt is stylled and in maner forgete / other more properly for to speke / forlete / vviche connynge by labour of resoun and exercys of lernynge ys founde out by lytel and lytel. right as a man that lerneth to harpe seketh out hys tunes.

(9) To conclude M. xii, B. III.

¶ As Ouyde in hys boke of Metamorphoseos maketh mention / And feynynge in maner a fable sayyng that Orpheus vvas a curyous harper dvvellyng in Trace / that vvas somtyme a provynce in the North syde of Grece. vviche Orpheus vvas the sonne of Callyope. He harped so lustely / that not only men vvere dravven by his melody / but also vvyld bestes for verry delyte forgete ther kendly corage of fersnesse. And not only thys / but he made ryuers for to stande and forestes for to meue and ren.

¶ This Orpheus had a vvyffe named Erudis / vviche a shepe herde named Aies vvoed and desyred. But Erudis refusyng hys loue fled thorgh a mede / and tredyng vpon a serpent she vvas envyned and ded and vvent to Hel. Orpheus soroyng for hys vvyffe and vvyllynge for to dra her oute of helle / purposed for to plesse the hye goddes vvith his melodie that they shold restore hym his vvyffe / but it auayled not. Than vvent he to helle / and as thys processe shevveth in the letter / so moche he plesed the goddes of helle vvith his melody that at last vpon a condition his vvyffe was graunted hym / so that he loked not vpon her / till that he vvere passed the boundes of helle. But vwhen he vvas nye the boundes / so muche he desyred for to see hys vvyffe / that he torned hym and loked vpon her / and anone she vvas gon agayn to

helle vvhher she vvas before. Thys fable<sup>1</sup> Fulgencius exponeth morally on thys vvyse.

¶ By Orpheus ys vnderstand the hyer part of the soule / that ys resonabeltye / enformed vwith vvysdom and eloquence. VVherfore he is called the sonne of Phebus and Calliope. Phebus of the grekes vvas called god of vvysedom. The same ys Apollo. Calliope is as moche to say / as goddes sonne and hyt betokeneth eloquence. So eurye vvyse man and eloquent in thys maner of spekyng may be called the sonne of Phebus and Caliope.

¶ Thys Orpheus by the swetnesse of hys harpe / that ys to say bestly men and sauage broght into the rule of reson. Hys vvyf Erudis betokeneth the nether parte of the soule / that ys affection / whos loue desireth Arysteus / that betokeneth vertu / for in such a man that ys vvyse and eloquent / vertu kyndly coueyteth to abyde. But thys affection refuseth vertu and fleeth thorgh the medovv of lustes of thys lyffe vvyche presseth more besely vpon such a man that hath such hablyte than vpon eny other / that ys more simple and vnlearned. So this Erudys / that is the affection / fleeth and refuseth vertu / drauyng to lustes of thys lyffe / she tredeth on the serpent / that ys sensualyte / vvych biteth so sore the affection / that she is the cause of deth and so this affection descendeth to helle / submittynge itself to noyous besynes of thys earthly thynges. But then Orpheus that ys intellect of the soule / vvylling for to draw his affection for such thynges / he castethe to plese vvythe his melody / the soucreyne goddes / that ys vvyth his vword and vvrytyng / tretheth and commendeth heuenly thenges / so that he myght by the sight therof / dravv hys affection fro vwordly vanyte. But this reysyng of the mynde is ful hard / for cause that hyt withdraweth many delyces / that letteth vertu, vverby a man must be reysed. And for cause he may not lightly leue thes delyces / he leueth that labour and goeth to helle / that ys to behaldyng of thes earthly thinges / seyng vvith vhat soroes and myscheffe they ben implyed / And in thys behaldyng / he feleth his affection releseyd. fro thys vwordly lustes / by thys couenante / that he loke not vpon his vvyffe / that ys to say / that tretyng of this vwordly wrechednesse / he cast not the ye of ymaginacion to the lustes therof / For yf he do / the affection yet tendre / and not fully fre fro these lustes / lightly vyl resorte ageyn to the same delyces / and so leseth he all hys labour.

¶ Hyt falleth ofte that such connyng men and eloquent / vvhenn they ben encombred vvyth vice and foule venemous desyres / in so much that they lotheu ther ovne vvicked leuyng / thogh they can make ryuers stande / that is / thogh they can vvith sotel suasyon of eloquence / make vinstable men floyng in vye for to be sad and stedfast in vertu. And dull men bestyall for to geue themself to gostoly besynes / yet can they not draen ther ovne affection out of ther lustes / ne refrayn the foule passyons that regneth vvythyn them self.

¶ Cerberus ys fayned portes of helle / and ys imagined a hounde vvyth thre heddes.

¶ These iii furyses after feynyng of poetes / ben iii godesse of helle and ben iii sisters named Alecco, Megner, and Tessiphona. And all the heres of ther hedes be serpentes. And they betokeneth iii vycses. Ire that desireth vengeance. Couetyce that desyreth riches and lechery that desireth lust. Thes ben called vengeresse / for continually they peyneth tho that vse them / and maketh them euer in drede and heuynesse. Thes furyses as tormented vvyth foule affections / by information of the vvysedom / soreth and vvepeth for ther synnes / and so forleteth the affection.

¶ Ixion coueyted Juno to hys loue and vvold haue oppressed her. Juno put a cloude betwene them bothe. And Ixion vvenyng to haue had Juno / dyd his lechery in the fore sayd cloude. And therof vvere engendred Centaurus. And for thys surfeit vvas demed to helle; vvhher he is continually turned in a vvhele. Juno betokeneth actyue lyffe that standeth in besynesse of temporal thynges and

<sup>1</sup> *Fulgentius* was a Latin grammarian who flourished during the first part of the sixth cent. The reference here is probably to his "Mythologiarum" which contained 75 myths briefly told and then explained in a mystical and allegorical manner.

therefore is she named step moder to Hercules. For that lyffe is enemy to a vertuous man. VVyth this Juno coueteth he surfeten : that in such thinges seketh delyte of blisfulnesse. Than by suche lyffe he falleth into derknesse of hys reson : that ys the cloude : vvherof ben engendred Centaurus that ben half men and half horse. For suche men ben in party resonable and in part vnresonable. Such one is continually torned in a vvhele in helle. For he that is giuen to temporel besynesse continually must enterchaungen vp and doune ; novv vwell novv vvoo, novv mery novv sorry, novv in prosperyte novv in aduersyte. But thys vvhele cesseth / vvhen a man by information of vvysesdom / thy vwordly loue forleteth.

¶ Tantalus as poetes feyneth slovv his owne sonne / and gaue hym to the goddes for to ete / vvherfore he vvas dampned into helle and standeth in vvater vp to the chynne : and an appel before hys mouthe and yet he is peyned for hunger and for thurst ; for vvhen he vvold ete of the appel ; or drynke of the vvater / they fleeth avvay from hym

¶ Tantalus betokeneth an auarous man / that for couetyce vvordly ryches, he forleteth all his natural affections, and sleeth his ovvne soule, and geueth hyt to the deuel forsvveryng hymself ; and vvhen hym nedeth ought to expende vpon hymself he had leuer suffer hunger and thurste then dymynuce the hepe of hys tresour. And leuer hath he be peyned endles ; then do thervvyyth any almes or geue hyt to the nedy.

¶ Ticius as eke is feyned vvold haue oppressed Laona Apollo hys moder, vverfore Apollo slevv hym / and caste hym into helle / vvhere contynuelle a grype tereth vpon his mawe.

¶ Tycius vvas a philosophre that gaue hymself to craft of dyuynation and Latona is called goddes of diuination. But by ofte deceytes and faylyng of his iugementes / he vvas in hymself confused and as it vvere ded for sorovve and so caste in the helle of suche vnrifthy besynesse ; vvhere the grype tereth vpon his mavve. The grype is a slovv beste in flight and such a soule that vseth craft of diuination ; tho he fynde hyt false neuer so often tymes yet vvyll he not leue it. VVherfore he geueth hymself al to ydelnesse, entydng to hys craft that is but veyn and idel. And so forleteth the true consideration of prudence for thys vncertente of diuination, and so the grype tereth vpon his mawe ; vven he vvexith a vvrecche ; nedy of all hys necessaries ; for cause of thys idel occupation.

¶ The iuge of helle ys called Radamantis / the wychc compelleth men in helle to knovlege ther trespasses. And he geueth them paynes after ther deseruyng. Me semeth that thys iuge may be called vvorme of conscience. vvychc demeth a man in his avvne hert / that he dothe not vvel ; forletyng hys gostly occupation ; and the loue of vertu ; for thys vvreched transitory lustes. And so long thys vvorme of consciens blyteth in the hert : tyl at laste : he putteth hym in despere : and so demeth that he may neuer amend his vnrifthy leuyngc ; ne neuer resorten to the loue of vertu / and so he demyth hym into endlesse myscheffe. And till this iuge geue a man leue he may neuer retorne hys affeccion fro thys vicious lyffe. For vwhythout hope no man may atteyn that he desyreth. But at last by good informacion / this iuge of despere releseth hys sentence, and then laboreth a man besely hoping to haue hys desyre. But thys hope is restrained by a condition / that he retorne not hys syght to hys soule affections / vnto the tyme that hyt be vvel purged ; for so long ys he vvyythyn the boundes of helle. And if so be that he retorne to hys affection / a none recordyngc vpon hys delytes / he is taken ageyne there he vvas before. Sunt nouissima nominis illius: peiora prioribus. For he that after despere ys turned efte sones into the same vycles / he falleth vvors in despere than he vvas before.

¶ Thys fable in specyal is here referred to Boecius. For beynge in prison / out of al vwordly lustes / he had clere sight and conceyt of the vnstablennesse / and the wrechednesse of this present lyffe ; for than harped he in helle / knovvyng by experience : that he myght not knovv in tyme of his prosperite / vvhyle that he harped in heuen. Therfore saeth he "Blysfull is that lyffe : that maketh a man to se and beholde vpon the vuelle of light. The vvychc vnybndeth and loseth the effection / from the heuy burden of worl[1]dly

wrecchednesse. The vvyche light he covvthe not se, standyng in prosperite. But for cause that he complayneth hym of his rather fortune Philosophy counselethe hym for to leue thes complayntes / and that he retorne not his gostly sight to his rather lustes. For al tho Boecius vvere not vicyous: yet as it semeth / he had ouermuch delighted hem hys prosperyte. The vvyche lyghtly and esely had fallen to hem; and telleth hem the peyn: by exsample of this present fable.

(10) To conclude M. vii, B. IV.

In thys chapitre philosophia confermeth her exhortation / by exsample of iii myghty men / of singular dedes that they had done. Agamenon, Vlixes, and Hercules. And for cause often tymes men escheweth grete actes for lacke of corage / vvyche corage is blemished or oppressed: by iii thinges in special. Therfore he reherseth of these vvarryours certen dedes / in vvyche they shevveth the myght of ther corage not hurt ne blemished by none of these causes. One thyng ys that often letteth and withdraweth the force of mannes corage / fro myghty and manly dedes / that ys tendrenes of herte and affection that he hath other to vwordly thinges vvyche he deliyeth vpon / other to vvyffe and children / kynred / or frenshyppe / vvych he keþeth not to desplesse / nether in any other thyng / that myght be cause of mornyng or heuynesse. But agenst thys carnalyte / he putteth the exsample of Agamenon. That vwhen he vvas saylyng tovvardes the sege of Troye / vwhen he came to the ile of Aulydes / hym lacked vvynde. Then vvas hit shevveth hym by vvyches and dynynours / that yf he wvolde haue vvynde: he must slee his daughter Ephigenie / and brenne her in sacrifice to the plesance of Dyane. And nott vvythstandyng that he loued his doghter passyng al thyng / yet in hope of victory / he put awy the tendrenes of faderly affection / and made hys herte ptytless to his dere doghter / and so sloo her in sacryfyse. And so had he vvynde to his vyll / and suyngly the victory as he desyred.

¶ The second thyng that letteth a mannes corage ys / vwhen he hath seyn many perishe for a certeyn purpose: vvych hymself desireth / and fevve or non atteyn it vvyth prosperity. Ageyn this abasshement / he putteth the second exsample of Vlixes, vvyche vwhen he had x yeres erred saylyng in the see after the destruction of Troye and suffered many nysse aduentures / and specyal in transformation and lesynge of his felloshippe by the cursed enchaunteresse Circes. Here he telleth how the grete gyant polyphemus vvyth one yee in hys frout / had denoured and dystroyed his people / and not vvythstanding the myscheffe that all his people had suffred yet Vlixes abasshed hym nocht / but vwayted vwhen this gyant vvas a slepe / and sodenly put out hys yee. And then vvas he syker of hym / that he myghte harme hym no more. And so he venged the morder of hys meyne.

¶ The moralite of this fable ys thys / Polyphemus ys as moche to say / as lesynge of fame & he that recketh not of hys fame / may vvel be called one yeid. For he regardeth not that ys to come ne that ys passed. but only to hys present lustes. But Vlyxes the vvyse man hath regarde both to that ys gon and to that ys to come & quencheth in hymself this one ye of thes present lustes. And thogh so be that all the vvorlde for the more part / by ravesshyng of this one ye / peresseth / following thes momentany lustes; and vnnethes any man ys that can or vvyll refrayn them. Yet Vlyxes the vvyse man, vvyll stoppe thys eye / and not excuse hym by the comen excuse of wreches saynge: Ho ys he that may withstonde hys desyres / syth so many myghty men and vvyse haue ben discomfete of ther lustes. And he vvyll myghtly represse thes passyons by good governance and so venge hymself vpon hys gostly enemy.

¶ The thyrde thyng that abasseth the corage ys cowardyse. VVhen a man holdeth hymself vnable to the labour that he purposeth / and hys myght vnsufficient and vnmete to resyste that: that vvythstandeth hys vvyll and entent. Agenste thys cowardyce / phylosophia inducethe the xii labours of the myghty man Hercules / vvyche semeth to every mannes hyryng ferre to excede the myght of eny man, yet nott vvythstanding Hercules abasshed neuer his corage, but myghtily performed his entent and purpose. VVherefore as Philosophie

concludeth he vvas rewarded vvyth a souereyn geft / and made a bryght shining sterre in the heuen aboue.

¶ By thes myghty mannes labours / is geuen to ous an exsample / that ther may no thing abashe the corage of a vvyse man / vwherby he sholde leue the labour of vertuous leuyng / no bodeley exercise in vertu shal not seme hym over hard to hys myght / but that he may performe hys entente and lust. So shal hys desire be enforced vvych desire and ful hope to heuenly joy.

¶ The fyrt labour the proud centaurus made he tame. Of thes centaurus is sayde / byforn / that Ixion gate them of a cloude / vvhene he vvolde haue oppressed Juno. But vvhath vvyse that Hercules tamed them / hyt is expressed by the commentor thus. vvhene that thes Centaurus in a certen tyme were come togredes in the mount of Pheloe to a play that vvas called Palestra / vvyche we calle vvrastelyng / Hercules so sore asset them in vvrastlyng that they bledde.

¶ Also another tyme Hercules comyng out of Spayne vvas logged in the den of Tyro Centaurus that vvas one of the cheffe masters. And as thys Tyro handled an aroe / vvyth vvyche Hercules had slayn a serpent the venemous aroe fell vpon his foote / and made hym a vvonde that vvas vncurable /. The thyrd tyme it fell that Hercules vvyth his loue Deianira tornyng toward his contre / come to the ryuer Neuenum<sup>1</sup> and vvhene he taryed for carryage of hys vvyffe Nessus Centaurus bade hym svvymme ouer byfore and he vvoid brynghe her after. And vvhene that Hercules vvas come to land / he loked after hys vvyffe / and he sawe Centaurus aboute for to oppresen her / and anone vvyth a venemous aroe he shet hym thoro the herte and slove hym. And thus he tamed the proud Centaurus.

¶ To the lytteral trouthe of thys tale Ixion that vvas called the fader of the Centaurus / vvas the fyrt that ordeyned horsemen for to ryde in Grece / and gadred of them a hundred and vvasted sore the contrey. And vvhene the rude people dyd see them so smartly prycyng in and out / they vvend hyt had been bestes / half hors and half men. And at last this myghty Hercules fought vwith them and destroyed them.

¶ By thes Centaurus geten of the cloude may be vnderstande suche men as ben exalted into hye estates / not by meret of ther vertues / but by fauour of lordshippe / and by ther vayn plesance. They ben half bestes and half men / bestly in their leuyng / raueners and extorcyoners and leke men in plesaunce to ther lordes. Hercules the vertuous shall spare none offence of ther hye astates / ne drede of ther tyrrany / but boldly repreue them of ther vyses / and make them to loke as men sholde.

¶ The second labour of Hercules vvas that he strepte the lyon out of hys skyn. The truthe of thys labour vvas thys. There vvas a passyng hugy lyon in the forest of Nemeas vvyche sone affrayed the people of the contrey vvyche lyon Hercules slove / and strept the skyn and bare vvyth hym in sygne of victory. By thys lyon is vnderstande / proude and fers tyrantes / that deliteth all in raven and pylng of the people / hauyng no pyte vpon the poure. Thes men a vertuous man sholde spoyle of their poure / and suffre none such to bere astate of office.

¶ The thyrde labour vvas that he shet the herpyas vvyth aroes.

¶ Lyncus put out the yees of hys sonnes / because they had accused ther stepmoder of adultery. VVherefore by iugement of goddes he vaas blynched hymself / and had certen foules aboute hym vvyth mayden hedes / that defoyled hys table and bare away hys mete. Thes foules Hercules slyve and drone oute of contrey.

¶ By thes Herpyas may vvel be vnderstande renners or ryders ouer the contre / couered vnder lordshyppe / as menstrelles and ioculers and such other / that cometh into householdes of worthy men / and eteth and deoureth ther vitelles / and but they haue also geftes / they vvyll defoule the table / despysyng the persons / and vvhene they ben passed / speke vyenously by a the household. Suche people a vertuous man shuld not cherish for fere

---

<sup>1</sup> Euenos v. Ov. Heroides IX. 141f.

of vvordest / but rebuke them of this foule maners / and so destroye that foule vycce and vnhonest vsage.

¶ The fourth labour vvas that he gate the golden apples fro the dragon. As lucanus feyneth Athlaus had vii dogliters vvyche had a garden full of golden apples / vvyche garden vvas taken to kepe to a dragon / that alvvay vvas vvakyng. But Hercules by crafte made thys dragon to slepe / and so bare avvay the apples / and broght them to Euristeus the kyng. By thes vij doghters of Athlaus / ben vnderstand the vij artes liberal. Thes damsels haue a garden / that ys the lybrary disperse amonges clerkes. Appel trees ben bokes / the appels ben sotel sentece of vvyssedom / vvyche the vvakyng dragon / that is the sensualyte of man hath to kepe vvyche is euer vvakyng to lustes and delytes / and so letteth the soule fro connyng. But Hercules the vertuous man oppresses hys sensualyte by good gouernance so that hyt letteth hym noght fro studey / and so by his good besynes he geteth the frute of all the vij science.

¶ The v labour vvas vvhen he bound Cerberus the foule hound of helle. Of thes Cerberus the fable is thys. Pirritous vvolde vvedde the quene of helle. And he called Hercules and Theseus and other myghty men to helpe hym. And vvhen they came to helle / leste Cerberus the portes shuld lette them of ther purpose / Hercules bounde hym vvythe a cheyne of adamant. The quene of helle may vwell be called vvordly vvorship / vvych pirritous desireth. But he taketh vvyse men to his counsel. And Cerberus vwith iii heddes Hercules byndeth / That ys pryd / auarice / and lechery. Thes iii hed synnes letteth a man to be vvorshipful / VWherefore the vertuous man byndeth and restreyngeth them vvyth a treble cheyne of vertues. And vvhen that the vyses be so repressed by vertues / a man may not fayle to be vvorshypful.

¶ The vi labour vvas that he made dyomede to be eten of his avvne hors. The fable is this. Diomedes kyng of Trace fedde hys hors vvyth mannes fleshe : vvherefore he vsed to slee his gestes for hys hors. But at last came Hercules and slyve hym / and made hys hors to ete hym. And fynally sloo the same hors. Thys Diomedes betokeneth a vvastour that pyleth and despoyleth the people / for to maynteyne his grete aray / vvych passeth the suffisaunce of hys astate. But a vertuous man shal besy hymself for to destroy such maner leuers / and compelle them for to leue by ther ovne good. But vvhen they may not continue vvythout rauayne and robbery / ther hors and ther aray bryngeth them to noght. So that of nede they must eue hyt and leue as they may,

¶ The vij labour vvas that he brent the serpent Idra. In the ryuer of Lerne vvas a serpent vvyth many heddes / and euer yf one vver cut off / ther vvere iii therfore. And vvhen that Hercules had shott hym and no thyng auayled / at laste he made aboute this serpent a hugy hepe of wood: and after set hyt afyre and so brent thys serpent. This fable is toched before and in part declared.

¶ The viii labour ys of Achilaus. The fable is thys. Hercules and Achilaus vvresseled together for the maiden Dianer / and vvhen Achilaus feled hymself at the vvorste / he torned hymself sodenly in to a serpent / and slypt oute of hys handes. And Hercules eftsones caught hym and vvas in poynct to vvery hym And then Achilaus torned hymself in to a bole. So Hercules anone toke hym and threvv hym to the ground and breke hys horne and he for shame lept into the vwater and hyd hym. The truthe of thys fable is thys. Achilaus is a ryuer betwene Grece and Calcedoyne. In thys Calcedoyne regned a kyng named Genus hose daughter Hercules ravesched. And comyng to thys ryuer vvhen he myght not pass hyt he stopped an arm of hyt and dryed hyt and so he passed vvyth hys loue. By this kynges dohter may be vnderstand vertu vvyche Hercules the myghty man comeith for to haue. Achilaus betokeneth the sensualite / whych in youth hyley vwithstandeth that vvoid be vertuous. But fyrst the sensualite as a serpent assaileth hym by many side vvays. And vvhen this myghty man hath ouercome all the serpentes deceytes / he torneth into a bole vwith ii hornes / Lechery and glottony. / But thys one horne of lechery / the vertuous man brcketh and vtterly destroyeth and then ys the sensualite

overcome. For the other horne of glotony vvytl lightly of a vertuous man be put under by good gouernance. So thys bole lepeth into the ryuer. The sensualite is repressed and heleth hymself by penance / and so vynneth the myghty man vertu to his loue.

¶ The ix labour is of Antheas the great geaunt / vvytch vvas geten of the erthe / and euer as he toched the erthe / he renued his strength vvyche geaunt Hercules vvrasted / but alvvay vvhenn he semed discomfited / fallyng to ground he became as fresche as he vvas before. Then Hercules perceyuyng thys toke hym in hys armes / and layd hym on hys brest / and so streyned hym to deth by strengthe / and so caste hym to the gronde / and thus destroyed he the geaunt. By thes Antheus may be vnderstand vwordly couetyce / vvyche encresseth and renueth hys strength by tochyng of the ground. For couetyce vvytl not be quenched by plenty of vwordly good / but rather is therby renued and enforced. Hercules then the vertuous man / streyneth thys couetyce within his brest / and vvith draeth hyt vterly fro vwordly good / and so he quencheth the lust that he had ther on / and putteth hit holey in vertu and in vysesdom.

¶ The x labour ys of Cakus the theffe of Libia vvyche Hercules discomfited and slvve. The fable ys thys. There vvas in the mount Auentyne a monstre / that spete fyre at hys mouth / robbing and despoilyng the people of the country. And he vvas the sonne of vulcane / by whom Euander kyng of the land vvas greatly annoyed. And Hercules comyng by that contrey bryngeth vvyth hym out of Spayn grete plenty of bestes / thys Cakus stole iiiii boles and as many keyn and droc them yn to hys den by the tayles bacward / that the stappes shold not be seyn invvard. And Hercules by estimation espyed vvhene they vvere / and he droc Cakus out of hys denne / and slvv hym / and so he esed the kyng destroying hys enemy.

¶ The moralite is thus: By thys Cakus may be vnderstand pryd. He speteth fyre at hys mouth / hye vvorde of malyce and manace: He ys vulcanus sonne. For that vyce is appropriat to the deuel that fyrst hyt found. He vvasteth and deouoreth and steleth all that he may / and so harmeth the contrey. For a proud man vvasteth moche yn hys aray and other expenses / that al that ben aboute hym ben noyed ther by. Euander the reson that ys kyng of the soule may not ouercome hym / for he vvyll not vvorche by him / He dareth in hys den: sytting in mannes hert / he steleth iiiii of Hercules he oppresseth the iiiii cardinal vertues / and as many keyn / all other vertues that ben under hym. For a proude man is myghtless / vntemperate / vnvare and vnrightuous. Thys thesse Hercules that hys consciens espyeth and draeth out thys thesse pryd out of the hert / and sleyth and destroyeth hym / and so hath he hys bestes agayn / that be vertues. And reson that vvas ouercome now regneth in the soule as kyng in pees and reste.

¶ The xi labour is of the bore that Hercules slvve. In Archadia vvas a myghty bore that vvasted the regyon sore vvytch Hercules hunted and at last thys bore torned vnto Hercules and smote hym in the shulder / and marked hyt vvyth the foom of hys mouthe. By thes bore may be vnderstand the vyce of the fleshe / vvytch vvasteth foule a man hys substance. Thes vyces Hercules the myghty chaseth and hunteth / in vvytl to destroy them. But thys bore torneth and assayleth Hercules. For hyt chaunceth ofte / that a ful myghty man in vertues that pursueth and hateth all vyces / is assayed and tempted vvyth the synne of the fleshe / and perauenture ys marked fallyng ther yn. But one vycious dede beryueth not the habyte of vertu: but maketh a man more vvare: and diligent for to kepe hymself / and so at laste he ouercometh hys flesche and sleyth thys bore of lust and lekyng

¶ The xii labour vvas thys: after the fable of Ouyde. Athlas the myghty geaunt / in the geantes batayl / fyghtyng agenst the goddes aboue / bare heuen vpon hys shulder; and vvhenn that he saw Hercules come to hym / after hys other labours / he vvas vvery of fyghtyng and also of hys burden / preyed hym to helpe hym to bere heuen / And he toke and bare hyt myghtely vherby he deserued to be made a fayr sterre in heuen. The truthe vvas thys. Athlas vvas a cheffe astronomer / vvhwherefore he vvas sayd that he bare heuen / the

connynge of heuenly thynges. But vwhen Athlas dyed / vvyche deth is a rest and a refreshyng to the vertuous / Hercules toke heuen vpon his shulder. The moralyte may be thus. The batayl of gantes ys the enfor syng of goostly myghtes agenst the goddes aboue / that ys agenst natural inclination to vyses / vvyche is caused by constellations / But agenst thes inclinations / he may fyght best / that hath connynge of astronomy. For to serche the myghtes of the planetes for certen tymes / and knovveth also how these vicyous inclinations ben caused. But at last he must leue the labour of astronomy compelled by age / vwhen all hys passyons ben cessed / and then Hercules taketh heuen vpon hys shulder: and geueth hym holly to heuenly contemplation. And so be deserueth by thys labour specyally to be made a cytesen of heuen.

¶ Soo thus must every myghty man that vyl deseruen heuen, fyrst lothe and abhor the monstres of synne: bothe in hymself; and also in other; and at last leuyng al outward occupacion / geue hym holly to serue God: in prayer and contemplation and so may he be syker of all that he desyreth.

¶ To whom so euer the moralyte of thes fables be plesaunt or vnlusty vverte ye vvel that they lacketh al in som thynges lytteral truthe. But a fable lackinge lytteral truthe vnapponed is nocht elles but a lesyng. And as holy scripture saeth / al that euer doth or speketh lesyng / shal be parteneres of the properte of helle. VVherfore after my symple connynge / I haue moralysed then in my maner / leuyng the correction to other that ben clerkes and more connynge in that science. For syth hyt apperteneth not to holy vvert; every man vwithout offence: may say that hym semeth most lekely to truthe.

(11) To comment on Stans. 9, 10; P. vi. B. V.

¶ As clerkes haue diffyned. Tyme mesure of mouyng of before and after. Thys mesure is taken most comenly after the meuynge of the equinoctial vvhos meuynge is the ssvfyttest that ys possible. The vvyche lyne is deuyded ynto ccclx euuen partes of vvyche partes / euerych is called a degré. The mesure of a risyng of xv degréis is called an houre naturel. The mesure of a risyng of xxiv houres ys a day naturel. The mesure of ccclxv dayes + vi hours of encresse and certen mynutes / ys called a yere. By vvyche tymes the perdurablety of thys vvorlde of byfore and after is mesured vsyngly. Syth than mesure of meuynge is called tyme / then sueth hyt that before the vvorlde meued ther vwas no tyme. But God eternally ys / er eny thynge meued; or any tyme vvere / and shall he after that all meuynges cesseth. For hys beyng is mesured by no meuynge of before and after / for hymself is vnmeweable / ne hys beyng hath no regard to before and after for all tymes present passed and to come / ben to hym verely present. Ne hys beyng is not mesured by successyon of tymes. For he hathe hys beyng vnumesured all at ones, vvyche ys called hys eternyte. Therfore is god called Inmensus. But the perdurablety of the vvorlde ys mesured by meuynge of the heuen / vvyche is called tyme and lenger than heuen meueth shal ther be no tyme. Than ys yt so that the beyng of God is called eternite. The beyng of thys vvorlde ys named perpetuyte. Then ys thys the conceyct of Plato saying that the vvorlde hath euer ben / That ys to mene / as longe as any thynge hath meued. And as long as anythyng meueth or any tyme ys / so long it shall endure in suche beyng as it novv hathe. And after that al meuynge and al tymes cesseth / the vvorlde rennewd shal endure in lyfie interminable. And so sayth oure Lorde. Ecce noua facio omnia.

¶ Thys intermynable lyfie / is the eternal beyng of our creatour to vvhom as to her ende / al thynge shal be reduced And at hym as at ther fynall ende reste and abyde. Therfore sayth Plato as ys in the texte alleged / that the vvorlde hath euer ben / that ys to say: syth any tyme vvas and hyt shall neuer vvhyle any tyme ys cessen of hys meuynge. So meuynge and tyme shall cessen bothe at ones. And the vvorlde then shal not ende by destruction or tornie into nocht / for god and nature dyd neuer thynge in wayn. Ne god nougthe neuer thynge that he made but the corruption of one thynge / ys the generation of another thynge. So that at laste every corruptible thynge retorneth in rounde into the elementes / that hyt vvas fyrist formed of. And therfore the autor sayeth / that the entent of temporal thynge that so meuethe in rounde / casteth

and entendeth by ledyng of nature / to counterfete the perdurable lyffe of God. For kendlly every creature coueyteth to conforme hym to hys maker / at lest in beyng. vvhervore of nature eurythyng vvythstandeth in that it may / hys ovvne corruption and diuision of hys partes. And vvhenn hyt ys corrupt and resolued into hys fyrst mater / vvyche ys the elementes / vvych ben cleped the the sedes of erthly thynges then ben they apte as they vvere before to be mater and to clothe other dynuers formes. And so ben they perpetuate / by ther chaungeablete in to an endles compace. For thes thynges yf they fayle in ther individues / yet yn ther vniuersalles they abideth euer : after tyme that they ones be. And the mater of the singulders / torneth into other thynges / after that nature vvorchedeth. Then is thys the conceyt of the clerke in the letter. Euary creature as ys before sayd / coueyteth of nature for to counterfete hys inaker. But for cause thes erthly thynges of feblenesse and contrarecouste of ther matter / may not endure / but nedes be resolued / therfore they take that they may of beyng / enduryng by successyon of tymes. Vvhile that God endureth (not by temporal successiouon) but hathie hys beyng separate fro creatures Al at oones so that tovyardes hym noght ys to come / ne nought ouerpased / But al that ys / vvas / and shal be : ys before hym present.

Than hauynge regarde to the eternyte of God / vvyche hath hys beyng al at ones vnmesured by successyon of tymes / ther ys no purueaunce ne foresyght / but he seyth al by present knovlege / and yn hym is none other syght but connynge. For al knowyng of present and passed / noteth imperfection of creatures that be passyng and corruptyble. And hyt nedeth noght / ne ys conuenyent to conforme hys eternal insyght to oure temporal estimation / that al thyng demeth before and after as vve haue oure beyng. But hyt accordeth better / and is more kendlly / that the creature submit al hys wytte / and conforme al hys knovvyng holly to hys maker / vvitout vvhom he ys noght / can nought / ne hath nought at al / that ought ooveth to be cleped.

¶ Sith hyt is so then that euary iugement / must sue the nature of the iuge / that ys of hym that knovveth / hyt nedeth not then to bynden thinges to falle necessaryly / ne to vvete the knowyng of God for to compelle tho thinges to betide / because that he seyth hyt presently as he al behaldeith no more than to vvete me the meuyng of the sonne / because I se hyt meue / or for to vvete me the deth of a man / bycause I see hym dye. For the meuyng of the sonne is caused absolutely of the fyrst ordynaunce of hym that made hyt for to meue. But that I novv se hyt meue / hyt procedeth of my ovvne fre vyalle / presupposed that I haue my yees hole and liberte to se al present obiectes that falleth to my luste.





Date Due

JH0'60

~~MR 1376~~

Demco 293-5

3 5282 00281 2090

~~820.8~~  
~~E12~~  
no. 170

sketch in

622871

STACKS PR1119.A2 no. 170 c. 62293  
Boethius,

Boethius: *De consolatione philosophiae*



3 5282 00281 2090